





John Maynard.

Library of the Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.

Stuart Fund

Division.....	SCC
Section	2043
Number.....	v. 10
Shelf.....	

THE
WORKS
OF
REV. P. DODDRIDGE, D. D.

VOLUME X.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:
CONTAINING
A PARAPHRASE ON THE SECOND EPISTLE
OF
ST. PAUL TO TIMOTHY,

TITUS,
PHILEMON,
HEBREWS,
The EPISTLE of JAMES,
I. PETER,
II. PETER,

I. JOHN,
II. JOHN,
III. JOHN,
JUDE,
REVELATION.

WITH A COPIOUS INDEX; ALSO, AN INDEX TO THE GREEK WORDS.

Εἰ δὲ τις ὑπο τῶν μὴ πασχητῶν λόγων, ὑπο μόνων αὐτῶν ἐν ἀδὲ δικαστηρίῳ υπεύθυνθῃ.
SIMPLIC. in EPICTET. Proem.

LEEDS:

PRINTED BY EDWARD BAINES,

FOR THE EDITORS; CONDER, BUCKLESBURY; BUTTON, PATERNOSTER-ROW;
WILLIAMS, STATIONERS'-COURT; BAYNES, PATERNOSTER-ROW; OGLE,
GREAT-TURN STYLE; NUNN, QUEEN STREET; AND JONES, PATER-
NOSTER-ROW, LONDON; AND FOR BAINES, AND HEATON,
LEEDS; WILSON AND SPENCE, YORK; GUTHRIE & TAIT,
EDINBURGH; M. OGLE, GLASGOW; CROOKES, RO-
THERHAM; ABEL, NORTHAMPTON.
AND MR. FARRAND, 185, MARKET PLACE, PHILADELPHIA.

1810.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

TIMOTHY.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TIMOTHY.

IT is uncertain where Timothy was when he received this *epistle*. Some have supposed he must have been at Ephesus; but their arguments in support of that opinion seem inconclusive (as Mr. Boyle has well observed.) And indeed it does not seem very easy to reconcile this supposition with the *apostle's* charge, chap. iv. 13,) to bring with him the *books and parchments* he had left at Troas; that city lying so far out of his way from Ephesus to Rome, especially as he had expressed a desire of seeing him as soon as possible. And if it should be pleaded, that the things he sent for might not *then* be at Troas, but at some other place that might lie in his way, it is sufficient to answer, that it would in that case, have been more to Paul's purpose, to have directed Timothy where to have found them, than to inform him where they were first left. To which may be added, that if Timothy had been at Ephesus, when this *epistle* was written, the *apostle* would hardly have said, "Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus," (chap. iv. 12,) but rather, "Tychicus have I sent to *you*."

That this *epistle* was written while Paul was under confinement at Rome, is universally agreed; but whether it was during his *first or second* imprisonment, has been matter of debate. Several learned writers, among whom are Hammond, Lightfoot, and Cave, have maintained the *former* opinion; while others have argued in favour of the *latter*, from chap. i. 18, where Paul speaking of Onesiphorus, says, *he sought him diligently at Rome*; which they apprehend implies, that the *apostle* was kept under so close a confinement at this time, that few knew where he was to be found: whereas in that imprisonment, of which Luke gives an account in the conclusion of his history, we are told, *He dwelt in a hired house, receiving all that came to him*, (Acts xxviii. 30.)

But the strongest argument in support of this opinion is drawn from chap. iv. 6: *I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand*. From whence it has been inferred, that Paul, when he wrote this, was in immediate expectation of death, in consequence of Nero's menaces, or of some express revelation from Christ, (which some have thought Peter also had a little before his martyrdom, 2 Pet. i. 11.) Yet the directions he afterwards gives plainly shew he had some expectation of living a while longer. Else it is difficult to say why he should so much urge Timothy to *give diligence to come to him*, ver. 21, or press his care of the *clouds, books, and parchments*, mentioned ver. 13. Though, after all, these words must, I think, express an apprehension that his life and ministry were drawing towards a close, which is yet farther confirmed by observing, that whereas in his former imprisonment the apostle had often expressed his persuasion of being released and seeing his Christian friends again, he gives no hint in this *epistle* of any such expectation, but seems to intimate the contrary, ver. 18, by expressing his confidence, not that he should be again rescued from his enemy as he had been upon making his *first* apology, but that God would *deliver him from every evil work*, and *preserve him to his heavenly kingdom*.—Upon the whole, therefore, I conclude that this *epistle* was written some time towards the close of Paul's second imprisonment, and consequently about the year of our Lord 65 or 67; and in the 14th of the emperor Nero. (See *Family Expositor*, Vol. VIII. sect. 103, note p. 305.)

The apostle seems to have intended in this *epistle* to prepare Timothy for those sufferings to which he foresaw he would be exposed; to forewarn him of the fatal apostacy and declension that was beginning to appear in the church; and at the same time to animate him, from his own example and the great motives of Christianity, to the most vigorous and resolute discharge of every part of the ministerial office.

In pursuance of this general design, the apostle, after his usual salutation, begins with assuring Timothy of his most affectionate remembrance, and his earnest desire to see him, expressing his satisfaction in those marks of sincere faith which appeared in him as well as in his pious ancestors. He then takes occasion, from his own suffering, to excite him to a becoming fortitude and resolution in the Christian cause: and represents in a strong light the excellence of that gospel which he was appointed to preach, and on which he placed an entire dependence, chap. i. 1—12. The apostle, being firmly persuaded of the truth and importance of those doctrines which he had so often inculcated upon his beloved pupil, exhorts him strenuously to retain them in the midst of all discouragements and opposition, and to go through the duties of his ministerial work with the utmost diligence and constancy, in dependence on the grace of God: mentioning at the same time the treachery of several Asiatics, and acknowledging with the warmest gratitude the extraordinary fidelity and zeal of Onesiphorus, ver. 15, 16. Chap. ii. 1—7. And in order yet more effectually to fortify Timothy

Timothy against the difficulties he might be called to encounter, he lays open the motives and hopes by which he himself was supported under the sufferings he bore in defence of the gospel; assuring him, that those who *suffered* with Christ should also be *glorified* with him. To this he adds some directions in relation to his ministry; advising him in particular to avoid and discourage all those empty harangues and idle controversies which only served to confound the mind, and by which some had been seduced from the purity of the Christian faith, ver. 8—18. The *apostle* then takes occasion, from a general view of the great design and tendency of the gospel, to urge the necessity of holiness in all Christians, and especially in ministers; and recommends to the latter the utmost gentleness and meekness in their attempts to recover sinners from the miserable condition into which they were fallen, ver. 19, *to the end*.—And, to make him more sensible of the importance of exerting himself in order to maintain the purity and honour of religion, he assures him that a great declension and apostacy was to prevail in the Christian world; and that false teachers were rising up in it, by whose wicked artifices many weak persons were deceived and led astray; reminding him at the same time of that patience and fortitude which he had seen him discover amidst the severest persecutions; chap. iii. 1—13. To guard Timothy against these seducers, and to preserve the church from their fatal influence, Paul recommends to him the study of the scriptures as of the utmost importance to all the purposes of Christian edification; and charges him in a solemn manner to use the utmost diligence in all the parts of his ministerial work; declaring at the same time, for his encouragement, the satisfaction with which he reflected on his own fidelity in the nearest views of martyrdom for the truth, ver. 14. Chap. iv. 1—8. The *apostle* concludes this *epistle* with requesting Timothy to come to him as soon as possible, in order to assist and comfort him under the unworthy treatment he had met with from some of his Christian brethren; giving him an account of the manner in which he had, in his late appearance before the heathen magistrate at Rome, been deserted by men, but supported by Christ; and, having expressed his cheerful confidence that he should be safely conducted to the presence of his Lord, he adds some particular salutations, and closes with his usual benediction, ver. 9, *to the end of the epistle*.

Whoever reads over this *epistle* with that attention it deserves, and considers the circumstances in which it was written, will be sensible that it affords a very strong argument in favour of Christianity.—The *apostle* had been for some time under close confinement at Rome, at the mercy of a cruel and capricious tyrant. He had seen himself deserted by his friends in his greatest extremity; and had nothing before him but the certain prospect of being called to suffer death in the same cause to which he had devoted his life.—In this situation how does he behave? Does he seem to look back with concern on his past conduct, or to regret the sacrifice he had made of all his worldly interests? Can we discover any thing that

that betrays a secret consciousness of guilt, or even a suspicion of the weakness of his cause? Nay, does he drop a single expression that can be interpreted as a mark of fear, or discomposure of mind, in the apprehension of those gloomy scenes that lay before him?—Surely if he had been an impostor, or had entertained the least doubt of the doctrines he taught, something of this kind must have escaped him when writing to so intimate a friend, with whom he could intrust all the secrets of his breast.—On the contrary, upon the most calm and deliberate survey, he expresses a serene satisfaction in reflecting on the part he had acted, and earnestly recommends it to his beloved pupil to follow his example in maintaining the glorious cause, even at the hazard of his life. He appears throughout his *epistle* to have felt a strong inward conviction of the truth of those principles he had embraced, and glories in the sufferings he endured in support of them; triumphing in the full assurance of being approved by his great Master, and of receiving at his hands a crown of diademal lustre. A behaviour like this, in one who had so considerable a share in establishing the Christian religion, and expected in a short time to seal his testimony to it with his blood, must be allowed a strong confirmation of the truth of those facts on which our faith depends. It is at least a convincing proof that the *apostle* was himself sincere in what he professed to believe: and when the several circumstances of his history are considered and impartially weighed, it will appear as evident that he could not possibly be *deceived*, and consequently that his testimony is to be admitted in its full force.

THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR.

A
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON
THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE
TO
TIMOTHY.

3

SECTION I.

The Apostle begins his epistle, after proper salutations, with expressions of his affection to Timothy, and general acknowledgments of his joy in, and dependence upon, the grace of that gospel which he was employed to preach. 2 Tim. I. 1—12.

2 Tim. I. 1.

PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To Timothy my
dearly beloved son :
grace, mercy, and
peace

2 TIMOTHY I. 1.

I PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God (whose eternal counsels, with reference to me, were manifested in that wonderful manner in which I was set apart for the service of the gospel, agreeably to the promise of eternal life, which is given us in Christ Jesus, and by which I am animated in all my labours and sufferings), send this second epistle to Timothy, ² my beloved son ; whose humble and faithful services in the gospel I have so long proved, and whom I love with the affection of a father. Nor can I express this affection better than by wishing,

SECT.

i.

2 TIM.

I. 1.

REPT.
1
2 Tim
I. 2

ing, as I most sincerely do, that *grace, mercy,* and *peace*, may attend thee, *from God, the gracious and merciful Father* of all true believers, and *from Christ Jesus, his Son and our Lord*, who is also our Peace.

3 *I give thanks unto this blessed God, whom I serve, after the example of [my] pious progenitors, with a pure conscience, that through his goodness, laying the case upon my heart, I am incessantly mindful of thee in my prayers night and day, so that I scarce ever rise up in the morning, or lie down in the evening, without allowing thee a share in my devout remembrance ;*

4 *Desiring earnestly to see thee, as I am mindful of thy tears, which flowed so plentifully at our last separation, that I might be filled with joy, in an interview with so dear and amiable a friend.*

5 And indeed thou hast, as it were, an hereditary title to my regard, *as I also keep in remembrance the undissembled faith which is in thee, and which first dwelt in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice, who believed in Christ before thee, and have been happily instrumental in communicating to thy heart these good impressions which they felt on their own ; and I am persuaded that [it is] in thee too, and that thou still retainest in the midst of all opposition*

6 *For which cause I am the more encouraged to remind thee of stirring up the gift of God^a, which is in thee by the imposition of my hands^b ; whereby those miraculous communications of the Spirit were imparted to thee, which it will be thy duty to cherish, by frequently engaging in those devotional exercises and active services for which they are intended to qualify*

7 *thee. Exert thyself therefore with cheerfulness and boldness, without dreading any opposition that may arise ; for God hath not given us the spirit of cowardice and fear, but of courage, and of love, and of wisdom^c ; and if we conduct our-*

peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that through his goodness I have sometimes because of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy ;

5 When I call to remembrance thy unforgotten faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice, and I am persuaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

a *Stirring up the gift*]. *Awakening*. The metaphor is plainly borrowed from stirring up fire when it is almost extinct ; and some have imagined it might refer to that part of the priest's office, which consisted in throwing the incense in the temple, and supplying them with oil in order to keep them continually burning (see *Israel. Page. 166*) ; while others have thought it alludes to the form of flames

in which the Spirit descended. Acts ii. 3. and 1 Tim. v. 13, and note there. Compare Gen. xlv. 27. *Awakening*.

b *Imposition of my hands*]. See the note on 1 Tim. iv. 14.

c *God hath not given us, &c.* Perhaps Paul added this under an apprehension, that the tender spirit of Timothy might have been something terrified by the prospect of persecution.

d *Given*

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner: but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God;

9 Who hath saved us and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the gospel:

d Given to us in Christ Jesus from eternal ages.] I see no reason for rendering it, as Dr. Whitby would do, according to his purpose before all ages, and the grace given us in Christ Jesus. The grace might be said to be given us in Christ, as the Father stipulated with him, through his hand, as well as for his sake, to give us that grace which we do actually receive.

e Thrown a light upon life and immortality.] Life and immortality is put by a usual Hebraism for immortal life, as Archbishop Tillotson well observes, Vol. III. p. 112.) in his discourse on these words; in which he has shewn, how uncertain the heathens were as to the doctrines of a future state of retribution, and the comparative obscurity of that light in which it was placed under the Old Testament. The former article is much illustrated by Dr. Whitby's learned and excellent note. But what Mr. Warburton has written up-

selves prudently, under the influences of a spirit of universal love, we may hope that his Spirit will work mightily in us, to fit us for those services which his Providence may point out. *Be not therefore ashamed of that sacred truth,* 8 which is *the testimony of our Lord*, taught by his mouth, confirmed by his death and resurrection, and the descent of his Spirit; *nor of me*, who am now *his prisoner*; but resolutely own thy regard to me, and *take thy share in the afflictions* which may lie in the way, while bearing a courageous testimony to the truth of the gospel, according to the evidence derived to it from the miraculous power of God; *Who hath saved* 9 us from that ruin into which the world hath fallen by its fatal apostacy, and hath called [us] out from the rest of mankind by an holy calling, not according to any distinguished merit of our own works, but according to his own purpose, and those rich overflowings of grace given to us in Christ Jesus from eternal ages^d, as he was appointed, in the everlasting and immutable counsels of God, to be a Redeemer and a Saviour unto us. *But this long concealed grace* 10 *is now made manifest by the illustrious appearance of our Saviour Jesus Christ*, who by what he has done and suffered in human flesh for the salvation of his faithful servants, hath in effect abolished death, has deposed it from its tyrannical empire, and thrown a light on the important doctrine of life and immortality by the gospel^e; which

SECT.
i.

2 Tim.
1. 7.

on this subject, in his *Divine Legation*, Vol. 1. and what is said upon it, in the last edition of the *critical enquiry into the opinions of the ancient philosophers*, has done abundantly more than any thing else to vindicate the propriety of this expression; and I must refer to these learned and ingenious writers for the most satisfactory commentary on these words of the apostle.—But the learned and pious Dr. Hodges (who, so far as I can judge, has given us a greater variety of new and plausible interpretations of scripture than any other divine in the *Hutchinsonian* scheme) contends, that the word *αφθαρσιαν* ought to be rendered *incorruption*, and that Christ himself is to be understood both by *life* and *incorruption*; so that the text must refer to his throwing light on Ps. xvi. 10, 11, and on other scriptures, where it was foretold that the Messiah should be the *light of the world*, and bestow *incorruptible life* upon others

- which gives us a more express assurance and more lively view of it than any former dispensation had ever done, or could possibly do.
11. This is that important message of God to men, for the proclamation and confirmation of which *I was appointed an herald and apostle, and particularly had it in my charge, while others were more immediately sent to the circumcised, to be myself a teacher of the Gentiles: For which cause I also suffer these hard things; which press me in this state of confinement; but, though my condition may seem infamous, I am not ashamed of these bonds, or any of the reproaches and insults with which they are attended: for I know to whom I have trusted all my most important concerns, and am fully persuaded that he is well able to keep that precious immortal soul which I have deposited with him, even unto that great and important day when the promised salvation shall be completed.*

11. Whomsoever I have appointed & promised, and so forth, and a promise of the salvation.

11. For the which cause I suffer these things, which press me in this state of confinement; but I have always I have believed, and am persuaded that he is well able to keep that precious immortal soul which I have deposited with him, even unto that great and important day when the promised salvation shall be completed.

[IMPROVEMENT.]

- Ver. 1. Who, that attentively considers the *holy calling* with which *we are called, according to the grace given us in Christ Jesus,* can endure the shackle of being *ashamed of Christ's gospel, or any of his servants,* to whatever difficulties they may be exposed, with whatever infamy they may be loaded? For ever adored be that Prince of life, who hath *defeated death,* from his throne; who hath *enlightened,* by rays reflected from his own beautiful and resplendent countenance, the regions of the *invisible world,* over which so dark a veil had before been spread? Let our eyes be fixed more and more on this illustrious Object, and confiding in the

others, by seeing himself from the very before in transgression there. But if any should still think this expression refers to the future view, to which Dr. Hales is probably it has no regard, as would have been necessary if so applicable to the time of the view; nor would it be necessary the apostle presently after speaks of his being appointed without reader, ver. 11. This violent interpretation they seek on the whole it appears to me, as intended to obscure the objection which arises from this text against several new persons, by which they themselves were could find reference to a future view and the resurrection, in promise of the last Testament, in which they were never before changed. (See Dr. Hales's *Notes*, p. 231, 232.)

[*That which I have deposited with him.*] This, and perhaps every other promise, (except of them collected by Dr. Wadding in his note on this text,) in which both the soul and the son are in different views called together, that portion of God. The soul, as it is said, is to be returned into the hands of God, and committed to his care at death, and that they too may, may be done more cheerfully, in proportion to the degree in which men have taken care to maintain the memory of his love with docility. There is to be more a similarity of sentiment with regard to the prospect Paul might have used this expression, without lowering the hint from any Jewish view whatever.

the power and grace of Christ, let us all immediately and daily *commit to him that invaluable jewel of an immortal soul*, which God hath given us. We may surely survey it with a mixture of delight and terror, till we have thus provided for its safety; and then may that terror be allowed to disappear, and give place to a rational delight, and we may justly *congratulate ourselves while we adore our Saviour*.

Let the proclamation of this *gospel* be most welcome to us, and let us call up all the strength and vigour of our souls to assert and advance it; *for God hath given us the Spirit, not of fear, 7 but of courage, sobriety, and charity*. Whatever gifts we have received, let us *stir them up to their proper use*, and let one generation of *Christians* deliver down to another, a sense 6 of the excellency of their holy religion. Pious women may take encouragement from the success of *Lois and Eunice on Timothy*, who proved so excellent and useful a minister; as per- 5 haps some of the worthiest and most valuable ministers the church of *Christ* has ever been able to boast of, have had reason to bless God for those early impressions which were made upon their mind by the religious instructions of persons in the same relations.

To conclude, let us learn, by the repeated example of the apostle, to be earnest in *prayer* for our Christian friends; and 3 if we find our hearts excited to *remember them in our prayers day and night*, let us with him, return *our thanks to God*, that he puts such benevolent affections into our hearts; for every good disposition that springs up there is implanted and cherished by him.

SECT. II.

The Apostle exhorts Timothy strenuously to retain the gospel in the midst of all discouragements and oppositions, and go through the duties of his ministerial office, in dependence upon the grace of God; mentioning the treachery of several Asiatics, and the extraordinary fidelity and zeal of Onesiphorus. 2 Tim. I. 13—Chap. II. 7.

2 TIM. I. 13.

HOLD fast the form
of sound words
which thou hast heard
of

2 TIMOTHY I. 13.

ENCOURAGED by that confidence which I have been expressing in the power and fidelity of my Lord, to whom I have entrusted the care of my immortal interests and concerns, be thou, O Timothy, engaged resolutely to retain,

SECT.
II.

2 Tim.
I. 13.

and exactly to adhere to *the form of sound words*^a that system of divine and everlasting truths which thou hast heard of me; keep it, not merely in thy memory, but in thine heart, with cordial faith, and that sincere, fervent love, which is the great badge of our being in Christ Jesus, and which will finally secure our being owned by him as his true disciples. And as thou

of me, in faith and love, which is in Christ Jesus.

desirest to have the same cheerful confidence, let it be thy care to keep that good thing which is deposited with thee^b, even the gospel of Christ lodged in thine hands: assert its honours, by the aid of the Holy Spirit, which dwelleth in us, and which will, I trust, enable thee to act with that integrity and zeal which so arduous and important a service requires.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

Thou knowest this, that all those of Asia, who are at Rome, and were known to me by a profession of Christianity, are turned from me, and have proved treacherous friends, after all their forward pretences, of which number are Phygellus and Hermogenes^c, whom it is with great concern that I am obliged particularly to point

15 Thou hast known, that all those which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

out on such an occasion. But it is with proportionable pleasure that I mention another person, of a very different character, whose affection and zeal was illustrated by their baseness and disingenuity. May the Lord grant his mercy to his family! I mean to the household of Onesiphorus, for he hath often refreshed me, both by his visits and liberalities, and hath not been ashamed of my chain, Eph. vi. 20; but has rather esteemed it his honour to own me, while I was under disgrace and persecution in so good a cause.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the household of Onesiphorus, for he hath refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

But being here in Rome, he sought me out so much the more diligently on that very account, and when

17 Being here in Rome, he sought me out the more diligently.

a *Form of sound words.* Archbishop Tindal explains this, of that profession of faith which was made by Christians at their baptism, *Works* Vol. II. p. 381 and the Author of *Maschius Sana* observes, that it is not said, that Timothy received this form by immediate inspiration, but heard it of Paul, as according to him, the form of religion, was given only to the apostles. Chap. ii. 2, iii. 14, 1 Tim. iii. 15.

b *That good thing which is deposited.* See the note on ver. 13.

c *Those in Asia.* The Asiatics were infamous for their cowardice and effeminacy. Paul probably alludes to their

behaviour at Icon. (chapter ix. 14.) at which Timothy might have been informed by travellers. But Dr. Whitty refers this to those of Ephesus who had deserted the apostle, giving out, as he supposes, to the seduction of Cerinthus and the Elinites, by whom he had been represented as a supplanter of the Roman law. Nevertheless, I prefer the former interpretation as evidently more natural.

d *Phygellus and Hermogenes.* Probably he mentions these two persons as known to Timothy, or as having distinguished themselves by their profession, so that there was particular reason to expect a different conduct from them.

me out very diligently and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day. And in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

II. 1. Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ,

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a soldier.

when he had found [me] took every opportunity of expressing his unfeigned love and veneration for a servant and apostle of Christ in such a circumstance. *The Lord grant unto him that, after having enjoyed all the blessings of a long and useful life, he may find mercy of the Lord in that great day, to which our eyes and hopes, as Christians, are continually directed. And on how many occasions he ministered [to me] in Ephesus, thou very well knowest, as thou wert an eye-witness to it, while we were together there.*

Thou therefore, my dearly beloved son Timothy, animated by such an example of fidelity and courage, be strong, in humble and continual dependence upon the grace which is in Christ Jesus, and resolve never to be ashamed of any of his faithful servants under disgrace and difficulties, while adhering to his cause. And the 2 things which thou hast heard from me, and which I have solemnly testified again and again, before many witnesses, in one place and another, these commit thou with all diligence and care to faithful men^e, who may be able also to teach others; that so there may be, throughout all ages, a succession of such, who shall deliver them down from one to another, even till the end of time, according to God's gracious purposes in revealing them to us. And especially do thou see 3 to it thyself, that thine own temper and conduct be such as may engage them to fidelity in bearing their testimony. Therefore, as thy lot is cast in a time when we are called to suffer for many severe things for the truth, prepare thyself steadily and resolutely to endure afflictions and hardships as it becomes a good soldier of Jesus Christ, and one whom he hath honoured with a distinguished rank in his army, that thou mayest marshal and lead on others. And, to pursue the 4 metaphor, remember, that no one who goes out to war entangles himself with secular affairs, but relinquishes every other calling and employment, that he may please him under whom he is enlisted, and be ready to receive and execute his commands. Accordingly keep thyself as much

sect.
ii.

2 Tim.
I. 18.

II. 1

as

^e Commit to faithful men.] This is quoted by many, as an argument that the people were not left to chuse their own ministers. But if they did chuse them, or propose

them to Timothy, it might yet be his appropriate office to admit them to the ministry, and solemnly to commit the gospel to them. Compare the note on Tit. i. 5.

f Must

as possible, disengaged from worldly business, and from every thing which might tend to take off thy thoughts from thy great work, and render thee less active in thy sacred warfare. And thou also knowest, that *if any one wrestles, or contends in any other of those games for which Greece is so celebrated, if he do gain an advantage over his antagonist, he is not crowned, unless he wrestle, or perform any other athletic exercise, according to the law of the respective contention.* So let us take care to learn the rules which Christ has laid down to direct us in our attempts, and act according to them.

5 And if a team also strive for numbers, give the out command, except he arrive lawfully.

6 And he is not impatient, though the expected and promised reward should be long delayed; for thou well knowest that *the Parandeman must first labour*, and wait while the harvest is growing, through succeeding weeks and months, [and then] *partake of the fruits* produced by his toils.

6 The husbandman
that laboureth, must
be first partaker of
the fruits.

7 Consider the things which I say as matters of high importance, in which thou art intimately concerned; and mayest thou have a good understanding in all things, and enable thee to act in a manner suitable to the instructions thou hast received.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

IMPROVEMENT.

(7) 17

LET us all be exhorted to be strong in the grace that is in *Christ Jesus*, and in humble dependence upon it, let us go forth cheerfully to our work and warfare as *Christians*. This is a strength so great, and communicated with so rich a freedom, that the *Christian minister*, under his peculiar difficulties, will find it *adequate* to them all. Let such particularly apply to themselves the exhortations and consolations which are here given or suggested. Let them strenuously retain the *form of sound words*, which the inspired apostles have delivered, *with faith and love which is in Christ Jesus*. To this *orthodoxy of principle*, which a due regard to the great and only standard will teach them, let them add *orthodoxy of temper*. And, as they desire that *Christ may keep what they profess to have accepted with him*, let them faithfully keep what he has pledged in their hands. And may the Holy

Following the launch of the new primary curriculum, the program is intended to ensure that the skills of the students meet present day demands. In addition, the teachers are given the opportunity to learn and use the

point in question. We must therefore
 something in that connection, and the like
 something in several other places. See
 15-2-100, 1-2-100, 1-2-100.

L. ...

Holy Spirit dwell in them, to make them faithful in all, and direct them in their efforts to defend the gospel, to spread its influence on the hearts of men, and transmit it from one generation to another; lodging it with faithful men, who may teach others, when their teachers and fathers in Christ rest from their labours. Such a succession may God continue in his churches; and may he prosper the work of those who are employed in humble and faithful attempts to promote so good a cause, by forming for this important charge those who, like Timothy, have early known the scripture, and felt its power on their hearts.

SECT

II.

Chap.

ii. 2.

Let such as are setting out in this holy warfare remember the caution which the apostle gives. May they not unnecessarily encumber themselves with secular cares, which would render them less fit to please the great General under whose banner they are enlisted. Let them strive lawfully, if they hope for the crown, and cultivating the ground with diligence, let them wait with patience, if they desire at length to reap that blessed harvest. Nor let that general apostacy from the power of religion, which is the shame of the present day, deter them; but rather let it whet their pious zeal to own, with more strenuous attachment, the cause of Christ and of his faithful servants. And when they have done all, may they ever retain an humble sense of their dependence on the Divine mercy: and the Lord grant to us all, ministers and people, that we may find it in that great day!

SECT. III.

Paul further animates Timothy to fidelity, by laying open the motives and hopes which supported him under the difficulties he bore in the defence of the gospel; interspersing several addresses relating to that purity, prudence, and meekness, with which he should endeavour to conduct himself in the ministry. 2 Tim.

II. 8—18.

2 Tim. II. 8.

REMEMBER that Jesus Christ, of the seed of David, was raised from the dead accord-

2 TIMOTHY II. 8.

TO animate thee, O Timothy, to all the labours and all the sufferings of the Christian! and ministerial life, remember Jesus Christ, the promised Messiah of the seed of David, the great Apostle and High-Priest of our profession, who, after having spent and laid down his life in the prosecution of his great work, was raised from the dead^a, and at length exalted to the right hand

SECT.

iii. 2.

2 Tim.

118.

a Remember Christ who was raised from the dead.] Our translators render it, Re-

member that he was raised: as if he had said, Adhere to this as the great foundation

SECT.
III.2 Tim.
II. 9.

hand of God, there to receive the reward of all his labours and sufferings, *according to the tenor of my gospel*, which, as thou well knowest, I every where preach and attest. *In the service of which I suffer evil, [even] to bonds*, the chief magistrates of my country sentencing me to confinement, after the many insults which have been offered me by the dregs of the people, as if I were a malefactor worthy of some heavy punishment: but my great comfort is, that *the word of God is not bound*. I rejoice, that many of my brethren are at liberty to preach it publicly, and am thankful for every opportunity of bearing my testimony to so good a cause, in such a private manner as my present circumstances may admit; well knowing, that God can bless even these limited attempts, to what degree he shall in his infinite wisdom see fit. (Compare

according to my gospel.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

10 [Phil. i. 12.] *On this account, I cheerfully endure all these things*, and whatever else Providence may appoint, *for the sake of the elect, that the gracious purposes of God for their happiness may be effected, and they may obtain that complete salvation which is in Christ Jesus*, and which shall be attended with eternal, as well as illustrious and exalted, *glory*.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elect's sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory.

11 [It is] a faithful word which I have often insisted upon, and it shall undoubtedly be verified; *that if we have the resolution to die with him*, even with that blessed Saviour, according to the obligation of our baptismal vow, *we shall also live with him*, in that everlasting happiness

11 It is a faithful saying. For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him.

12 which he hath prepared for all his people. *If we patiently endure our part in his afflictions, we shall also share his triumph, and reign with him in his celestial kingdom*. But on the other hand, *if we are intimidated with these transitory evils, so as to desert his cause, and deny [him]*

12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with him.

before

tion of the gospel. But though this be undoubtedly true, the apostle's thought seems rather differently; remember *him* who was once raised from the dead, and that will be instead of a thousand arguments to bear thee through all thy difficulties.

b *In the service of which*.] Dr. Whately has shown, in his note on this clause, that it sometimes signifies in what cause, or for the sake of which.

c *It is a faithful word*.] Some refer this to the concluding clause of the former

verse; but it seems much more reasonable to connect it with what follows, as, generally speaking, this phrase is introductory to the weighty sentences it is intended to confirm. See 2 Tim. i. 13: iii. 5, 9. Though Tit. ii. 8. seems an exception. Dr. Tisdale thinks this was a celebrated saying among Christians, which was either derived by tradition from Christ or some of the apostles, and it had so powerful a tendency to keep them steady to their religion, that it is no wonder it was in frequent use. *Trist.* Vol. II. p. 175, 176.

him: if we deny him, he will also deny us:

13 If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: he cannot deny himself.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord that they strive not about words; to no profit; but to the subverting of the hearers.

15 Study to shew thyself approved unto God; a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

d *If we are unfaithful.*] So I think *ἀπιστοί* should be rendered, as it stands opposed to *πιστός*, and so the words will farther imply, that whatever we lose by our unfaithfulness, in whatever degree it appears; it is no argument of any unfaithfulness in him; as his promises are made to faithful servants, and fair warning is given to persons of a different character.

e *Testify as before the Lord, and as in his presence.*] There is a most *artful solemnity* in this charge which plainly shews the great folly and mischief of striving about little controversies; and I pray God to affect the heart of his ministers with a deeper sense of this; before the interests of vital religion among us be utterly undone by our severe contentions; or, as the excellent Archbishop Leighton expresses

before men, *he will also*, as he hath expressly threatened, *deny us* in the great day, before his Father and his holy angels. *If we are unfaithful*; and false to our engagements, *he abideth faithful*, and will steadily adhere to those rules of judgment and distribution which he hath so solemnly laid down in his word (compare Mat. x. 23): for we may be sure *he cannot deny himself*, by frustrating his own public declaration. It becomes us therefore to weigh the tenor of them with all seriousness, and humbly to acquiesce in his terms, since it is impossible he should be brought to change them in favour of ours.

Remind [them] of these things, as thou art engaged to sacrifice every other view to the great prospect of approving thy fidelity to such a Master. And for this purpose, *testify*, as *before the Lord*, and as in his presence^c, to those over whom thou art called to preside; *that men do not contend* and quarrel about words, an evil to [which] they are so obnoxious: for such a contention [is] altogether unprofitable [and even tends] to the subversion of the hearers, taking off their attention from true religion, and filling their minds with pride and passion, and numberless other disorders and vices.

Diligently endeavour, whenever thou comest to present thyself before God, in any of the duties of thine office, that, whatever men may judge of thee and thy services, thou mayest be approved by him as a workman who hath no cause to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth^f, distributing

it in his lively manner; "What we profess to hold so sacred, be itself torn in pieces, while we are struggling about its fringes."

f *Rightly dividing the word of truth.*] *ὀρθολογικῶς τὸν λόγον τῆς ἀληθείας.* Some think here is an allusion to what the Jewish priest or Levite did in dissecting the victim; and separating the parts in a proper manner; as some were to be laid on God's altar, and others to be given to those who were to share in the sacrifice. Others think it refers to guiding a plough aright; in order to divide the clods in the most proper and effectual manner, and make straight furrows. But, perhaps, the metaphor may be taken from the distribution made by a steward, in delivering out to each person under his care such things as his office and their necessities required.

g *Asserting*

2 Tim.
III.

2 Tim.
II. 16.

tributing with prudence, as well as fidelity, to each his proper share. *But avoid*, and stand at a distance from, those *profane and empty declamations*, with which some who affect to be thought of importance in the Christian church are ready to amuse themselves. *for* though the evil of some of them may not immediately appear, and they may seem trifling rather than mischievous, *they will* at length *advance unto more impiety*; and when Satan has prevailed upon men once to quit the right way, he will be continually gaining greater advantages over

- 17 them. *And their discourses will eat like a gangrene*, spreading itself farther and farther, till the whole body is infected, and even destroyed by it. Such teachers there are now in the church; of which [number] in particular are
- 18 *Hymenæus and Philistus*. *Who have erred with respect to the truth*, so as to be wile of the mark. For they have, by their allegorical interpretations, explained away one of the most fundamental doctrines of our religion, *asserting that the resurrection*, of which it so largely speaks, consists only in a conversion from vice to virtue, and consequently *is already past*, with regard to all true Christians; and so they *subvert the faith of some*, who are less established in the doctrines of the gospel, and endanger their salvation. It will therefore become thee, amidst all the candour which I have so often inculcated, to guard against such tenets, and the authors of them.

16 But shun profane and vain babblings, for they will increase unto more ungodliness.

17 And these will will not be silent teachers, of whom is Timotheus and Philetus.

18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and pervert some of the faith of some.

IMPROVEMENT.

THERE is not perhaps a single precept in the whole sacred volume, which would be more extensively useful to ministers, or to private Christians, than this of the *apostle*, taken in all its extent. *Remember Jesus Christ*. Many a sweet memorial hath he left us of himself. Often, very often, have we been called solemnly

[*Assenting that the resurrection is past*] VINE, as my learned friend Mr. H. writes with great propriety elsewhere, in reference to the text, was in the prophetic solemnly called *dead*. And upon the same principle, a recovery to a virtuous course and temper must be called a kind of *resurrection* from the dead. But nothing can

be more evident than that this was by no means the *resurrection* which Christianity taught. Yet, as there is nothing too absurd for some who pride themselves in their philosophy to believe, this foolish refinement found its followers among some pretended Christians of this stamp. *Watch. Doct. Leg. Vol. I. p. 227.*

lemnly to survey them, and yet how ready are we to forget him, and by a natural consequence to forget ourselves, our duty and interest on the one hand, and our danger on the other! "Blessed *Jesus!* may we daily and hourly remember thee! that thou hast died, that thou art raised from the dead, and that thou art ever near thy people, to protect, to comfort, and to bless them. If, for thy cause, we should be called to *suffer evil, as evil doers*, whether in our persons, or reputations, may we not be discouraged, but rather *rejoice* in the honour thou doest us in appointing for us such a conformity to thyself! The enemies of thy *gospel* may indeed oppose it, they may *bind* its most faithful preachers, but their opposition, their persecution, is *vain*." The word of God is not bound; and Divine grace, operating by it, will sooner or later give it the intended, the promised triumph; that his *elect* may obtain salvation by *Jesus Christ*, and may not only escape the condemnation and ruin of the impenitent world, but may finally be crowned with *eternal glory*.

May we ever be mindful of this *faithful word*, that if we suffer with Christ we shall reign with him too; and may we endure the greatest hardships to which we can be called out, as considering that our sufferings are *momentary*, but our reign will be *eternal*. Never may we, for any allurement or terror, deny him, as we would not finally be denied by him; when no other honour will remain but that which he confers, no other happiness but that which he bestows.

In the mean time, as we desire the prosperity of his kingdom, let us earnestly pray that he will raise up to his church a multitude of faithful ministers, who may govern themselves by these truly apostolical canons; ministers who may not contend about words in a manner unprofitable and vain, who may not amuse their hearers with empty harangues about insignificant curiosities or perplexing subtilties; but may, in the integrity of their hearts, endeavour to approve themselves to God, as workmen who need not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. And may divine grace preserve the church from those seducing teachers, whose doctrine, like a secret gangrene, might spread itself to the destruction of the body, so that the faith of many might be overthrown.

SECT.
iii.

Ver.
9

10

11, 12,

13

15

17, 18,

SECT. IV.

The Apostle urges the necessity of holiness in all Christians, but especially in ministers; and of meekness in their endeavours to recover sinners from the miserable condition into which they were fallen. 2 Tim. II. 19, to the end.

2 TIMOTHY II. 19.

SECT.
IV.2 Tim.
II. 19.

IN order to excite thee, O Timothy, to contend earnestly for the great doctrines of the gospel, I have taken notice of the manner in which some have revolted from them. And it is matter of mournful reflection, that there should be such instances of apostacy in this early age of the church. Nevertheless, we recollect with pleasure that, whatever defections there may be in particular persons, *the great foundation Stone*, which the mercy and faithfulness of God has laid for the support and comfort of his people, *standeth firm and stedfast, having*, as it were, *this double seal or inscription*: on the one hand, *The Lord knoweth them that are his*, and as he surely distinguishes them in every circumstance, so he bears a steady and constant favour to them, nor can any alienate them from his gracious regards; and, on the other side, *Let every one that nameth the name of Christ*, every one that professes his religion, and pretends the least regard to him, *depart from iniquity*, let him stand off, and keep at the greatest distance from every kind and degree of immorality, from every appearance and occasion of sin. But, though our obligations to such a conduct be so many and so great, we cannot flatter ourselves that all professing Christians will be sensible of them. *For in a great house there are vessels, not only of gold and silver, but also of wood*

20

2 Tim. II. 19.

NEVERTHELESS, the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood

wood

[*Inscription.*] Many critics have justly observed, that the word *engraving*, often signifies an inscription, or the word made to a seal, as well as the seal itself. See Rev. ix. 4. And the expression is here used with peculiar propriety, in allusion to the custom of engraving upon some stone laid in the foundation of buildings the name of the person by whom, and the persons for whom, the structure is raised. And nothing can have a greater tendency to en-

courage the hope, and at the same time to engage the conscience of Christians, than this double inscription. For, worthy as appears that sentence, *The Lord knoweth them that are his*, and a positive reference to the apostle, in opposition to heretical teachers, and that it alludes to 1 Cor. xii. 13. 1. 8. group. That to know often signifies to count with, as well as to distinguish, hath been shown elsewhere. Rom. viii. 27.

b Rushmore,

wood, and of earth,
and some to honour:
and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the master's use, and prepared unto every good work.

22 Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto

wood and clay, the former being intended for honourable, the other for meaner and dishonourable uses: and accordingly there will be, in the church of God, persons of different characters, who will meet with very different treatment. *If therefore any one cleanse himself from these, if 21* he be careful to avoid the society of persons who have revolted from true religion, and made themselves instruments of impurity and iniquity, *he shall be a vessel of honour, sanctified and useful to the immediate and personal service of his great Lord and Master; and such an one will be constantly ready, as the nobler vessels of a house, to every good work, which will be the surest test of our real goodness. But flee from all occasions of exciting or gratifying the passions of youth; whether, on the one hand, the love of sensual pleasure, or, on the other, rashness, contention, pride, and vain-glory^b, to which young persons are peculiarly obnoxious: for these will render thee unfit for the honour of being used by the Lord for the purposes of his glory and the edification of his church. And therefore, instead of making provision for these, pursue, with the greatest ardour and intenseness of mind, righteousness and fidelity, love and peace; cultivate an upright, benevolent, candid temper towards all, and especially towards those that invoke the name of the Lord Jesus Christ out of a pure heart, so far as the conduct can discover the inward temper. But 23* avoid foolish and unlearned questions, knowing that, how curious soever they appear, they only tend to beget strifes and contentions in the church, and I reckon it a most important part of the learning of a Christian minister to guard against such occasions of offence and mischief.

Let the bigotted Jews, and the vain-glorious 24 heathens, on each side, split into ever so many different sects and parties, and dispute as eagerly about such things as they will; but the servant of the Lord, the Christian, and especially the minister, must not strive in an angry and hostile manner, but be mild and gentle towards all, ready

^b Rashness, contention, &c.] These are youthful passions, of the danger of which some heady young men, who may value themselves for their freedom from other scandals, seem to think but little;

yet it is plain, from the opposition between this and the latter part of the verse, they were particularly in Paul's mind when he gave this caution.

c That

SECT.
IV.
2 Tim.
II. 25.

ready to teach the ignorant, and instead of hurting [and] injuring any, be willing to endure evil from those who, instead of receiving his doctrine, repay his kindness with outrage. In meekness instructing opposers, if by any means God may perhaps, in his own due time, conquer their savage prejudices, and give them repentance to the acknowledgement of the truth; of which, through the riches of Divine grace, we see some instances, even where there had been a long and inveterate struggle against it. And surely it will be worth while to try every method on such unhappy souls, that they may awaken and recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who have lain sleeping, and as it were intoxicated in it, having been taken by that subtle fowler, and like a living prey, detained captive by him at his cruel pleasure, while perhaps they have been dreaming of liberty and happiness, in the midst of the most shameful bondage and the extremest danger.

unto all men, apt to teach, patient;

23 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. How affecting a representation is here made of the wretched state of sinners! they are described as sleeping in Satan's snare, like birds in a net, taken alive, and at the fowler's mercy; while they imagine they can spring up whenever they please, and range at full liberty. Alas! they will soon perceive their fatal captivity: but they will perceive it too late, if Divine grace do not quickly awaken them. Who would not wish to do something for their recovery? Let the ministers of the gospel pity them. Let us pray that God, whose work it is, would give them repentance to the acknowledgement of the truth. Let us try every gentle method which the sincerest compassion can dictate toward effecting so happy a design, and not suffer ourselves to be transported to undue severities of language, or of sentiments, even though we should receive

c That they may recover, &c.] In order to understand this beautiful metaphor, it is proper to observe, that the word *comedia* properly signifies, to awake from a deep sleep, or from a fit of insensibility (see *Thes. Graec. in voc.*), and refers to an action of angels to scatter seeds impregnated with some drugs intended to fix birds asleep, that they might drop the net over them with the greater security. The interpretation which a late writer has given of these words, who would

render them, *“being taken alive by him, that is, the Christian minister, for the purposes of the Divine will,”* is so unsuitable, that merely to compare it with the former is to confute it. (Taylor on *Orig. Ser.* p. 132.) Nor can any thing be more evidently wrong than to maintain that *“they”* necessarily implies a purpose of preserving, whereas it only imports *“that a capture, without determining whether it be for servitude or death.”* Compare 2 *Corin.* xiv. 13, 18 *preq.*

receive the greatest injuries where we intend the most important kindness. SECT.
iv.

Let those that have the honour to bear the most *holy* character, Ver. which any office can devolve on mortal man, avoid with the greatest care, every thing that would bring a stain, or even a suspicion, 22 upon it. Let them revere the voice of the great *apostle*, while it animates him to *pursue righteousness and faith, love and peace, with all* their fellow-Christians of every denomination, with all that *invoke Christ* and that trust in him. So shall they be *vessels* 21 *of honour*, so may they humbly hope that their *Lord* will condescend to make some special *use* of them, for the purposes of his own glory, and salvation of their fellow-creatures.

To conclude, let ministers and people be daily reading, with all 19 possible care, this *double inscription* on the *foundation of God*; and while we rejoice in the one, let us be admonished by the other. For what is it to us, that *the Lord knows*, distinguishes, and favours *his own*, that his almighty power protects them, and that his infinite mercy will for ever save them, if we are ourselves found among *the wicked, with whom he is angry every day*, among the workers of iniquity, whom he will publicly disown, and to whom he will say, *I know not whence you are*. To name the name of *Christ* with dispositions like these will be to injure and profane it; and our profession itself will be interpreted as an act of hostility against him, whom we have presumed so vainly to call the Foundation of our hopes, and the Sovereign of our souls.

SECT. V.

Paul cautions Timothy against that great declension and apostacy which was to prevail in the Christian world, and against those false teachers who were rising up in it; reminding him of the example he had seen in him, in the midst of such persecutions as were still to be expected. 2 Tim. III. 1—13,

2 Tim. III. 1.

THIS know also, that in the last days perilous times shall come.

2 TIMOTHY III. 1.

IT is the more necessary thus to urge thee to every precaution, and every effort, which may preserve the purity and honour of the Christian church, as, after all we can do for this purpose, such sad scenes are to open in it. We are indeed acquainted with our duty, and we shall find our own highest account in attending to it. *But this know, O Timothy, that in the last days*, under the evangelical dispensation, which is to wind up the economy of Providence, and is to remain in full force even to the end of the world, *difficult*

SECT.
v.

2 Tim.
III. 1

SECT.
X.2 Tim.
III. 2.

difficult times and circumstances shall arise, in which it will be hard to discharge our consciences, and at the same time maintain our safety. *For men shall be lovers of themselves*, in the most absurd and excessive degree; *lovers of money*, so as to be impelled to the basest practices by the hopes of obtaining it; *boasters* of what they have, and *proud* pretenders to what they have not; *blasphemers* of God, and revilers of their fellow-creatures; *disobedient to parents*, notwithstanding all the obligations they are under to their care and tenderness; *unthankful*, and ungrateful to other benefactors; *unholy*, though they profess themselves devoted to God, and consecrated to his service by the most solemn rites. They will be *institute of natural affection*, even to their own children, as well as of piety toward their parents; *implacable* where enmities have been commenced, and treacherous in their mutual engagements, when there has been a pretence of making them up; *false accusers*, in which they will imitate that diabolical malignity which renders the great enemy of mankind so justly odious; *intemperate* in their pleasures, *jealous* in their resentments, *grud* in their revenge; *destitute of all love to goodness*, though it so naturally excites a tribute of veneration and affection from every human heart which is not sunk into the last degeneracy. They will be *traitors* to those that place the greatest confidence in them, such base *traitors*, as even to give up

9. For men shall be lovers of their own belly, proud, unthankful, disobedient to parents, blasphemous, unholies.

8. Without natural affection, traitors, breakers, false accusers, intemperate, jealous, gruders, despisers, and those that are good.

4. Traitors, Leads, Right

4. Men shall be lovers of themselves, &c. Dr. Whitty, whose great pains it took that these chapters were applicable to the Jews in the last days of their commonwealth, well observes the same refers to the difficulty of attaining the Christian profession, as being used to preserve a resemblance with it. Many of the limitations here drawn, were not found to be found in the Jewish law, but, especially remarkable, ver. 10, 11, I rather chose to interpret the words as describing some, who not only professed Christianity, but pretended to teach it. And I must not leave to ordinary readers to that view, learned and ingenious dissertations of *Virgilio* (Homer, Book V. cap. 15) in which he attempts to prove that there was a great alteration in the face of the Christian church between the time of Jesus and Trajan, within which period he apprehends great numbers of professors to have departed from the strictness of Christian morals, as well as

the purity of doctrine. I cannot be satisfied that the second part of this remarkable account, which he produces from the Old Testament, in his sixth chapter, can be convincing as he thinks them ver. 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 97, 98, 99, 100, 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 117, 118, 119, 120, 121, 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151, 152, 153, 154, 155, 156, 157, 158, 159, 160, 161, 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193, 194, 195, 196, 197, 198, 199, 200, 201, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 208, 209, 210, 211, 212, 213, 214, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 221, 222, 223, 224, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 233, 234, 235, 236, 237, 238, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243, 244, 245, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 263, 264, 265, 266, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271, 272, 273, 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 280, 281, 282, 283, 284, 285, 286, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 296, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 313, 314, 315, 316, 317, 318, 319, 320, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 329, 330, 331, 332, 333, 334, 335, 336, 337, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342, 343, 344, 345, 346, 347, 348, 349, 350, 351, 352, 353, 354, 355, 356, 357, 358, 359, 360, 361, 362, 363, 364, 365, 366, 367, 368, 369, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 376, 377, 378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383, 384, 385, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 393, 394, 395, 396, 397, 398, 399, 400, 401, 402, 403, 404, 405, 406, 407, 408, 409, 410, 411, 412, 413, 414, 415, 416, 417, 418, 419, 420, 421, 422, 423, 424, 425, 426, 427, 428, 429, 430, 431, 432, 433, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438, 439, 440, 441, 442, 443, 444, 445, 446, 447, 448, 449, 450, 451, 452, 453, 454, 455, 456, 457, 458, 459, 460, 461, 462, 463, 464, 465, 466, 467, 468, 469, 470, 471, 472, 473, 474, 475, 476, 477, 478, 479, 480, 481, 482, 483, 484, 485, 486, 487, 488, 489, 490, 491, 492, 493, 494, 495, 496, 497, 498, 499, 500, 501, 502, 503, 504, 505, 506, 507, 508, 509, 510, 511, 512, 513, 514, 515, 516, 517, 518, 519, 520, 521, 522, 523, 524, 525, 526, 527, 528, 529, 530, 531, 532, 533, 534, 535, 536, 537, 538, 539, 540, 541, 542, 543, 544, 545, 546, 547, 548, 549, 550, 551, 552, 553, 554, 555, 556, 557, 558, 559, 560, 561, 562, 563, 564, 565, 566, 567, 568, 569, 570, 571, 572, 573, 574, 575, 576, 577, 578, 579, 580, 581, 582, 583, 584, 585, 586, 587, 588, 589, 590, 591, 592, 593, 594, 595, 596, 597, 598, 599, 600, 601, 602, 603, 604, 605, 606, 607, 608, 609, 610, 611, 612, 613, 614, 615, 616, 617, 618, 619, 620, 621, 622, 623, 624, 625, 626, 627, 628, 629, 630, 631, 632, 633, 634, 635, 636, 637, 638, 639, 640, 641, 642, 643, 644, 645, 646, 647, 648, 649, 650, 651, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 657, 658, 659, 660, 661, 662, 663, 664, 665, 666, 667, 668, 669, 670, 671, 672, 673, 674, 675, 676, 677, 678, 679, 680, 681, 682, 683, 684, 685, 686, 687, 688, 689, 690, 691, 692, 693, 694, 695, 696, 697, 698, 699, 700, 701, 702, 703, 704, 705, 706, 707, 708, 709, 710, 711, 712, 713, 714, 715, 716, 717, 718, 719, 720, 721, 722, 723, 724, 725, 726, 727, 728, 729, 730, 731, 732, 733, 734, 735, 736, 737, 738, 739, 740, 741, 742, 743, 744, 745, 746, 747, 748, 749, 750, 751, 752, 753, 754, 755, 756, 757, 758, 759, 760, 761, 762, 763, 764, 765, 766, 767, 768, 769, 770, 771, 772, 773, 774, 775, 776, 777, 778, 779, 780, 781, 782, 783, 784, 785, 786, 787, 788, 789, 790, 791, 792, 793, 794, 795, 796, 797, 798, 799, 800, 801, 802, 803, 804, 805, 806, 807, 808, 809, 810, 811, 812, 813, 814, 815, 816, 817, 818, 819, 820, 821, 822, 823, 824, 825, 826, 827, 828, 829, 830, 831, 832, 833, 834, 835, 836, 837, 838, 839, 840, 841, 842, 843, 844, 845, 846, 847, 848, 849, 850, 851, 852, 853, 854, 855, 856, 857, 858, 859, 860, 861, 862, 863, 864, 865, 866, 867, 868, 869, 870, 871, 872, 873, 874, 875, 876, 877, 878, 879, 880, 881, 882, 883, 884, 885, 886, 887, 888, 889, 890, 891, 892, 893, 894, 895, 896, 897, 898, 899, 900, 901, 902, 903, 904, 905, 906, 907, 908, 909, 910, 911, 912, 913, 914, 915, 916, 917, 918, 919, 920, 921, 922, 923, 924, 925, 926, 927, 928, 929, 930, 931, 932, 933, 934, 935, 936, 937, 938, 939, 940, 941, 942, 943, 944, 945, 946, 947, 948, 949, 950, 951, 952, 953, 954, 955, 956, 957, 958, 959, 960, 961, 962, 963, 964, 965, 966, 967, 968, 969, 970, 971, 972, 973, 974, 975, 976, 977, 978, 979, 980, 981, 982, 983, 984, 985, 986, 987, 988, 989, 990, 991, 992, 993, 994, 995, 996, 997, 998, 999, 1000.

5. Impudent and treacherous. The word *impudent* certainly takes in all ideas, and may be applied to him, who when once offended, will come into no kind of reconciliation, and also to such as will not think themselves bound by such treaties, when they may answer any purpose of their own by the violation of them.

6. Impudent

high-minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God;

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof, from such turn away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly woman laden with sins, led away with divers lusts;

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

c *Insinuate themselves, &c.*] This character, as we hinted above, seems rather to suit disaffected and seducing Christian teachers than infidel Jews, who no doubt

their brethren into the hands of persecutors; *heady* and rash in enterprising things, which can only issue in the disturbance of society, or the ruin of those that undertake them. In the mean time, they will be *puffed up with such insolence* and self-sufficiency, as to despise any remonstrance which can be made to bring them to a wiser and more decent conduct; and, upon the whole, will prove *lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God*; who will therefore sacrifice all considerations of religion to the gratification, of their appetites. And yet, in the midst of all these enormities, they will still profess themselves Christians, *having a form of godliness*, and observing with exactness the rituals and externals of religion, *but at the same time denying* and opposing *the power of it* in their lives, and demonstrating that it has no real influence upon them. *From such* therefore, even from all in whom thou discernest a temper like that which I have here described, *turn away*; avoid all intimacy with them, lest they should avail themselves of the friendship to which thou mightest admit them, as an advantage for doing further mischief; let it therefore evidently appear, that thou givest them no countenance.

This temper, as I have intimated before, has begun to appear in many of our contemporaries, of which [number are those artful deceivers, who insinuate themselves into houses, and are especially successful in their attempt to captivate inconsiderable women, of low rank, and mean understandings, yet easily inflamed with passionate zeal; being indeed, whatever pretences they may make to sanctity, *laden with sins*, and led aside by various lusts, which these seducers know how to flatter in such a manner as to make them their own property. These foolish creatures are *always learning*, they pretend to hear with great eagerness, and are charmed with every appearance of novelty and fervour; but they are tossed about with every gale of doctrine and never able to come to the acknowledgment of the truth, or to attain any fixed and steady principles.

carried it with an high hand, and would scorn to think of crouching to the leaders of so contemptible a sect as they called that of the Nazarenes.

d *James*

SECT.

v.

2 Tim.
III. 4.

SECT.
V.2 Thes.
III. 8.

ciples. And these designing wretches, of whom I have been speaking, seize on such as their proper prey, and just as *Jannes and Jambres*, the Egyptian magicians, withstood Moses when he came to Pharaoh with a message from God, so do these men also withstand the truth of the gospel. I speak of persons whose minds are utterly corrupted, who with respect to the faith are disapproved, and worthy of being rejected as enemies to it, and unworthy to know it, though they pretend so much zeal in its defence. But I foresee, that they shall not proceed much further in these artifices, for their folly shall be manifested to all, as theirs also was, when God sent upon the Egyptians plagues, which far from being able to remove, or mitigate, they could not, as in former instances, so much as imitate.

- But thou hast exactly traced, and been accurately acquainted with my doctrine, and my conversation, the steadiness of my aim, purpose, and resolution in the cause of God; that firm and uniform fidelity which I have always strenuously maintained, without yielding up any the least article of it; my long-suffering, when I had been treated in the most injurious manner; my love to all, however different in opinion, not excepting even mine enemies and persecutors; and my patience under such pressing trials. Particularly under the persecutions [and] sufferings which befel me in the Pisidian Antioch, Acts xiii. 45. in Iconium (xiv. 2) in Lystra (xiv. 19) where thou hast not only heard, but seen, what persecutions I endured; but the Lord Jesus, whom I serve, was still with me, and rescued me out of the snare. Yea, and all who are resolutely determined upon it, that they will live guiltily in Christ Jesus, that they will conduct themselves

8. Such as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth, men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith.

9. But they shall not proceed much further in these artifices, for their folly shall be manifest unto all, as theirs also was.

10. Trifled thou hast fully known my doctrine, my conversation, my aim, purpose, faith, long and forbearing charity, patience.

11. Persecutions, afflictions, which come unto me at Antioch, at Iconium at Lystra, what persecutions I endured; but not of them all the Lord hath rescued me.

12. Yea, and all that will live godly in

by

d Jannes and Jambres.] It is remarkable that the names of these are mentioned together with Moses, by Pharaoh, and both of them by Nimmios the philosopher, quoted in *Twelvers*, as celebrated magicians. See *Pier.* And *Thos.* lib. vii. cap. i. and *Epiph.* lib. 8, cap. 8. It is of no importance to enquire, by what tradition their names came down to so distant an age.

e Shall not proceed much further.] Translating it thus, will exactly resemble this with what is elsewhere said of their grow-

ing more and more, viz. and all their words ending in a progressive. Translate indeed explaining this and the with reason of different persons; thus, of some who had already appeared; that, of others who were going to come. But there seems yet the long need of having recourse to some solution.

f I have seen in Christ Jesus, &c.] This, as the Romans fully observing, may import something peculiar in the profession to be exercised by Christians, as being agreeable to the revelation of Christ, imitated by his example, dependent on his Spirit for assistance

Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

by the strict rules of piety, which he has prescribed, not turning aside to the right hand or the left, *shall suffer persecution*, or opposition of one kind or another; for Christ has decreed to lead all his people to glory, through a variety of difficulties and hardships. *But wicked men* 13 *and impostors*, by whatever artifices they may decline persecution, are in a yet more wretched state; for they provoke God to give them up to the lusts of their own heart, and so *will grow continually worse and worse*, more obstinate in their opposition to the gospel and its faithful ministers; *deceiving* others indeed by false and treacherous pretences, but *being* themselves much more fatally *deceived* by their own corruptions, which delude them with the visionary hope of some temporal advantage, while they are plunging into irrecoverable and everlasting ruin.

SECT.

V.

2 Tim.
III 12.

IMPROVEMENT.

MUST we not, on the survey of this *scripture*, in comparison Ver. 1. with what we every day behold in life, cry out, "*Verily these are the last days?*" They are assuredly times of *difficulty* and 2, 3 *peril*. *Self-love, pride, ingratitude, treachery, intemperance, insolence, and contempt of all authority*, human and divine, each, all 4 of these characters may too plainly declare it. But none with more striking evidence than the excessive *love of pleasure*, on which so many are doting to destruction, while every consideration, both of religion and of prudence, falls at the shrine of this favourite idol. Men are *lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God*, more than lovers of *their families*, yea, though self-interest be in many instances so scandalously pursued, yet more than lovers of *themselves*; and when they have sacrificed every thing else to their *gain*, they sacrifice even that *gain to luxury*. And would to God there was none such, even among those that retain the *form of Godliness*, which so many indeed have scornfully 5 cast off! But O! how vain the *form*, where the *power of it is thus denied*! And how peculiarly scandalous are these characters in those who call themselves *teachers* of religion! Yet to such they are here originally applied; and their race is not yet extinct. Blessed

assistance, and his atonement for acceptance with God. Important topics, which all who desire to obtain and promote god-

liness, ought to dwell much upon. See Evans's *Christian Temper*, Vol. I. p. 192.
a From

SECT. V. Blessed be God, there are those yet remaining who are the happy reverse of these; ministers, who can appeal to the consciences of men, as to their doctrine, their conversation, their resolution, their fidelity, their gentleness, their charity, and their patience. Happy are they, how ill soever they may be treated in the world. Happy would they be, though exposed to all the terrors of persecution which the apostles and their first followers endured! But we are all warned to prepare for some degree of it; and indeed who can wonder, if amidst so many evils, they who will not go on with the multitude should sometimes be rudely pressed by them; and it may be in some instances, cast down and trampled under foot. But be it so; though cast down, they shall not be destroyed. (2 Cor. iv. 9.) A little time will balance all. An hour of eternity will more than balance it. Let us guard against the deceits by which so many suffer. Let us guard, above all, against those deceits which men practise upon themselves, and whereby they hurt themselves infinitely more than all their fraud or violence can hurt any, who are not accessory to their own undoing.

SECT. VI.

To guard Timothy against those seducing teachers, and to preserve the church from their evil influence, Paul recommends to him the study of the scriptures, and great diligence in all the parts of his ministerial work; reflecting with pleasure on his own fidelity in the nearest views of martyrdom for the truth. 2 Tim. III. 14, to the end. IV. 1—8.

2 TIMOTHY III. 14.

SECT.

V.

2 Tim.

III. 14.

I HAVE mentioned the case of these wretched men, who grow worse and worse, deceiving others, and themselves most of all. But that thou, O Timothy, mayest effectually avoid them, continue thou, steadfast in the things which thou hast learnt from me, and hast believed upon the authority of God speaking in and by me; knowing from whom thou hast learnt [them] and what convincing proofs I have given thee, both of my general integrity, and of that extraordinary inspiration by which I teach. And knowing also, that the oracles of the Old Testament confirm the system of doctrines which I have taught; of which thou must be very sensible, because from thine infancy thou hast known the

2 Tim. III. 14.

BUT continue thou in the things which thou hast learnt, and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learnt them.

15 And that from a child thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith

a [from these is long.] Hence it appears that this command only teach some

useful lessons from scripture, and that they ought to be early initiated into the study of

faith which is in Christ Jesus,

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness :

17 That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

IV. 1. I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at

the sacred scriptures, in which the grand leafning of our Jewish nation consists; and *which* are indeed most worthy of being studied by all, as *they are able to make thee*, and all that faithfully admit and follow their guidance, *wise unto eternal salvation*; a science infinitely nobler and more important than human literature in its greatest refinements can pretend to teach, and which is to be learned only *through that faith which is in Christ Jesus*. For the whole scripture, received by the Jewish church, [is] *divinely inspired*^b, and therefore, as may well be imagined, is *profitable* to the highest purposes. It is fitted for doctrine, as it lays down the most fundamental principles of religion, in the view it gives us of the Divine nature and perfections, and for conviction of those opposite errors, which the licentious and perverse wit of man has invented in so great abundance, and set off with so many plausible arguments. It is also useful for the reproof of irregularities in practice, which how speciously soever they may be defended by the sophistry of these that think it their interest to plead for them, quickly fall before the authority of the Divine word. And when men have submitted to it, they will also find it effectual for instruction in righteousness, and will be led on from one degree of virtue and piety to another, with a progress which will continually advance, in proportion to the regard they pay to that Divine book. To this therefore, I hope thou, O Timothy, and every minister of the gospel, will diligently apply, *that the furniture of the man of God may be complete*, and that he may be *thoroughly fitted for every good work* which his holy calling may require. I charge [thee] therefore, considering what I have urged in the former part of this epistle, in the most awful manner, *before the great and blessed God, and the Lord Jesus Christ*, his only begotten Son, *who shall judge the living and the dead*, and pronounce on them all their final and everlasting doom, *at his last public glorious appearance*

sect.
vi.
2 Tim.
III. 15.

16

17

I V 1.

of the sacred letters; directly contrary to what the church of Rome teaches.

b *The whole scripture [is] divinely inspired*]. Grotius translates the words, *the whole divinely inspired scripture is profitable*, &c. which they will undoubtedly bear;

and as we may be sure that, by scripture, the apostle means the books which the Jews received as canonical, that version, gives a true sense; but I take this, which is our own, to be more literal.

c *They*

SECT.
VI.2 Tim.
IV. 2.

ance, when the extent and majesty of his kingdom shall appear in full display: I charge thee to execute the important trust committed to thee with the strictest fidelity. For this purpose, *preach the word of God* with all possible seriousness and earnestness; *be instant in the prosecution of that good work*, in the stated *season* of religious assemblies, [and] *out of that season*, when occasional providences may give thee an opportunity; yea, carry it into thy private conversation, in the intervals of thy public labours. Endeavour to *convince* the consciences of men, and to reclaim them from their erroneous principles; *rebuke* them for their irregularities and vices, without fearing the face of any; and *exhort* them to diligence and zeal in the performance of their duty, *with all long suffering*, though thou mayest not immediately see the desired success; and enforce these exhortations with all those well-known and important motives which the *doctrine* of the gospel may suggest. Seize the present opportunity with all eagerness, *for I see that the time will quickly come, when they will not endure good and wholesome doctrine, but, thinking themselves above the plainness of moral and practical instructions, shall wantonly heap up to themselves seducing teachers*, whose harangues shall be just according to the prejudices of *their own lusts*, having nothing else to recommend them, unless it be perhaps a glare of false and affected eloquence, which may gratify the vain curiosity and *itching ears* of their hearers. And so unhappily will their minds be disposed, that *they shall turn away [their attention] from simple truth*, of the greatest certainty, on which nothing less than their salvation depends, *and shall be turned aside to idle fables*, which they eagerly drink in, under a fond semblance of mystery and obscure science, which they pretend to be veiled in these abstruse and enigmatical forms.

at his appearing, and his kingdom:

2 Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

4 And they shall turn away their ears from simple truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

But

c *They shall heap up to themselves teachers* [Mr. Slater, in his *Original Deceit*, &c. p. 126, urges this text, as an argument against allowing to the people the choice of their own ministers; but that right is by no means in question here. The danger there was of men's hearkening to erroneous and seducing teachers, would upon every imaginable hypothesis,

be a solid argument for Timothy's exerting himself to the utmost, in *preaching the word*, and endeavouring to guard the churches against errors which might otherwise soon have become fatally prevalent. I must add, that the expression, *heaping up to themselves*, implies, that they should be *deceivers* of such, and that they should meet with many such a character.

d Accomplish

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, make full proof of thy ministry.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness which the Lord the righteous Judge shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

But be thou, O Timothy, diligent and watchful in all things that may tend to the security of thy charge; and prepare thyself resolutely to endure adversity, and to perform the full work of an evangelist, and fully to accomplish all the branches of thy ministry^d. And the rather, considering how soon the world will lose whatever advantage it may now receive from my personal labours; for I may well conclude, from my age and circumstances, that I am now, as it were, just ready to be offered, to be poured out as a libation upon God's altar, and the time of my departure is near at hand; the time when I shall be dismissed from this state of confinement, when I shall weigh anchor from these mortal shores, and launch into the ocean of eternity. And, while I stand on the borders of that awful state, it is with unspeakable pleasure I reflect, that I have maintained the good combat against the sharpest opposition, that I have finished [my] race, though it has been so arduous, that I have kept the holy faith committed to my trust, and, with the strictest fidelity, endeavoured to preserve it free from human additions and corruptions. It remaineth [that] a crown of righteousness and glory is laid up in sure reserve for me, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, who presides in this great exercise, shall, with distinguished honour, before the assembled world, render and award to me, in that illustrious day^e, upon which our hopes and hearts are set: and it is the joy of my soul to think, that he shall not assign it to me alone, but to all them also who love the thoughts of his final appearance to the universal judgment, and are, or shall be, making a wise and pious preparation for it.

SECT.
vi.

2 Tim.
IV. 5.

IMPROVE-

^d *Accomplish thy ministry.*] It must surely have been owing to a strong prepossession in favour of *Diocesan Episcopacy*, that the worthy person I mentioned above could imagine these words contained an argument for it. He explains the words *πληροφρονησον την επισκοπιαν σου*, as an exhortation to take upon him the complete office of a bishop, because Paul himself was ready to quit it; not considering how ill this interpretation agrees with his own supposition, of Timothy's being in the episcopal office when Paul wrote his first epistle to him. Whatever Timothy's office were, the argument which Paul suggests, of the satisfaction

he found in the reflection on his own fidelity, would be very conclusive.

^e *In that day.*] This text will certainly prove, that the great and most glorious reward of faithful Christians, is referred to the day of general judgment. But it would be very precarious to argue from hence, that there shall be no prelibation and anticipation of this happiness in a separate state. And when the many texts, which have been so often urged in proof of that intermediate happiness, are considered, it is surprising that any stress can be laid on the objection which has been drawn from such passages as this.

IMPROVEMENT.

secr.
vi.

Chap.
iv. 6.

BEHOLD this blessed man, *this prisoner, this martyr of Christ* appearing in his chains, and in the near views of a violent death, more truly majestic and happy, than *Cæsar* on his *imperial throne*! Blessed man indeed: who could look upon the pouring forth of his blood, as the *libation* of a sacrifice of thanksgiving, on which he could call for the *congratulations* of his friends, rather than their *condolence*; who could *hasten* from these mortal shores, and set sail for eternity with a shout! O may we all be excited by his example to *fight the good fight*, to *finish our course*, to *keep the faith*, in the view of that *crown of righteousness*, which is not reserved only for *Paul*, or for ministers and Christians of the *best* rank, who have been eminent for the most distinguished services, but for *all who love Christ's appearance*, and whose hearts are thoroughly reconciled to his government!

May we therefore be *watchful in all things*. May we *endure* every affliction which God shall lay in our way, and fill up with proper services every station in which we are fixed. Let the *ministers of Christ* attend to this solemn charge, *before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge both the quick and the dead, at his appearance and in his kingdom*. They are as much concerned in this judgment as *Timothy* or *Paul*; their own eternal state is in question, and none can have greater reason than themselves to be impressed with it. Let as many therefore as are called to it by Divine Providence and grace, *preach the word* with zeal and fervency, as well as fidelity; let them be *instant in season*, and *out of season*, with a resolution tempered with gentleness, and supported by firm faith in him, who entrusts them with the message. And let the petulency of men, which indisposes them to *endure sound doctrine*, yet makes them need it so much the more, be considered by them as an engagement to greater zeal, rather than an excuse for remissness.

chap.
iv. 17.

That they may be animated to it, and furnished for it, *thoroughly furnished for every good work* incumbent upon them, as *men of God*, a becoming reverence is to be maintained for the *divinely inspired scriptures*, apparently *profitable for doctrine and reproof, for correction, and instruction in righteousness*. Let us all esteem it our great happiness, if *from children we have been acquainted* with them; let us study them diligently, and take faithful care to deliver them down to those that arise after us, as the *oracles* of that eternal wisdom by which we and they may be made *wise to salvation*.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle concludes with requesting Timothy to come to him, giving him an account of the manner in which he had, in his late appearance before the heathen magistrate at Rome, been deserted by men, but supported by Christ; and adding some particular salutations and directions. 2 Tim. IV. 9, to the end.

2 TIM. IV. 9.

DO thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

2 TIMOTHY IV. 9.

SECT.
vii.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee; for he is profitable to me for the ministry.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

I MIGHT add much more on this occasion, but the hope I have of seeing thee ere long, makes me the easier in omitting it. I cannot but be very desirous of such an interview. Endeavour therefore by all means to come to me here at Rome as quickly as possible. For I need the assistance and company of such a faithful friend, as I have met with very unworthy treatment from some who ought to have acted in a very different manner. And I must particularly inform thee that *Demas hath forsaken me, having loved the present world, and followed another way, as his secular views invited him. In pursuit of these, he is gone to Thessalonica, as Crescens is to Galatia, and Titus, for whom thou knowest I have a very high regard, is gone to Dalmatia. Luke alone, whose faithful friendship I have long experienced, is still with me. I desire thou wouldst take the first opportunity of engaging the company of Mark, [and] bring him along with thee, for he is useful to the advancement of my ministry among the Gentiles, having often attended both Barnabas and me in our progress amongst them. Thou wilt perceive, by what I have just been saying, what reason I have to wish for the society of an approved Christian friend and brother, at a time when I am left thus destitute: yet preferring the edification of the church of Christ to any personal consideration of my own, I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus, where I some years ago left thee,*

a *Demas hath forsaken me.*] I think we can neither be certain, that Demas was ever a good man, from Paul's speaking of him, as one whom in the judgment of charity he hoped to be so, nor can we certainly infer from his dishonourable conduct on this occasion, that he totally apostatized

from Christianity, and much less that he never returned to a sense of it more. John Mark had once acted a part very like this, yet was evidently restored to the esteem of our apostle. Compare Acts xv. 38, with the next verse of this chapter.

b Bring

the care of the flourishing church
 planted there, and with some of whose
 members I have had so long and intimate an ac-
 quaintance. *When thou comest* hither, as I
 am not quickly wilt, I desire thou wouldst
 remember to bring [with thee] that *cloak*
 which I left at the house of our friend Carpus, in
 Thessalonica, when I passed through it the last time.
 I am not bringing also the books which I have left there,
 but especially the parchments^b.

14 When I speak of these parts, I cannot for-
 get to tell thee, that *Alexander the leather-
 shoemaker* brought many evils and mischiefs upon me.
 And I doubt not but the Lord, who exercises a
 guardian care over me as his faithful servant,
 will sooner or later reward him according to his
 works. May it be an instructive and merciful
 discipline, to reform rather than to destroy him.

15 Against whom, in the mean time, be thou also
 particularly upon thy guard, or thou mayest re-
 ceive much detriment from him; for he hath
 not only done me a great deal of personal in-
 jury, but hath greatly withstood our words, and
 taken every measure in his power to prevent
 the progress and advancement of the gospel,
 which is indeed wounding me in the most ten-
 der and sensible part.

16 In my first apology before the prefect of the
 city, no man of all the Christians here at Rome,
 appeared with me, for my countenance and sup-
 port, but all, either through treachery or cow-
 ardice, forsook me^c. May it not be charged

13 The cloak that I
 left at Thessalonica with Car-
 pus, when thou comest,
 bring with thee and
 the books, but especially
 the parchments.

14 Alexander the
 leather-smith did me
 much evil; the Lord
 reward him according
 to his works.

15 Of whom he thus
 wrote also: but he hath
 greatly withstood our
 words.

16 At my first ap-
 pearance no man stood
 with me, but all men
 forsook me. I know
 that

b *Bring with thee that cloak*. If *cloak*
 here signifies *cloak*, or *robe*, as in
 Quaker justly observes, a proof of Paul's
 poverty, that he had occasion to send in
 for the such a garment, which probably
 was not quite a new one. But some un-
 derstand by it, either a parchment roll or
 something like a postscriptum, the contents
 of which might be more important than
 the thing itself.

c *At Thess.*] See the *Introduction* to
 this epistle, p. 3.

d *The parchments.*] Bishop Hall thinks
 these parchments might be a kind of com-
 mon place book, in which the apostle inserted
 hints and extracts of what seemed
 most remarkable in the authors he read.

e *Alexander the leather.*] The name of
 Alexander was so common, that we can-
 not certainly say, whether this were the
 person mentioned, Acts xix, 33, or 1 Tim.

1 20:1 but what is here said of this lea-
 ther匠 agrees well with the last passage,
 that I think it probable it refers to the
 same man. What we know of Paul's
 character must lead us to conclude, that
 if he meant not the following words as a
 mere prediction, he did not however wish
 evil to him, or evil, but only that he might
 be so advertised upon, as to prevent
 the contagion of his bad example from
 spreading in the church, and bring him
 to repentance and reformation, that so he
 might be preserved from total destruc-
 tion.

f *I did men forsook me.*] Many circum-
 stances make it attainable, that Paul
 should have been deserted by the Chris-
 tians at Rome, in this extremity. When
 he wrote his epistle to the church there,
 which must have been ten years before
 this, he speaks of their faith, as celebrat-
 ed,

God that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me; that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom; to

to their account, as an instance of unfaithfulness to our common Master! Yet I was not left entirely destitute, but can say it with great pleasure, that *the Lord Jesus Christ stood by me, and strengthened me* with that inward fortitude of soul which no human support could have inspired; *that by me the preaching [of his gospel] might be carried on with confidence*, and [that] *all the nations might hear*; for I made my defence in a manner that will, I doubt not, be taken notice of, and reported abroad, much to the advantage of that sacred cause, which is dearer to me than my life. And though this plain and faithful testimony did indeed expose me to great danger, yet *I was* for the present rescued, like Daniel, *out of the mouth of the lion*; so that fierce as he was, God did not suffer him to devour me, when he seemed to have me at his mercy. And I am confident, that *the Lord*, whose power and faithfulness are always the same, *will rescue me* from what I fear much more than any thing this body can suffer, even *from every evil work*; will strengthen me against the most pressing and violent temptations, so that I shall do nothing unbecoming my Christian

SECT.
vii.

2Tim.
IV. 17.

ed through the world; (Rom. i. 8.) He salutes a vast number of illustrious persons by name, and mentions many of them as his particular friends, (xvi. 3—15); and we may assure ourselves, that, during the two years he spent there in his hired house; when access was granted to all that desired it, the number, and probably the zeal of Christian converts would be greatly increased; as indeed he expressly assures the Philippians that it was, and that some of *Cæsar's palace* was added to them. (Phil. I. 12—14; iv. 22.) We are ready to say, How then was it possible he should be thus forsaken? But there is a material circumstance, seldom taken notice of in this connection, which accounts in a great measure for what might otherwise appear so strange. Clement, the companion of Paul, informs us, that he suffered martyrdom under the governors, (as Bishop Pearson and L'Enfant explain *μαρτυρησας επι των ηγεμενων*; that is, as they understand it, when Nero was gone into Greece, and had left the government of the city to Tigellinus and Sabinus, prefects of the prætorian guard, and that monster Helius. If this be allowed, it fixes the death of Paul to A. D. 66, to 67. But the cruel persecution, which Nero had raised against

the Christians at Rome, in which they were worried in the skins of wild beasts, and burnt alive for a kind of public illumination,) was, according to Tacitus, at least two years before this. It is possible, therefore, that many of the excellent persons mentioned above might have suffered death for their religion, or according to our Lord's advice, (Mat. x. 23,) have retired to a distance from Rome. The Asiatic Christians, who came with Paul, as it seems, to rally the broken remains of this once celebrated church, acted a mean part in deserting Paul, as the other Christians of the place did. But it is less surprising upon the supposition above, than it would otherwise would have appeared; and it might be among the first-fruits of that sad apostacy which Vitranga (as was elsewhere observed,) supposes to have begun in the time of Nero, and continued to that of Trajan. See note^a, on 2 Tim. iii. 1.

^a Carried on with confidence. So the original *πληροφρονηθη*, here signifies. Calvin truly observes, that it was a glorious testimony to the honour of Christianity, that the apostle could thus bravely maintain it when all his friends forsook him, and his enemies were so fiercely raging against him.

^b Priscilla

SECT. VII. tian faith, or ministerial office, and thus will preserve and conduct [me] to his heavenly kingdom
 e Tim. with peace and triumph; to him therefore [be]
 IV. 19. glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 I must conclude with desiring thee to salute *Priscilla and Aquila*^a, those dear friends, with whom I have had so agreeable an acquaintance and intercourse these many years; and also the family of good *Onesiphorus*. In my last journey through Asia and Greece I had the affliction to part with some of our common friends, whose conversation and company would have been very

to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 desirable, had Providence permitted it. *Eras-tus* in particular abode at Corinth^b, and *Trophimus* I left sick at Miletus^c; nor did the Lord, who hath made me an instrument of miraculous

20 I erastes abode at Corinth, and Trophimus these I left at Miletum sick.

21 healing to so many strangers permit me at that time to be so to him. Endeavour therefore as I am deprived of these agreeable friends, and surrounded with so many dangers and enemies which threaten my life, to come to me before winter^d. Several Christians here at Rome desire I would send their commendations to thee: and in particular *Eubulus* salutes thee, and *Pudens*, and *Lanus*, and *Claudia*, and indeed

21 Do thy diligence to visit before winter, Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Lanus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 all the brethren in general. My heart is as at all times full of the tenderest affection for thee; which

22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit.

[*a* *Priscilla and Aquila*.] This has often been urged, as a conclusive argument, to prove that Timothy was not at Ephesus, because it was there that Apollos met with them, (Acts xviii. 26.) but they might have removed from thence, as they did from Corinth, to which place they came when first banished from Rome. *Id.* ver. 2.

[*b* *Erasmus abode at Corinth*, &c.] It is probable this was his native city, or at least a place where he had a stated charge. See Rom. xvi. 23. It seems by this clause that he was in Paul's company when he parted with Timothy, as it is likely Trophimus also was. And, as you can suppose Paul would have mentioned those things to Timothy in this commendation, if they had happened many years before, (Acts xix. 35.) I look upon this as a very material argument to prove that he returned into those eastern parts, between his first and second imprisonment at Rome, though probably, if he ever saw Ephesus again, most of the ministers of that and the neighbouring places, with whom he had the celebrated interview at Miletus, mentioned Acts xx, were either dead or removed. See ver. 22. *note*, and ver.

22, *note*, Vol. III. p. 299. and 315. Compare the Introduction to the first epistle to Timothy, 3. d. IV. p. 566.

[*c* *I left sick*.] It has been very justly argued from this *note*, that a power of working miracles did not remain in the apostles; and indeed, if it had, one can hardly imagine that any good and useful man would have been sick, and died under that notice, which would have been quite inconsistent with the scheme of Providence. Timothy's frequent infirmities afford a farther argument to the same purpose. Compare Acts viii. 25. *note*, Vol. VIII. p. 22. But such and such as these did not need the miraculous cure of their own disorders, to confirm their faith in the gospel.

[*d* *Come to me before winter*.] Bishop Hall in his *Familiar Sermon* for *Epiphany*, p. 6, comparing with this text Heb. xiii. 22, concludes that Timothy did come, and was seized at Rome, and confined longer than Paul himself; but it seems much more probable that the epistle to *Timothy*, was written during Paul's first imprisonment, and consequently several years before this.

rit. Grace be with
you. Amen.

which I cannot express better than by praying, as I most sincerely do, that *the Lord Jesus Christ*, himself may [be] ever present *with thy spirit*, and shed abroad those sanctifying, quickening, and comforting influences of Divine grace, which may fit thee for all thou hast to do and bear under thy Christian and ministerial character. And wherever this finds thee, I desire thou wouldst assure my fellow-Christians that I wish them well. May *grace [be] with you* all, as your circumstances require, to render you more eminently useful in the present state, and prepare you for complete and everlasting happiness in the next. *Amen.*

SECT.
vii.

2 Tim.
IV. 22.

IMPROVEMENT.

Be this our prayer for ourselves and our friends, that the *grace of Ver.*
our Lord Jesus Christ may be with their spirits and ours; that 22
though we have not seen him here, neither can see him, we may
ever feel his vital presence, and may live and act as ever near him, 17
and as conscious that he is ever with us. Then may we promise
ourselves that while *he stands by us*, we shall be *strengthened*, how
weak soever we are in ourselves; that we shall be comforted, who-
ever may *desert us*; that we shall be rescued from the extremest
dangers, *delivered out of the mouth of the infernal lion*, and safely 18
preserved to his heavenly kingdom.

That such a *confessor* as the holy apostle *St. Paul* should have
been *deserted*, at the time of his *apology*, when there must have
been so large a number of *Christians at Rome*, may justly appear 16
one of the most surprising circumstances recorded in the sacred
history. It teaches us to *cease from man*, and to repose ourselves
with some caution upon the friendship of the very best. It teaches
us to watch over *ourselves*, lest the *fear of man* should bring a
snare upon us, (Prov. xxix, 25,) and lead us to be ashamed of
Christ in his members. It concurs with the apostacy of *Demas*, to
warn us that we beware of *loving this present world*, and keep 10
our eyes more steadily fixed on a better, in which our highest in-
terest lies, and by regarding which, our souls will acquire a cer-
tain uniform tenor, that will prove their honour and their safety.

The readiness of *Paul*, amidst such a dearth of true and faith- 10, 12
ful friends, to part with those that yet remained, when he thought
the service of *Christianity* required it, is an amiable and instructive
part of his character. They know not the heart of a *man*, and
the duty of a *Christian* aright, who know not that even the *tenor*
and

SECT.
VII.

and friendly passions are to be guarded against, and admitted no farther than reason and religion will warrant; and that such society as is far dearer to us than any animal delight, or secular ac-
 Ver. commolation, is often to be *given up*, that our fidelity to God may be approved.

13 Once more, it is obvious to remark, that *Paul*, though favoured with such extraordinary degrees of *Divine inspiration*, sets a proper value upon *books*, and expresses a great concern about their being safely conveyed to him. Let us therefore pity the *ignorance*, rather than imitate the *enthusiasm* and *madness*, of those that set learning at defiance, especially in the *ministers* of the gospel. Let us thankfully acknowledge the Divine goodness, in having furnished us with so many excellent *writings* of wise and pious men in all ages; and let us endeavour, by frequent converse with them, to improve our furniture, *that our preaching may appear unto all men*. Yet let us all remember, that how large and well-chosen soever our *library* may be, the *sacred* volume is of infinitely greater importance than all that *Greece*, or *Rome*, or *Britain* has produced, or the united labours of all the best of men who have written since it was concluded. And let the *Christian minister* remember, that the *two epistles*, through which we have now passed, and that which we are next to survey, are to be esteemed by him amongst the most edifying and important parts even of that incomparable and Divine book.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITION ON THE SECOND EPISTLE
 TO TIMOTHY.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A
PARAPHRASE

ON
THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO
TITUS.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.



A
GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO TITUS.

TITUS, to whom this *epistle* is addressed, was a Greek, (Gal. ii. 3;) and was probably converted to Christianity by St. Paul, as we may conclude from the title he gives him of *his own son after the common faith*, (Tit. i. 4.) though the particular time of his conversion cannot be ascertained.—The earliest account of him we meet with (for Luke does not once mention his name in the *Acts*) is in Gal. ii. 1, where the *apostle* says, he took him with him from Antioch to Jerusalem, fourteen years after his conversion, to attend the grand council that was held there, in the year 49; and, as Titus was of Gentile parents, and consequently uncircumcised, St. Paul would not suffer him to submit to that rite, that he might not seem to abridge the liberty of the *Christian Gentiles*, (ver. 3.)

Some years after this, we find the *apostle* had sent him to Corinth, (2 Cor. xii. 18,) to inquire into the state of things in that church, and particularly to learn what effect his former letter had produced. The intelligence Titus brought St. Paul at his return, gave him the highest satisfaction, as it far exceeded all his expectations, (chap. vii. 6—13;) and, as Titus had expressed a particular regard for the Corinthians, he thought proper to send him back again, with some others to hasten the collection for the poor Christians in Judea; (chap. viii. 6.) After this, we hear no more mention of him, till he is spoken of in this *epistle*, as having been with St. Paul in Crete.—It appears, that the *apostle* had a very great regard for him, not only from his appointing him to take care of the church he had planted in Crete, but from the manner in which he speaks of his discharging the commission he gave him to the Corinthians, and the honourable terms in which he recommends him to them as *his partner and fellow-helper*; (chap. viii. 23.)

This

This *epistle* was most *probably* written in some part of St. Paul's last progress through the Asiatic churches, between his first and second imprisonment at Rome; and consequently the last of his epistles, except the second to Timothy: but nothing can be *certainly* determined, either as to its *date*, or the *place* from which it was sent; for though the spurious *postscript* supposes it to have been written from Nicopolis, yet the contrary seems to be plainly intimated, chap. iii. 12; as the *apostle* says not, I propose to winter *here*, (which would have been most natural, if he had resided there when he was writing) but *there*; which shews he was at that time in some *other* place.—However, it is plain Titus was at Crete when he received it, where St. Paul had left him, to settle the church he had established there, and carry on the work he had begun. Accordingly the greatest part of the epistle is taken up in giving him directions for the more successful discharge of his ministry amongst them; and particularly for his behaviour towards those corrupt Judaizing teachers who endeavoured to pervert the faith and disturb the peace of the Christian church.

The *apostle*, after a short introduction, in which (agreeably to the design of the *epistle*) he intimates that he was commissioned by Christ to preach the gospel to the Gentiles, reminds Titus of the special reasons for which he left him at Crete, and directs him on what principles he was to act in the ordination of those Christian ministers who were to take the oversight of particular churches; representing them as persons not only of a blameless, but exemplary character, who should be eminent for their piety, and for every social and personal virtue, as well as thoroughly established in the Christian faith; chap. i. 1—9. And to make Titus more sensible of the necessity of using this precaution, he puts him in mind of those seducing Judaizing teachers with which that church was infested; who, under the mask of greater zeal and knowledge than others, concealed the grossest corruption of morals, and whose mischievous attempts were the more likely to succeed, considering the general character of the Cretans. Such therefore he directs him to reprove, with great severity, and, in opposition to their false and dangerous tenets, advises him to accommodate his exhortations to the different sorts of persons with whom he conversed, according to their respective sexes, ages, and circumstances. And to give the greater weight to his instructions, he admonishes him to be himself an example of what he taught, and by the purity of his doctrine, as well as the innocence of his conduct, to silence his opponents, ver. 10, *to the end*. Chap. ii. 1—8. St. Paul then proceeds to urge on Titus a care to instruct servants in the duties of their station, that they might, according to their sphere, do an honour to the religion they professed; and represents the obligation they were under to such a conduct, from the great design of the gospel-institution, and our Saviour's sufferings and death, which was to deliver mankind from sin, and form them to universal holiness in heart and life, ver. 9, *to the end*.—Agreeably to this view of religion the *apostle* exhorts Titus to enforce

force subjection to the civil magistrate, and a readiness to all good works; to caution against censoriousness and contention, and recommend a meek, peaceable, and forgiving temper: which he intimates might the more reasonably be expected from Christian Gentiles, as before their conversion their character had been so corrupt. This leads him to acknowledge the grace of God in Christ, to which all Christians were indebted for the change produced in them, and for the hopes of salvation they were taught to entertain: from whence he takes occasion to remind Titus of the importance of insisting upon the great doctrines of *practical* religion, in opposition to those empty speculations and useless controversies to which some were attached. In the close of the epistle he directs him how to proceed with respect to heretical teachers; and having expressed his desire to see him at Nicopolis, where he proposed to winter, he concludes with a general salutation; chap. iii. 1, *to the end of the epistle.*

Upon a review of this, and the two epistles to Timothy, it is natural to reflect how much they tend to illustrate and confirm the internal evidence of Christianity.—It has been often observed, and very justly, that nothing sets the characters of great men in so *true* a light as their *letters* to their particular friends: while they are attracting in the eye of the world they frequently appear in *disguise*, and the *real* motives of their conduct lie out of sight; but in their *familiar correspondence* they open their minds with freedom, and throw off all reserve. If therefore any should object to the argument drawn from St. Paul's epistles to the *churches*, that, as they were designed for the *public* view, he would be upon his guard, not to let any expression escape him that might give the world an unfavourable idea of himself or the cause in which he was engaged; yet certainly, when he is writing, as in this and the two former epistles, to his most *intimate friends*, who were embarked with him in the same design, and with whom therefore he could use the utmost confidence, we may reasonably expect to find him disclosing his *real* sentiments, stripped of all artifice and disguise.—And now, upon the most accurate and impartial examination of these epistles, what do we discover? Can we trace any marks of insincerity and imposture? Does the *apostle* wear any other character than that in which he had appeared to the whole world? Does he drop the least hint that can lead one so much as to suspect that he had been only *acting a part*, and imposing upon mankind? Can we perceive the least shadow of *inconsistency* between the views he gives of religion in *these* and his *other* writings? Is there any thing like that *double doctrine* which some have charged upon the ancient philosophers?—On the contrary, is it not most evident, that he founded his *own* hopes, and formed his *own* conduct, upon the very same principles which he recommended to *others*; that he had no views of *secular interest* or *ambition* to gratify, and was influenced by no other *motives* than those which he openly avowed in the face of the world: in a word, that his *character*, as well as his *doctrine*, was *consistent* and *uniform*, and his

his *inward sentiments* the same with his *outward profession*? The instructions he gives his friends for the exercise of their office had nothing of art or subtility, but were all plain and simple, and centred in that grand design of advancing the interests of religion and the happiness of mankind, which ever lay near his heart: and so far is he from flattering them with the prospect of any *worldly* advantage, that he exhorts them to be ready after his example, to sacrifice every *temporal* interest, and even *life* itself, in the cause they had undertaken to support.

Now if this be allowed a just representation of the case, it will certainly follow, that the *apostle* was *himself* thoroughly persuaded of the truth and importance of those doctrines he had taught: and since it may be easily proved, and the *evidence* on which he built his faith was of such a nature, as to exclude all possibility of *mistake*, we may safely conclude, upon the credit of *his* testimony *alone* (had we no other arguments to produce), that the Christian religion is not a *cunningly devised fable*, formed to answer the ambitious or interested views of its authors, but that it is indeed *the power of God, and the wisdom of God*.

A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

T I T U S.

SECTION I.

Paul, after a proper introduction, reminds Titus of the special reasons for which he left him at Crete; and directs him on what principles he should act in the ordination of those Christian ministers who were to take the oversight of particular churches.
 Tit. I. 1—9.

TITUS I. 1.

PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness:

TITUS I. 1.

THIS epistle is written by *Paul, a servant of the one living and true God, and an apostle of his only begotten Son, Jesus Christ, for the advancement of the faith of God's chosen people and to promote the acknowledgment of the truth of the gospel; that Divine doctrine which [is] according to godliness, and has the greatest tendency to promote the interest of the true religion in all its branches; Whilst it exhibits, in so clear a manner, the hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, nor deceive any of his creatures, hath not only, as under the former dispensation, intimated to us, but expressly promised to all believers, in consequence of those*
 great

SECT. I.

Titus
I. 1.

² In hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before

^a For the faith, &c.] This is the proper signification of *κατα πίστιν*, in this connection, which expresses the end to which

his labours tended. Compare 1 Tim. vi. 3. See *Raph. ex. Xen. in loc.*

^b Before

- great engagements into which he entered with his Son, under the character of our Surety and Redeemer, *before the world began*^b, or time was divided into these revolving periods which measure out its succeeding ages. The plan was distinctly drawn in his all-comprehensive mind; *but he hath now manifested it, in his own due and well-chosen time, by his word*, which administers to us that glorious hope, *by the public preaching and declaration of it, with which I was intrusted according to the commandment and sovereign pleasure of God our*
- 4 *Saviour*. And I address this epistle to *Titus*, [my] *genuine son*, according to the tenor of the *common faith*, even that Christian faith to which I had the happiness of converting thee—to whom with an affection becoming a father in Christ, I unfeignedly wish every desirable blessing, even *grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour*, by whom we obtain an interest in him, and hope for that eternal salvation from him, with which no inheritance on earth is by any means worthy to be compared.
- 5 *For this cause I left thee in Crete*, though I could have been so heartily glad of thy company in my travels, *that thou mightest set in order the things which were deficient there*, as I could not stay long enough myself to reduce them into so regular a state as I could have wished; and particularly, that thou mightest *ordain elders in every city*^c, in which Christian churches are planted, to whom the stated oversight of them may be committed in the Lord, *as I gave thee in charge when I parted with thee*.
- 6 The office is so very important, that I hope thou wilt be proportionably careful as to the character of the persons who are to be invested with
- before the world began;
- 3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto thee, according to the commandment of God our Saviour;
- 4 T. Titus now seen was after the common both a Greek, merciful, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.
- 5 For that cause left I thee in Crete, that thou mightest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee.
- 6 If any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused

b. *Before the world began.*] It seems more natural to refer this to the promise made by the Father to Christ, in the *eternity of redemption*, than, with Mr. Romer, to explain it of the promise made, *quickly after the crucifixion, to our fallen parents*; Gen. iii. 15. See *Rymer of Rev. Rev.* p. 49.

c. *Ordain elders in every city.*] There were an *hundred cities* in the island of Crete though its dimensions were not very large;

but it is well known, that every considerable town was called a *city* by the ancients. It is most likely that some congregations were settled under proper masters while Paul was among them; but there were others not so provided, and the interposition of so wise and good a man as Titus, probably honoured with such extraordinary gifts, would no doubt, have great weight on such an occasion.

d. *Believing*

accused of riot, or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate;

d *Believing children.*] This is mentioned with great propriety; for, if a man were not careful to instruct his children in the principles of Christianity, there would be great reason to doubt, whether he were hearty in the belief of it himself, and under a governing sense of its truth and importance; and, if a man had only unbelieving children in his house, that is, such as were so obstinate that they could not be brought to embrace Christianity, by any of the arguments which could be laid before them in that age of miracles, it would be a great discouragement, and in some circumstances, a great hindrance to him, from pursuing the duties of a Christian elder, or bishop. And those evils, into which some obstinate infidel children might fall, would very probably, bring a reproach upon the family, which might, in

with it; and if any one is thought of in that view, let it be one who is known to be blameless in his conduct, the husband of only one wife, to whom he entirely confines himself, neither allowing of polygamy, or divorce, or an irregular commerce with any other women; and let him be one who hath believing children^d, if he have any that are grown up, not accused of any kind of debauchery, or ungovernable in their temper and disposition, which would render them a reproach rather than an honour to the Christian name. I must insist on a care in this respect, for it is evident, that the disorders of children often reflect a dishonour on their parents, and indeed arise from something amiss in them: but a bishop, or overseer of a Christian congregation, which the elder we speak of, by virtue of his office, is, must necessarily be blameless^e, as he is, in that society over which he presides, the steward of God, who is appointed in his name, to take care of his family. He must not therefore be fierce and self-willed, obstinate, morose, and arrogant^f, not soon provoked to be angry, not one who sits long over his cups, and loves to drink large quantities of wine, not a striker of others, by which, whatsoever, his provocation may be, he always degrades himself in the eyes of those that are witnesses of the quarrel, nor greedy of sordid and infamous gain: But he ought to maintain a character directly the opposite of all these, and to be hospitable, benign, sober, and grave in his

a degree, hurt the character of him who presided in it.

e *For a bishop must be blameless.*] It has been often observed, that, if the bishop, of whom Paul speaks, had been invested with an office distinct from, and superior to the elder mentioned above, there could have been no room to conclude, that an elder must be blameless, because a bishop must be so, though the argument would have held strongly in an inverted order. By what degrees, and on what reasons, the distinction was afterwards introduced (as a distinction to be sure there early was) it is not my business here to inquire.

f *Self-willed, obstinate, morose, and arrogant.*] *Raphelius* has taken a great deal of pains to shew that this is the proper signification of *αἰσχρογάρη*, the word here used. See *Raph. ex Herod. in loc.*

SECT.
I.

Titus
I. 6.

SHEP.

I.

TITUS

I. 2.

his deportment, *righteous, holy, devout, and temperate* in all things: *Holding fast, in the most resolute manner, the faithful word which he hath been taught* by those who were commissioned to publish it to the world, *that so he may be able both to instruct others in sound doctrine, and to convince and silence those that contradict it.*

Holding fast the faithful word, so he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. NEVER let it be forgotten by any that call themselves *Christians*, that *the faith of God's elect is the acknowledgment of the truth which is according to godliness.* Never let the great design of *Christianity* be lost in an eager contention for any of its *appendages*, or any of its *parts*. Yet alas, how often has it, in particular instances, been *wounded almost to death*, in a furious attempt to rescue it, and that sometimes perhaps, from only an imaginary danger.
- 2 That we may be more sensible of its *vital* influence, let us ever retain *the hope of that eternal life* which it proposes, as the great end of all our pursuits; even of that life *which God that cannot lie hath promised.* Let us rejoice to think that so immense a superstructure has so firm, so divine a foundation, and let us never give it up for any thing that a flattering world, always ready to engage, and slow to perform, can promise.
- 3 Let us ever be very thankful for the provision God hath made *for the manifestation of his word, through preaching*, and for his goodness in raising up *faithful pastors* to his church, *overseers* in every age, who have been *blameless, sober, just, holy, and temperate.* Such may all be that appear under that sacred character; able, *by their doctrine to instruct*, by their reasoning *to convince*, by their practice to edify; ever solicitous, that they may not neglect their *pastoral services*, that they may not *lord it* proudly over their *brethren*, that they may not be transported by furious *passions*, or misguided by *rash conclusions*, or perverted by low *interests*, and the *greediness of filthy lucre*; but that they may approve themselves the *faithful stewards of God*, and promote the good order of his house; and so far as their influence can reach, the happiness of every member of his family.
- 6 In order to this, let them look well to *their own houses*, that nothing may be wanting on their part to make their *children tractable, faithful and sober.* And let the *children* of ministers consider the obligations they are under to cultivate a *teachable* spirit, and to maintain the strictest decency in their whole deportment, as remembering the superior advantages they may be supposed to enjoy for *religious improvement*, and how much a *minister's* reputation and usefulness depend upon the regularity of his family.

SECT.

SECT. II.

Paul cautions Titus against seducing teachers, and the native vices of the Cretans ; and advises him to accommodate his exhortations to the different sorts of persons with whom he conversed, according to their respective sexes, ages, and circumstances. Titus I. 10, to the end. Chap. II. 1—8.

TITUS. I. 10.

FOR there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision ;

TITUS I. 10.

SECT.
ii.Titus
I. 10.

I HAVE particularly insisted upon it, that a bishop should be able to convince gainsayers, as well as to instruct candid and obedient hearers. And indeed the precaution is very necessary at present, and particularly in the place where you now preside ; for there are many disorderly [persons] and vain talkers, who are deceived in their own minds, in consequence of which it is no wonder if they are active in deceiving others. And this is especially the case with those of the circumcision, who are so eager to impose on their Gentile brethren the ceremonies of the Mosaic law, as if Christianity itself were insufficient to save us without them : *Whose mouth must therefore be stopped* by solid arguments, and their unreasonable clamours silenced by the strenuous exercise of discipline : for they are persons who are so active in spreading these mischievous notions, that they overturn whole families, teaching things which they ought not for the sake of infamous gain ; hoping by their doctrines to secure the favour of some rich men, who never think they can do enough for those preachers that support their own factions and dividing notions.

11 Whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretans are always liars

I know that there are many such at present in 12 your island ; and I remember that Epimenides, out of their [countrymen], and a poet in such high renown, that I may call him a kind of prophet of their own^a, has said, the Cretans are always liars, pernicious savage beasts, and yet slow

a *A prophet.*] Epimenides, whose words Paul here quotes, is said, by Diogenes Laertius, to have been a great favourite of the gods ; but Aristotle says he never foretold any future event ; which, as Dr. Scott justly observes (*Scott's Christian Life*,

Vol. III. p. 650) is a plain argument that the word *prophet* is sometimes used in a large sense, for one who is supposed, by the person applying the title to him, to be an instructor of men in Divine things, from whom the will of the *Deity* may be learnt.

b *Cretans*

SPER.
II.

TITUS

1. 12.

slow bellies^b, a wretched compound of luxury and idleness, fierceness and falsehood, which makes it exceedingly difficult to reform them, or even to live safely and quietly among them. This witness concerning them is, in the general, true, though some particular persons may be found of a different character. For which cause rebuke them severely^c, when they begin to shew a disposition to corrupt Christianity; that they may be sound in the faith, and that the simpler part of them may be preserved from the dishonest artifices and attempts of others. And particularly, that they may not fall into the folly of giving heed to Jewish fables, and to the commandments and traditions of men, who pervert the truth of the gospel with those human mixtures by which they have in a great measure spoiled and enervated the law of Moses, for which they pretend so great a zeal.

- 15 I know they value themselves highly upon the distinctions of food, which they imitate as of so great importance to purity. But they are much mistaken. To the pure indeed all things [are] pure. A man that habitually exercises a good

ness, evil beasts,
bellies.

13. This witness is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith:

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 I into the pure all things are pure: but unto them that are defiled,

^b Cretans are slow bellies, &c.] Perhaps it might have been in some version more proper to have translated *slow ventres* in such a manner, that it should have read as a proverb in the text, "Fable translate" to Savage beasts, with human skin." It is evident the poet here suggests a remarkable contrast, to shew what a distance there was of *luxury and idleness* in the characters of the Cretans. Savage beasts are generally active and nimble; but these men, while they had the face of lions and tigers, indulged themselves so much in the most sordid idleness and slothfulness, that they grew (as it were) soft bellies, and like a breed of swine common in the eastern countries, were often so hardened with fat that they could hardly move. As for their propensity to falsehood, it is well known that *andragas*, or *black like a lioness*, was a proverb for lying (as *andragas*, or *black like a lioness*, was for a luxurious and debauched man). See *Lucan*, *Phars.* p. 412, 443, and it is remarkable that *Phlegon*, scarce ever mentions this nation without some severe censure. See *Raphele*, *c. Paphl.* c. 2.

^c Rebuke them severely.] *Andragas*, with a censorious meaning. From whence Mr. *Insensatus* infers, that it is a vain pretence that only gentle and soft expressions are to be applied to people that to whose good prin-

ciple, and corrupt the gospel. *Black*, *Phlegon* V. 1. p. 208, 209. But Paul speaks of reproving men, not *severe*, and if any consequence is to be drawn from one to the other, the remark is to be admitted with much caution, considering to what a degree *public* and *private* often transport men, even in the management of *theological* controversies, beyond all bounds of *prudence*, *charity*, and *decorum*. Timothy is exhorted to *reprove with all long-suffering*, (*2 Tim.* iv. 2), and somewhat content for the difference, by the different *tempers* of the reprovers, supposing that of Timothy might be milder than that of Titus; others, by the different character of the persons to be reprov'd; as the Ephesians seem to have been more gentle, obliging, and complaisant, the Cretans more obstinate, rough, and headstrong. But the best reply seems to be this, that there is a degree of long-suffering and gentleness, very consistent with all that *severity* which *faithfulness* requires, which is not that of harshness, passion, ill-nature, and acrimony, but of such, though remote zeal for God, and friendship to the offender; which yet will not be silenced by trifling excuses, nor fail seriously to represent the fatal consequences that may attend the evil reprov'd.

filed, and unbelieving, is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled:

good conscience towards God, according to the best of his knowledge, is accepted of him, whether he do, or do not, abstain from such particular kinds of food as they scruple; *whereas, to the polluted and unbelieving*, which, alas, is too generally their character, *nothing [is] pure, but their very mind and conscience is defiled*, and they pollute, as it were, every thing they touch; they sin in all their actions; and even in those very meals in which they are most careful to abstain from what they have been taught to esteem common and unclean. I speak not now of all ¹⁶ who practise Jewish ceremonies; but of those [*who, while*] *they profess to know God*, and glory in their relation to him, as his peculiar people, *in works deny [him]*, and act as if they disbelieved his very existence; *being abominable* to all that can judge of true worth, *and disobedient* to the plainest dictates of duty, and with respect to *every good work reprobate*, disapproved and condemned, when brought to the standard of God's word, though they are among the first to judge and condemn others.

SECT.
II.
TITUS.
1. 15.

16 They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

CHAP. II. 1. But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

Such is the temper and character of many! ^{Chap. II. 1.} *But do thou*, O Titus, not only guard against the infection thyself, but endeavour to fortify others against it, and *speak the things which become wholesome doctrine*, doctrine which may tend to promote the health and happiness of those minds by which it is imbibed. And ² endeavour to suit thy instructions to the different characters of persons whom thou addresseth. When, for instance, thou art applying thyself to *aged men* [*admonish*] them *to be watchful* against temptations, which might dishonour their advanced years, by drawing them into any unseemly behaviour: to be *grave* in their whole deportment, avoiding such levities as are, even in youth itself, rather pardonable than commendable, but in those who are quitting the stage of life highly indecent. Press it upon them, that they be *sober* and temperate in the use of animal pleasures, as their highest relish for them may well be supposed, by this time, to be abated. In a word, that they be *sound*, healthful, and vigorous in the several graces of the Christian temper, and particularly *in faith, in love, and in patience*; that the principles of Christianity may be retained, and have a suitable effect upon their hearts, and produce unbounded

2 That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

sacr.

11.

Eph.

11. 2.

bounded charity, and a calm composure under the calamities they may suffer from the hand of God, or the persecutions they may meet with in the cause of the gospel.

3 *The aged women, in like manner, [exhort] to the steadiness which becometh saints, and suits the holy profession they make: that they be not false accusers of others, a character rather to be expected from the great enemy of mankind, who has his name from thence, than from the disciples of the benevolent Jesus. Urge them also that they be not given to much worry, for some of the Cretan women, as well as men, are infected with that luxurious evil. And, as it may be reasonably expected, that persons so advanced in life should have laid up a treasure of prudence and religious wisdom in their minds, press them, in such a manner as becomes their private station, to be teachers of that which is good.*

4 *And particularly, that they wisely admonish the younger women: for whom they ought to maintain a maternal affection, and form them, on discreet maxims, to a prudent care in future life, teaching them to love and honour their husbands, to love their children with such a true affection as shall engage them to use the most pious and tender care in forming their minds, by all the offices of a good education, so many of which will naturally depend upon the mother.*

5 *Let them inculcate it upon these young mistresses of rising families, [that they be] discreet and chaste, attentive to domestic affairs, and in that view keeping at home, to look after them with prudence and care; that they be good, kind, and benevolent in their behaviour to all, and, particularly, obedient to their own husbands, that so the word of God, which they profess to have received into their hearts, and to reverence as their oracles, may not be blasphemed by their foolish or perverse, rebellious or licentious conduct.*

6 *In like manner also, exhort the young men, the hope of rising families, upon whom so much of the credit and support of the gospel will depend, that they accustom themselves betimes to be sober and steady in their behaviour, superior to*

3 The aged women likewise, that they be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much worry, teachers of good things;

4 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be sober-minded,

d *Keeping at home, to look after, &c.*
Flower has shown, in a learned note on this place, that the word *care* is used

by several of the best authors to express both these ideas.

to sensual temptations, and constant in the exercise of every part of self-government.

SECT.
ii.

7 In all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity.

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

And, that this address to them and others may be more successful *in all things*, be still *shewing thyself a pattern of good works*, by which others may model their conduct with advantage: while employed *in teaching*, be constantly [*exercising*] *uncorruptness*, that nothing may be spoken but the genuine truth; and let it be attended with a *gravity* in declaring it, proportionable to its importance, and proceed from *sincerity* of heart; Still uttering *wholesome speech* ⁸ *that cannot be confuted, that he who is on the contrary side*, and will obstinately persist in his infidelity, *may be ashamed* of his opposition, *having no evil to say of you*, or those committed to your care; but may be obliged, with all his prejudices, to acknowledge that you are a worthy president over a worthy and valuable society of men.

Titus
II. 7.

IMPROVEMENT.

WHILE we are reading the *word of God*, let us attentively observe what characters are adorned with honour, and what are branded with infamy. It is melancholy to think that any *nation*, though ever so small, ever so remote, ever so destitute of cultivation and instruction, should deserve the characters which *Epimenides* gave of the *Cretans*, and which *Paul* found reason to ¹² confirm: that *luxury and fraud, idleness and fury*, dissonant as they may seem, should be their governing inclinations. Sad distempers in the minds of men! But how peculiarly lamentable, when they prevail among *professing Christians*! for among those that are Christians *indeed* they cannot possibly prevail. Yet surely there are not a few, even in *Britain*, with all its advantages, who, while *professing to know God*, and *Christ Jesus* his Son, *in* ¹⁶ *works deny them*. Such are *abominable*, in proportion to the degree in which they are *disobedient*; and, as they are *reprobate to every good work* now, must expect to be rejected with abhorrence at last by that God whose name they have blasphemed, and whose Son they have dishonoured.

Ver.

To remedy, and if it be possible, to prevent such evils, let the *ministers of Christ* be still applying themselves, with suitable *exhortations* and *charges*, to all with whom they are concerned. Let them apply to the *aged* and the *young*; and let the *aged* of both *sexes* use that authority which their more advanced progress in life may give, to enforce upon the rising generation lessons of

Chap. ii.
2, 6.

^{SECT.}
^{II.}
— wisdom and piety, according to their respective sexes and circumstances in life : that *prudence and chastity, economy and sobriety* Ver. of *temper, a subjection to their husbands*, formed on love and on religion, may be the character of *young wives* ; and that they may join to it that very important duty, of a pious care in the education of *those children* which God may give them. And may the *sobriety of young men* encourage a hope, that they will preside over their families in the fear of God, and repay the goodness of such amiable consorts ! And may the *teachers*, whether in public or private life, be themselves *examples* of the virtues they inculcate ; that they who study to asperse *Christianity*, may find themselves silenced, till their *shame* turns into a worthier affection ; till their *silence* breaks out into praise, and they, imbibing the like principles, feel them productive of the like virtues !

SECT. III.

Paul urges on Titus a care to instruct servants in the duties of their station ; and represents their great obligations to discharge them, from a general view of the design of the gospel, and the love of our Redeemer in it. Tit. II. 9, to the end.

TITUS II. 9.

^{SECT.}
^{III.}
—
^{TITUS.}
^{II. 9.}

WHILST thou art, according to the direction I have given thee above, instructing the superior ranks of mankind, I would not have thee neglect the lowest, but (*exhort*) their slaves and other *servants*, who are honoured with a call into the Christian church, to be *subject to their own masters*, with reverence and obedience : *pleasing [them] in all things*, so far as they lawfully may, and *not answering again*, in a pert and insolent manner, if they are reproved by them, even though it should be unjustly, or with an excess of severity. *Not privately defrauding them* ^b of any thing that is committed to their trust, *but showing all good fidelity* upon every occasion ; *that so*, instead of bringing any reproach upon religion, *they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things* and

TITUS II. 9.

EXHORT servants to be obedient not to their own masters, and to answer them well in all things, not answering again ;

^b Not purloining, but showing all good fidelity ; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

a *Privately defrauding.*] The word *occulto* properly signifies to keep *back part* or the *mouth of one thing*, and is used in the case of *deceives* *swearing a gift*, where the *whole* was pretended to be returned, Acts v. 2, 3. This servants, at least among the heathens, might possibly do when em-

ployed by their masters to vend commodities, and other fraudulent practices, among persons of their rank, none is known that has same word in the latin language, [*He*] is used for a *servant*, and a *maid*.

11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men;

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world;

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ;

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto

and recommend it to the esteem of their masters and others, when they shall observe its influence on all its professors, to make them careful in the discharge of every social and relative duty.

For the saving grace of God, in the gospel-dispensation, hath appeared unto all men, to men of all nations, and of all ranks and orders of life, for this great purpose, that it may train them up for eternal salvation, by a holy temper, and a useful exemplary behaviour. This it effects under Divine influence, by instructing us all, wherever it comes, that denying the solicitations of ungodliness and worldly lusts, to which men of this world so naturally abandon themselves, we should live soberly in the government of our appetites and passions; righteously in our conduct towards our fellow creatures; and piously in our behaviour towards God, and converse with him, while we are by his providence continued in this present vain and transitory world; through which we trust he is leading us to a blissful immortality. And this is the great object which he requires us still to keep in view; and that we should all, in our different situations, be waiting, with ardent expectation and desires, for the blessed hope which he hath set before us, and for the full consummation of it, in the glorious appearance of the great God, and of our Saviour Jesus Christ^b; who shall be manifested with divine pomp and majesty, in the last day, to redeem all his servants from the power of the grave and to conduct them in their complete persons, to the full and everlasting enjoyment of his heavenly kingdom.

Such are our sublime hopes from this glorious Lord, to whom we have all vowed subjection, whether we be bond or free; even to him who gave himself up to ignominy, torment and death for us, that he might thereby redeem us, not only from final vengeance and destruction, but from the power of all iniquity; and might purify to himself a peculiar people, who should thankfully own themselves his property, and express their

^b The great God and our Saviour.] The words τα μεγαλα Θεου και σωτηρις ημων, might with propriety be rendered, our great God and Saviour, though they are also susceptible of the other version. But it is certain, that if Christ be here called our great God, it is not in any view of

opposition between Him and the Father. Compare 1 Cor. xv. 27. Mr. Fleming, in support of this interpretation, observes (Flem. Christol. Vol. I. p. 205), that we never read in scripture of the Father's appearance.

SECT.
III.TITUS
II. 14.

their gratitude of such inestimable favours, by being not only careful to avoid the practice of evil, but *zealous of good works*, active in all the duties of life, and in every office of righteousness and goodness to each other. The highest of mankind are not above owning the obligation, and it is his will that the lowest should remember it. *These things* therefore *speak* boldly, and earnestly *exhort* all thine hearers to attend to them. And, if they fail of regarding them in a proper manner, *rebuke* them *with all authority*, as one that knows that he has a Divine commission to support him: and, upon the whole, *let no man despise thee*, but endeavour to give these exhortations with that solemnity and dignity, and to enforce them by that wisdom and sanctity of behaviour, which may set thee above all danger of contempt.

unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15. *These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.*

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. HARDLY does the word of God afford a more instructive and comprehensive *summary* of the *gospel*, than that which is here before us. It gives us a view of the *nature* of the dispensation, as a *doctrine of grace*; and, at the same time, a *doctrine according to godliness*. It hath *appeared to all men*, and it *bringeth them to salvation*, by inculcating the most salutary lessons that man can receive. It teaches us to *deny ungodliness and worldly lusts*, how pressing soever their solicitations may be. It instructs us in all the branches of *our duty to God, to ourselves, and to our fellow Christians*. It guides us to uniform and complete goodness; not extolling any one part, to the neglect or injury of the rest, but tending to produce this beautiful birth, entire in all its members, and then to nourish it to its full maturity. As we are slow of heart to attend to such instructions, it enforces them with *motives* the most generous and the most animating. It represents to us, as it were in *prophetic vision*, *that blessed hope, even the glorious appearance of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ*; when he shall come with everlasting blessings in his hands, to reward all his faithful people; and with the terrors of Divine vengeance, to be poured forth upon all that have rejected the authority of his gospel. And that the most powerful considerations of *gratitude*, may join with those of the highest *interest*, it directs our eyes to this Divine triumphant *Saviour*, as having once *given himself* to torture and death *for us*, that he might *redeem us from*

from all iniquity, and purify us to himself, a peculiar people, devoted to God, and zealous of good works. And surely if this view cannot prevail upon us to consecrate ourselves to God, and to engage with vigour in his service, we must be utterly insensible, and worthy of the severest punishment.

Let these lessons, therefore, every where be taught with all authority. Let them be addressed at once to the meanest and the greatest of mankind; that they may join in a pious care, to adorn the doctrine of such a Saviour, and to secure their share in such a salvation.

SECT.
iii.

Ver.

15

10

SECT. IV.

The Apostle concludes his epistle with exhorting Titus to recommend obedience to magistrates, and readiness to all good works; to caution against censoriousness and contention: acknowledging the grace of God, as that to which all Christians owe their hopes of salvation, and strongly pressing him to insist upon the great doctrines of practical religion, in opposition to those idle controversies to which many were attached. He also instructs him how to proceed with respect to heretical teachers; and closes with giving him some directions about meeting him at Nicopolis, and a general salutation to all his friends. Tit. III. 1, to the end.

TITUS III. 1.

PUT them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekness unto all men.

TITUS III. 1.

AMONG other useful lessons, which it will be thy duty to give the Cretans, while thou continuest with them, remind them of being subject to those principalities and powers which God hath set in supreme authority over them, by no means excepting those who stand at the greatest distance from Christianity: exhort them also to obey subordinate governors; and upon the whole, to be ready to every good work, in every relation which they sustain in life. Charge them to calumniate no man^a, not to be contentious, [but] gentle in their whole demeanor, shewing all meekness to all men, even those from whom they may receive the greatest provocation

SECT.
iv.

Titus.
III. 1.

^a Calumniate no man.] Not even your Pagan, or Jewish neighbour, says good Dr. Barrow, (vol. I. p. 162,) however

enormous in their lives, or cruel in their behaviour to you.

b We

NOTE.

IV.

THUS

III. 9.

vocation. Let us not bear ourselves too highly, on the superiority of our own characters, be they now ever so blameless, or ever so exemplary; *for we ourselves, also were formerly foolish*, as well as others, *disobedient to the Divine authority*, and perhaps to those whom God had invested with power over us; *wandering from the paths both of truth and virtue, and enslaved to various lusts, and pleasures*, in the pursuit and gratification of which we degraded the nobler powers of our souls. We were *living in malice and envy, hateful our selves while under the tyranny of such fierce and detestable passions, (and) hating one another*, on account of little clashings and oppositions in our temporal interests, while we forgot the great ties and bonds which ought to have endeared us to each other.

- 4 But when the admirable kindness and love of God our Saviour towards man, so signally displayed in the gospel, appeared to us, we were delivered from this miserable condition: the remembrance therefore of this deliverance ought to make us compassionate, rather than severe, towards others in the same unhappy circumstance in which we once were; especially when we consider the manner in which it was accomplished. For it was *not by any works of righteousness which we ourselves had done*; for any acts of obedience, whether to ceremonial or moral precepts, by which we had made ourselves worthy of his favourable regard; *but according to his own mercy, that he saved us from condemnation and ruin, by the washing of regeneration^a, and*

5 But we ourselves also were sometimes foolish, discontented, envying divided hearts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful, and hating, one another.

4 But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us by the washing^a

^a *It's pardon*]. The worthy pleader, this cannot be applicable to Paul himself, and argues from Acts xxiii. 1, & Tit. i. 3; Phil. iii. 6. that I am persuaded that, when the apostle wrote thus, he had such sublime views of the purity of God's law, and the insufficiency of his own best obedience, how capable never of being justified to men, that notwithstanding all he says in the text quoted, he could apply what he here wrote to much of his own character while an enemy of Christianity. Compare note c below.

c *God our Saviour*]. It is observable, that *God our Father* is here called our Saviour, to intimate, that it was his paternal love to us that engaged him to appoint his

Son to redeem us, and to perform all those important offices for us, by which his reconciliation was effected.

d *by the washing of regeneration*]. This hath often been explained of baptism, and Mr. Joseph Mede insists upon it; that it alludes to cleansing the new-born infant from the pollution which necessarily attend it. (Leak. vii. 4—5.) But I cannot think this interpretation at all favourable to the doctrine of baptismal regeneration, since it is not by washing the infant that the *new man* is produced; and therefore, it can surely signify no more, than that they who are regenerated are to be thus washed. I have observed elsewhere, that *zelo*, the word here used, is by no means entirely

washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost;

6 Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour:

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

8 This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, might be careful to maintain good works; these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies,

and the renewing of the Holy Spirit: which by its purifying influence operates at first to turn us to God, and bring us into the number of his children, and afterwards advances the happy work, by improving us more and more in the Divine life and image: Even by that Spirit ⁶ *which he poured out upon us richly*^e, and abundantly, in his various gifts and graces, by Jesus Christ our Saviour, in virtue of whose intercession it has been imparted to the children of men; *That being justified by his grace, we* ⁷ *might become heirs of the most valuable blessings, according to the hope of eternal life*, which as the gift of that grace he hath exhibited to our believing views, as the great and noble object of our pursuit. [*This,*] which I have here ⁸ been attesting, [*is*] a faithful saying, most credible in itself, as well as of great weight and importance; and concerning these things, these distinguishing principles of the gospel, *I will and charge that thou steadily affirm and constantly inculcate them; that so they who have believed in God*, and by baptism professed to embrace this gospel, may not imagine, that by the dispensation of grace they are excused from the observation of duty; but, on the contrary, that being thus engaged, and encouraged by such grace and hope, they may be so much the more careful, thoughtful and diligent to signalize themselves as examples of the greatest zeal in good works. *These things are good and profitable to men*: there is a beauty and advantage in them which nothing can equal. Let these therefore be the darling topics of thy preaching, as thou desirest the edification and salvation of thy hearers.

But avoid, and endeavour to guard others ⁹ against foolish questions, which the Judaizing teachers are ready to start, that tend only to amuse

entirely synonymous to *λεηνα* a laver. The sense here given of this much controverted passage is what I verily believe to be the justest and safest; though I am well aware, that the Christian church soon began to lay a disproportionable stress on forms, and to ascribe too great efficacy to the ritual of baptism. (See the preface and postscript to my *Sermons on Regeneration*, second edition.)

^e Which he poured out upon us richly.]

These words have been explained as referring to Paul alone, and the effusion of the Spirit upon him, to qualify him for his extraordinary office. But, to say nothing of the harshness of this interpretation, and the violence it must do to several phrases here used, it is evident that it would make the text quite foreign to the purpose for which it is introduced, viz. of dissuading from severe and uncharitable censures.

f Perplexed

SECT
iv.

Titus
III. 5.

SECT.
IV.Titus
III. 9.

amuse an idle curiosity; and those perplexed genealogies, about which they so eagerly debate and other strifes and contentions about the life of Moses; for they are unprofitable and vain, not only consuming to no purpose that time which is capable of much better improvement, but also tending to discompose the mind, to alienate the affections of Christians from each other, and to render them indifferent to the proper duties of life.

10 And a man that, on this occasion, or any other, is a factious and obstinate heretic, that introduces such contrivances as these into the church, and perversely maintains and propagates them, in a manner injurious to the peace of society, after the first and second admonition from thee and the church, given with proper solemnity, reject, and declare him unfit to be any longer looked upon as a member of it. Knowing that such a one, who is so fond of his own daring notions, that he will ruin the peace of the church for them, and will not submit to thy remonstrances, and those of the wiser and better part of the society, is perverted by some very ill principles, whatever zeal he may pretend for what he maintains as truth; and that he not only errs, but sins too, in such obstinate efforts to diffuse his errors, being indeed self-condemned, and judged out of his own mouth, as his own words furnish sufficient matter of conviction; and, while he makes such a breach in the church, he in effect passes on himself that sentence of separation from it, which

logies, and contentions and strifes about the law; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is so fond of his own notions, that he will ruin the peace of the church for them, and will not submit to thy remonstrances, and those of the wiser and better part of the society, is perverted by some very ill principles, whatever zeal he may pretend for what he maintains as truth; and that he not only errs, but sins too, in such obstinate efforts to diffuse his errors, being indeed self-condemned, and judged out of his own mouth, as his own words furnish sufficient matter of conviction; and, while he makes such a breach in the church, he in effect passes on himself that sentence of separation from it, which

11 Knowing that he that is so fond of his own notions, that he will ruin the peace of the church for them, and will not submit to thy remonstrances, and those of the wiser and better part of the society, is perverted by some very ill principles, whatever zeal he may pretend for what he maintains as truth; and that he not only errs, but sins too, in such obstinate efforts to diffuse his errors, being indeed self-condemned, and judged out of his own mouth, as his own words furnish sufficient matter of conviction; and, while he makes such a breach in the church, he in effect passes on himself that sentence of separation from it, which

[Perplexed genealogies, &c.] It is well known that the Jews carried their fondness for these to a great excess; and Jerome tells us, they were as well acquainted with those from Adam to Zerubbabel, as their own names.

[Heretic] After all the tedious controversies which have arisen about the sense of this *heretice*, I have been obliged to acquiesce in that given in the *paraphrase*, being well assured, that a person may be said to be self-condemned if he furnish matter of conviction against himself. Compare Heb. xi. 7; Mat. xii. 41, 42; Acts xiii. 45; Job xc. 6; Luke xix. 21. And indeed, if Dr. Whitby's interpretation, borrowed and defended by Dr. Foster, is to be admitted, viz. that he is a heretic who teaches directly contrary to what he inwardly himself, the *truth* or *fulfilling* of his notions will be a matter quite indifferent as to fixing this censure upon him; and a man, who was

rudely an atheist, might be subject to condemnation, as a heretic, for teaching the most atheistical system of a deity, one that can be imagined, if the secret atheism should by any means be discovered. And as the word *heretice* will be made to signify a kind of schism here; which is such an abuse of speech as I suppose few will be capable of mistaking. I shall only add, that, as Dr. Foster is obliged to allow these are *fundamental* errors, for which, how narrowly ever persecuted and persecuted, a man might be separated from a Christian society, the dispute between this learned *realist* and his *nominalist*, was brought to this question, what St. Paul calls *heresy*? and the *heretics* laid down above pronounce me, that what Dr. Whitby has said on this head cannot be defended, even by this *ingenious* reviewer of it.

b There

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis; for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos, on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

which he well deserves to lie under till he returns to a better temper.

When I shall send to thee Artemas, or Tychicus, to supply thy place in Crete, as I hope quickly to do, endeavour to come to me at Nicopolis; for there I have determined to pass the winter^h, if Providence gives me an opportunity.

As Zenas, the worthy lawyer, who though well versed in those studies, on which some of the Jewish brethren value themselves so highly, is now a sincere and active Christian, and my eloquent and pious friend Apollos, will be with thee when this comes to thy hand, or quickly afterwards, I desire thou wouldest bring them forward on their journey to me, with readiness and diligence; and take all the care thou canst, that nothing convenient may be wanting to them which thou canst supply them with. I hope these good men will meet with that hospitable treatment, among the Christians in your parts, which their character deserves; and let all those that belong to us, and call themselves Christian brethren, whether they were before Jews or Gentiles, learn to distinguish themselves in good works, for necessary purposes of aid and service to others; that they may not be unfruitful, and act as if they had learned nothing but barren speculations from that religion which is so well calculated to inspire and animate every sentiment of benevolence and generosity.

All the Christians that are here with me salute thee, in an affectionate and respectful manner. Salute them who love us in the bonds of our common faith; and assure my Christian friends that I feel an equal affection for them. Grace and peace, and every other blessing, from our Father and Saviour [be] with you all. Amen.

IMPROVE-

^h There I have determined to pass the winter.] Several cities of this name are mentioned in antiquity; one, not far from Philippi, in Macedonia; another in Epirus, which took its rise and name from the victory of Augustus over Antony and Cleopatra at Actium. Mr. L'Enfant is of opinion this last is referred to here, supposing that Paul intended a visit to those

in or near Illyricum, among whom he had preached the gospel; Rom. xv. 19. But Mr. Cradock, and many others, think it was the former. After all, it seems to me something uncertain; as well as the particular time when this epistle was written, and the place from whence it was sent. (See Introd. to this epistle, p. 44.)

SECT.
iv.

Titus
III. 12.

IMPROVEMENT.

SER.
IV.

LET the remembrance of the *irregularities* with which we
 ourselves were once chargeable, of that sinful and miserable
 Ver. condition in which we once were, make us *candid* to others, and
 2 silence our too severe *censures* against them. And let us rather,
 with the *apostle*, humbly adore that *grace* which has now made
 3 a difference between us and those that are still *foolish* and *disobe-*
dient, *wandering* in the paths of vice, and *enslaved* to *divers lusts*
 4 *and passions*. Let the *kindness*, the *philanthropy* of God, be daily
 5 celebrated and adored by us: of God, *who hath saved us, not by*
the righteousness of our works, but by *his own rich* and overflow-
 7 *ing mercy*; *hath justified us by his free grace*, in *Christ*, and there-
 by *made us heirs, according to the hope of eternal life*. Nor let
 us ever forget how much we are indebted to the *regenerating*
 6 *and renewing influences of the Holy Ghost*, *shed abroad upon us*
richly by Jesus Christ our Saviour. May it wash and purify our
 souls more and more from every stain of sin, and may it inspire
 14 us with a pious ardour to honour our profession, by *distinguishing*
ourselves in all good words for necessary uses, and according to
 8 the calls which Providence gives us in life. Having professed
 our belief in God, let us carefully practise all the virtues of the
Christian character; *for these things are indeed good and profit-*
able to men. But let us guard against those airy curiosities and
 9 *abstruse speculations*, which on the contrary, are *unprofitable and*
vain.

May all the *churches of Christ* be delivered from such factious
 members and teachers as would depart from the *infallible rule*
 of truth which is laid down in the word of God, and would
subvert the faith once delivered to the saints; introducing, instead
 of it, the *doctrines of men*, and teaching things which tend to
 alienate the minds of Christians from the gospel, and from each
 other, that they may set up their own authority, and promote
 their own secular interest. We ought undoubtedly to be *cautious*
 how we pass such a *censure* on *particular persons*, without clear
 and evident proofs; but when such proofs arise, and the persons
 10 in question appear to be the *turbulent and pernicious heretics* that
St. Paul describes, it were to be wished they might always meet
 with the treatment which he recommends. They ought first to
 be plainly and seriously *admonished*; and, if *repeated admonitions*
 are rejected, it is the duty of the wiser and sounder parts of
 Christian societies to *expel* them; that they may be less capable

of doing mischief, and that the *gangrene* of such pernicious principles and dispositions may not spread, to the disgrace and ruin of the *churches* to which they belong. But let it ever be remembered, that *this* is *all* the remedy which *scripture* furnishes us with; and they, who to the solemn censure of disturbed and injured *churches*, add any *corporal* severities, or *civil* penalties whatsoever, are taking up weapons which *Christ* has never put into their hands, and may very probably do *more* mischief in the church and the world than the most erroneous of those against whom they would arm their terrors.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO TITES.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

PHILEMON.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.



A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE TO PHILEMON.

PHILEMON was an inhabitant of Colosse, as we may conclude from St. Paul's mentioning Onesimus, in his epistle to the Colossians, as *one of them* (chap. iv. 9); as well as from his saluting Archippus in *this* epistle (ver. 2), who appears, from Col. iv. 17, to have been a *pastor* of *that* church. The title of *fellow-labourer*, given Philemon (ver. 1), makes it probable, that he was his *colleague* in the *ministry*: and, though we cannot *certainly* determine when he first embraced Christianity, it is evident, from the oblique insinuation in the 19th verse, that he was one of the *apostle's* converts; and it is not at all unlikely (as some have conjectured) that he might have had an opportunity of attending upon him during his long residence at Ephesus, where we are told St. Paul preached with so much success, that *all they that dwell in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus Christ*: (Acts xix. 10)—He seems, from several hints given in the *epistle*, to have been a person of *distinction*; particularly, from the mention made of *the church in his house* (ver. 2), and his liberal contribution to the relief of the saints (ver. 5, 7); and the general strain of the letter shews that the *apostle* held him in very high esteem, and looked upon him as one of the great supports of religion in that society.

It appears from the first verse of this epistle, that *St. Paul* was under *confinement* when he wrote it; and, as he expresses (ver. 22) his expectation of being shortly released, it is probable that it was written towards the close of his *first imprisonment* at Rome, and sent, together with the epistles to the Ephesians and Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus, about the *year of our Lord* 63, or the 9th of the emperor Nero. (Compare *Introduction to Ephes.* Vol. IV. p. 315, and Vol. III. § 60, *note* *g*.)

The occasion of the letter was this:—Onesimus, Phil mon's slave, had robbed his master, and fled to Rome; where, happily for him, he met with the *apostle*, who was at that time a prisoner at large, and by his instructions and admonitions was converted to Christianity, and reclaimed to a sense of his duty. St. Paul seems to have kept him for some considerable time under his eye, that he might be satisfied of the reality of the change; and, when he had made a sufficient trial of him, and found that his behaviour was entirely agreeable to his profession, he would not detain him any longer for his own private convenience, though in a situation that rendered such an assistant peculiarly desirable (compare ver. 13, 14), but sent him back to his master; and, as a mark of his esteem, entrusted him, together with Tychicus, with the charge of delivering his *epistle* to the church at Colosse, and giving them a particular account of the state of things at Rome, recommending him to them, at the same time, as *a faithful and beloved brother*; (Col. iv. 9.)—And, as Philemon might well be supposed to be strongly prejudiced against one who had left his service in so infamous a manner, he sends him *this letter*, in which he employs all his influence to remove his suspicions, and reconcile him to the thoughts of taking Onesimus into his family again. And whereas St. Paul might have exerted that *authority* which his character as an *apostle*, and the relation in which he stood to Philemon as a *spiritual father*, would naturally give him, he chooses to *entreat* him as a *friend*, and with the softest and most insinuating address urges his suit, conjuring him, by all the ties of Christian friendship, that he would not deny him his request. And, the more effectually to prevail upon him, he represents his *own* peace and happiness as deeply interested in the event: and speaks of Onesimus in such terms as were best adapted to soften his prejudices, and dispose him to receive one who was so dear to *himself*, not merely as a *servant*, but as a *fellow Christian* and a *friend*.

But though the *apostle's* subject did not lead him to treat so directly of the doctrines or precepts of Christianity in *this* as in his other epistles, yet a person, whose mind, like *his*, was so deeply and habitually impressed with a sense of Divine truths, could not fail, even when writing upon the most *common and familiar* occurrences, to introduce some hints that might tend to cherish pious and virtuous sentiments in the breast of his friend; and accordingly, in *this short epistle*, we meet with several allusions to different parts of the *Christian plan*, interwoven, in so *easy and natural* a manner with the rest of the letter, as must convince us how near those subjects lay to his heart.

It is impossible to read over this admirable epistle, without being touched with the *delicacy of sentiment*, and the *masterly address* that appear in every part of it. We see here, in a most striking light, how perfectly consistent *true politeness* is, not only with all the warmth and sincerity of the *friend*, but even with the dignity of the Christian and the apostle. And if this letter were

to be considered in no other view than as a mere human composition, it must be allowed a master-piece in its kind. As an illustration of this remark, it may not be improper to compare it with an epistle of Pliny, that seems to have been written upon a similar occasion, (lib. ix. let. 21;) which, though penned by one that was reckoned to *excel* in the *epistolary* style, and though it has undoubtedly many beauties, yet must be acknowledged, by every impartial reader, vastly *inferior* to this animated composition of the *apostle*.

One cannot but be solicitous to know what *effect* such an epistle produced. One would willingly hope it was attended with all the success which St. Paul seemed to expect, when he tells Philemon, that he wrote to him in *full confidence of his obedience knowing that he would do even more than he said*. And though nothing indeed is *expressly* asserted in relation to it, yet there is great reason to believe, from the nature of the thing, that Onesimus had *already* waited upon his master, and being received into favour, when he discharged the commission, with which (as we have observed) he was honoured, to the Colossians. For it is hardly to be imagined, that *the apostle* would direct him to join with Tychicus, in delivering such a message to a church, that was in part under the care of Philemon, before he had made his submission to him, and obtained his pardon. (Compare the *Introduction* to the *Ephesians*, p. 315.)



A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

PHILEMON.

SECTION I.

Paul intending to intercede with Philemon, in favour of his fugitive servant Onesimus, introduces his design with a most affectionate and proper salutation. Philem. ver. 1—7.

PHILEMON 1.

PAUL, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved; and fellow-labourer.

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-soldier, and to the church in thy house;

3 Grace to you, and peace

PHILEMON 1.

PAUL a well-known prisoner in the cause of Christ Jesus, and Timothy a brother, not unknown, join their salutations to Philemon our beloved friend, and pious fellow-labourer in the work and gospel of our blessed Redeemer, and one of the pastors of the Colossian church: And we also address them to the beloved Apphia^a, his pious consort, and to his associate in the ministry, Archippus, (Col. iv. 17,) our fellow-soldier in that holy warfare in which we are engaged; and to the little church of Christians [that is] in thine house, as we know thou art so happy as to have several of thy numerous family united to thee and to us, in the bonds of the Lord. May grace and peace, that abundance of spiritual blessings, and that happiness result-

SECT.
i.
Phil. 1.

^a To the beloved Apphia.] It has been observed, that this lady and Archippus are probably named in a view of engaging their good offices with Philemon, in favour

of Onesimus; and no doubt Paul would wish they might be engaged: but, separate from that view, it would have been natural and decent to mention them both.

SECT.

I.

Phil.

I. 3.

ing from them, which we so often wish to our Christian friends, when we are addressing them by letter, *[she] unto you from God our gracious and bountiful Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ*, to whose intercession we owe our interest in the Divine favour.

peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 You may be sure, my dear Philemon, that though absent from you, and surrounded with many cares and sorrows, yet far from being unmindful of you in my addresses to the throne of grace, *I always thank my God on your account when I am making mention of thee in my prayers.*

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee always in my prayers ;

5 *Hearing, with greater pleasure than I can express, of the steady faith which thou hast, and always maintainest, towards the Lord Jesus Christ, as the great object to which our faith as Christians is directed, and of thy ardent love to all the saints*, who are the excellent of the earth, and the most deserving our esteem and affection.*

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints ;

6 It is therefore matter of my most fervent prayer that these promising openings may be abundantly answered ; and *that thy communion with us in the faith of our blessed Redeemer, the advantages of which thou dost now so happily share, may be more and more apparently efficacious in extorting from all that behold it the due acknowledgment of every good and valuable thing which is in you all towards Christ Jesus, and all those whom he is pleased*

6 That the communion of the faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 to own and favour. Permit me to say this, in my own name, and that of my companion Timothy, *for we are ourselves greatly rejoiced and comforted by thy love*, which thou art in so many generous ways expressing to our fellow Christians ; and particularly, *that the hearts of the poor saints are refreshed by thee our dear brother*, while thou feedest and relievest the poor, and makest those possessions which Providence hath given thee, a general good. None of the hungry that are fed at thy table can find a supply of their necessities more sensible and delightful than the joy we feel, from the report of so benevolent a conduct in one whom we so tenderly regard.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the hearts of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

IMPROVE-

1. *Of the faith which thou hast towards the Lord Jesus, and of thy love to all the saints.* [The words in the original stand as they are placed in our version, and many instances of such a transposition are produced by Dr. Whitby, in his learned note on this

place ; but Mr. Blackwell observes, that our language does not admit of this like, and therefore proposes the rendering we have followed. *Blackwell's Ser. Com.* Vol. I. p. 87.

IMPROVEMENT.

If any could be so weak as to think the character of the *Christian* and the *minister*, at all inconsistent with that of the *well-bred man*, they must see a remarkable demonstration to the contrary in this *familiar epistle of St. Paul* to his friend *Philemon*; which is conducted with the happiest address, and which, in *true politeness*, may vie with that of the greatest masters of the *epistolary style* in antiquity. The Introduction (the length of which obliges us to separate it from the remainder to which it is so happily connected) leads us naturally to a variety of useful remarks, and conveys important instruction in the vehicle of well-deserved praise. Ver. 5 How elevated soever the station of *Philemon* might be, and how plentiful soever his circumstances, it was his chief glory and felicity to be so distinguished for *faith in the Lord Jesus Christ*, and *love to all the saints*. And indeed it is most unworthy the profession we make of *faith in Christ*, as the great Head of the church, not to love all his members: unworthy our character of *saints*, not to feel a *sympathetic affection* for all that are *sanctified*. If others are deficient here, as alas! many are too sadly deficient, let us exert ourselves so much the more, and labour to give the most 6 substantial demonstrations of our love. It will be an honour to us, and to the *Christian name*, that our communion in this precious *faith* should extort an *acknowledgment of good things in us*, from all who are intimately acquainted and conversant with us. Thus shall we diffuse happiness in a wide circle; for it is a sincere joy to all 7 good men, to behold the graces and the usefulness of others. Especially are the hearts of faithful and zealous ministers comforted, when the bowels of poor saints are refreshed, by the liberality of the rich. They share alternately the pleasure which is felt on the side of the pious benefactors and their grateful beneficiaries; and were they with Paul, in the confinement and necessities of a prison, the report, would delight and enlarge their souls.

SECT. II.

The Apostle proceeds to the main business of this short epistle; and labours, by the happiest address that can be imagined, to engage *Philemon* kindly to receive and forgive *Onesimus*, his fugitive slave, who after having greatly injured his master, and happily been converted by *St. Paul* at Rome. He concludes with some particular salutations and messages. *Philem. ver. 8, to the end.*

PHILEM. 3.

WHEREFORE;
though I might
be

PHILEMON 8.

I HAVE been expressing, my dear *Philemon*, the confidence I have in your excellent character,

SECT.
ii.

Phil. 3.

SECT.
II.

Phil. 8.

character, and the great pleasure with which, both I and Timothy my brother have heard of your many generous and beneficent actions; and therefore, for reference to the particular occasion of this letter, which to so good a heart cannot be disagreeable, *though I might wish great freedom, as one of my relations and friends, and the authority of a superior in power, and I join that I might have a reasonable* 9 *able for thee to do, I have chosen to entreat thee, being such an one as Paul the aged, whose superior standing in life and in religion I know thou wouldst revere, though in a private station, and especially as I am now also the prisoner of Jesus Christ, whom thou wouldst, I am sure, honour, as a confessor in his cause, if I were not distinguished by so immediate a commission from him, or so long a* 10 *train of services in his church. I entreat thee, I say, concerning a certain son of mine, whom I have begotten to Christ in my bonds^b; and whom I hope thou wilt upon that account be inclined to favour, knowing how dear he must be to me, considered as a soul which God hath given me at such a season as this. And it is no other than thy servant Onesimus; Who indeed, if I may so allude to his name, did not formerly answer it, for he was once unprofitable to thee, negligent of thy business, and so conscious of having deserved thy displeasure, that he fled from it. But he now is, and I trust will be, profitable both to thee and to me^c, so as daily*

be much bold in Christ to entreat thee that which is convenient;

9 Yet for love's sake, I rather beseech thee, being such an one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to me and to thee.

a *Paul the aged.*] It is generally agreed, that this *epistle* was written about the year of Christ 60; and, if we suppose Paul to have been 34 years old when Stephen was stoned (which is consistent with his being called a young man), that being about the year 34 (for we have not data sufficient absolutely to determine the exact time), he would now be 58; and considering how much his constitution would probably be impaired, by his *fatigues* and *afflictions*, before that time, he might properly enough call himself, *an aged man, one advanced in age*, though not an old man. Dr. Whitby indeed says, we are *young* till 40, and not properly aged till after 60, and concludes he might be about 34, at the death of Stephen, and so at the date of this *epistle*. If the reader be not satisfied with either of these conjectures, he may take any medium between them that shall appear to him more plausible.

b *A son of mine, whom I have begotten in my bonds.*—*Onesimus*.] Thus the words stand in the *margin*, and I thought it incumbent upon me to preserve that *order*, because it keeps the mind in an agreeable *sequence*, and has a fine effect, which every reader of taste will quickly perceive.

c *Was unprofitable, but now profitable.*] It has been justly observed, that it was strange, Onesimus, who had been so wicked, in the *poor* family of Philémon, amidst all the religious opportunities he enjoyed there, should meet with conversion in his *roughs* at Rome. Instances have often happened somewhat of a similar nature; but it is very *uncommon*, and may probably be *fatal*, for any to *presume* on the like extraordinary interpositions of providence and grace in their favour.—The word *Onesimus* is pretty generally known to signify *profit*, and *Onesimus* is much of the same import. They were names which

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is, mine own bowels :

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy mind would I do nothing ; that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever ;

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord ?

daily to give increasing satisfaction to us both : *Whom*, how agreeable and useful soever he might have been to me here, *I have sent* back to thee again. *Do thou therefore receive* him with readiness and affection. Receive *him*, did I say? nay rather receive, *as it were, my own bowels* : a person whom I so tenderly love, that he may seem, as it were, to carry the heart of Paul along with him whithersoever he goes. *Whom indeed I was desirous to have kept near me, that he might* have officiated for thee, and *in thy stead have attended upon me in the bonds* I suffer for the sake of the gospel ; for I do thee O Philemon, the justice to believe, thou wouldst have found a pious pleasure, in every ministration of this kind, if thou wert near me. *But I would do nothing* in this affair *without thy express consent, that thy benefit might not seem to be extorted by necessity, but appear a voluntary act.* I therefore return him to thee by the first opportunity ; *for perhaps he was separated from thee for a while,* by the permission of Providence, *to this very end, that thou mightest receive and enjoy him for ever ;* that he might not only be dear and useful to thee, during all the remainder of his life, as a servant, whose ear is as it were, bored to the door of thine house (to allude to the Hebrew custom, Exod. xxi. 6.), but that he might indeed be a source of eternal delight to thee, in that infinitely better world, where all distinctions between masters and their slaves shall cease, even that world of complete liberty and everlasting friendship.

In the mean time receive him, *not now as a* fugitive slave, to be long frowned upon, and kept at a distance, for his former faults ; nor treat him merely as a common servant, but as *above a servant*, as standing in another, a much more dear and honourable relation, *a beloved brother, especially to me*, as having been for some time a very useful attendant upon me in my afflictions ; *but how much more so to thee*, to whom he belongs *both in the flesh and in the Lord*, as thou hast so long known him, and wilt have the pleasure of discerning more particularly how happy a change Christianity hath made in his temper

might perhaps be given to slaves by way of good omen, expressing an expectation, that they would bring advantage to their

masters ; and it is very evident, that Paul refers to the etymology of the word.

HEB.
II.
Paul. 17.

temper and character. *If therefore thou esteamest me as a friend and a companion*^d in Christ, I beseech thee to *receive him*, even as thou wouldst receive *myself*, if I could have the satisfaction of making thee a visit in person.

18 *If he have injured thee in any pecuniary matter, or is indebted [to thee]*, in consequence of any former extravagancies and follies (of which divine grace hath now, I hope, made him truly sensible), so far as it has been the case, *charge*

19 *it to my account. I Paul have written [it] with my own hand*, and do hereby, as it were, give thee legal security for it; *I will pay it again* upon demand, as far as my little substance will go. *Not to say to thee*, that as I was the happy instrument of thy conversion to Christ, *thou oweest even thine own self unto me*. We will put that quite out of the question, and if thou pleasest to require it, I will really charge myself as thy debtor, and take the first opportunity of making thee a remittance. Yes, [my] dear brother,

20 let me prevail upon thee in this request, *let me have joy of thee in the Lord*, and while thou art so ready to do good to others, and to communicate for their comfort, out of those stores which Providence has so graciously given thee, let me beseech thee to *refresh my bowels*^e in the Lord; for the Christian consolation, which it will afford me, to see thee and Onesimus happy in each other, will be better, and more delightful, than food to the hungry.

21 But I will not urge the matter farther; *I have written to thee, in full confidence of thy ready obedience* and deference to my request, and indeed, as *knowing that thou wilt do even more than I say*; thou wilt not think of insisting upon the exact balance of former accounts, but wilt readily embrace this thy returning servant

11

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myself.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or owes thee anything, put that on their account;

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me, even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

^d *Esteemed me as a companion.*] L'Écuyer translates it, "I suis avec toi; therefore, by all that is common between us, receive him as my self," in imitation of Theodoret, who was so doubt an excellent commentator. But the grain thought which prevailed in the apostle's mind seems to have been the participation they both had in the blessing of the gospel, which was the dearest bond of their friendship.

^e *Refresh my bowels.*] The word *animum* is wonderfully emphatical. It literally signifies to appear, or quiet; which strongly

intimates the consolation he felt, through the ardour of his emotion for Onesimus; and seems to represent the eagerness of his desire for his re-establishment in Philemon's family, by the appetite of *hunger*. Incapable, as in many other places, of expressing this in the *sermo*, I have attempted it, though by no means with equal spirit, in the *prophete*. Compare ver. 7, where the same word is used, and seems to be referred to here with peculiar beauty and propriety.

§ *Prepare*

22 But withal prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.—
Amen.

in the arms of paternal love. At the same time I must *also* desire thee to *prepare a lodging for me*^f, for, though I am as yet a prisoner, *I hope that I shall, ere long, through your prayers, be granted to you*; and, if providence set me at liberty again, I intend to visit your parts, and shall, if it be convenient, cast myself on the known hospitality of your family. In the mean while, accept the greeting of our Christian brethren here at Rome, and let me particularly tell thee that *Epaphras, my fellow captive in Christ Jesus, salutes thee*: As [also] *Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow-labourers*, who are cordially engaged with me in the service of the gospel, and take a peculiar pleasure in lending that assistance to the churches in Rome which my confinement will not conveniently admit me to impart. I conclude with the best wish which the most endearing Christian friendship can form: *May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ ever [be] with your spirit*, and shed abroad on thee, and all thy companions in him, that peace and happiness which nothing but the communications of his favour can give. *Amen.*

SECT.
II.
Phil. 22.

IMPROVEMENT.

How amiable is the *condescension* of the holy apostle! how charming and delicate his *address* in this whole section! which makes the immediate *occasion* of this letter, minute as it may seem, *Ver.* matter of congratulation to the *Christian world*. *St. Paul* lays aside the authority, which his *office*, his *age*, his *sufferings*, gave him, to address *Philemon*, as on a foot of *equal* friendship, choosing rather, *by love to entreat*. Let the example be imitated by those in superior stations and relations of life; and let them learn likewise, from the tenderness which *such a man* expresses about this poor *slave*, in whom he traced the appearance of a truly Christian temper, to interest themselves in the happiness of those whose rank is far beneath their own; and learn to make the situation of their *servants* easy, by a kind and friendly treatment. Well may such a care be expected, especially when we can look on such as *brethren, beloved in the Lord*, and partakers with us in the same Saviour and hope.

Let

^f *Prepare a lodging for me.*] Theodoret justly observes, that Paul's mentioning his purpose of coming to lodge with Pui-

lemon quickly, would naturally add greater weight to his interposition in favour of Onesimus.

sect.
n. Let those, to whom God hath blessed the labours of his faithful
Ver. ministers, as the means of their conversion, remember it with
 pleasure, and ascribe it to the riches of Divine grace, to which all
 is originally to be traced; remembering also, that there is a sense
 in which they *owe even themselves* to those who have been honour-
 19 ed as the *instruments* of bringing them to *Christ*, without an ac-
 quaintance with whom they had lost *themselves*, and been ruined
 for ever. Let the kindness which *Paul* expresses for *Onesimus*, in
 18 being willing that his *debt* to *Philemon* should be charged to his
 18, 19 *account*, lead us to reflect on our infinite obligations to a gracious
Redeemer. He has suffered our ten thousand talents to be *imput-*
ed to him, that *his righteousness* might be so imputed to us, that
 for the sake of it, we should finally be re-admitted to the *family*
of God. With an ingratitude not to be paralleled, by any thing
 which can pass between mortal men, we had perfidiously deserted
 15 it; but the Divine goodness leaves us room humbly to hope, we
 may have *departed from it for a while*, to be *received* into it *for ever*.
May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with our spirit, to pro-
 duce those strong impressions of wonder, thankfulness, and love,
 25 which ought to fill it, in every remembrance of such overflowing
 and triumphant mercy! *Amen.*

END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE EPISTLE OF PAUL TO
 PHILEMON.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO THE

HEBREWS.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

ADVERTISEMENT

TO THE READER, BY THE EDITOR.

THE *Author* of this work had written upon the title of that manuscript-volume, which contained the epistle to the Romans, the following direction: "*N. B.* If I die before this work is finished, as it is most probable I shall, I desire that it may be transcribed, as far as it goes, by Mr. Orton; and that he would add such notes as he shall judge most proper, from my written critical notes on the epistles; and that it may be printed, by subscription, in one, two, or three volumes, as shall be judged most convenient, and according to the progress which Providence may permit me to make in it. Jan. 1, 1746—7."—I think it therefore incumbent upon me to inform the subscribers what progress the *author* had made in this work, and what has been done to it since his death in order to remove those suspicions which often arise concerning the authenticity of posthumous works.

When it pleased God to put a period to the *author's* life and labours, he had finished his paraphrase and improvement of the epistolary part of the New Testament, and of the book of the *Revelation*, and fairly wrote it out in short hand; and had added the principal notes which he intended to publish. At the end of the manuscript-volume containing the *Revelation*, he had wrote "Through the good hand of God upon me, which I desire most thankfully to acknowledge, I ended the first copy of the *Family Expositor*, Dec. 31, 1748, exactly two years after I began to write upon the *Romans*; having pursued it, during that time, without the interruption of one single day; such health and such resolution did it please God to give me, amidst the various scenes of business, danger, and amusement, through which I passed! May his grace raise to himself a monument of praise from this feeble effort to explain, illustrate, and enforce his word!"—And under—"I ended my notes on the books I had thus paraphrased and improved, Aug. 21, 1749, having daily pursued the work in like manner, whether at home or abroad"—He had transcribed for the press, the paraphrase, improvements, and notes, of the two first volumes, as now published; the paraphrase and improvements of the epistle to the *Hebrews*, and the two first epistles of *John*.—The notes on these three epistles, together with the paraphrase, improvements, and notes, on the remaining epistles, and the *Revelation*, were transcribed from his short-hand copy, by my own hand, or under my inspection, by some of his pupils; and I carefully revised the transcript several times, and compared it with his short-hand copy.—I can assure the subscribers, that the utmost caution has been used, that no one sentiment of the *author* should be suppressed or changed, and only such expressions varied, as to avoid tautology, and for the sake of perspicuity and accuracy, it might be presumed the *author* would have varied, had he transcribed this part of the

the work, and given it his finishing hand. In the margin of the short-hand copy, he had wrote hints of some alterations to be made in the phraseology and length of some sentences, as well as of notes he intended to add when he transcribed it for the press. I have endeavoured to follow these hints in the best manner I could; and accordingly a few notes have been added to vindicate or illustrate his version or paraphrase, and references inserted to other critics; most of which were taken from his notes, according to the directions mentioned above. On the whole, I hope the attentive reader, who is acquainted with his style and spirit, will discover nothing in the latter part of the work unsuitable to either; and will join with me in thankfulness to God, who spared his life till he had completed this important and useful undertaking.

There is one occurrence relating to it, which my own judgment, and that of many of the *author's* friends, forbid me to conceal, and the rather, because it has been greatly misrepresented. During the *author's* life (on June 1750) a fire occasioned by a wax-candle being left on his writing desk, broke out in his study, and consumed many of his papers, and part of one volume of the short-hand copy of this work; but the light of the fire being providentially discovered by an opposite neighbour, who gave an immediate alarm, it was speedily extinguished. When the *author* was informed of this accident, he seemed most anxious about the preservation of this manuscript; and when the flames were extinguished, to his great joy and surprise, it appeared that the part of this volume, and that only which was destroyed, had been transcribed, and the transcript lay in another place out of danger, and all the untranscribed pages were perfectly legible, and only the edges of them singed. Being an eye-witness of the danger and deliverance, I record this account of it, partly for the satisfaction of the subscribers with regard to the exaggerated report, but chiefly as it seems to denote a particular care of Providence in preserving this work, and a favourable omen, that God intends it for extensive and lasting usefulness. *It was so wise and will observe such things, even they shall understand the loving kindness of the Lord.* Psalm ciii. 43.

In the name of the *author's* family, I heartily thank the subscribers for their encouragement of this work, and the gentlemen who have kindly superintended the press; and I pray that it may answer those pious and benevolent ends for which it was composed and is now published.

J. ORTON.

A
GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE
EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS.

LEARNED men have been divided in their opinions concerning the *author* of this celebrated epistle. It hath been ascribed to St. Luke, to Barnabas, and to *Clement of Rome*. But though some considerable persons have given the sanction of their authority to the several opinions I have mentioned, yet the most prevailing one among the ancients was, and among the moderns still is, that *this epistle* is a genuine work of St. Paul. Among those who believe that St. Paul was its author, there are some indeed who imagine it was written by him in the Hebrew or Syriac language, and translated into Greek either by St. Luke or Clement. And it is certain there was such an ancient tradition, mentioned by Clemens Alexandrinus, Eusebius, and Jerom. And there are arguments in support of all the particular hypotheses concerning the author of the epistle, the language in which it was originally written, and the person who translated it into Greek; I say, there are various arguments in favour of all these different opinions, taken from similarity of style, the use of particular words, and the manner of composition. But I apprehend, whoever carefully considers the observations that have been made by very learned men, upon the language of St. Paul, of Luke, or Clement, in defence of their respective hypotheses, will conclude, that such arguments are very little to be depended upon, as they frequently are much indebted to a strong imagination, and in the present case, appear to be urged with equal plausibility on all sides.

I have already given my opinion, that St. Paul was the *author* of *this epistle*, (Vol. III. sect. 60. *note* 3;) and that because the current of antiquity, though not the authority of every individual father, runs strongly this way; Jerom expressly asserts, that the *epistle* to the Hebrews had been received as St. Paul's by *all the Greek*

Greek writers And though this epistle wants one characteristic of St. Paul's other epistles, the prefixing his name, and his usual form of inscription; for a very obvious reason, that he might not too early awaken the prejudices the Jewish converts had conceived against him; yet it might be easy to collect from the *epistle itself*, some strong intimations that St. Paul was its *author*.

It is of less importance in what *language* it was originally written, if the translation were made, (as the tradition says,) by some companion and fellow-labourer of St. Paul. Though it should be considered, that the presumption lies on the side of our present *Greek copy*, that it is an original and not a translation; and therefore the arguments which induce any to be of a contrary opinion, should be very strong and convincing. If the reader should be inclined to examine this matter more accurately, he may consult Spanheim's Dissertation concerning the *author of the epistle to the Hebrews*, particularly part iii. chap. 2, concerning the *language**, and the learned Mr. Hallet's *Introduction to his Supplement to Mr. Pierce's Paraphrase*; which Mr. Wolfius hath translated into *Latin*, and published at the close of the 4th volume of his *Curie Philologicæ*, with some of his own remarks and strictures in the margin. As for the date of this epistle, I am of opinion it was about the year 63, while St. Paul was imprisoned at Rome, or quickly after it. See Vol. III. sect. ix. note 2, and compare Heb. xiii. 23.

This epistle was written to the Hebrews, or converts from Judaism to Christianity, who inhabited at least some *one particular country*, (as may be inferred from the *apostle's* saying, chap. xiii. 19, *I beseech you rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner*; and verse 13. *Know ye that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom if he come shortly, I will see you.*) And this country most probably was Judea, where the converts to Christianity from Judaism were almost incessantly persecuted by their unbelieving brethren, who tenaciously adhered to the constitution and ceremonies of the Mosaic law, which Christianity superseded. Now the manifest design of St. Paul in this epistle, is, "to confirm the Jewish Christians in the faith and practice of the gospel of Christ, which they might be in danger of deserting, either through the *insinuations* or *ill-treatment* of their persecutors."

It was natural for the zealous defenders of the Mosaic law to insist upon the Divine authority of Moses, the distinguishing glory and majesty which attended its first promulgation by the ministry of angels, and the special privileges with which it invested those who adhered to it. In answer to all arguments and insinuations of this kind, the *apostle* shews,

1. That in all these several articles, Christianity had an infinite superiority to the law. Which topic he pursues from chap. i. to xi. Reminding the believing Hebrews, That it was a most extraordinary

* *Fred. Spanheim. Op. Tom. ii. p. 245, &c.*

ordinary favour, that God had sent them a revelation by his *own Son*, whose glory was far superior to that of *angels*, (chap. i. *throughout*;) very naturally inferring from hence the danger of despising Christ on account of his *humiliation*, which in perfect consistence with his dominion over the world to come, was voluntarily submitted to by him for wise and important reasons: particularly to deliver us from the fear of death, and encourage the freedom of our access to God; (chap. ii. *throughout*.) With the same view he further magnifies Christ as superior to Moses their great legislator; and from the sentence passed on those who rebelled against the authority of Moses, infers the danger of despoising the promises of the gospel; chap. iii. 1—13. And as it was natural from hence, to call to mind that rest in Canaan to which the authority wherewith Moses was invested was intended to lead them, the *apostle* cautions them against the sin of unbelief, as what would prevent their entering into rest: an expression, which he shows to refer to a nobler state of rest than what the Jews enjoyed in Canaan, even on their most sacred days, and in their most prosperous ages: (chap. iii. 14.—iv. 21. Further enforcing this caution by awful views of the omniscience of God, and animating representations of the character of Christ as our High Priest, of whose Divine appointment, gracious administration, and previous suffering, he goes on to discourse, and promises further illustrations of so important a topic; (chap. iv. 12. *to the end*; chap. v. *throughout*.) Declaring that he would advance to sublimer truths without dwelling upon the first principles, for the sake of those who might have apostatized from Christianity; and whose case he represents as very hopeless; (chap. vi. 1—9. And then for the establishment and comfort of sincere believers, he sets before them the consideration of the goodness of God, and his fidelity to his sacred engagements, the performance of which is sealed by the entrance of Christ into heaven as our Forerunner; (chap. vi. 9. *to the end*.) Further to illustrate the character of our blessed Lord, the Author and Finisher of our faith, he enters into a parallel between Melchizedec and Christ, as agreeing in title and descent; and from instances in which the *priesthood* of Melchizedec excelled the *Levitical priesthood*, he infers the surpassing glory of the *priesthood* of Christ to the *priesthood* under the *law*: (chap. vii. 1—17.) From these premises, which plainly manifested the defects of the *Aaronical priesthood*, he argues, that it was not only excelled, but vindicated and consummated by that of Christ, to which it was introductory and subservient; and by consequence, that the obligation of the law was henceforth dissolved; (chap. vii. 18, *to the end*.) He then recapitulates, what he had before demonstrated of the superior dignity of Christ as the High Priest of Christians, and further illustrates the distinguished excellence of that *new covenant* which was foretold by Jeremiah as established in him, and plainly enriched with much better promises than the *old*: (chap. vii. *throughout*.) Illustrating further the doctrine of the *priesthood* and intercession of Christ, by comparing it to what the *Jewish high priest* did on the great day of *atonement*; (chap.

ix.

ix. 1—14.) And having enlarged on the necessity of shedding Christ's blood, and the sufficiency of the atonement made by it, (chap. ix. 15, *to the end*, and proved that *legal ceremonies* could not by any means purify the conscience, and from thence argued the insufficiency of the Mosaic law, and the necessity of looking beyond it, (chap. x. 1—15,) the *apostle* urges the Hebrews to improve the privileges which such an High Priest and covenant conferred on them, to the purpose of a fiducial approach to God, a constant attendance on his worship, and most benevolent regards to each other. (chap. x. 15—25.)

The apostle having thus at length obviated the *insinuations* and *objections* of the Jews to the gospel of Christ, as inferior to the *Mosaic dispensation*, by showing its transcendent excellence in a clear and convincing light, for the satisfaction and establishment of the believing Hebrews, proceeds,

II. To awaken their attention, and fortify their minds against the storm of *persecution*, which had come, and was further likely to come upon them, for the sake of the Christian faith. To this end, he reminds them of the extremities they had already endured in defence of the gospel, and of the fatal consequences which would attend their apostacy; (chap. x. 26, *to the end*.) Calling to their remembrance the renowned examples of faith and fortitude which had been exhibited by holy men mentioned in the scriptures of the Old Testament, and particularly by Abel, Enoch, Noah, Abraham and Sarah, (chap. xi. 1—16,) by Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and Moses. (chap. xi. 17—29.) Concluding his discourse with glancing on many other illustrious worthies; and besides those recorded in scripture, referring also to the case of several who suffered under the persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes. (chap. xi. 30—xii. 2.)

And having thus executed his design in the *argumentative part* of the epistle, he *applies* the whole by exhorting the Hebrew Christians to sustain and improve the afflictions to which they were exposed, and to exert themselves vigorously to promote the united interests of peace and holiness, (chap. xii. 3—14.) Cautioning them against disparaging the blessings of the gospel, and making them a sacrifice either to any secular views or sensual gratifications; representing the incomparable excellence of these blessings, and the wonderful manner in which they were introduced, which even the introduction of the Jewish economy, glorious and magnificent as it was, did by no means equal; (chap. xii. 15—29.) Exhorting them to brotherly affection, purity, compassion, dependence on the Divine care, steadfastness in the profession of the truth, and to a life of thankfulness to God, and benevolence to man, from the consideration of the inestimable privileges derived to us from Christ; which ought always to encourage us resolutely to endure any infamy and suffering which we may meet with in his cause; (chap. xiii. 1—16.) Concluding the whole, with recommending to them some particular regard to their pious ministers; and increasing their prayers; adding some salutations, and a solemn benediction (chap. xiii. 17, *to the end*.)

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE APOSTLE

TO

THE HEBREWS.

SECTION I.

The Apostle reminds the Hebrews to whom he writes, of the great favour God had done them in sending them a revelation by his own Son ; on whose glory he expatiates as far superior to that of angels, intending by this representation to engage them to embrace and retain the gospel. Heb. I. 1, to the end.

HEBREWS I. I.

GOD, who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last days spoken unto us by *his*

HEBREWS I. 1.

THE great and wise God^a, who in his wonderful condescension hath at many times, and in various manners^b, of old, spoken to the fathers of the Jewish nation, by the prophets whom he hath in successive ages raised up and employed as the messengers of his will to them, In these last days hath magnified his mercy in a 2 yet more amazing manner; for he hath spoken unto us by the Son^c, his only-begotten, and best beloved

SECT.
i.Heb.
I. 1.

^a *God who, &c.*] Though St. Paul was the author of this epistle, as we have already observed, yet he does not begin it, as he does most of his other epistles, by prefixing his name to it; the reason of which probably was, that those to whom he was now writing were under strong prejudices against his name; and he was not willing to alarm those prejudices at the beginning of his letter.

^b *Many times, and various manners.*]

The first word, as some apprehend, refers to the parcels by which God's will was delivered, in opposition to a complete revelation; and the last, to the manner in which it was made known, namely, by dreams, visions, urim, prophets, voices, signs.

^c *By the son.*] This is no argument that God did not speak by Christ before; but only that it was not in so clear and express a manner.

d *Heir*

act. r.
1.
Heb.
i. 2.

beloved Son, whom he hath sent into our world as the Ambassador of his mercy to us, even that illustrious person, *whom he hath appointed the heir and possessor of all things*^d. He hath adjusted all things in such a manner, as to advance the purposes of his glory, and committed the administration of his providential kingdom into his hands, *by whom*, and in reference to whose honour, *he also* created all things, and constituted the ages^e and dispensations of the church and world. I speak of that great Emanuel, whom we have so long been taught to know and adore ; *who being the effulgent ray of [his] glory, and the express delineation of his person*^f, on whom his likeness is instamped in living characters in a manner which no created nature can admit, *and upholding the universe which he hath made by the efficacious word of his Father's power*^g, which is ever resident in him, as his own, by virtue of that intimate though incomprehensible union which renders them one, (John x. 30.) ; was nevertheless set forth in the feeble dress and humble form of human flesh, that he might be our atoning sacrifice. And accordingly *having by himself performed* that great transaction, which is *the cleansing away of our sin*, he is now returned to the celestial world from which he descended for this gracious purpose, and is *sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high*^h, of that glorious and excellent Being, who reigns supreme in the heaven of heavens.

- 4 To this exalted Redeemer would I now call your thoughts, of whom I have some very important

his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

^d Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

^h Being made so much better than the angels,

d *Heir and possessor.*] Mr. Pless learnedly vindicates the latter of these interpretations.

e *Constituted the ages.*] The sentiment, as thus expressed is a very important one ; but if any rise it upon rendering *ages*, like *usual time*, I shall not oppose it. (But it is certain, that St. Paul asserts this doctrine, Col. i. 10. 17, if not here.)

f *Delineation of his person.*] This is, saith Light, answering to the Divine perfections, as the impressions of the seal does to the engraving of the metal.—It is noteworthy, that Philo calls the *Japen* *greatest* *not* *more than*. See *Scott's Christian Life*, Vol. III. p. 119.

g *Word of his power.*] Many explain this of the *Father's* power, which is the

same I have given in the *passage*.—Some suppose *word* *alone*, which would fully justify our version. But if the power of the Father be the power of Christ, to be used by him at pleasure for the security of his people, it seems to be all that the establishment of our faith in him requires.

h *Sat down on the right hand.*] Some understand this of the *right hand* of the *Sovereign*, in the most honourable place among men or angels ; and quote 1 Pet. iii. 22 ; Eph. i. 20, 21, supposing there may be some glorious appearance of the *Father's* presence in heaven, as there was upon earth, which hath formerly speaking a *right* or a *left hand*. But this I esteem no article of faith. Compare chap. viii. 1.

angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee ? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son ?

6 And again when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his

important and sublime truths to deliver. Consider, therefore, my brethren, what reverence, what fidelity, what zeal you owe to him *who was made in exaltation and celestial glory as much superior to angelsⁱ as the name he has inherited*, and by which through many succeeding ages he hath been spoken of in the sacred oracles, *[is] more excellent than theirs ; For to 5 which of the angels hath he ever said, as we know he hath said to the Messiah in that celebrated prophecy, (Psal. ii. 7.) Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee ? And again, (2 Sam. vii. 14.) I will be a father to him, and he shall be my son^k ?* For if these words were immediately spoken of Solomon, it was chiefly as a type of Christ, the great son of David, the prince of peace. But so far is he 6 from speaking of the angels in terms expressing equal dignity, that *when he again introduces his first-begotten Son into the world*, and speaks of him as coming with royal pomp to take possession of his kingdom, *he saith, (Psalm xcvi. 7.) And let all the Angels of God worship him.* And accordingly he did actually demand their homage to him, as constituted their Lord and Sovereign, not only in regard to his originally superior glories, but in consideration of that fidelity and zeal with which he had discharged his important errand to our world. And 7 concerning the angels he saith, (Psal. xiv. 4,) *he*

SECT.
I.

Heb.
I. 4.

ⁱ Superior to angels.] Some have, I think, very precariously imagined, that the apostle, in this and the next chapter, insists so much on Christ's superiority to angels, in order to take off the Jews from that angel-worship to which they were greatly inclined. But it is evident the apostle does not speak expressly on that subject. It is more certain, therefore, that his intention was to exalt their ideas of our blessed Redeemer ; as indeed their entertaining high and honourable conceptions of him would be of great importance to their holding fast their Christian profession. It is plain the Jews considered the angels as concerned in the promulgation of their law, on which account they might be more zealously attached to it, and in this view there was a peculiar propriety in the apostle's labouring the argument he is here upon, namely, the superiority of our blessed Lord to all the angelic orders.

^k Thou art my son.] These words are taken from Psalm ii. 7. And I think it is evident (as others have observed,) that this and the rest of the passages here quoted, must refer to Christ in their original sense, and in the strictest propriety of interpretation ; otherwise the argument would be entirely inconclusive ; for it might be replied, that supposing these passages to be applicable to Christ, they will not prove him to be superior to the angels, since they originally refer to David and others confessedly inferior to those celestial spirits. It might be easily proved that this second psalm does originally belong to the Messiah. Compare Acts iv. 25, xiii. 33.

^l He shall be my son.] Mr. Pierce hath laboured largely to prove, that these words can in their original and primary sense refer only to Christ.

m He

ECT. *he maketh his angels winds*, and his ministers *a flame of fire*. He, who rules the winds and the lightnings, has his angels under equal command, and employs them with the strength of winds and the rapidity of lightnings in his service.

8 *But to the son [he] speaks in a very different manner, and [saith] in those memorable words, which have an ultimate reference to Christ, (Psal. xlv. 6, 7.) Thy throne, O God—[is for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom [is] a sceptre of righteousness.* Thou hast in the most

eminent degree, through the whole of thine administration, *loved righteousness and hated iniquity* 6, and hast taken the most effectual method to suppress it; *therefore God, thy God, and Father, hath anointed thee plentifully with the oil of gladness above thy associates*: thou art exalted to superior honour and happiness: so that none of thy brethren, none of the angels whom thou mayest in any instance or degree have condescended to join with thyself, and lead in thy train, can pretend to compare with thee in glory or in joy. Yea, as Divine, thou art fixed in thine eternal throne, that the whole created world may unite its prostrate homage

10 before thee. And it is to him who presided, as is well known, over the Jewish nation and received the tribute of praise which they paid to Jehovah their God, that those words are addressed, Psal. cii. 20. *Thou, Lord, from the beginning*

his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 *But unto the son, he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom:*

9 *Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity: therefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.*

10 *And thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: and thou hast*

in He maketh his angels winds.] That is, saith Mr. Crockett (*Apost. Hist.* p. 205.) He, the son, makes use of the angels as his ministers, in producing storms and lightnings according to his pleasure. But I would not change the signification of the pronoun *He*, which returns here, without absolute necessity.—The rendering *mercifully good*, is very agreeable to the original and the context.

n Thy throne, O God, &c.] To render this, as some would do, *God is thy throne for ever and ever*, that is, God will establish thy throne, (according to 4 Sam. vii. 13. 15: Psalm lxxix. 4.) appears to me very unnatural.

a Loved righteousness, hated iniquity.] It may be objected, that as the angels have maintained this character, consequently (as can be no just reason for preferring Christ to them. But I think the

truth is, not so much that the angels are chargeable with mistakes, though not with moral evil, (*Job vi. 18. xvi. 12*) as Mr. Petrus argues, but rather that it reflects that uncomprehended nature of the love of moral rectitude which Christ hath given in becoming a sacrifice for us by his atonement; doing more than hath been ever done by any rational agent, towards displaying his *love of righteousness, and hatred of iniquity*.

p Above thy associates: angels.] It seems to be intended here, that as Christ took the special charge of Judaea, angels were charged with the punishment of other countries; in reference to which it is that they are called his *fellows* or *companions* 1. for (as others have observed) if *Judaea* do not signify *earth*, the quotation is nothing to the *apostle's* purpose.

veng are the works of thine hands.

11 They shall perish but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?

14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

beginning hast founded the earth, and the heavens are the works of thy hands. They, permanent as they seem, shall at length perish and wear out: but thou endurest in undecaying glory; yea all of them shall grow old like a garment. And as a mantle thou shalt fold them up and they shall be changed: thou shalt remove them out of their place, and introduce a new scene of things, with as much ease as a prince lays aside one robe and puts on another; but thou art ever the same, and thy years shall not fail through everlasting ages, nor can thy perfections admit any possible diminution.

But not to insist on the manner in which men have addressed their homage and their praises to him, even under the inspiration of an unerring spirit; let me refer you to another passage, in which the Father himself speaks to him under the character of his son, exalted to his mediatorial kingdom; that you may take an idea of his grandeur from thence. For to which of the angels hath he ever said, Sit thou enthroned in glory at my right-hand, till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet, and give thee to trample upon the last and the proudest of them all? The spirits of heaven expect no such honour as this; the noblest of them all esteems himself happy in an opportunity of worshipping this triumphant Lord, and ministering even to the least of his servants. Is it not a known and delightful truth? are they not indeed all ministering spirits, who officiate before the throne of God, and are sent out to attend on those who shall inherit salvation? and always willing to undertake the offices he shall assign them, for the safety and good of his people? And therefore far from thinking of them in any view of comparison with him, let us humbly adore him, for the benefits which by his authority and favour we daily receive from these benevolent creatures.

SECT.

i.

Heb.

I. 11.

IMPROVE-

q Fold them up.] For αἰξίς; Mr. Pierce would read ἀλλοξίς; change them, agreeable to the Hebrews; and imagines that

heaven and earth here signifies, governments, as indeed the phrase sometimes may; but I think not in this place.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us learn from this wonderful and delightful portion of scripture, how we are to conceive of our blessed *Redeemer*. Ad-
 mirable contrast of characters! which might appear to our feeble
reason, inconsistent, if *faith* did not teach us to receive them.
 Ver Strange, that the brightness of his Father's glory, and the express
 3 image of his person by whom he made the worlds, should confes-
 5 send by himself to purge our sins? That he, to whom God saith,
 6 Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee; that he, whom
 8 the angels are commanded to worship; that he, whose Divine throne
 is for ever and ever; that he, whom the church hath for succe-
 10 sive ages adored as having found the earth, and formed the hea-
 11 vens, as in his original perfections and glories far more immuta-
 ble than they, changing them as a vesture at his sovereign plea-
 sure; that this great, this illustrious, this Divine person, should
 have laid aside these robes of celestial light to array himself in
 mortal flesh; not only that he might reveal his Father's will, and
 speak to us in his name, but that he might redeem us to God by
 his blood? What shall we say? We will receive the message he
 brings us with all humble thankfulness; we will seek his favour
 with more earnest solicitude; we will congratulate his exaltation
 with loyal joy. O triumphant, transporting thought, that Jesus
 is enthroned above all heavens, that he is anointed with an une-
 5 qualled effusion of the oil of gladness, with angels we will fall
 6 down and worship him as our Lord and our God. Our Hsan-
 7 nals shall proclaim it, that he is set down at the right-hand of the
 13 Majesty on high, and that God hath engaged to make his enemies
 his footstool. Angels minister before him with unwearied vigour,
 7 with inconceivable speed do they fly like flames of lightning from
 one end of the heaven to the other, from world to world, to execute
 his sacred commands. With delight do they minister to those
 whom he hath appointed heirs of salvation, nor do they neglect the
 youngest or meanest. Let us thankfully acknowledge the great
Redeemer's goodness and care, in every kind office we receive from
 them. And as our obligations to him are infinitely superior to
 theirs, let us emulate their fidelity, vigour and zeal, in the steady-
 ness and cheerfulness of our obedience: till we join them in ser-
 vices like their own, in that world where they excel, and to which,
 if we approve ourselves his faithful servants, he will ere long give
 them a charge safely and joyfully to convey us.

SECT. II.

From what has been before said, the Apostle infers the danger of despising Christ on account of his humiliation; which in perfect consistence with his dominion over the world to come, was voluntarily submitted to by him, for wise and important reasons; particularly to deliver us from the fear of death, and encourage the freedom of our access to God. Heb. II. 1, to the end.

HEBREWS II. 1.

Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

HEBREWS II. 1.

SOMETHING we have said in the former section concerning the supreme dignity of our blessed Redeemer. And now give me leave, before I proceed to other arguments which will naturally occur, to draw this obvious consequence from what I have already said: If he be so far superior to angels, *we ought therefore to yield extraordinary attention to the things which we have heard^a by his authority; lest by any means we let [them] flow out of our minds, and lose the impression they once made upon us. For if the Mosaic law, which was the word spoken by angels^b, proclaiming it in the name and presence of Jehovah from mount Sinai, was stedfast, and confirmed by such awful sanctions, that every instance of wilful transgression and disobedience received, as its reward, a correspondent and severe vengeance; How shall we³ have any room to hope that we shall escape neglecting so great and glorious a salvation as that which the gospel sets before us? A salvation, which having at its beginning been spoken by the Lord of angels himself, was confirmed to us by the certain report of them that heard [him] preach it with his own lips; The blessed God⁴ himself joining his own Divine and sacred testimony with theirs, both by enabling them to perform the most amazing signs and wonders^c, and*

SECT.
ii.

Heb.
II. 1.

2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward.

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him;

4 God also bearing them witness, both with signs and wonders and with divers miracles

a *We have heard,*] Nothing can be more evidently weak than the argument drawn from hence, to prove that St. Paul was not the author of this epistle, because it was not by hearing only that he received the gospel. It is to be considered, that he speaks in the name of all to whom he was writing, as well as his own, to render the

instruction the more unexceptionable and the more forcible. Besides, that to hear any thing, signifies in general to be instructed in it.

b *Angels,*] See Dr. Whitby's admirable note on this text.

c *Signs and wonders,*] I think it is very needless to inquire curiously into the difference

ACT.
II.

Heb.
II. 4.

and various incontestable miracles, and endowing them in a rich abundance, with distributions of the Holy Spirit in its extraordinary operations, imparted in different degrees to different persons, according to his own sovereign will and pleasure.

- 5 And by these wonderful operations the superiority of Christ to angels is farther illustrated; for to angels, even the most exalted of them, he, that is, God hath not subjected the world to come^d nor ever intended that they should preside in the latest and best dispensation, the kingdom of the Messiah, which extends not only to earth, but to heaven, concerning which we now speak, as it is the great business of the Author's life to promote its interests. But a certain [writer^e] well known I am persuaded to you Hebrews, somewhere bears his testimony, saying, Psal. viii. 4. O Lord, what is man that thou rememberest him

cles, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, according to his own will?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

6 But one in a certain place testifies, saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man

foremost of each of these words, when it is used by a Hebrew to express a great degree and variety of things of any kind, by joining together a great many synonymous words.

d To signify he had not intended that.] Archbishop Tillotson thinks the meaning of the scripture is, that God did not empower the angels who delivered the law, to deliver it with clear and express promises of a future state, as Christ hath fulfilled the gospel. See his Works, Vol. II. p. 136. Dr. Trenchard explains that the Messiah looking on great alterations in the constitution of things, that it is represented by a new house and a new world, (Isa. lvi. 10. &c.) and which account it was called by the Jews, the world to come, a phrase which it is observable the Psalm only uses in the simile in the Hebrew as being familiar to them. Trenchard's Works, Vol. II. p. 204. Others have argued from this text, that angels were possessed of certain authority and power in the world before Christ came, of which they were deprived upon his appearance; and of those who have agreed in this general explication, some, as Mr. Pearce, have referred the prohibition of angels to their losing the guardianship of particular consciences, and others, to some particular influence of their counsels in preserving the schemes which preceded the display of the gospel. But it seems to me, that the simplest, plainest, and most unexceptionable sense is this, * That God had appointed his Son to preside in the last great dispensation; which he elsewhere expresses, by saying, He has willed and

thought to be best, at their common Head, Ephe. i. 10,^f and this certainly is an honour to which no angel can pretend. Dr. Barnet's explication of this as referring to the new heavens and earth, which he supposes shall succeed the millennium in which Christ is to reign, when he also thinks referred to Isa. ix. 6. is so very precarious and impossible an interpretation, that I think it is hardly worth mentioning. Bachel's Theory of the Church, Vol. II. p. 206.

e A certain writer [bears] his testimony.] It has been matter of much debate among critics, whether these words are to be considered as in their original intent, a prophecy of the Messiah, or a description of the dignity and glory of human nature, to which the apostle alludes, making use of David's language to clothe his own ideas, though by an appellation very different from his design. It seems evident to me, that there is nothing in the sixth Psalm by which, independent upon the apostle's authority, it could be known to belong to the Messiah. On the whole therefore I prefer the latter opinion, though I readily confess, that if the former could be proved, it would establish a direct argument in words, which most otherwise be only understood as an allusion, but the great truth to which they refer, the exaltation of Christ to supreme dignity, was so expressly asserted by himself, Mat. xxviii. 18. and was so fundamental a doctrine, and so universally received in the Christian church, that it did not seem to stand in need of such an additional proof.

f For

man that thou visitest him?

7 Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands.

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory,

him, or the son of man that thou regardest him! After which he goes on in words that have a most remarkable correspondence to the character and circumstances of the Lord Jesus Christ, both in his humbled and in his exalted state; for he adds, speaking of the Son of Man, *Thou hast made him but a little lower than the angels; with glory and honour hast thou crowned him, and hast constituted him [lord] over all the visible works of thine hands. Thou hast put all things under his feet.* This may be interpreted in the widest extent; for in putting in all things under him, nothing was left out, [which was] not represented as reduced to subjection to him. But now we do not as yet see, that all things are put under him, to whom we refer these words; but on the contrary, a great part of the world is as yet unacquainted with him and his authority. Nevertheless, we see what we may well look upon as an earnest and security of it; for we see Jesus, who, for the few years he dwelt upon earth, was made in human form and state a little lower than the angels of God, over whom he had an original right as their Maker, to preside, exalted to the most conspicuous dignity in the celestial world: we see him, who was thus humbled for the suffering of death, that he might be capable of it, and that by the grace of God to sinful creatures, he might taste the bitterness of death for every man, who would obediently accept of life through him, now crowned with a glory and honour far superior to what Adam had in the day in which he was created.

Such hath been the conduct of God in this great affair of our redemption. And the beauty and harmony of it will be apparent, in proportion to the degree in which it is examined. For though the Jews dream of a temporal Messiah, as a scheme conducive to the Divine glory, it well became him^g for whom [are] all things, and by whom [are] all things, the glorious Being who is the first cause and the last end of all, in pursuit

[For the suffering of death.] These words may seem ambiguous, and capable of being referred either to the preceding or following clause. It is indeed true, that Christ was crowned as a reward for suffering death, as the Apostle expressly teaches, Phil. ii. 8, 9. But the concluding words of the verse, which have plainly a

connection with these, determine them to the former sense.

g *It became him.*] This seems to signify, not only that the course that he took was well worthy of God, but that in order to act worthy of himself, it was expedient he should take this method.

h *Depose*

SECT.
ii.

Heb.
II. 7.

Heb.
11. 40.

pursuit of the great and important design he had formed, of *conducting many* whom he is pleased to adopt as his *sons*, to the possession of that inheritance of *glory* he has intended for them, to make and constitute Jesus his first-begotten and best-beloved Son, the *Leader* and *Prince of their salvation*, and to make him *perfect* or completely fit for the full execution of his office, *by* a long train of various and extreme *sufferings*, whereby he was, as it were, solemnly consecrated to it.

glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

- 11 And in consequence of this appointment, Jesus, the great *Sanctifier*, who engages and consecrates men to the service of God, *and they who are sanctified*, that is, consecrated and introduced to God with such acceptance [*are*] *all of one family*, all the descendants of Adam, and in a sense, the seed of Abraham — *for which cause he is not ashamed to call them* whom he thus redeems and presents to Divine favour, his *brethren*, *Saying* (Psal. xxii. 22, 26.) in the person of David, when representing the Messiah in his sufferings and exaltation, *I will declare thy name to my brethren, in the midst of the assembly of thy people*, the great assembly, which by way of eminence shall be called *the church*, *will I praise thee* for thy gracious interposition in my favour. And again, speaking as a mortal man, exposed to such exercises of faith in trials and difficulties as others were, he says in a psalm which represents his triumph over his enemies, *I will trust in him* as other good men have in all ages done; *and again*, elsewhere in the person of Isaiah, (Is. vii. 18.) *Behold I and the children which my God hath given me*, are
- 14 for signs and for wonders. *Seeing then* those whom he represents in one place and another as *the children* of the same family with himself, *are partakers of human flesh and blood*, he himself in like manner participated of them, and assumed all their senseless infirmities, that thereby becoming capable of those sufferings to which without such an union with flesh he could not have been obnoxious, *he might by his own voluntary and meritorious death*, abolish and *depose him*,
who

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren.

12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

13 And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold, I and the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy

[Depose him.] The original word *ἀποθεῖναι*, properly signifies to *depose of all power*, Rom. vi. 6. When applied to the law, it signifies *abolish*. To suppose

with Archbishop Tillotson, that it chiefly means, that Christ might give mankind the *use of immortality*, when they actually saw one *arise from the dead* and ascend-
ing

him that had the power of death, that is, the devil :

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their life-time subject to bondage.

16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels, but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren; that he might be a merciful and faithful High-priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able

who by Divine permission had the empire of death^k and led it in his train, when it made its first invasion on mankind, *that is, the devil*, the great artificer of mischief and destruction; at the beginning the murderer of the human race, who still seems to triumph in the spread of mortality which is his work, and who may often by God's righteous permission be the executioner of it. But Christ the great Prince of mercy and life 15 graciously interposed, that he might deliver those his miserable captives, *who through fear of death were*, or justly might have been, *all their life-time obnoxious to bondage*; having nothing to expect in consequence of it, if they rightly understood their state, but future misery; whereas now changing their Lord, they have happily changed their condition, and are, as many as have believed in him, the heirs of eternal life.

We the sinful children of Adam, though the 16 heirs of death, are thus delivered by him; but not the infernal powers, who were the first authors of their seduction; *for truly he took not hold of the angels*, to save them from plunging into the abyss of misery; *but he took hold of the seed of Abraham*, and hath made a gracious provision for the salvation of all who shall by true faith approve themselves the genuine children of that holy patriarch. From whence, and in con- 17 sequence of which design, it behoved him to be made in all things like unto those whom he condescends to call [*his*] brethren, *that so he might be a merciful and faithful High-Priest^k, in things [relating] to God, that he might in the most effectual manner make atonement for the sins of the people*; which he could not have done if he had not assumed our nature. But now, in 18 consequence of that, he has not only provided himself with something to offer, but has by the experience of our infirmities, contracted that peculiar kind of compassion, which nothing else can teach; *and in that he hath himself suffered, being tempted and tried with such a variety of assaults*

SECT.
II.
Heb.
II. 14.

ing to heaven, is, I think, sinking the interpretation a great deal too low.

i The empire of death.] Some have inferred from hence, that the devil is the executioner of the sentence of death both on good and bad men. But I think the sense in the *paraphrase* less obnoxious and precarious.

k Faithful High-Priest.] Mr. Fleming thinks $\alpha\lambda\theta\epsilon\sigma$ signifies the same as $\alpha\lambda\theta\iota\sigma\mu\acute{o}\varsigma$, one worthy of our trust and confidence; but the former implies the latter. Fleming's *Christology*, vol. II. p. 266.

SPEC. II. II. B. II. 18.	assaults and sorrows, <i>he can</i> , in the most ready and endearing, as well as effectual manner, <i>help those that are tempted</i> , and are making their way through those scenes of difficulty which he passed through with such fortitude and honour.	able to succour those that are tempted.
---	--	---

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. ETERNAL praise to our *compassionate High-Priest*, who put on
 18 our *infirmities* that he might know how to pity and relieve them!
 Eternal praise to him, *by whom are all things and for whom are*
all things, that he has concerted the merciful scheme of *bringing*
 10 *many sons unto glory*, in a manner so well *worthy* of his Divine
 perfections, and so full of instruction and comfort to us; appoint-
 ing his own Son *the Captain of our salvation*, and making him *per-*
fect through sufferings. Let us daily reflect upon it with pleasure
 11 and gratitude, that *he is not ashamed to call us his brethren*, though
 16 so highly exalted above the *angels of God*, and that *he took not*
hold of the superior nature of angels, which was sunk into apostacy,
 guilt, and ruin, but *took hold of the seed of Abraham*. How vene-
 9 rable, as well as amiable, is that condescension with which he made
 himself a *little lower than the angels*, that *by the grace of God*
 which was to owe its highest honours to his cross, *he might taste*
death for every man. He hath effected his merciful purpose: *by*
death he hath deposed and abolished the tyrannical prince of death,
 that is, *the devil*, and *delivered from the fears of death*, those who,
 had they known and considered their real circumstances, might
 have been continually in *bondage* to it.

We see our great enemy *deposed*, we see *life and immortality*
brought to light by his gospel: let us see it with gratitude and plea-
 sure. And let us learn from all, if we would not charge ourselves
 with the most inexcusable guilt, and the basest ingratitude, if we
 would not plunge ourselves into the lowest gulf of perdition, *not to*
neglect so great a salvation. Let the doom, which the *law of Moses*
 3 passed upon the presumptuous *transgressor*, deter us; and let the
 2 grace of the gospel allure and invite us to attend to the *salvation*
 1 *spoken by the Lord*, and to take the most earnest heed to it, lest we
 let slip that golden opportunity, which, if neglected, will never
 return.

SECT. III.

The Apostle farther takes occasion to manifest Christ, as superior to Moses, the great legislator of the Jews ; and begins to caution them from the sentence passed on the rebels against the authority of Moses, of the danger of despising the gospel promises. Heb. III. 1—13.

HEBREWS III. 1.

WHEREFORE, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High-Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus ;

2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more

a Holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling.] Mr. Pierce thinks, when they are called *holy brethren* by the apostle, it is in allusion to what was said of their being sanctified, chap. ii. 11. that when he speaks of their calling, he means their being called the brethren ; and that when he styles them *partakers of this calling*, it is to intimate that they do not ingross it. But all these interpretations seem to me more refined than solid. The calling, generally signifies the call that is given us by the gospel, to pursue immortality and glory.

HEBREWS III. 1.

I HAVE just pointed out to you the Son of God, under the endearing character of a compassionate and faithful High-Priest. And therefore suffer me to address you my dear and holy brethren, whom he hath brought near to God, and graciously made *partakers of the heavenly calling*^a, by which he animates his people to aspire to the noblest views and pursuits ; and let me intreat you frequently to direct your eyes and hearts to him : *attentively regard* this gracious Saviour, who hath condescended to become the apostle of God to us, that he might bring us the messages of his will, and who is also constituted the *High-priest of our profession*^b, by whom our guilt is expiated, and our happiness secured even *Christ Jesus*, so well known to us under this great and honourable character. Let that illustrious Person be daily familiar to your minds, even he *who was faithful to him that appointed him* to his office, as Moses [was] also faithful for all his house ; according to that testimony with which God himself was pleased to honour him. (Numb. xii. 7.) But I design not by applying these words, to insinuate, that there is room for a complete comparison between them. On the contrary, it is very apparent, that as for him of whom I now speak, he was

b Apostle and High-Priest.] Both are properly mentioned, as the author was to shew, that as an apostle, Christ was superior to Moses : and as an High Priest, to Aaron. He is called an *Apostle* as sent from God with full commission for the important affair he came to transact. That *apostle* signifies messenger, see many places in the New Testament, cited vol. sect. 162. p. 246. note e.

a Mor9

SECT.
III.Heb.
III. 3.

was esteemed worthy of far more honour than Moses*, in proportion to the degree in which the builder of a house † hath more honour than the house itself. For Christ laid the plan of the Mosaic dispensation, and Moses who was himself his creature, evidently acted as his delegate in the revelation which he made to the people of Israel; so that whatever excellencies that dispensation can boast, they reflect an honour ultimately on the Divine Person from whom he received it. *For every house has same builder**, by whom its several parts were modelled, raised and disposed, and every thing well adjusted in it displays the skill of its Architect and Disposer; *now he who built and adjusted all things [is] God*, whose works of creation and providence are worthy their great Author, and proclaim that power, wisdom, and goodness, which set him infinitely above the most excellent of creatures.

- 5 And that Christ is incomparably more to be honoured than Moses, appears even from this consideration, though inferior to the former, that *Moses [was] indeed faithful in all his house, as a servant*, who was appointed to act in an inferior capacity, *for a testimony of things afterwards to be mentioned*; the evangelical design of which we shall in some measure discuss in the following part of this epistle, according to their relation and connection. But Christ was faithful in a far superior character, even *as a Son in his own house*†, that is, over the church, in which

more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who built modelled the house, both more than

4 For every house is builded by none other; but he that build all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house;

c *Moses honour than Moses*]. As it was their attachment to the Mosaic law, and the writings of the Old Testament, that hindered so many Jews from embracing Christianity, it is with the utmost propriety of address that the apostle here undertakes to show that Christ was superior to Moses, and by a necessary consequence to the rest of the prophets and sacred authors, whom they acknowledged to be inferior to this great Prophet.

d *Builder of a house*]. Both Mr. Pyle and Dr. Whitby would render *oikodome* not to build, but to order or govern, as the word more signifies not a building, but a family.

e *Hath same builder*]. So I think the words *oikodome* [the same way] may be rendered, the word *man* not being in the original, nor here being properly inserted. Dr. Calamy has argued from hence the su-

preme Duty of Christ, in consequence of his being the Creator of all things. *Calamy on Rom. p. 44*. But Mr. Pierce pleads, that if it had been the intent of the apostle here to assert, that Christ was the Creator of all things, it would have been sufficient to have stopped here, and that what follows would sink the argument lower; therefore he would translate it as the *scholæ Latinæ* does, *The head of the house*, that is, the head and founder of the family, *has the greatest honour of any person in the house*; and by consequence they must have the great honour who are most nearly related to him. So Christ who is his Son must have greater honour than Moses, who was no more than a servant.

f *In his own house*]. Mr. Pierce brings many arguments to prove it should be *in his house*, that is, God's, in which sense the

house: whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith, To-day, if ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway err in their hearts; and they have not known my ways.

11 So I swear in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren,

which as Heir of all things he hath not only a trust and office, but also a property, and which is appointed for him to inhabit and preside over; whose house, his chosen and delightful habitation, we Christians now are, if we strenuously maintain [our] freedom of profession^g, and boasting of hope, stedfast unto the end; if having so glorious an hope set before us, in which we may justly boast as our greatest honour and happiness, we resolutely adhere to it, and permit nothing to wrest it out of our hands.

And to this I am labouring to animate you, 7 by the representation I have given of the dignity and glory of our blessed Saviour. Therefore as the Holy Ghost saith, in a psalm which he dictated to David, (Psal. xcvi. 7,) To-day if ye will ever hear his voice at all, Harden not your hearts. 8 any longer; lest you bring destruction upon yourselves, as your predecessors did, in the bitter provocation which they presumed to offer me in the day of temptation in the wilderness; When your unbelieving fathers tempted me, and 9 proved me, as if they would have made an experiment how much it was possible for me to bear; and this, though they saw my works in such a variety of wonders, as passed in the wilderness in the course of forty succeeding years. Therefore I was angry with that perverse generation, 10 and said they always do and will err in [their] hearts, through their own obstinacy and folly, and they have not known my ways, nor paid any regard to the clearest discoveries of my will and design; So that after repeated 11 abuses of my patience and long-suffering, I swear in my wrath, and solemnly declared by my own holy and majestic name, that they should never enter into my rest^h; but that the carcasses of all that came adult out of Egypt, shall fall in the wilderness, and that generation of men be totally consumed. How awful a determination, 12 after all the hopes which such signal deliverances had

SECT.
iii.

Heb.
III. 6.

the very words are used and translated before; but as Christ is appointed the Heir of all things, the paraphrase cannot I think be contested. Compare Heb. x. 21.

g Our freedom of profession.] Some would render it, if we hold fast the confidence, even the rejoicing of our hope firm unto the end, supposing it to refer to that con-

fession which they made at their baptism with solemnity and joy.

h My rest.] Canaan is so called, as they there reposed themselves after the labours of a long war, as well as the fatigues of a tedious march; and perhaps as entering upon a course of stated worship, it might appear as a kind of sabbath-keeping.

i Whilst

SECT.
III.

Heb.
III. 12.

had concurred to inspire! See to it therefore, brethren, lest there ever be in any of you a *weakened heart of unbelief, in apostatizing from him* who still wears the same unchangeable terrors, and continues, and will ever continue, *the same and true God*, to whom you profess so great a regard, and from whom you will incur revail, if you give up the religion of Christ Jesus his Son.

- 12 You are surrounded with many temptations to do this; *but there are another daily*, while you are under this dispensation of grace, *whilst it is called to-day*, and the deserved judgments of God are suspended, *that no one of you may* by insensible degrees and awful insinuations, *be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin*, and its fallacious advances on the mind; whereby if you are not resolutely on your guard, you may be seduced finally to forfeit the invaluable blessings, which are so freely offered, and which have so long been set before you.

then, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called, To-day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

IMPROVEMENT.

Vcr. We are *partakers of this heavenly calling*, and to us are the messages of mercy addressed! Let us therefore hear with reverence and obedience, the admonitions of the word of God. Let us behold with veneration and delight, the Son of God becoming the *Messenger* of his Father's love, and the *High Priest* of our Christian profession. He is the *great prophet* too, whom God hath raised up unto us *like Moses*, in many respects, but O how far superior to him! More completely *faithful to him, who hath appointed him, faithful as a Son in his own house*.

The world is an edifice raised by *Christ*, the church is the *house* in which he delights to reside. Let both be considered in this important view. The Divine perfections of the great Architect are indeed illustriously displayed in the construction and constitution of this *visible world*. Does the meanest house or cottage declare itself to be the work of some intelligent agent? And does it not much more evidently appear, that this commodious and magnificent *structure* must have been planned and reared by proportionable wisdom, grandeur and power?

It is the work of *Christ*, and let it often be devoutly surveyed and contemplated in this view; and from thence let us infer his Divine glories, and read in *them* his matchless condescensions.

1.ct

(1 Hk 7) it is called to-day. 12 Exhort one another daily, whilst it is called, to-day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

God still exercises towards a nation which to be overwhelmed with his judgments.

* Irenaeus.

Let us learn with how much security and delight we may commit our immortal souls to him who *stretched out the heavens, and laid the foundations of the earth*, and shall endure the same when they shall be dissolved and perish. Let us view him also as the *Lord of the church*; and consider the *fabric of grace* as raised to his honour; that in *that* as his *temple*, every one might speak of his glory; and let all the churches, and every member of each, make it their faithful care to honour him more and more.

SECT.
iii.

In this view may we *hold fast the confidence, and rejoicing of* Ver.
our hope, stedfast unto the end, and never suffer any one to take our ⁶
crown, or terrify, or allure us, from that faithful subjection of soul to *Christ*, which his perfections and our obligations, to him concur ¹²
to demand. Who of us can say, he is beyond all danger of being ¹³
ensnared by an *evil heart of unbelief, of being hardened through the deceitfulness of sin*? Let us then, in compliance with so salutary and necessary an exhortation, redouble our guard; let us *watch* over ourselves and each other; *exhorting one another daily, while it is called to-day*, and charging our souls by the awful authority of the *living God*, that after having approached so near him, that after having so solemnly professed to devote ourselves to him, nothing may ever prevail upon us deliberately and wickedly to depart from him.

SECT. IV.

The Apostle goes on to repeat the caution he had given against unbelief, as what would prevent their entering into rest: an expression which he shows to refer to something much nobler than that rest which the Jews enjoyed in Canaan, even on their most sacred days, and in their most prosperous ages. Heb. III. 14.—IV. 11.

HEBREWS III. 14.

HEBREWS III. 14.

FOR we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.

I GIVE you such cautions to guard against the deceitfulness of sin, and an evil heart of unbelief, because I know your highest interests are concerned; for we are made partakers of the grace and mercy of Christ, and admitted by him into the family of God, if we hold fast the beginning of our confidence in him as our great Saviour, *stedfast unto the end* of our lives, whatever difficulties and oppositions may arise. Let ¹⁵
us therefore be strenuous and incessant in this care; forasmuch as it is said^a, in the passage
I have

SECT.
iv.

Heb.
III. 14.

¹⁵ While it is said,
To-day, if ye will hear
his

^a Forasmuch, as it is said.] The words
ω τω λεισθαι are something ambiguous,

and may either signify, forasmuch as it is
said, or while it is said; and if the latter
version

Heb.
111. 16.

I have quoted above, *To-day, if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as they did in the provocation which was offered to God in the wilderness. For some of them who heard so many Divine messages solemnly declared, and the law spoken by the very mouth of God himself from mount Sinai, provoked [him] to indignation; but not all they who came out of Egypt by Moses^b: there was a remnant then^c, as there now is, of believing and obedient souls, to whom the promise of God shall be accomplished. And by whom was he provoked by a long succession of infidelity and folly for forty years^d [was it] not with those who well deserved that displeasure? With those who stood against him by suspecting his presence with them, after so many amazing and unparalleled demonstrations of it; whose carcases, according to his awful prediction, fell in the wilderness during those years of wandering to which they were justly doomed? And was there any thing in this that looks like a breach of promise on the part of the blessed God? Far from it.—To whom did he swear that they should not enter into his rest, but unto those who were so obstinate and disobedient, as entirely to forfeit all claim to his promise and favour? And when we come to consider the cause of that disobedience, we see that it was owing to a secret infidelity with regard to the Divine power and goodness, either to preserve them in the wilderness, or conduct them into Canaan. So that I may say they could not possibly enter into the promised rest, because of unbelief: that was upon the whole, the*

his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation

16 For some, when they had heard, did provoke, howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses:

17 But with whom was he provoked forty years? not it with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom swear he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in because of unbelief.

version be perfected, perhaps this 11th verse may be compared with the 14th. *Let not one among you when it is said to-day, which it is not, saying I will not hear his voice: as if he had said, The matter is of so much importance, that it is not to be completed so soon as for a single day, lest the proper means should be slips.* But as *eye* is a different phrase, was used for *we* in the 14th verse, I judge the rendering I have given most probable, and ventured to inclose to avoid an inconvenient length, by dividing the sentence as I have here done.

^b *For some of them who came out of Egypt.* [Mr. Pyle gives it a different and a more able interpretation, striking the former part of the verse an interrogation. *Was*

*any one there when they heard, that is, heard the report of the voice, [Said ye I will not hear his voice? Were they not all that came out of Egypt?] And this he supposes is a distinct argument for perseverance, taken from the inflexible nature, as well as persistence consequent of infidelity and apostasy. But had this been the sense I think *eye* would have been used instead of *eye*, especially as by this means the correspondence with the 17th verse would have been more evident.*

^c *There was a remnant.* Joshua, Caleb, the women and children, and some think, some of the Levites, were not included in the sentence. Bishop Hall mentions this as an intimation, that all shall not apostatize in the worst times.

d *Let*

IV. 1. Let us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them, but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest; although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this place again, if they shall enter into my rest.

the evil that destroyed them. *Let us therefore improve so awful a dispensation of Providence to our own instruction, and fear^d, lest a promise being now left [unto us] of entering into his most happy and glorious rest, any of us^e should even at any time, so much as seem like to come short [of it.] For we are made partakers of the good tidings^f of the promised rest, as they also were. But the word of promise which they heard, did not profit them, as it might otherwise have done, in matters of the highest importance, not being duly mixed and attuned with faith in them that heard [it.] For we cordially believing^g the gospel, and³ faithfully retaining it, are so secure of final happiness, that it may with some propriety be said, we have already entered into rest; as he said in the fore-cited text, So I swear in my wrath they should not enter into my rest. And this may lead us farther to reflect on what is elsewhere said concerning his works; as they were finished, from the foundation of the world^h. For after⁴ Moses had given us an account of the creation, he somewhere saith concerning the seventh [day] thus, (Gen. ii. 2.; Exod. xxxi. 17.) And God rested the seventh day from all his works. And⁵ in this [place] which we have quoted, again he saith [I have sworn] they shall not enter into my rest. Now this certainly implies, that when these words were written, there was a rest of God*

SECT.
iv.

Heb.
IV. 1.

^d Let us therefore fear.] This example, as has often been observed, is most suitable, being taken from their own ancestors, the evil being the same, namely, unbelief, the time resembling it just after the establishment of a new constitution, and the consequence the same, the exclusion from the rest. The superior dignity of Christ above Moses, and the superior excellence of Heaven above Canaan, greatly confirm the force of the argument. Pierce on Heb. iii. 12, note n.

^e Any of us.] Some copies read *ημῶν* us, instead of *υμῶν* you; and their authority is evidently confirmed by the connection. See Dr. Mills in loc.

^f Partakers of the good tidings.] So I chuse to render the word *συγγημισμένοι*. For, that we may have the gospel (taking it for the message by Christ) at least as well as these people had in the wilderness, and indeed a great deal more plainly, is

so evident, that it may seem but a very low sense of the words, and not worthy the wisdom and gravity of the apostle to insert it

^g We believing have entered, &c.] Mr. Pierce would render it, *We believing enter into rest*, that is, Faith is the way by which men must expect to enter into whatever rest God promises in one age or another; and so it appears necessary that the word should be mixed with it. This, it must be acknowledged, is a very probable and weighty sense.

^h His works finished from the foundation, &c.] Mr. Pierce thinks the apostle intends to lay in an answer to an objection which might arise against the caution given from their being entered into rest already, that is, into the land of Canaan, where they celebrated the sabbath. He therefore shews that the words could neither extend to the one or the other of these rests.

God, from which these sinners should be excluded, though they actually dwelt in the land of Canaan, secure under the protection of David, their victorious Monarch, and enjoyed the repose of God's sabbath there.

6 *Seeing then it remaineth that some must enter into it, which is spoken of in this scripture as a certain thing, and they to whom the good tidings of rest were at first declared, did not enter because of their unbelief, which you know was*

7 *threatened with such punishment: He again doth connect a certain day, marked out within certain limits and boundaries, in reference to which he urges their immediate attention and obedience to the manifestation of the Divine will, saying in that well known expression of David, of which we have just been speaking. This day, and that after so long a time as had passed after the rest of God at the creation mentioned above, as it is said, This day, if ye will hear his voice at all, harden not your hearts.*

8 *Now, it is certain, as I hinted above, the rest here referred to is not, and cannot be, interpreted of the land of Canaan, for if Joshua, who introduced them thither, and settled them there, had given them the great and peaceful rest referred to, he would not so long after that settlement have spoken, as you see in the days of David he does, concerning another day of trial, and another day of rest into which it was a sup-*

9 *posable case that they might not enter. Therefore it is very evident that there remaineth a rest for the people of God, which, when we consider it in reference to that sabbatical rest of which we have been speaking, may properly be called the celebration of a sabbath, which, blessed be God, will be eternal. It may be thus called with happy propriety, for he who hath entered into this, his final and complete rest, of which we now speak, hath also himself entirely ceased from all the labours and fatigues of his works, as God rested from his own on that first seventh day, which, in commemoration of it,*

11 *was appointed sacred to future ages. Let us therefore*

6 *Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in because of unbelief.*

7 *Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.*

8 *For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterwards have spoken of another day.*

9 *There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.*

10 *For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.*

11 *Let us labour therefore to enter into that*

[P. 103.] In this proper name should be inserted, for being done, is only the Greek manner of expressing desiring.

[Remains a rest.] He here changes the word *rest*, for *abstinence*, to signify its being pure and perfect, and like a sabbath.

that rest, lest any man
fall after the same
example of unbelief.

therefore labour with all possible diligence and constancy, to enter into that important and eternal rest, that no one may finally fall into ruin by the same example of disobedience, which hath undone so many thousands already, and proved so fatal to Israel, in the instance I have been handling at large.

sect.
iv.

Heb.
IV. 11.

IMPROVEMENT.

WHAT can be so desirable as to *partake of Christ*, and all the saving benefits, which believers receive in and by him, by virtue of that relation to which he condescends to admit them? Let us seek this happiness by persevering faith, and *holding fast the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end*; bearing still in our minds the melancholy example of the children of *Israel*, who though by such wonderful interpositions led out of *Egypt*, were doomed by the Divine vengeance to die in the wilderness for their unbelief. That obstructed their entrance into *Canaan*; nor can we ever hope to partake of the *land of promise* above, if we resign that faith, which is the spring of every other grace that is necessary to prepare us for it.

Chap.
iii. 14.

Ver.

Let us take the alarm, and exercise that pious fear which so well consists with a cheerful hope in God, and committing our souls to his fatherly care. *We hear the word of salvation*; let us pray that it may profit us; and for that purpose, let us be often realizing to our minds its Divine authority, and those invisible objects which it opens upon us. It speaks of a *rest remaining for the people of God*; and O! how much nobler a rest, than that of *Canaan*. Our true *Joshua* leads us on, as the Captain of our salvation. He conquers all our spiritual enemies by his invincible word, and will divide us an inheritance, an everlasting inheritance there, if we are faithful to the death. *To-day after so long a time*, are we still called to pursue it: let us therefore give diligence, that we may enter: and let those sabbaths, which are instituted in kind commemoration of *God's having rested on the seventh day from his labours*, and which are intended in some degree to anticipate the heavenly rest, be improved for this valuable purpose. So shall we ere long rest from our works, as God did from his, and after the labours of these few mortal days, shall enjoy immortal tranquillity and repose: we shall pass a perpetual sabbath in those elevations of pure devotion, which the sublimest moments of our most sacred and happy days here can teach us but imperfectly to conceive.

Chap.
iv. 1.

10

SECT. V.

The Apostle enforces the caution he had given them, by great views of the omniscience of God, and animating representations of the character of Christ, as our High Priest, of whose Divine appointment, gracious administration, and precious suffering, he goes on to discourse, and promises further illustrations of so important a topic. Heb. IV. 12, to the end, and V. 1—14.

HEBREWS IV. 12.

HAVING warned you against the fatal example of unbelief, which we see in God's Israel of old, let me intreat you to dwell upon it, in your most serious and attentive reflections. *For the word of God^a which gives you this account, as well as that glorious person his essential word, by whom he manifested himself to Israel in the wilderness, [it] still living and efficacious^b, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing in the acutest manner that can be imagined even to the separating between the soul and spirit, the respective principles of animal and rational life, and to the dividing the remotest and most closely connected parts of the body; so that it reaches to the joints and even to the marrow^c, contained in the bones. And, to speak in less figurative terms, as he [is] an exact discerner of the thoughts and intentions of the heart, his word meets with the most secret purpose, and exerts a Divine authority, in annulling irregularities and disorders which no human*

HEBREWS IV. 12.

FOR the word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

^a *The word of God.* It is greatly debated among commentators, whether this is to be understood of Christ, or of the gospel and gospel-ministration. I have endeavoured to give a hint of both senses in the paraphrase; but considering the latter interpretation, have chiefly pointed that out; and I believe you will be struck by the force of a figure, will think it a very possible and natural sense.

^b *Living and efficacious.* Mr. Pearce thinks there is an allusion here to the *living* to which they fell in the wilderness, whom he had so often and so long been speaking of.

^c *Soul and Spirit, joints and marrow.* Their senses in this but an evident refer-

ence to the doctrine of two principles, called soul and spirit, as the seats of rational and sensitive life; to *dividing* does seem to be spoken of as an instance of the greatest penetration. Some have explained, as if he said that, he is able at pleasure to give a mind power; or when the marrow is separated from the joints, or the soul from the spirit, death ensues. But I rather think the meaning of the latter clause is, he can divide the joints, and divide the marrow; that is, enter irresistibly into the soul, and produce perhaps some sentiment which it would not willingly have received; and he can likewise discover and punish secret, as well as open wickedness.

d *Noted*

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

man eye can penetrate. And it may well be supposed that it should be so; for *there is no creature, which is not apparent and manifested in his presence; but all things [are] naked, and laid bare^d before the eyes of him to whom we are to give an account.* He discerns them as the inwards of sacrificed animals are discerned, when their bodies are completely laid open, and therefore it will be altogether in vain to attempt a disguise before him.

SECT.
V.
Heb.
IV. 13.

14 Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

Now on this consideration, and because the all-seeing God who is to be our final Judge, has displayed his mercy in directing our eyes to a Saviour, by whose mediation we are to be delivered from the fierceness of his deserved vengeance; let us, I say, by such powerful considerations be awakened to have recourse to him, and encouraged to confide in him, and to adhere to his cause amidst all opposition. *Having therefore a great High Priest, who hath passed though the veil, and entered into the heavens, that he might there intercede with God for us, even Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast [our] profession of faith in him, and never suffer the most violent attack to wrest it from us.* For *we have not an High Priest incapable of sympathising with our infirmities, but on the contrary, [one who] has a most tender feeling of them, having been himself tried in every respect, in like manner, [with us, yet] without any degree of sin, or any approach toward it, from which, amidst his severest trials, he remained perfectly free.* Let us, therefore, humbly confiding in his intercession, approach with freedom of speech to the throne of grace, to present our petitions, that we may receive that mercy which he hath been appointed to purchase, and may find grace from that throne for our seasonable assistance, according to our respective necessities.

14

15

16

15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.

V. 1. For every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for

I speak of Christ under the character of the great High Priest with evident propriety, to which I hope you will attend; for every high priest^e taken from among men, as those of the Mosaic

V. 1.

d Naked and laid bare.] It has been well observed, that these two words contain a graceful allusion to the custom in sacrificing of flaying off the skin from the victim, and cutting it open, whereby all the vitals and inwards are exposed to full view;

as γυμνός signifies what had no cover, and τελευχλημενός, what had no concealment within. See Blackwall's Sacred Classics, Vol. I. p. 251.

e Every high priest.] All the following discourse is intended to moderate their regards

SECT.

V.

II. 11.

V. 1.

Mosaic ritual are, *is constituted, or chosen for the benefit of men, and set over things which relate to the service and honour of God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins in an acceptable manner. Being able to proportion his compassion to those that are ignorant, and wandering from the exact paths of God's commandments, for whom alone, you know, sin-offerings are provided; because he himself also is incident to infirmity. And for this reason it is necessary that he should offer an appointed expiatory sacrifice for sins on his own account, as well as for the people, and should make way for their sin-offering by the presentation of his own.*

4 *And this is so awful an office, that no man who has any regard to duty or safety, taketh it to himself; but he only wears it who is called of God for that purpose, as Aaron [was.] So Christ also, we well know, did not glorify himself to be made an high-priest; he did not aspire to, or seize upon this exalted office without a proper call; but he raised him to this conspicuous dignity, who said unto him, in the place quoted and pleaded above, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee¹. As also in another [place], which it will be proper to take very particular notice of, (Psal. cx. 4,) He saith to him whom he had called to sit on his right-hand, thou [art] a Priest for ever according to the order of Melchisedec.*

7 Such a priest shall we presently see our great Redeemer to have been, even that compassionate Saviour, who in the days of his flesh, and while he sojourned here amidst the inhumanities and calamities to which human nature is obnoxious, being assaulted with the utmost violence by the

for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins?

2 Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way; for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity?

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sins.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

5 So also Christ glorified not himself to be made an High Priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son to-day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death,

gave for the Levitical priesthood, and to give them more exalted names of Christ, that they might be more resolute in adhering to him.

[*Proportion his compassion.*] So the word, *proportion*, properly signifies. The *quantity and measure* is here put, by a usual figure, for those who number, or are, through ignorance, the case in which priests appointed by men, were to offer sacrifices for them.

[*Did not glorify himself, &c.*] He did not assume the sacerdotal office without a Divine authority, nor affect to appear

before his time in the pomp and splendor of it.

[*This day have I begotten thee.*] This will by no means prove he was not a High Priest, before his resurrection from the dead; and indeed if it signifies that his priesthood is to be dated only from the day of his resurrection, not to mention the other considerations of that supposition, it would contrary to the judgment of those who bring it in this view, prove, that Christ was a Priest while he was upon earth, that is, during the period between his resurrection and ascension.

1 From

death, and was heard,
in that he feared.

the powers of darkness, offered repeated prayers and supplications, which were attended with humble prostrations, a strong cry and flowing tears to him who was able to save him from death, and his supplications were not in vain; for though his heavenly Father did not think fit to exert that power in his total deliverance; yet he was heard in being delivered from that which he particularly fearedⁱ, and which threw him into such an agony in the garden, that he sweat drops of blood. It is indeed a wonder-^oful, but at the same time a very instructive dispensation, and therefore worthy of our deep consideration and reflection; that though he were a Son, yet he learned obedience^k by the things which he suffered, and was trained up for more eminent services, by a series of painful⁹ discipline. And being thus consecrated to God¹ by his own blood, in virtue of which he was installed in his priestly office, he became the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him; to all that practically own his authority, as well as profess a dependence on his grace; being, as we observed before, Called and denominated¹⁰ of God an High Priest according to the order of Melchisedec: Concerning whom by the way,¹¹ it is necessary that before we dismiss this argument, we speak, having much discourse, and some of it perhaps hard to be understood; not so much from the difficulty of the thing itself, as because you are slow and sluggish of hearing, and your minds are not awakened to that attention to these things, which might reasonably be

SECT.

V.

Heb.

V. 7.

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all that obey him;

10 Called of God an High Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

ⁱ From that which he particularly feared.] So I chose to render and explain the words, though Bishop Fell and some others, taking *εὐλαβία* for a religious reverence of God, (compare chap. xii. 28) interpret it, as if it had been said, that his piety rendered his prayer acceptable. Dr. Whitby has said so much to confute this sense, and establish the rendering in the paraphrase, that I need not add more, but refer to the note on Luke xxii. 42, (Vol. VII. p. 349 note h,) for a further illustration of the general interpretation here given to this text.

^k Learned obedience.] He found he must suffer, and by one degree of suffering was better fitted for another. As Christ's human soul advanced gradually in knowledge, so also in the perfection of virtue,

though always free from any defilement of sin; and his patient and cheerful submission was improved by every trial.—But Dr. Whitby would render it, he taught obedience to others by it.

[¹ Being made perfect.] Archbishop Tillotson would translate it having attained the end of his race through sufferings, that is, pass through sufferings in his way to consummate glory. (Compare John xix. 30; Luke xiii. 32; Heb. ii. 10.) But Dr. Jackson would render it, being consecrated, and is large in shewing how Christ might be said to be consecrated to his priestly office by his passion. Compare chap. vii. 28, ii. 10. See Dr. Jackson's Works, Tom. ii. Book ix. p. 943, &c. and Dr. Owen on chap. ii. 10.

SECT.
V.H. b.
V. 12.

be expected from you: and especially as you are much prejudiced against every thing which may seem to lessen the glory of the Levitical priesthood: *For indeed, whereas you ought for the time that you have been under the instructions of the gospel, to have been qualified to be teachers of others, you are so attached to Jewish ceremonies and forms, that ye have need again that one should lead you back as it were to some of the first principles of religion, relating to the ends and purposes of Christ's death, and teach you what [are] the first initial elements of the Divine oracles, so that you seem to be in a state of infancy as to these things, and are become persons who have need of milk, and not of strong food, such as suits a manly age and robust constitution.*

13 *For every one who partaketh of milk, and subsists on that, without being able to digest strong food, [is] to be considered as unskilful in the word of righteousness, that is in the gospel, which directs us in the true way to justification by the blood and righteousness of the great Redeemer; for he is yet but an infant, and a compassionate regard must be paid to him under this view, in hope that he may hereafter attain to a superior stature, and more vigorous age.*

14 *But strong food belongs to full grown men, who by long use and habit, have [their] senses exercised so as to be able readily to distinguish between both good and evil, which if they cannot, there may indeed be danger of being imposed upon by that which would be unwholesome to their souls; though administered under the pretence of being fit to nourish them, and adapted to persons of most eminent attainments.*

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which is the first principles of the oracles of God: and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milk, is unskilful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who, by continued use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

IMPROVEMENT.

Chap.
iv. 12.

MAY we all experience more of the efficacy of the *Divine word* upon our hearts. May we all be more and more thoughtful of the account we are to *give up of ourselves to God*: and of that *perfect discerning* which he has not only of our actions, but the *secrets of our hearts*, that we may never be about to conceal any thing from him, *before whom all things are naked and open.*

When

[in Word of Knowledge.] This phrase Mr. Pierce explains by referring to the passages of the Old Testament, which speak of *justification by faith*, quoted in

the epistle to the Romans and Galatians; which these Hebrews might seem to overlook. L'Infant explains them much in the same sense.

When we consider how many evils this *all-penetrating* eye hath discerned *there*, let it teach us to rejoice in that *compassionate* SECT. V.
High-Priest, who hath undertaken our cause ; which could never succeed in any other hand. And let it *embolden* our petitions in Ver.
humble expectation, that we shall not only receive that *mercy* without which we perish, but *grace* to strengthen and *help us in* 14
proportion to all our *necessities*. And when pressed with temptations, let it revive us to recollect, that *he was in all points tempted as we are*, so far as it was consistent with the *perfect innocence* 15
which his office required, and which always gained new lustre by every attempt of the enemy to obscure and pollute it.

Let inferior *ministers* in God's sanctuary learn to imitate him ; and being themselves *compassed with* so many *infirmities*, have *compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way*. Chap. V. 2.
And under a sense of our common weakness, let us all be earnest in our applications to the *throne of grace* for help. If *Christ himself, in the days of his flesh, poured out supplications with strong crying and tears*, let none of us imagine we can be safe in the neglect of *prayer*, or that we are ever to despond in any circumstances which leave room for devout ejaculations to God. Still he lives, who is *able to save from death*, and who can also *hear us in that which we fear*.

Let us wisely prepare for affliction. If *Christ, though a Son, learned obedience by sufferings*, how much more do we need the salutary lessons they teach. But let no sufferings prevent our adhering to him, who being *consecrated* by them to so high an office, is become the *author of salvation, of eternal salvation*, to his faithful followers. Let it ever be remembered, that it is *to them that obey him*, that this *salvation* is promised : may we be found in their number ; and being entered as obedient *disciples* into his school, may we become *proficients* there ; not such *dull and forgetful scholars*, as need to be led back daily to the *first elements* and first principles of the *Divine oracles*, not *babes in Christ*, and *unskilful in the word of righteousness* ; but such as having our *senses spiritually exercised to discern good and evil*, may be capable of receiving and digesting *strong meat*, and may thereby grow 11
stronger and stronger. 14

SECT. VI.

The Apostle declares his resolution of advancing to sublimer truths without dwelling farther upon the first principles, for the sake of those who might have apostatized from Christianity; and whose case he represents as very hopeless. Heb. VI. 1—9.

SECT.
VI.

Heb.
VI. 1.

HEBREWS VI. 1.

WE have had reason to complain, that too many of you are but in an infant state; yet I know, that as I intimated before, there are some among you, who can bear stronger food than the state of babes will admit: to such I would shew some regard. *Dismissing therefore any farther discourse on the first principles [of the doctrine] of Christ, let us be carried on to perfection, and pursue more eminent degrees of improvement in it, and more advanced and elevated knowledge: not laying again the first foundation of Christianity, by inculcating the well-known necessity of repentance from dead works, from the practices of those who are dead in sin, and whereby the soul is defiled, as the priests of God were by the touch of a dead body; nor insisting on the importance of faith in the one living and true God, as the universal Lord of all; Nor leading you back to the doctrine of baptisms², those instituted under the Mosaic dispensation*

HEBREWS VI. 1.

THEREFORE, leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptisms,

a *First principles.*] Mr. Plummer understands all that follows as referring to the Jewish doctrines, which might be considered as the elements of the Christian. *Repentance from dead works*, that is, from sin, was a Jewish doctrine, and he thinks it had a peculiar reference to that solemn and public repentance on the day of atonement. *Faith towards God*, he considers as without any regard to the Messiah. The *baptism* he takes for the Jewish washing, observing that *βαπτισμα* in the plural number is never used in any other sense. *Laying on of hands*, he takes for the rite that attended sacrifices; and imagines that the *resurrection of the dead*, and *eternal judgment*, are either to be understood as principles common to Judaism and Christianity, or rather peculiar to the former; in which view, the *resurrection of the dead* refers either to the resurrection of particular persons under the Old Testament in confirmation of the Divine mis-

sion of the prophets, (which might in the nature of things render the doctrine of Christ's resurrection more credible to those who believed these,) or the resurrection of the Jewish people from Egypt, or deliverance from any other great extremity. Compare Isa. xlv. 17; Ezek. xxxvii. 11, 12. And the latter, that is, *eternal judgment*, he thinks may be explained of dreadful judgments inflicted of old, as upon the sinners of the old world, the inhabitants of Sodom, &c. I thought it not improper to propose so remarkable an interpretation, but not seeing any reason for confining several of the clauses to so contracted a sense, I have taken them in a much larger extent.

b *Of baptisms.*] Lord Barrington understands this of the baptism of water, and the effusion of the Holy Spirit, by which the first disciples among the Jews, and the first converts among the devout and idolatrous Gentiles were initiated. He also explains

baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment.

sation to inculcate moral purity on all who would draw near to God with acceptance; or that appointed by Christ, as the rite by which we enter into his church. And we will not now treat of the imposition of hands^c, by which the Spirit hath been communicated to those that have embraced the gospel, and of the resurrection of the dead, which though not so clearly and fully revealed, was assuredly believed by the Jewish Church before our Lord's appearance; and of eternal judgment, when the whole world shall be convened before Christ, and each of its inhabitants fixed by his final sentence in an unalterable eternity.

SECT.
vi.

Heb.
VI. 2.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

These are indeed important doctrines, and it will become you constantly to bear them in mind. But while I am addressing you at present, it may be more profitable for me to lead you into some higher improvements in Christian knowledge, and to build some farther Divine instruction upon these sure and solid foundations. And this we will do, if God permit; if God may assist us in attempting it, and this letter reach you, as I trust it will, while you continue your adherence to the Christian faith.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have

As for those who seem to have forgot these sacred principles, and put the greatest slight upon them, by renouncing our holy religion, I give them up as persons from whom I have no farther expectations; for [it is] in a manner impossible^d to succeed in any charitable endeavour with regard to those who have once been enlightened

explains the laying on of hands, as referring to the immediate communication of spiritual gifts by means of the apostles. These he thinks were first principles, as baptism was the first entrance into the church, and laying on of hands, the great evidence of it, as faith and repentance are the substance of Christianity and a resurrection and eternal judgment the great motives leading men to embrace it. Bar. Mis. Ess. II. p. 116.

c The imposition of hands.] This answered such great purposes in the Christian church, as the appointed method of communicating important gifts, that it might well be mentioned among first principles.—But it is by a very precarious consequence, that any can infer from hence the universal obligation of this rite, in admitting persons into full church-membership, or even to the ministry. See Pierce's Vindicta, p. 463.

d For it is impossible.] This text has been the subject of great debate, which I must not by any means enter into here.—Compare Limb. Theol. 5. lxxxiv. 10—19; Baxter's Works, Vol. II. p. 305.—As to the phrase enlightened, it is certain, the ancient fathers early used it to express baptism. But in this view I much question the propriety of the phrase, and think that illumination, as well as regeneration, in the most important and scriptural sense of the words, were regularly to precede the administration of that ordinance. And I think that what the Papists, and some too ready to follow them, have taught of an extraordinary illumination following the administration of the ordinance of baptism, is very enthusiastic, and absolutely destitute of proof.

e Heavenly

ECC.
VI.Heb.
VI. 4.

cued with the knowledge of such glorious truths as are essential to Christianity, and have tasted of the heavenly gift which our exalted Redeemer hath shed down upon us, and have been partakers of the Holy Ghost*, in his miraculous and amazing communications. And have tasted by some affectionate impressions on their minds, the efficacy of the good word of God, and felt something of the powers of the world to come†, awakening in them a conviction of sin, and some desires after holiness, and resolutions in favour of it. I say, that as for such persons, if, after all this, they totally fall away‡ from Christianity, their case is in a manner desperate, and it is impossible again to repent the good impressions made on them, so as to bring them them back to repentance, and to recover them to a sense of duty; since they reject the strongest evidence that can be conceived, and do, as it were, by this apostacy and blasphemy of theirs, so far as in them lies, testify to themselves the Son of God again§, and make an open example [at him] by renouncing that Divine doctrine which

have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come.

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again to repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

* *The heavenly gift—partakers of the Holy Ghost*. Though the former gift, *Abundant Truth* (Vol. II. p. 47, 2.) includes the essence of the latter, *Rom.* v. 13—15, in regard to it; and consequently it from the communication of the Holy Ghost, and this being the necessary to receive, in the sanctifying power and influence, I use an expression for making such a distinction. It extending in this place the knowledge of the Spirit beyond his communicatory gifts. Bishop Hopkins quotes *Acts* xvi. 17, (which he thinks must include *Abundant Truth*), as a proof, that the *communion* must include *grace*. See *His Grace—Hague's Works*, p. 520.

† *The powers of the world to come*. This phrase is ambiguous. Some understand it of those miraculous powers with which the gospel age, (called the world to come elsewhere, and particularly *chap.* ii. 3,) should be attended—But if the preceding clause be explained as above, it will directly the sense more, to understand this of impressions made relating to the importance of a future pun. And as we so often read of the world and the present world, the inevitable state into which we pass by death, may certainly with great propriety be expressed by the phrase of the world to come, as intended that it is a more significant. But if they, as the words think it is more reasonable to interpret this matter in the fol-

lowing sense, and to well understand the sense which, as explained in the former part of which, it must be observed that the apostle, in this general judgment upon the case, (it should happen, does not declare that it actually does.

‡ *If they totally fall away*. It is certain the *Son of God*, and *Christ*, must be understood thus as a word of praise, contrary to the plain fact, that it is impossible to renounce *Christ* who have taken into great and willful error.

§ *Crucify to themselves, &c.* Some would interpret it, *as if* as in them *die* they die, that is they put all the contempt upon *Christ* in their power, and offer all the injury to him they can; and were he upon earth, and subject to the violence he once suffered, they would treat him as his worst enemies did.—It seems to me that the apostle here gives up *apostates*, as hopeless in the general, in order to fortify *Christians* against the great danger to which they were exposed. But I think it cannot be inferred from hence, that, in ages where the evidence of Christianity might be less plausibly demonstrative, those who had fallen into this crime with circumstances less aggravated, and professed repentance, were never to be received to the peace of the church any more, as the *Thessalonians* supposed, and on *Acts* first mention their inexcusable repentance discipline.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God;

8 But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned.

9 But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

hath been so gloriously demonstrated to them, they do in effect declare they look on Jesus as an impostor, who deserved what he met with; and they seem to ascribe the miraculous energy of the Spirit to some diabolical agency: which Christ himself represented as the sin that should never be forgiven. (Compare Mat. xii. 30, 31.)

We will therefore, without any farther efforts 7 for the recovery of such, leave them to the awful sentence which he hath pronounced upon them. *For whereas the earth that drinketh in the rain, which often cometh upon it, and produceth herbage fit for them by whom it is cultivated, partaketh of the Divine blessing, and wears a pleasant and delightful face; so shall those souls, who improve gospel-ordinances and Christian knowledge, so as to produce the fruits of holiness, be favourably accepted of God, and feel a Divine joy in themselves. But as 8 that ground which bringeth forth only thorns and briers, under the same cultivation, and the same refreshing showers, [is] rejected as utterly useless; so likewise shall the unfruitful soul be deserted by God in righteous displeasure, and is near to that dreadful hour, when a curse shall come upon it never to be revoked. And as such a barren soil, whose case we have been describing, is at last burnt up by the violent heat of the sun, and becomes dry heathⁱ; so the end of such an unhappy creature [shall be] everlasting burning; in that miserable world, where all the means of grace and influences of the Spirit of God shall be for ever withdrawn, and the soul shall be given up to incurable wickedness, and eternal anguish. Such is the case of these wretched 9 apostates; but I will enlarge no farther on this awful subject; for we are persuaded there is room to hope much better things of you, my beloved brethren, even things that accompany salvation, and do, as it were, bring it along with them: we have this chearful expectation concerning you, though we think ourselves obliged thus to speak; that nothing in our power may be wanting to guard you against the greatest danger.*

IMPROVE-

i Dry heath.] *Heath* is the emblem of the *cursed man*. Jerem. xvii. 5, 6. See Dr. Whitby in loc.

IMPROVEMENT.

SECT.
VI. In every respect, both with regard to knowledge and practice,
let us *go on to perfection*: and if we cannot attain to it, let us

Ver. rise as near it as we can! For this purpose, as Christians, let us
1, 2 remember what foundation has been already laid, of *repentance*
and *faith*, of *baptism*, of a *resurrection*, and a *future judgment*;
a judgment, *eternal* in its consequences, and therefore infinitely
important. And let us remember, that as the building, in its
highest advances, rests upon the foundation, and owes its stability
to its union with it, so in like manner does our progress and ad-
vance in Christian piety stand in a near connection with our re-
taining *these* truths, though we by no means confine ourselves to
them.

4 It is by a continual care to improve in them, that we shall
most happily escape the danger, the dreadful danger of *apostacy*,
to which we may otherwise be exposed. And O! let the *awful*
passage before us be duly attended to in this view! Let us not
5 rest in any *enlightening* we may have received, in any *taste* we
may have had of the *heavenly gift*, of the *good word of God*, or the
powers of the world to come, nor in any operation of the *Spirit*
of God upon our minds, to form them to the most splendid talents,
and qualify us for the most pompous external services. Men
may have all these, and yet *fall away*, and their guilt become more
6 aggravated: they may injure the *Redeemer* so much the more in
proportion to all they have known of him; and indeed will be ca-
pable of wounding him the deeper by their apostacy, and of *ex-*
posing him to greater infamy. Let us daily pray to be delivered
from so great an evil! We are not left to be like a *barren wilder-*
7 *ness*; *the rain from on high comes often upon us*; and we enjoy the
choicest cultivation; may we *bring forth fruits meet for him by*
whom we are dressed, the genuine fruits of practical, vital religion.
So shall we *receive a blessing from God*, and flourish more and more,
till we are transplanted to the *paradise* above.

8 But as for those unhappy creatures who still continue to bring
forth *briars and thorns*, let them dread that final *rejection* which
will be the portion of those who persist in abusing the Divine good-
ness; let them dread the *curse*, the awful, the irrevocable *curse*,
to be pronounced on such; let them dread the everlasting dearth
with which their souls shall be parched, when ordinances,
when the workings of the Spirit of God, when the common com-
forts and supports of this mortal animal life, shall be no more.

Gladly

Gladly do the ministers of *Christ* entertain *better hopes* concerning those committed to their care, while yet there is room for hope, though faithfulness to God, and to the souls of men,⁹ obliges them to *speake* in the language of such *cautions* as these. May Divine grace apply it to those who are particularly concerned in it, and plant what hath hitherto been a barren and abandoned desert, with such *fruits of holiness*, as may transform it into the *garden of the Lord*.

SECT.
vi.

SECT. VII.

Addressing himself to sincere believers, the Apostle comforts them with a view of the goodness of God, and his fidelity to those sacred engagements into which he hath condescended to enter ; the performance of which is farther sealed by the entrance of Christ into heaven as our forerunner. Heb. VI. 10, to the end.

HEBREWS VI. 10.

FOR God is not unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed towards his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints and do minister.

11 And we desire, that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

12 That ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

HEBREWS VI. 10.

I JUST now mentioned my hopes of your complete salvation; and I have reason to entertain such hopes, as well knowing the benevolent and pious dispositions which many of you have expressed. *For God [is] not unrighteous*, or unmindful of his gracious promises, so as *to forget your diligent work and labour* in his service, animated by a principle of unfeigned love, which you have manifested, not only to your brethren, but to his name also, in *having ministered, and in still ministering*. as his Providence gives you opportunity, to the necessities of the saints. And we heartily wish that this temper were as universal as it is commendable where it prevails; so that every one of you, into whose hands this epistle may come, might shew the same diligence and exert the same studious care, in order to establish the full assurance of your hope, even unto the end of your Christian course; by which hope you must still be supported, while in this world: That so on the whole you may not be sluggish and indolent, but imitators of those, who, through the exercises of faith and long-suffering, do now reap the blessed fruit of these graces, and inherit the promises^a which God hath

SECT.
vii.

Heb.
VI. 10.

11

12

^a Through faith and long suffering inherit the promises.] Mr. Pierce explains this of the Gentiles who were converted to

Christianity. If it be intended as a hint to stir up the Jews to emulation, as he supposes, it is indeed a very obscure one ;
for

SHORT
VII.Heb.
VI. 5.]

hath made to support and cherish them in the hearts of his people through every age.

- And a glorious confirmation you will find these promises to be, when you come to compare one spiritual object with another, and are better skilled in the method of interpreting the sacred oracles, on principles which I am going to lay down. For I may in the first place lead you to observe, that *when God made the great and comprehensive promise to Abraham*, (Gen. xii. 2, 3, and xvi. 1—6,) on which so much of our hope as Christians doth also depend, the promise that he would be a God to him, and that all nations should be blessed in his seed; *saying he had no greater [a person] to swear by, he swore by himself*, even by the honours of his own sacred and Divine name; *Saying*, by an audible voice from heaven when he repeated the promise, while Abraham stood with Isaac before that altar on which with humble submission to the Divine appointment he had just before laid him, (Gen. xxii. 16, 17,) “By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son, that *blessing I will assuredly bless thee, and multiplying I will assuredly multiply thee*”; I will bless and multiply thee remarkably, so as to make thy seed as “the stars of heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea-shore.” *And thus having waited long in humble faith and patience, he obtained in due time the accomplishment of the promise*, first in the birth of Isaac, and then, after a much longer attendance, the consummation of a better hope. And we whose circumstances so happily resemble his in this respect, may well follow the example of his faith, when we survey the foundation of it. *For men truly swear by a [being] greater than themselves to whom they*

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself.

14 *Saying*. Surely blessing, I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men rarely swear by the greater, and

scribes

for comparatively it is a low sense, in which Christians in this imperfect state can be said to believe the promise. I rather think it refers to all and none, who were departed out of our world, whether in former or latter days, and under whatever dispensation they died.—Taking it in this view, it will be far more truly consistent, in argument against the soul's continuing in a state of sleep during the intermediate period between death and the resurrection.

• *Multiplying, I will multiply thee.*]

That part of the promise to Abraham which unambiguously forbids the charge here quoted, in Gen. xxi. 17, must necessarily relate to the Gentiles; and therefore had the apostle intended Gen. 12. of this chapter in the sense in which Mr. Piersen explains it, of the Gentiles converted to Christianity, I cannot think he would have stopped short at *multiplying, I will multiply thee*; and omitted what follows, of *making up his seed as the stars of heaven, and as the sand on the sea shore, and as the seed that is as numerous as the north is bound*.

and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God, willing more abundantly to show unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath :

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us ;

19 Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the vail,

20 Whither the Forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus made an High Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

ascribe that knowledge and power, which is supposed to render him the object of their veneration and worship ; and an oath, when thus taken for confirmation [is] to them an end of all farther strife and contention. On which account, the blessed God, in humble condescension to our infirmities, being willing in the most abundant manner to manifest to the heirs of the promise, the immutability of his counsel, and his determinate resolution of bestowing upon them the blessings he engaged, interposed with the solemnity of an oath. That by two immutable things, in each of which [it is] impossible for God to lie, even his word and his oath, we might have strong consolation, even we who in humble obedience to the gracious designs of his gospel, have fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope laid before us, the noble prize which that gospel proposes as the great object of our ambition and pursuit ; I speak of eternal life, the hope of which through the Divine goodness we have, and I trust we shall resolutely retain it, as an anchor of the soul, both secure and stedfast, and as entering into the place within the vail, the holy of holies, where God dwells, and where we hope to dwell for ever with him. This anchor will indeed be sufficient to enable us to out-ride all the storms of temptation, being fixed in that glorious, though invisible world, whither Jesus as the Forerunner is entered for us, to take possession of glory in our name, and prepare all things necessary for our admittance into it : even he [who is] made an High-Priest for ever, according to the order of Melchisedec ; as we are going more largely to shew.

SECT.
vii.

Heb.
VI. 16

17

18

19

20

IMPROVEMENT.

WITH what amazing condescension doth God, by his apostles, speak of those works and labours of love, which the persons who have performed them with the greatest simplicity of heart, know to be most undeserving of his regard ! How kindly hath he made himself a debtor to us, or rather to his own promise and oath, so that it would indeed be unrighteous in him to fail those expectations which nothing in ourselves could possibly raise ! Let us then be animated to the greatest diligence, by a full assurance of hope. There are those who inherit the promises, of which we are the heirs, and they have passed to that glorious inheritance by the

Ve
10

11

SECT.
VII.

- the exercise of *faith* and *patience*. Let us chide our *sluggish* souls into a more resolute imitation of them. And when they are ready
 12 to sink into indolence again, let us again awaken them by viewing those *promises*, and the *fidelity* of that God who hath made them, and who hath added, by a condescension that can never be sufficiently acknowledged and adored, the sanction of his *vow* to
 13 that of his *word*. Behold the *strong consolation* which he hath given.
 16, 18 And given to whom? To those *who fly for refuge to lay hold on the hope set before them* in the gospel. Thither let us fly for our lives; fly, as if we heard the footsteps of the *avenger of blood* just behind us, and our lives depended upon the speed of the present moment. Happy the souls that have found this refuge! whose
 19 *faith* and *hope* like a strong and steady anchor, hath *entered into heaven*, hath fixed on that blessed *Redeemer* who lives and reigns there, who appears as an *Intercessor* for his people, and intercedes with such efficacy and success, that he is also to be regarded as their
 20 *Forerunner*, as gone to *prepare a place* for them. Let us constantly retain that view of him; and while we continue exposed to all the labours and sorrows of *mortality*, let us seek our safety and our comfort by fixing our *regards* upon him, waiting continually the aids of his grace, till he shall see fit to call us to fill the place he hath provided, and receive the inheritance he hath secured for us.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle enters into a parallel between Melchisedec and Christ, as agreeing in title and descent; and from various respects, in which the priesthood of Melchisedec was superior to the Levitical priesthood, infers also the superior glory of the priesthood of Christ.
 Heb. VII. 1—17.

HEBREWS VII. I.

SECT.
VIII.Heb.
VII. 1.

I Have again and again mentioned that scripture, in which the Messiah is spoken of in prophecy, as made a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec. Now I think, it may be worth our while to dwell a little more intently on the contemplation of this subject; and then we shall find, that without straining the allegory, it holds in a variety of instructive particulars: for this *Melchisedec*, of whom Moses speaks in that celebrated history, (Gen. xiv. 18, &c.) to which David refers, [*was*] *king of Salem*, and *priest of the most high God*: in both which offices

HEBREWS VII. I.

FOR this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God

God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him;

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also king of Salem, which is king of peace;

3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days

offices he was a remarkable type of our blessed Lord. And it is well known, he was the celebrated and holy person *who met* that illustrious patriarch, our father Abraham, *when returning from the slaughter of the kings*, who had taken Lot prisoner, with the king of Sodom, Gomorrah, and the neighbouring cities of the plain. And we are expressly told, that he *blessed him* on this occasion, that is, he pronounced on Abraham himself a blessing in the name of God to whom he ministred. *To whom also Abraham*² *divided the tenth*^a of all the spoils he had brought back, in token of his reverence to the office he bore. And indeed when we come to consider his name and title according to the signification of it in the Hebrew language, we shall find it bear a remarkable analogy to that of our Lord Jesus Christ: for *first*, his name Melchisedec, *being interpreted*, signifies that he [*is*] *King of righteousness*, or a most righteous sovereign; *and then*, his title taken from the place where he resided and ruled, is, *King of Salem*, that is, *King of Peace*; for it is well known that Salem in the Hebrew tongue is peace, as Melech is King, and Tsedec righteousness.

Now if we come to compare this Melchisedec,³ this King of righteousness and peace, with the Mosaic priests, we shall find a remarkable difference in many respects, in all which there is a resemblance between him and our Lord. For instance, whereas it is necessary the Jewish priests should all be of the family of Aaron, and there are several laws concerning the descent and qualities of their mothers, which must be observed and recorded, in order to make out their legitimacy, and their consequent right to serve at the altar, Melchisedec is, as it were, *without father*, and *without mother*^b, neither his father

a *Abraham divided the tenth.*] The objection which Mr. Chubb has brought against this from Gen. xiv. 23. as if it were Melchisedec who paid tithes to Abraham, and not Abraham to Melchisedec, is really trifling; a change of person, without express notice given of it, being usual in the sacred scriptures, and in all writers, and languages; not to observe, that the version of the *Seventy* in the common editions, and in that copy which is printed in the polyglot, instead of *He*, expressly reads *Abraham*. But Mr. Chubb's

particular exceptions have been so abundantly answered by the author of the *case of Abraham and Melchisedec, Jacob and Esau*, &c. considered, published anno 1746, against Chubb's four Dissertations, that I need not particularly enlarge. This may however be a proper place to observe, that the relative must evidently refer to the remote antecedent in the following passages, Luke xvii. 16. Acts xxiii. 25. 2 Kings xviii. 29. Psal. cv. 37. Acts vii. 5. Dent. xxxi. 22, 23. Gen. xiv. 20, &c.

b *Without father, without mother.*] It has been

SECT.
viii.

Heb.
VII. 1.

SCRIPT.

VOL.

TWO.

VOL. II.

father nor his mother are mentioned in scripture; and he is *without pedigree*, or any written account of his genealogy, by which it may be traced up to more distant progenitors of the priestly order; and herein he answers to Christ, who with respect to his human nature, had no father, nor any mother with regard to his Divine. Again, as there was a certain age at which the Jewish priests entered upon their ministry in the tabernacle or temple and at which they quitted it, Melchisedec *having neither beginning of days nor end of life*, mentioned in scripture, *but being in that respect as if he were immortal*, and therein *made him the Son of God*, who existed before all worlds, *he remaineth a priest for ever*.

4. Now I doubt not, my brethren, but that as I proceed in this argument, you see and reflect, *how great a man the Melchisedec [was], to whom, as I hinted above, even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of all the spoils he had recovered from the king of Shinar and his allies.*

5. And this will be farther illustrated, by considering that *only they of the descendants of Levi who receive the sacerdotal priesthood, have according to the law by which they are constituted, a commandment, and in consequence of that, a right only to teach the people that is their brethren, though indeed coming as well as themselves, out of the loins of Abraham: But he of whom*

we

days, nor end of life; but made him into the Son of God, abideth a priest continually.

4. Now consider how great this man was unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5. And verily those that are of the race of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they came out of the loins of Abraham.

been discussed by many, and it is not until the reader would be reminded of it, that he would be reminded of it. It is true that several ancient writers of character among the Heathen, speak of persons being devoted to *father*, or *mother*, or *father*, which they would only interpret by it that their fathers were unknown. See *Heinrich on the Melchisedec*, Sec. 10, p. 102. *Esse* likewise (Oxford Soc. Vol. II. p. 144) hath some remarkable quotations to show that it was usual among the Greeks, to say of a person that he was *motherless*, *without father*, without mother, when his parents were unknown. And accordingly several of the fathers imagine that this is here asserted of Melchisedec, because there is no mention made of his parents in the sacred scriptures. But the reason, in Heinric's opinion is, that there was no trace of his parentage in the sacred scriptures, he being without father, mother, or grandfather, as it immediately follows, and so called among the priests.

6. *Without pedigree*. As the genealogy

of our Lord is so distinctly delivered both by the evangelists Matthew and Luke, there may seem here to be a failure in the resemblance; I therefore added the words which determine it to the race of some *people* amongst whom will render the propriety very conspicuous, and is agreeable to Eusebius's interpretation mentioned in the note above.

7. *Remaineth a priest for ever*. Bishop Burnet would transpose this clause, *He was a priest of God for ever, much like unto the Son of God*. I cannot forbear observing, that I think his interpretation and illustration of this scripture, (k. l. c. p. 67—71,) the best I remember to have seen.

8. *How great a man*. This is a secret stroke upon the Jew, not only as it points the superior dignity of Christ above the Aaronical priesthood, but shews also that God had of old a people among the Gentiles, and that there was a person among them superior to Abraham himself.

6. A.

SECT.
VIII.

Heb.
VII. 6.

6 But he whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, paid tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received

we have now been speaking, whose pedigree is not reckoned from them, nor had any relation at all to the Abrahamic family, took tythes of Abraham himself, and even blessed him who had received the promises, so much celebrated in your history through every generation. But without all contradiction, the inferior is blessed of the superior, rather than the superior of the inferior: so that while pronouncing this blessing upon Abraham, Melchisedec evidently acted in an higher character than the patriarch himself sustained at that time, and in that circumstance. And again, it may farther be observed for the illustration of this argument, that here, under the institution of Moses, men who die, receive tythes; the priests of that dispensation are mortal men, like their brethren; but there, in the case of Melchisedec, he [receiveth them] of whom it is only testified in scripture, that he liveth, but of whose death we have no account; and in that respect, he may be said to bear some resemblance to the ever-living, and ever-blessed Jesus. And indeed as one may say^f, by Abraham and in his person, even Levi, who in his posterity received the tythes of the other descendants of Israel, was himself tythed. For he was yet in the loins of [his] father Abraham^g, when Melchisedec met him upon the occasion I have just been mentioning.

Now I introduce all these reflections, to lead you to consider the aspect this wears as to the gospel, and the view it gives of its superior excellence in comparison of the law. And I may reason thus upon the premises, If perfection had been by the Levitical priesthood^h, and no more excellent atonement and intercession than theirs

^f As one may say: *ως τις ειπεν.*] Elsner is of opinion, (*Observ. Sacr.* Vol. II. p. 350.) that this should be translated, to say the truth; alledging, that it is not agreeable to the respect we owe to the apostle's character, to suppose that he inserted those words as an apology for an assertion in itself not strictly just and exact; and he produces some passages out of the classics to vindicate this version. But the justness of it is largely controverted by *Raphelius. Annot. ex Herod. in loc.*

^g In the loins of Abraham.] Christ could not be said to be so, because of his extraordinary descent; otherwise the argument would, I think, have been in-

conclusive, as it would have been proved that Christ, as well as Levi, paid tythes in Abraham.

^h Now—if perfection, &c.] Elsner justly observes, (*Observ. Sacr.* Vol. II. 351.) that this is not to be considered as a consequence flowing directly from the verses immediately preceding, as might be concluded from the rendering of the *vulgate* and *Erasmus Schmidius*, and our common translation: but that it is the beginning of a new paragraph, or branch of discourse; and that *τις μιν εν* should be rendered, but if, or, which is much the same, now if, in support of which he produces several authorities.

i Spring

SECT.
VIII.
Heb.
VII. 11.

theirs could be expected, (for you know that it was *under it* that the people received the law, that is, it was a part of the legal appointment to which a multitude of other precepts in the ritual referred, and on which the possibility of performing them depended,) *what further need [was there] that another priest should rise according to the order of Melchisedec, and that he should not be reckoned according to the order of Aaron?*

received the law, what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron.

- 12 This will draw after it a long train of extensive and important consequences; for the priest-hood being chang'd, there must of necessity also be a change of the law: for as I hinted above, all the ceremonial law depended upon it: and if our regards be directed to another priest, who is not of the family of Aaron, there is then an end of the obligation to the ritual, which confined all its precepts to priests of that line, and supposed that as long as it was binding, they would always subsist and bear office. And that is now evidently the case, for the person of whom these things are spoken, belongeth to another tribe, of whom no one apprehended to the Jewish altar, or had any right to minister at it. For [it is] plain that our Lord Jesus Christ, the only true Messiah, foretold by David in the passage I have been discoursing upon, *springing from Judah*, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing at all relating to the priesthood he ordained, so as to reserve any right of sacerdotal ministry to them, more than to any other tribe in Israel. And independent on all genealogical controversy, which the most ingenious malice could urge concerning Mary's family, it is yet more abundantly manifest, from the least attention to that single scripture alone which I have so frequently mentioned, that there arises another priest according to the similitude of Melchisedec. Who therefore, we may assure ourselves, is made and constituted not according or in regard to the law of the carnal commandment, that system of ceremonial precepts

12 For the priest-hood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprung out of Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after

[i Spring from Judah.] It may be worth remembering here, that Justin Martyr, Tertullian, and Chrysostom, refer to the table made at the *borgos*, in proof of this; and it may be considered whether the *apostle* does not insinuate the same reference. See Dr. Barrow's Works, Vol. II.

p. 188. Undoubtedly he would not have spoken with such confidence, if it had not been generally allowed.

[k That there arises.] Dr. Whately proves by many convincing authorities, that the particle *is* sometimes signifies *that*, as it is plain it here does.

after the power of an endless life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec.

precepts which contained so many things of an external, and comparatively of a carnal nature, and which considered men as dwelling in mortal flesh, and so to succeed each other; but according to the undecaying power of an indissoluble and endless life¹. For you will be careful to remember what he testifieth, Thou [art] a priest for ever according to the order of Melchisedec: which implieth all that I have asserted concerning Christ. Let us reflect upon it with pleasure, that he retains his priesthood for ever; and therefore is able to give everlasting efficacy to his administration, and everlasting blessings to those who cast themselves upon its protection, animated by the glorious promises which it exhibits.

SECT. VIII.

Heb. VII. 16.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET our souls adore the King of righteousness, and the King of peace; submitting to him under the former title, that we may experience the peace which he gives, and which none can take away. Let us repose our confidence in the Son of God, who without beginning of days, or end of life, abideth a priest for ever; a priest on a throne, to confirm the counsels of eternal peace transacted between the Father and himself. (Zech. vi. 13.) To him do all the prophets bear witness, to him did all the patriarchs render humble homage, and his blessing was that which rendered Abraham, the father of the faithful, blessed indeed. He sprang from the tribe of Judah, and was the Shiloh that was to come before it ceased to be a tribe, according to the ancient oracle of dying Jacob. (Gen. xlix. 10.) But the honours of the priesthood are now transferred to, and centered in him, not according to the law of a carnal commandment, but the superior power of an endless life. Let us rejoice that his life is endless, and that by him we may likewise attain to an endless life, to an immortality of glory. The priests of the Old Testament, the ministers of the New, as well as private believers under both dispensations, die; but the eternally prevailing priesthood of Jesus gives us life in death, and entitles us to the hope of that glorious world, where he

Chap. vii. 2.

1 Of an endless life.] Archbishop Tillotson thinks the gospel is called the power of an endless life to intimate the powerful influence which the views of immortality proposed by it, will have upon the mind.

(Vol. III. p. 407.) I have therefore kept that thought a little in view, though I am far from imagining it to be the chief design of the expression.

SECT. VIII. he will put his own likeness and splendor upon us, and make us in our inferior degrees of dignity, immortal kings and priests to God, even the Father: to him be glory for ever and ever. Amen. (Rev. I. 6.)

SECT. IX.

From what has been said above, the Apostle argues, that the Aaronical priesthood was not only excelled, but vindicated and consummated by that of Christ; and by consequence that the obligation of the law was dissolved. Heb. VII. 18, to the end.

SECT.
IX.

HEBREWS VII. 18.

Heb.
VII. 18

I HAVE been discoursing largely on the resemblance between Melchisedec and Christ; and I may fairly argue from hence, not only the superior dignity and excellence of Christ; and the freedom of Jews as well as Christians, from the obligations of the ceremonial law. Let me urge it therefore plainly, that *there is an abolition of the former commandment* in all its extent of ritual observances, *because of its weakness and unprofitableness*: for weak and unprofitable it appears to be, in comparison of that everlasting priesthood which I have just now mentioned.

19 *For the law of Moses made nothing perfect^a, but left in its most essential institutions, as we shall presently shew, the manifest traces and evidences of its own imperfection; whereas full provision for our pardon and sanctification, must be ascribed to the introduction of a better hope, by a dispensation of a far superior nature, by which we now under the gospel draw near to God in cheerful dependance upon the efficacious intercession of our ever living and glorious High Priest. A High Priest, evidently superior to any of the Aaronical line, on many other accounts, and we may add on this likewise, inasmuch as [he was] not [constituted] without the solemnity of an oath^b on the part of God; intended no doubt to shew the great importance of what he was to transact.*

21 *For they indeed are become priests by a general Divine*

HEBREWS VII. 18.

FOR there is really a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the brought in of a better hope, and by the which we draw nigh unto God.

20 And inasmuch as not without an oath he was made priest.

21 For those priests were

^a The law made nothing perfect. Mr. Pierce includes these words in a parenthesis: as if the Apostle had said, "Since the law made nothing perfect, it could not make the priesthood so; it could not re-

move the guilt of sin, or give strength to obey its commands."

^b In an oath. Which argues the solemnity and importance, and also the immutability of the action.

were made without an oath, but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec;) 22 By so much was

Jesus made a Surety of a better testament.

Divine ordination, *without* the interposition of *an oath* at their investiture; but *he*, of whom he have been speaking, was set apart to his office *with an oath, by him, who said unto him, the Lord hath sworn, and he will not repent, Thou [art] a priest for ever according to the order of Melchisedec.* Now by so much dignity as such an introduction to his office by the oath of God adds to him, does it appear that *Jesus* our Lord is preferable to Aaron and his sons: from whence it is natural to infer, that he is the *Surety of a better covenant*^c; or that the covenant of which he is the great Guarantee between God and man, is more excellent than that, of which Aaron and his sons might be said to be sureties in reference to certain acts which they were to perform on the part of the people to God, and in the name of God to the people, with which promises of temporal pardon and blessings are connected; for to them alone did that covenant extend.

SECT.
ix.

Heb.
VII. 21.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death:

24 But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an High Priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled

And again, I may further observe that *there were many priests, because they were hindered by death from continuing in the perpetual executions of their office. But he, because he abideth for ever*, and is risen to a life of immortal glory in the heavens, where he shall reign as long as any can need the benefit of his ministrations, *hath a priesthood that never passeth over to another* as his successor. From whence also it appears, that *he is able to save to the uttermost*, that is always and completely to save, *those who humbly approach to God by him* as their appointed High-Priest, *always living to intercede for them* in every circumstance of their respective lives, through all successive ages and generations.

Let us pause, therefore, and enjoy the comfort of so glorious a truth; for the more we reflect upon it, the more consolation shall we derive from it. Exactly such an High-Priest as this, indeed suited us; his character most perfectly corresponded to our circumstances and necessities, [who was] solemnly set apart to his office by the highest authority, and in the execution of it, entirely holy, harmless in himself, unpolluted

^c Better covenant.] So I render δαῖμον, and as this is the most common use of

the word, so here it best suits the connection.

d Higher

SECT.
IX.HAB.
VII. 26.

luted by others, *separate from all defiling society of sinners*, though mercifully conversant among them; and to complete all, a person of such dignity of nature, and so eminently dear to God, as to be made *higher than the heavens*, and all their inhabitants, far more superior to the noblest of them, than Aaron himself to the meanest Levite who ministered in the tabernacle.

- 27 Glorious High-Priest indeed? *who had not daily necessity, as those high priests appointed by Moses, not to present sacrifices for his own sins and then for those of the people*: of the former of those he never had any need, nor could there be any room for it; and *this last he did sure for all, in offering himself as a sinless and acceptable sacrifice to God*. For the law, as is well known, *constitutes men high priests, who have infirmities of their own, which need expiation; but the word of the oath, which reaches beyond the law*, and of which I have so largely been speaking, [constitutes] to that office, *the only begotten Son of God, who is consecrated for ever to the execution of it, and is the great substance of what they were only dim and imperfect shadows*.

IMPROVEMENT.

Chap.
VII. 18.

LET the introduction of this *better hope* which we receive by *Jesus Christ*, and which bringeth the greatest perfection of happiness to those that embrace it, fill our hearts with thankfulness to God, and with a solicitous zeal to secure an interest in it. Let us *draw near to God* under his supporting influence, and be quickened thereby to *purify ourselves from all pollutions of the flesh and spirit, and to perfect holiness in the fear of God*; in firm dependence upon that great *High Priest*, whom he hath constituted with the solemnity of an *oath*, as the great *Surety* and Guarantee of the *better covenant*.

Ver.
20—21

- God helps the frailty of our nature, by transmitting his promises to us through the hands of his *Son*, and by giving us such a proof of his gracious regards, as his incarnation and sufferings afford: in which it is certain, that God hath already done what is far more

defiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens?

27 Was needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first for his own sins, and then for the people? For this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 As for the law making men high priests, which have infirmities, but the word of the oath which goes beyond the law, which the Son, who is consecrated for ever, executed.

d *Higher than the Heavens*.] Mr. Halliwell's Sacred Classics, Vol. I. p. 181, 182. I take notice of this expression, as very sublime, especially in Homer's description of Jupiter upon Mount Ida: and perhaps taken from Psal. cxviii. 6, 7.

e *Beyond the law*? Our translators render *who is our surety, and who is our*. But you often mention *bound*. Compare Chap. ix. 7, and many other places.

more astonishing than any thing which he hath promised farther to do. And *Jesus* takes his covenant-people under his care, and graciously engages to watch over them for their good, and to communicate to them all such assistances of his grace as may be sufficient to induce them to answer their part of the engagement.

He is possessed of an *unchangeable priesthood*: let us daily look ²⁴ to him, as knowing, that in consequence of the *intercession*, which *he ever lives to make*, he is ever able completely to save all that come ²⁵ unto God by him. Let us every day, and every hour, have recourse to him as the *Mediator* of our approaches to God. And let us make the thoughts of him familiar to our minds, the thought of his *sanctity*, his *dignity*, and his *love*: confiding in that *sacrifice* he hath once for all offered for his people, being above all need of sacrificing for himself. To conclude, while we hear and ²⁷ strengthen our hearts with such contemplations as these, let us always consider the obligation which the character of our *High-Priest* and our Saviour lays upon us, to be ourselves *holy*, *harmless*, and *undefiled*, and to maintain a *separation from sinners*, so far as the duties of life, in the present circumstances of the world, may admit.

SECT.
ix.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle briefly recapitulates what he had before demonstrated of the superior dignity of Christ as the High-Priest of Christians, and farther illustrates the distinguished excellence of that new covenant which was foretold by Jeremiah as established in him, and plainly enriched with much better promises than the old. Heb. VIII. 1, to the end.

HEBREWS VII. 1.

NOW of the things which we have spoken, *this is* the sum: we have such an High Priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens:

HEBREWS VIII. 1.

NOW the chief article of the things which have been spoken, in the preceding parts of this discourse, [*is this*] that we have such a great and illustrious *High-Priest* as hath been described, made after the order of Melchisedec, and by the oath of God himself invested with immortal honours; who having on earth performed all that was necessary, by way of preparation, hath now sat down on the right-hand of the majestic throne in the heavens, (compare chap. i. 3, note ^b.) exalted by the Divine authority to rule over all things, for the glory of God, and the good of his people. And we are ever to regard him under his priestly, as well as his royal character as a minister of holy things, and of the

SECT.
x.

Heb.
VIII. 1

² A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which the

SECT.
X.Habb.
VIII. 2

the true tabernacle, which not man, but the Lord himself, hath pitched : a sanctuary infinitely superior to any which human hands could be concerned in rearing, and proportionable to the boundless wisdom, power, and magnificence of God.

- 3 *For every High-Priest, who ministers there, is constituted to offer gifts and sacrifices ; therefore [it was] necessary that this man also, even the glorious person of whom I speak, should have*
 4 *something to present. But we may observe by the way, that if he were always to continue on earth, he could not, in any consistence with the Jewish institutions, have been a priest*, to officiate at the temple of God in Jerusalem ; as there are already a certain order of priests there, who offer the gifts of the people, according to the law, and it is expressly settled, that none of any other family should have access to these services ; nor would it have been agreeable to the Divine schemes, that Jesus should, by extraordinary dispensation, have interfered with their peculiar functions. These he left entirely to those priests, who perform divine service to an economy, which contains only the example and shadow of celestial things^b : as Moses was charged by the oracle, when he was about to finish the tabernacle for us, saith he {that} thou make all things according to the model shewn thee upon the mountain, lest an error, which may seem to thee small, should be more material than thou art aware. [Exod. xxv. 10] Now this exactness was required in special regard to the typical representations couched under these ordinances, the particulars of which Moses himself did not perfectly understand. But he, that is, Christ*
hath

the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices, whence it is of necessity, that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For, See [with be] that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obtained

a *He could not have been a priest.* From hence hath the great argument been taken against Christ's performing any sacerdotal acts upon earth, and consequently against the reasonableness of considering his death as a sacrifice, though the scriptures expressly declare it was so. But it is evident the sense of the words given in the passage, which undermines all such arguments, can alone be maintained as the true one ; since it is plain, that under the Jewish economy, though none but a priest ever ministered as such, in the tabernacle, yet sacrifices were offered by special Divine appointment by some (as by prophets, &c.)

who were not of that order ; and being so offered, were accordingly accepted.

b *The example, &c. archetype, &c. type.* Dr. Saker would explain it, the copy of what Moses saw in the mount : as if he had said, the former was but a copy of the latter, and no more to be compared with it than the shadow to the substance. See *Saker on Christianity*, p. 110. *Figure in be.* I rather take it in the sense generally given, for the *affirmation* or sketch of heavenly blessings. Dr. Beane (Vol. II. p. 105,) considers it by a very expressive word, the *revelation*.

c *Finding*

obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the Mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

7 For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second,

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah:

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

c Finding fault with them.] This is translated by Grotius and others, *finding fault, he saith to them*, and understood of *finding fault with the former covenant*. But that covenant was certainly wise and good, and adapted to the purpose for which it was designed and appointed. It seems therefore much more proper to understand it, *finding fault with the Jews*, (as God evidently does in the words preceding those quoted here, Jer. xxxi. 29, 30,) for using the proverb against which he expresses so much displeasure in Ezek. xviii.

hath now much nobler services allotted to him in that heavenly sanctuary, inasmuch as he is the Mediator even of a better covenant than that in which the Jewish high priest mediated; which was established upon better promises than those of the Mosaic law: for they only referred to the blessings of a temporal Canaan, to be enjoyed by the people, while they continued obedient to its precepts, which placed them under such a special providence, as the nature of that dispensation absolutely required, and made them a spectacle to the whole world.

This superior excellence of that œconomy which our Lord introduces, might indeed have been concluded from its being exhibited after the Mosaic: for, as we know God never alters but for the better; if that first [covenant] had been esteemed so faultless, as to have no remaining deficiency, there would have been no place sought for the second; yet we in fact see this intimation of an exception taken to it: For finding fault with them^c, that is, with⁸ the Jews, to whom he was addressing, he saith by the prophet Jeremiah, in that celebrated text which undoubtedly refers to the gospel-dispensation, (Jer. xxxi. 31.) *Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah.* And he expressly mentions the superior excellence of the covenant there referred to, when compared with that which was transacted on mount Sinai. For he adds there, *The transaction shall not be according to the covenant which I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; as you well know it was while the great work of conducting them to Canaan was yet imperfect, that the law of Moses was given; because they continued not in my covenant, and I disregarded*

2. And in the words themselves he also finds fault with them for breaking this covenant, though he had with so much tender care brought them out of the land of Egypt, *Raphelius in loc.* translates the words under consideration (τρεψάμενος γὰρ αὐτοὺς λέγει,) *finding fault with them he saith*; agreeably to our common translation; and justifies this version by the authority of Chrysostom, a Greek father, and by two passages from Herodotus, where μεταδιδάσκων is used with a dative case after it.

SECT.
X.
Heb.
VIII. 6.

REPT.
N.
Hob.
VIII. 10.

disregarded them^d, saith the Lord. For this [is] the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, that is, in the times of the Messiah, saith the Lord, I will give my laws to their soul, and I will inscribe them upon their hearts, in more lasting characters than those in which I wrote the commandments on the tables of stone; and I will be unto them for a God, and they shall be to me for a people; I will answer all the import of that high relation to them, and they shall persist in their obedience

- 11 *to me. And they shall no more have need to teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them even to the greatest of them.* They shall have a much more certain and effectual teaching than they
- 12 *can teach one from another: For I will be merciful to their unrighteous deeds^e, various and aggravated as they are, and their sins and their iniquities, of what kind soever, I will remember no more, so as to bring them into judgment; but will pardon the most heinous offences, which were incapable of expiation under the former covenant.*

- 13 Now I would observe in the close of this argument, that *when he saith, A new covenant* shall be made, *he hath in effect made the first old*, he hath, as it were, spoken of it as antiquated; *now that which is antiquated, and fallen into old age*, cannot be expected to live long. And so in like manner [is] that old covenant of Moses *just ready to disappear*. Divine Providence will put such a period to it ere long, as shall be remarkable in the eyes of the whole world, so that the grand apparatus which now preserves its visible form and lustre, shall be known no more.

IMPROVE-

^d *I disregarded them*]. The quotation here is according to the Seventy, and by no means agreeable to the Hebrew, which reads it, as we see, though I am a mortal to thee, saith the Lord. Mr. Prieest thinks the seventy misprints, or their copy, either read *בְּעֵינַי* *בְּעֵינַי*, instead of *בְּעֵינַי*, in either of which there is only the variation of a single letter, and this will justify the translation here given. The Prieest maintains that the word is capable of such a translation, as it now stands in the se-

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: And I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decays and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

posal. So that they seem to agree that our English version of the text in question should be altered.

^e *For I will be merciful*]. Some would render *and*, and therefore, that is, upon their being thus taught by me, or in that, which signifies that it is certain that are sometimes holy, but here it may signify that because God hath proposed to extend his pardoning mercy to them, he thus taught them by his spirit; and therefore I have rendered it *for*.

IMPROVEMENT.

ADORED be that grace which hath constituted and revealed this everlasting covenant, well ordered in all things and sure; SECT.
X.
established on such promises, as are of all that can be conceived, Ver.
most valuable to sinful creatures; and especially on that, without ⁶
which no other declaration could impart any comfort to such, I
will be merciful to their unrighteousnesses, and their sins and their ¹²
iniquities I will remember no more. With this is connected that
other promise, so comprehensive of every thing that is truly valu-
able, I will be a God unto them, and they shall be unto me a peo- ¹⁰
ple. Happy indeed the people that are in such a case; yea,
happy the people whose God is the Lord, who are taught by him to
know him under that character, taught by that energy of his Spirit,
which gives his law to their mind, and inscribes it on their heart.
There may we ever retain it engraven in living and durable cha-
racters, as a law of love, which may make obedience to every pre-
cept easy.

In this connection let us look with pleasure to that *High Priest*, ¹
who is sat down on the throne of the Majesty in the heavens, and
presides over all for the good of his people, that minister of the
true tabernacle which the Lord, not man, hath pitched! ever main- ²
taining an humble dependence on the sacrifice he hath offered:
A sacrifice better than any of the *Aaronical* priests could pre-
sent, in proportion to the degree in which the covenant, of which
He is the *Mediator*, is nobler than theirs. The first covenant, ⁷
wisely allayed with such a mixture of imperfection as was suitable
to its being introductory to the second, is now vanished, to make ¹³
way for this second and better dispensation: to this let us therefore
adhere, and so doing, cheerfully expect all the invaluable blessings
it imparts.

SECT. XI.

*The Apostle illustrates the doctrine of the priesthood and interces-
sion of Christ, by comparing it to what the Jewish high priest did
on the great day of atonement. Heb. IX. 1—14.*

HEBREWS IX. 1.

HEBREWS IX. 1.
THEN verily the first
covenant had also
ordi-

HOW reasonable it is to expect, that the SECT.
XI.
former covenant of which I have been
speaking, should give way to another and a no-
bler, you may easily apprehend from surveying
it, Heb.
IX. 1.

EXOD.
XL.
Heb.
IX. 1.

it, and considering in comparison with it, the great things which the gospel teaches us concerning Christ, and to which I would now call your contemplations. *The first tabernacle², you will therefore recollect, had certain ceremonial ordinances of Divine service, and a worldly sanctuary: a sanctuary made of such materials as this earth of ours could furnish out, and the center of a ritual which contained many institutions comparatively low and carnal. For the first part of the tabernacle was prepared of boards and curtains, pillars and coverings, which constituted a little apartment as a kind of antichamber to the oracle; in which there [was] the candlestick of pure gold with its seven lamps, and the table of shew-bread as it was called, and the setting on the twelve loaves upon it, which were always to stand before the Lord; and this apartment is called the Holy place, in which also the golden altar of incense stood.*

3 *And beyond the second veil was that apartment of the tabernacle which was called the Holy of Holies, or the most holy of all, where God was pleased to keep his special residence, and which was as his presence-chamber. Having the golden altar³, in which the high priest used to burn incense on the great day of atonement, and the ark of the covenant so covered over on every side with gold, that it appeared as if it had been one mass of that precious metal; in which apartment, in or very near the ark, [was] the golden pot, containing the manna that remained uncorruptible through so many ages, and the rod of Aaron that blossomed, and the*

ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made: the first wherein was the candlestick, and the table, and the shew-bread: which is called the Sanctuary.

3 And after the second veil, the tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all;

4 Which had the golden altar, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant;

TWO

a *The first tabernacle*] Mr. Pierce thinks this is to be considered as connected with chap. xiii. 6. and that all which hereunto is a description, though a very particular and useful one, relating to the ministry at the moment established under that *first Priest*. But I can see no necessity for this, since it may well be connected with the words immediately preceding; as if he had said, and because that manner was intended but for a little while, therefore there was a great deal of external ceremony in it, fit for the people's disposition at the persons to whom it was given. Our translators strangely supply the word *command* instead of *tabernacle*, whereas most agree read *maner*, *manner*, and that undoubtedly suits the connection best. The

word we render *ordinance* is *hagadah*, *proclamation*, or *way* of *law*, or *righteousness*.

b *The golden altar*] It hath been questioned, why the golden altar was not mentioned; and some are of opinion that it may be comprehended in the word *incense*, which we render *altar*.

c *The golden pot*] I say, in or near which, as many good commentators think the words can only be taken in that latitude, to connect it with 1 Kings xiii. 9. where it is said, that *these two tables in the ark were the two tables of stone*. Or perhaps it is, which may refer to *maner*, the *tabernacle*, rather than to *ark*. 7. *the ark*, as probably Aaron's rod, which is here said to be in the same place, should not be in the ark.

d *Clerical*

5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.

8 The Holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing :

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining

two tables of the covenant on which the ten commandments were inscribed by the finger of God, And over it were the cherubs of glory^d, shadowing with their wings that golden cover of the ark which was called the mercy seat, or propitiatory, as to it propitiations were referred, and where God was pleased to appear in a visible symbol of his propitious and gracious presence. These were all important things in the Mosaic tabernacle, concerning which there is not now [room] to speak particularly. And these things⁶ being thus prepared and adjusted, both in the holy and most holy place, the ordinary priests went continually into the first apartment of the tabernacle, performing [their] daily services, by trimming the lamps, and burning incense upon the holy altar, changing the loaves on the sacred table every sabbath, and sprinkling the blood of the victims before the vail. But into the second apartment only the high-priest [went] once a year, and that not without the blood of the sin-offering, which he offered first for himself, and then [for] the sins of ignorance committed by the people, to which sort of offences alone, and not to those presumptuously committed, the efficacy of the atonements extended.

Such was the ritual of Moses, the Holy Spirit, by whom it was prescribed, signifying, by this difficulty of entrance, and the necessity of the incense-cloud, and the atoning blood, that the way into the holiest place, that is, into God's immediate presence, was not yet made manifest, while the first tabernacle had its continuance, and retained its station and use, or in other words, while the Jewish œconomy lasted ; Which, far from being the grand and ultimate scheme, [is] only a kind of allegorical figure and parable referring to the glorious displays of the present time^e; in which, nevertheless, there is hitherto a continuance of the temple-service ; so that gifts and sacrifices are still offered, which yet in the

SECT.
xi.

Heb.
IX. 5.

^d Cherubs of glory.] That is, the cherubs that waited upon the Shechinah, or sensible glory of the Deity.

^e Referring to the present time] We render it, for the time then present. But the words εἰς τὸν καιρὸν τοῦ ἐνεσθῆναι may certainly bear the rendering which I have given them ; and I would understand it, not merely as if he had said that this simi-

litude of comparison may be properly used in this present time, as to the temple at Jerusalem, which has its holy of holies, as the Mosaic tabernacle had, but that the constitution before described, was a figurative representation of the Christian dispensation, which at the time when the apostle wrote, was displayed in all its glory.

f Averting

SECT.
VI.Hsb.
IX. 9.

the nature of things, are not able to make the person who performs the service perfect with respect to the conscience; as they refer not to the real expiation of guilt, but only to averting some temporal evils; which the law denounced on transgressors.

10 For this the Mosaic dispensation was insufficient, which in the peculiarities of it related, not to the views of another life, nor the sublimest means of preparing the soul for it; [but consisted] only ⁶ in the distinction between different kinds of meats, clean or unclean; and drinks, some of which were allowed, and others denied to priests in some circumstances, and to Nazarites in others; and in different baptisms, or washings either of the whole body, or a part of it in water, as different occasions demanded; and in a variety of other ordinances relating to the purification of the flesh, which were to continue in force only till the time of reformation, when things should be put into a better situation by the appearance of the Messiah himself

11 in his church. But Christ having now appeared, and being become an high priest of those good things which were then future, and which the church through preceding ages expected as to come, the obligation of these things would of course soon be superseded. Accordingly he performed his ministry in a greater and more perfect tabernacle above, not made with human hands, that is, not making any part of this

12 lower creation. Neither doth he expiate the guilt of his people by presenting before God the blood of goats, and of calves, and of young bullocks, which were the noblest sacrifices the high priest presented in the day of atonement; but it is by the efficacy of his own blood, which he con-

taining to the consecration.

10 It had and only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come as High Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this building;

12 Neither by the blood of goats, and calves, but by his own

[Averting some temporal evils.] This in a few words expresses what I take to be of the greatest importance for understanding the Mosaic worship, which is, that they were never intended to repair afflictions to such a degree, as to deliver the sinner from the true judgment of God in another world; but merely to make his peace with the government under which he then was, and to furnish him with a pardon, pleading some any transgression which might be committed against him in their course of justice, or any collusion from the privilege of drawing near to God, as one enters into at peace with him, in the solemnities of his temple worship. And I

must desire the reader to examine, and digest this explication, and I may not be under the necessity of repeating it for the illustration of what is to follow.

g [Crossed] [over.] The construction of the temple is prepared. I have given the vessels that contained some most material; but Mr. Pearce would connect the two verses thus, *He who washed with meat and drink, and made himself clean instead of conscience, in conformity with the Levitical and other ordinances; supplying those which were expiated influences, imposed till the time of reformation, that is, the appearance of the Messiah.*

h Entered

own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

continually pleads before the Father, that *he hath entered once for all into the holy place above^h, having obtained [for us] by his perfect sacrifice, that eternal redemption and salvation, of which all the remissions and all the benefits procured by the ministration of the Aaronical priesthood, were but very imperfect figures.*

SEC. T.
xi.

Heb.
IX. 12.

13 For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh :

And certainly a little reflection may convince us of this ; *for if the blood of bulls and of goats, of which I have just been speaking, when presented to God with the appointed circumstances on the day of general expiation ; and in cases of personal pollution, the ashes of the red heifer, burnt with hyssop, scarlet wool, and other ingredients, being mingled with water, and sprinkled on the persons who were ceremonially unclean, sanctifieth to the cleansing of the flesh, and hath so much efficacy in consequence of the Divine institution, as to reconcile God to the whole Jewish people in the former instance, and in the other, to introduce persons to the liberty of approaching him in his sanctuary, which would otherwise have been denied them : How much more efficacious shall the blood of Christⁱ be, even of that Divine Saviour, who by the aids of the eternal Spirit^k, supporting the infirmities of his human nature, and animating him to the exercise of all those virtues and graces which shed such a lustre around all the infamy of his cross, offered himself, as a most spotless and acceptable sacrifice to God ? How much more*

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your

^h *Entered once.*] Hence Bishop Pearson infers, that Christ ascended only *once* for all into heaven, and not again and again, as the Socinians pretended. *Pearson on the Creed*, p. 109.

ⁱ *How much more shall the blood of Christ.*] The argument in these words seems to consist in this : it was merely by an arbitrary appointment that blood and ashes, which in themselves are rather defiling, should be the methods of purification ; but a death like that of our blessed Lord, has in itself a proper and mighty energy to promote the purification of the soul.

^k *Eternal Spirit.*] Many have understood this of the Deity in general, or the Divine nature of Christ. But since the words may in a very good and consistent sense be referred to the Spirit, I could not acquiesce in any other interpretation. Bishop Fell considers them in the same light, and pertinently mentions Christ's

being conceived, proclaimed, anointed for working miracles, and at last voluntarily laying down, and taking up, his life by this Spirit. And I have the pleasure to find Dr. Owen, (*on the Spirit*, p. 143, see also his *Exposition on the place*,) expressing himself to the same purpose ; mentioning also, agreeable to the *paraphrase*, that by this Spirit Christ was strengthened in the exercise of that admirable faith, submission, charity and zeal which he shewed in his dying moments.—But when this Spirit is called *eternal*, I can never think with Dr. Patrick, (*on Numb. xix. 4.*) that it refers to the durable nature of the ashes used for purification under the law ; nor with Mr. Hallet, (*Notes and Discourses*, Vol. I. p. 36,) that it is opposed to the *spirit of brutes*, or relates to the *eternal redemption* purchased by Christ. It seems a plain testimony to the *eternity*, and consequently the Deity of the Holy Spirit.

more, I say, shall that blood of his, avail to *cleanse your conscience from the pollutions ye have contracted by your dead, unprofitable, and sinful works, that ye may freely approach, and serve the living God with acceptance?* How surely shall it appease that consciousness of guilt, which might otherwise be so painful to us, and introduce us to present our homage in the Divine presence, with the hope of the most favourable regard.

your conscience from
dead works to serve
the living God.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. This whole progress of the *apostle's* argument will lead us to
- 1, 2 reflect on the reason we have for thankfulness, whose eyes are directed, not to an *earthly sanctuary* and its furniture, splendid indeed, yet comparatively dark, mutable, and perishing; but to the *holiest of all*, the way to which is now clearly manifested. What matter of solid and everlasting joy! that whereas those *gifts* and *sacrifices* were *incapable of making those perfect* who presented them, or attended upon them, and the *ordinances* of that *sanctuary* consisted only in *meats and drinks, and corporeal purifications and ceremonies*, we by faith behold an *High Priest* of a better and
 - 10 *more perfect tabernacle*, an *High Priest* who hath wrought out *eternal redemption*, and *entered once for all into heaven* for us!
 - 12 *Eternal redemption!* who hath duly considered its glorious import? To him, and only to him, who hath attentively considered it, is the name of the *Redeemer* sufficiently dear. But O, what short of the possession of it, can teach us the true value! What, but to view that *temple of God* above, where through his intercession we hope to be made *pillars*, and from thence, to look down upon that abyss of misery and destruction from which nothing but his *blood* was sufficient to ransom us!
 - 13 Let that blood which is our *redemption* be our *confidence*. We know there was no real efficacy in that of *bulls*, or of *goats*, or in the *ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean*. All that these things could do was to purify the *flesh*, and to restore men to an external
 - 14 communion with God in the *Jewish sanctuary*. But the *blood of Christ* can purify the *conscience*, and restore its peace when troubled, when tortured with a sense of guilt, contracted by *dead works*, which render us unfit for, and incapable of Divine converse. To that blood therefore let us look: let the death of *Christ* be remembered, as the great *spotless sacrifice* by which we *draw nigh unto God*, and let those virtues and graces which were displayed in it, under the influences of that *eternal Spirit*, which was given

unto

unto him without measure, concur with that benevolence which subjected him to it for our sakes, to recommend him to our humblest veneration, and our warmest affections. SECT.
xi.

To conclude, since it is so expressly said, that *the Holy Ghost* signified in some degree the great and important doctrines of the *gospel* by the constitution of the *Jewish* ritual ; let us think of that ritual, whatever obscurity may attend it in part, with a becoming esteem ; and peruse it with a view to that great *antitype*, who is in every sense *the end of the law for righteousness to every one who believeth* ; to him, who by fulfilling it hath given it a glory, much brighter than that which was reflected upon it from the face of *Moses*, or the most splendid magnificence of *Solomon's temple*.

SECT. XII.

The Apostle discourses, by way of digression, on the necessity of shedding Christ's blood, and the sufficiency of the atonement made by it. Heb. IX. 15, to the end.

HEBREWS IX. 15.

AND for this cause he is the Mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

HEBREWS IX. 15.

I HAVE just mentioned the offering which Christ made of himself to God by the eternal Spirit ; and it is a subject so delightful and so important, that I must dilate upon it a little more largely. Attend to it therefore, that *he is in this respect*, and for this purpose, *the Mediator of a new and better covenant*^a far preferable to that of *Moses* ; *that death being undergone, for the redemption and expiation of transgressions against the former covenant*, and which could not be removed by it, *they who are called to the engagements and benefits of this, might receive the promise of an eternal inheritance*, to which that of *Sinai* had no immediate reference^b ; its promises only relating to an inheritance in *Canaan*, and to those temporal enjoyments which were there conferred upon those who were obedient to the *Divine law* : I say, it is in consequence

SECT.
xii.

Heb.
IX. 15.

16 For where a testament

16

^a *Mediator of a new covenant,*] This is the only place in the New Testament, where διαβνη can be supposed to signify a testament or will, rather than a covenant. But the mediator of a testament is a very improper expression ; and one cannot suppose the apostle would play on the ambiguity of the word ; I therefore think with Mr. Pierce, that it is better here to retain

the usual translation of it.—Redemption in the next clause plainly signifies purchasing the pardon.

^b [Immediate reference.] For the proof of this I must refer my readers to what my learned friend Dr. Warburton has written, I think, irrefragably on this subject, in his elaborate and ingenious volumes on the *Divine Legation of Moses*.

c By

HEB.
XII.

HEB.
IX. 16.

quence of his undergoing death, that he effectually secures these blessings to us by his covenant; *for where a covenant [is] answerable to that which typified this of what I now speak, it necessarily imports the death of that by which the covenant is confirmed.* For you know that sacrificial rites have ever attended the most celebrated covenants which God hath made with men; so that I may say, *a covenant [is] confirmed over the dead, so that it does not avail, nor has any force at all, while he by whom it is confirmed liveth.* From whence, and on which principle we may observe, *neither was the first [covenant] of which we have been speaking, I mean that of Moses, originally transacted without the blood of an appointed sacrifice. For when every command was spoken and delivered according to the law by Moses to all the people, it is expressly said, that taking the blood of calves and goats mingled with water, and dipping into it a piece of scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop, he sprinkled the book itself, which contained the covenant, and all the people who were to enter into it. Saying at the same time, This [is] the blood of the covenant which God hath commanded with respect to you, appointing you to declare your consent to the terms of it, as you desire Divine favour and acceptance. And the tabernacle, and all the vessels of Divine ser-*

vice, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.

17 For a testament not being after men agreed, it is of no strength at all, whilst the testator liveth.

18 Whereupon neither the first testament was deduced without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to his law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people.

20 saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath commanded with you.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled likewise with blood,

144

c. In which the covenant is confirmed.) Mr. Parker would render it, *of the covenant which is appointed by God to us, partly, and he brings a testimonial evidence from James where he speaks of the same promise. He calls the usage of the great suppers that it should be so transacted, and accordingly so the words seem to signify it. The passage can be nothing as long as it is short. But I think it probable, he considered, as he takes it, together, the argument will be clearer. Yet I confess considerable difficulties attend both these interpretations; though the connection with what follows appears to me upon that which I have given. But aside with this, if he consult Dr. Whistler upon this passage, who assigns such a construction in interpretation, much the same with that which is proposed in this note, and therefore.—The present Latin passage, which I have rendered, somewhat loosely, is very strong, the death must be present, it must not only be offered, but also made apparent. Luther hath chosen, *firmat*.*

Yea, it is said, that the word *firmat* is used in a former sense, for what is produced, and putrefied, or made apparent in a sort of testimony.

Of the word, and sense. It is certain that Moses, as he is agent of this testament, (see ver.) does not mention any thing of a testament. Originally St. Paul received that to be his doctrine. Communion of a similar kind was granted. Lev. xix. 2-6, 22-23, as in washing the *leper*. And in looking probably, that the sprinkling the blood of the sacrifice might be done in the method. The blood was mixed with water, he poured it from a vessel, and perhaps in the mixture of blood and water, which probably was poured on the people's skirts, might have some intended reference. It is the opinion of Dr. Owen that the ceremony here referred to, was commonly performed on the day of covenant. But it is certain it is not expressly prescribed in the account given us of the making of this day.

c No

blood, both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood ; and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these ; but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true ; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us :

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place, every year with blood of others :

26 For then must he often have suffered since

vice with which it was furnished, he also sprinkled with the same blood of the sacrifices. And indeed almost all things were under the law purified by blood in their first consecration ; and it was by blood that they were cleansed from pollution, whether general or special. And if any transgression had been committed through ignorance or surprise, yet so solicitous was the blessed God to maintain the honour of his law, and the decorum of his administration, that in case of such offences, without shedding of blood, where an animal sacrifice could be procured, there was no forgiveness of sin^e.

[It was] therefore necessary, according to the 23 Divine appointment, that the tabernacle, and those instruments and utensils belonging to it, which were the copies or imitations of things in the heavens, should be purified by the blood of these animal victims ; but the celestial things themselves, with more excellent sacrifices than they^f, even with the sacred blood of Christ himself, which these offerings were designed to typify. And the expedience of this appears from 24 the method which God hath in fact taken ; for it is plain, that Christ is not entered into an earthly tabernacle, or holy places made with hands, though adorned with ever so much art and expence ; [which] at best [were] but the figures, or imperfect copies, of the true : but he is entered into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us, as our great High Priest, and ever-glorious and powerful intercessor. Not that it was necessary he should offer 25 himself frequently, as the High Priest entered into the most holy place yearly on the day of atonement, with the blood of others, that is, of bullocks and goats : For then, as the Jewish sacrifice was often repeated, so it would have been necessary 26
sary

SECT.
xii.

Heb.
IX. 22.

e No forgiveness.] I look upon this as a certain proof, that the sin-offerings were not merely tokens of friendship restored between God and the offender ? but that the blood was looked upon as the consideration on which the pardon was granted, being an acknowledgment on the part of the offerer that he had deserved death if God had been strict to mark offences.

f The celestial things themselves with more excellent sacrifices.] It may perhaps seem strange, that celestial things should be

spoken of as needing to be purified and cleansed. But it is to be considered, that as the sacred dwelling and the vessels were esteemed to be polluted by the Israelites, who in various degrees had access to them ; so heaven would have been, as it were, polluted by the entrance of such sinners as went into it, had not the blood of Christ intervened. This I think much more natural, than with Bishop Fell to explain it of some pollutions contracted by the sin of the angels.

g Conclusion

SERM.

NII

HAB.

IX. 26.

stry for him often to have suffered in many successive periods, *from the foundation of the world* in order to the salvation of good men in their several ages and generations, which we know he did not. *But now once for all at the conclusion of the ages, he hath been made manifest for the abolishing of sin*; and wiping out its dreadful score; *by the sacrifice of himself*, that he might purchase the pardon of it, and effectually teach men to subdue it*, when they see such a ransom paid for their forfeited lives. And just as with respect to the common lot of mankind, *it is appointed to all men once to die, and after that the judgment is ordained*, which fixes them in an unalterable state, without any farther revolution of life and death: So Christ passed through one death, no more to be subject to the possibility of it, and *having once been offered*, as the scape-goat on the great day of expiation, *to bear the punishment due to the sins of many* even of all his believing people, and to carry away, as it were, the guilt of them into the land of oblivion, *he shall the second time appear* to preside in that judgment which men are to undergo. And then he shall come like the high priest*, in his richest dress, when the grand act of expiation was over, *without any thing that wears the marks of humiliation or abasement*, or resembles the form in which he came to make an atonement for sins. And while he brings with him

since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment:

28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time, without sin, unto salvation.

[*Conclusion of the sermon*]. So much we designed to have been exactly rendered; meaning the *act* of his dependence (and ever intended to give mankind. See Vol. II. vol. 10. p. 104.)

A Paraphrase the pardon of it, and teach men to subdue it. Mr. Harvey (in his *Discourse on the principal Propositions of the Church*, p. 107) explains an *adversary* conquest, for the overthrow of one of our enemies' arms, so that it would be no longer extensible. But I think it extends to every method of subduing sin, or putting it away, and may include, under the metaphorical term, the Divine justice, the subduing it also in our consciences.

[*Like the High Priest*]. I should not but there is, indeed, as Lutheran supposes, an allusion here to the high priest coming out to bless the people, who were waiting for him in the temple when the great day of atonement was over. And as he then appeared in his richest garments, whereas before he had officiated in the

plain dress of a common priest; and as the trumpet of the jubilee, on that year succeeded to proclaim the commencement of that happy period; there is not our own language that our enter into the mind of men more serious to convey the great idea which the apostle intended to convey by it, than this could be to a Jew, who well knew the grand solemnity to which it referred.

[*He shall come*]. Mr. Turretin supposes this refers to Christ's leaving, in that great day, the glory of the Shekinah upon him, of which the splendour of the richest habits Aaron and his sons wore, who sat in that shadow; and that is farther alluded to the stuporous Adam at that glory which he continued from his first interview with the Seraphim, as soon as he had sinned. In consequence of which, Christ appearing in the day of our redemption, without this glory, might be said to come *as with sin*, or as it is expressed, Rom. 8:10. *In the likeness of sinful flesh*, &c. Vol. II. p. 101.

him everlasting terror to all that despise and reject him, he shall manifest himself to those who have waited for him, to complete their eternal salvation¹, and conduct them in their entire persons, to those regions of glory which he hath prepared for them.

SECT.
XII.
Heb.
IX. 28.

IMPROVEMENT.

WE are heirs of an *eternal inheritance*, and we owe all our expectations of it to the *Mediator* of that *better covenant*, who at the expence of his own *blood* procured *redemption* from the guilt and condemnation of those *transgressions* which have been committed under the *first covenant*; what praise do we owe to that voluntary *victim*, who made his blood the *seal* of that better covenant? O, that as all the *vessels* of the *sanctuary*, and all the *people* were sprinkled with the *blood* of the *sacrifices*, on that day when *Moses* entered them into solemn covenant with God² so our souls and all our services might be under the *sprinkling* of the *blood* of *Jesus*! By the efficacy of that were the *heavenly places* sanctified and prepared for us; by that our way into them is opened: let us be daily looking up to the *Lord Jesus Christ*, as gone to appear in the presence of God for us, and entered into heaven with his own blood. May his death be as efficacious to subdue the power of sin in our hearts, as it is to expiate our guilt before God. Then may we look forward with pleasure to the great solemnities of death and judgment, and expect that faithful Redeemer, who though he is to come no more as a sacrifice for sin, will then appear for the complete salvation of all, who have obediently received him under that character, and waited for him according to his word.

In the mean time, that we may be engaged thus to apply to him, and improve our knowledge of him to the great purposes intended; may we live in the continual views of death, as what is indispensably appointed to men; and remember that it is our certain inevitable doom. May we also consider it, as standing in a most certain connection with judgment; assuring ourselves, that whatever the period of time between the one and the other may be, there is no room for a change in our character or state. Let therefore

¹ To salvation: εις σωτηριαν.] Wolfius is of opinion, that these words should be connected with those immediately preceding, as expressing the view with which they waited for the returning Saviour, namely, that they might obtain complete salvation. But, with Grotius, I think it preferable to connect them in this man-

ner, ελθησεται εις σωτηριαν, he shall appear —to salvation. And certainly this is much more natural, than with Beza and Erasmus Schmidius, to refer it to so remote a clause as εις τα πολλων απερχων αμαρτιας to bear the sins of many, in order to their salvation. See Wolfii Curae P. ii. logic. in loc.

a Shadow

SECT.
XII.

therefore the thoughts of judgment, and its awful eternal consequences, stir us up to a diligent preparation for death. Let it engage us to make an immediate application to Christ as the great Saviour, with entire submission to his princely authority; for if that be disregarded, how shall we meet him as our Judge? For when he appears the second time for the salvation of his people, he will execute righteous vengeance on his enemies: and that vengeance can never appear so terrible, as when considered as coming from the mouth of him who was once manifested to take away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

SECT. XIII.

The Apostle returns from his digression to prove, that the legal ceremonies could not by any means purify the conscience; and from thence argues the insufficiency of the Mosaic law, and the necessity of looking beyond it. Heb. X. 1—15.

SECT.
XIII.Heb.
X. 1.

HEBREWS X. 1.

YOU see that it is the design of all this discourse, to raise your minds from the Mosaic law to the gospel: and it is an important design, which the dearer you are to me, the more earnestly I must pursue. For the law having, as it were, only a shadow, or imperfect sketch, of future good things, and not the complete delineation, or the very image of the things [themselves], could by no means, even by those sacrifices, of atonement which they always offer yearly, and are the most solemn which belong to the whole Hebrew ritual, perfect those who come unto [them,] so as to remove the moral guilt of their offences, and bring them into a state of reconciliation with God, and to that settled

HEBREWS X. 1.

FOR the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

a Shadow and image: *umbra et imago*. Here is an allusion, I apprehend, to the different state of a painting, when the first sketch only is drawn, and when the piece is finished; or to the first sketch of a painting, when compared with what is yet more expressive than even the completest painting, an exact image. I cannot be of opinion with Mr. Pierce, that *umbra, imago*, here signifies the original from whence the delineation draught is made. It is a very unusual sense of the word, nor can I think, Rom. i. 23, sufficient to justify and support it. Besides, even under the gospel, we have not the heavenly blessings them-

selves, but only a clearer representation or revelation of them.

b Sacrifices which they always offer yearly. The sacrifices offered on the day of atonement, being by far the most solemn of any of the expiatory kind among the Jews, are mentioned here with the utmost propriety. And this interpretation seems to supersede the necessity of following Mr. Pierce's translation, who would, by transposing the points, render it, *The law having only a shadow of good things to come—yearly, can never with the same sacrifices, which they continually offer, make the comers thereunto perfect,*

c They

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered; because that the worshippers once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins.

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.

5 Wherefore, when he cometh into the world, he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest

tled peace of conscience, which results from a sense of his favour. And indeed the very circumstance of their yearly repetition is a proof of this; for *otherwise*, that is, could they have made such a complete reconciliation, *they would have ceased to be offered*^c any more, at least by the same persons: *because they who had performed that service, being once purified by it, would have had no more consciousness of sins*; but have enjoyed the efficacy of that atonement to the last moment of their lives, on applying to it on any future occasion; as we Christians do, by renewed acts of faith on our great sacrifice if through the frailty of human nature we are so unhappy as to fall into sin. *But in them*,³ [there is] of course, as it were, a yearly commemoration of sins, by a yearly presentation of the atoning blood of new sacrifices in the most holy place; which shows that their efficacy is so far from extending, as that of the true expiation does, to all nations, times, and places, that it only looks back upon the year completed^d, and hath no influence, even with regard to those persons who are actually present in the temple, on any thing future.

And indeed the reason of this is plain; for⁴ [it is] in the nature of things impossible that the blood of bulls and of goats should, on the whole, take away sins, or make a real atonement to God as the great governor of the world, for the moral guilt of any transgression: though it may by Divine appointment put a stop to any farther prosecution which might proceed in Jewish courts, or any such extraordinary judgment, as the peculiar state of things among that people might otherwise require. *Therefore when the*⁵ Messiah is described in David, as making his entrance into the world, he saith, in those well-known words, (Psal. xl. 7.) "Sacrifice and offering

^c *They would have ceased to be offered*] This reading is more easy and natural than that which our translators have followed, while they have placed this in the margin. It is supported by many copies, and adopted by the Vulgate and Syriac version.

^d Looks back upon the year completed.] I am surprised that Diodate should imagine this must have been expressly revealed to the apostle: I think it sufficiently appears from the tenor of the Mosaic law; for if the expiation was to be offered

yearly for the whole people, it must include the expiation of sins remaining unatoned to the time of its offering; and if it were to be repeated the next year, it could reach no further.—But still it must be remembered, that this only referred to those temporal punishments which God, as the King of Israel, might have inflicted upon the whole people, if by a neglect of this annual atonement, they had in effect broke their covenant, and thrown a contempt upon his institution.

SECT.
xiii.

Heb.
X. 2.

e A

2007.

XIII.

1165.

N. 6.

fering thou wouldest not [accept,] but a body thou hast provided me^c, in which I may render thee a more acceptable service: In whole burnt-offerings and sin-offerings thou hadst no complacency, when considered in this view, and in reference to this great event. Then I said with the most cheerful consent, "Behold, I come; in the volume of the book," which contains the ancient prophecies, it is written of me, that I should accomplish this service, and I delight to do thy will, O my God, for thy law in all its branches is within my heart." Having in effect said above, *do for sacrifice and offering*, whether they were burnt-offerings, or sacrifices for sin, thou didst not desire [them] or take pleasure [in them,] which comprehends the most material and considerable of those things which were offered to God under the law. Then he said, Behold I come to do thy will, O God. So that you see, he taketh away the first, that is, burnt-offerings and sacrifices, that he may establish the second, that is, doing God's will; pointing therein to that great act of obedience, by which the pardon of sin was to be secured, and the Divine honour most effectually promoted. In the execution of which will we are sanctified, cleansed from our sins, and recommended to the Divine acceptance, even by the offering up the body of our Lord Jesus Christ once for all, as an atoning sacrifice.

11 And this agrees with what I observed above to be the property of a true and effectual atonement

wouldst not, but a body hast thou provided me^c.

6 In burnt-offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hadst no complacency.

7 Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither had pleasure therein, (which are offered by the law.)

9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every saint sanctified, daily sanctifying and offering himself.

^c *I body hast thou provided me.* After having deliberately considered the ancient monuments which have been preserved from him, I had much to propose as text of Mr. Pearce was unwilling that the original reading of the Hebrew, upon the Shema Psalm, which at 2:218 was 712 714, and the 712 monument should be generally so well as to be 712, and then the second will be justified, and the original reading already accounted for. Next to this is the reading of the Septuagint and ancient Mr. Pearce, who supposes that the copy should be explained the person of Jesus Christ, by that of promise, in the law for ever, as better known to them for whom the promise was intended, and therefore preferred also by our people, who, though I discussed this question in the Hebrew, to which the text is more than 100 years old, I found it in the general sense, namely, that

N. A. XI. p. 11. The interpretation given by Jesus (Matth. XXII. 14. &c.) is said to be the same purpose with that of Mr. Pearce.

[Volume of the book.] Tell me, say the Protestants, the only book containing prophecies of Christ written before David's time. Shall he had said, I suppose, that I am registered in my book as my servant. This is the great of Bishop Bell. On the whole, I think the speech so poorly argued from this text, that it proves the psalm to which he refers to be a local prophecy of the Messiah, and consequently the mouthpiece of it, which affords the only material argument against that interpretation, must either be explained of those Jews, who, though not properly Christians, were yet upon their knees to the Messiah, whom he sent for the redemption of all.

oftentimes the same sacrifices which can never take away sins :

12 But this Man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for ever sat down on the right hand of God :

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.

14 For he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

ment. For indeed every priest of the Mosaic law standeth daily ministering, and offering the same sacrifices often, which, as appears from that very circumstance of the repetition of them, can never avail to take away the guilt of sins ; But he, that is, our Lord Jesus Christ, having offered one ever-efficacious sacrifice for the sins of all who shall believe in him, and obey him, hath for ever sat down at the right hand of God ; never more to stand and minister in such a manner as he has done, but answering the great character drawn in the prophet, (Zech. vi. 13,) of a priest on a throne, where royal dignity, and certain conquest, are added to his other glories ; For the rest, waiting only till the appointed time come, in which according to the promise we have been contemplating, all his enemies shall be made the footstool of his feet. For by that one offering up of himself, concerning which we have been speaking, he hath for ever perfected them that are sanctified by it, and on whom its blood is, as it were sprinkled, and hath rendered all believers perfectly acceptable to God, and made effectual provision for raising them to a state of complete holiness, felicity, and glory.

SECT.
xiii.

Heb.
X. 11.

IMPROVEMENT.

SINCE the shadows are now fled away, and the substance is come : Ver. since the most substantial blessings are bestowed by the gospel ; let us celebrate the praises of him by whom we have received them ; of him, who so cheerfully presented himself a spotless sacrifice to God for us. In the body which God hath prepared for him, he fulfilled all righteousness, and made a most perfect atonement : in that he, once for all, made full expiation for the sins of his people, having no sin of his own to expiate : and O ! with what grateful emotions of heart should we commemorate his love ; reflecting that when all other sacrifices would have been vain, he should so readily cry out, *Lo, I come, I delight to do thy will, O God* ; when that will of his heavenly father was, that his body should be offered in so painful and so tragical a manner ! With such readiness let us too concur in every intimation of the Divine good pleasure : let us, like the blessed man whom David described, not only fear the Lord, but delight greatly in his commandments, (Psal. cxii. 1,) and labour that the law of God may be inscribed on our hearts, and the characters grow larger and deeper there. This shall please God better than the most costly sacrifices, even

SECT.
XIII.

even of his own ritual : better than any whole burnt-offering, and sin-offering, though it were an ox or a bullock, which hath horns Ver. and hoofs, Psalm lxxix. 31.

- 10 May we be so sanctified through the sacrifice of Christ, according to the will of God, that we may approach the Divine Being with acceptance. And may we daily be looking to Jesus as sat
12, 13 down at his Father's right-hand, where he waits till his enemies are made his footstool. Let us likewise expect that great event in full assurance of faith. Let our affections be there where Jesus sits ; and let us live in cheerful confidence, that the Saviour, in whose cause we are engaged, will finally appear triumphant over all his enemies, and ours. Amen.

SECT. XIV.

The Apostle urges Christians to improve the privileges which such an High Priest and Covenant gave them, to the purposes of a fiducial approach to God, a constant attendance on his worship, and a benevolent love to each other. Heb. X. 13—25.

HEBREWS X. 13.

SECT.
XIV.

Heb.

X. 13.

- I** HAVE spoken of Christ, as having by one offering of himself, for ever perfected those that are sanctified ; and this is a representation very agreeable to the word of God for even the Holy Ghost testifieth to us in that passage (Jer. xxxi. 33, &c.) which I have quoted above, after having before said, *This [is] the covenant which I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord : I will give my laws to be written on their hearts ; I will also inscribe them on their minds* : my Holy Spirit shall work in them cordial dispositions humbly to practise and
16 obey them : He adds in consequence of this, *their sins and their transgressions*, how many and aggravated soever they may have been, *I will never remember any more. But where [there is] such an entire remission of these, as this great amnesty, this universal pardon implies, which wipes out the very remembrance of all offences, [there is] no more room for any sacrifice for sin, which implies that they are remembered, and remain to be expiated.*

HEBREWS X. 15.

Let it be OFF the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us : for after that he hath said before,

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them ;

17 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now, where remission of these is there is no more offering for sin.

This

a Testimonium.] Or, as it might be rendered, *have witness with us*, that is, *attest*, is, and confirms by his testimony

what I have said ; in which sense the original word is used, as Hapnelius hath shown by several *Greek* *Chimer*.

New

19 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest, by the blood of Jesus.

20 By a new and living way which he hath consecrated for us through the vail, that is to say, his flesh ;

21 And *having* an High Priest over the house of God.

22 Let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

This therefore, my dear brethren, is now our happy case ; and let us endeavour to enjoy and improve it aright. *Having such liberty to enter into the holy places by the efficacy of this atoning blood of Jesus : [Having that] new discovered and ever-living way^b, which he hath consecrated for us through the vail^c, that is, by means of his flesh, or of that human nature in which he hath veiled his Divine glories, and to which it ever becomes us to pay a regard in our access to God : And [having] also such a²¹ great and glorious Priest over the House of God, who most faithfully manages his Father's concerns, and bears a most tender regard to ours ; Let us not stand at a distance as if God were²² inaccessible ; but, on the contrary, let us draw near with a sincere and affectionate heart in the full assurance of faith, supported by such considerations as these, which may well embolden us, (conscious as we are of our own unworthiness,) to make our approach unto him in the most cheerful expectation of his blessing. Only let us take care that this approach he made in a regular and proper manner, as ever we desire to meet with Divine favour and acceptance ; particularly, as the water of purification was to be sprinkled on the Israelites, to cleanse them from any pollutions they might have contracted, so let us see to it that we come, *having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, free from all allowed guilt and indulged sin. And this is indeed our case, if we are true Christians : our hearts are thus sprinkled by the purifying and cleansing blood of Jesus, as well as our bodies in baptism washed with pure water^d, intended to represent**

SECT.
xiv.

Heb.
X. 19.

20

21

22

^b *New and living Way.*] Dr. Owen illustrates this, by observing that the blood of other sacrifices was to be used immediately upon its effusion ; for if it were cold and congealed, it was of no use to be offered or sprinkled : but the blood of Christ is, as it were, always warm, having the same spirit of life and sanctification moving in it. So that the way of approach by it is said to be ζωον και αποστατον, *living, yet, (putting it for Christ who is the Way) always, as it were, newly slain.* See Owen on the Spirit, p. 816.

^c *The vail.*] It is well known, that the vail was a curtain separating the holy from the most holy place. The priest could

not pass to the sanctuary, unless he passed through it : so Christ could not pass into heaven as our High Priest, till he had taken human flesh in his way ; and till it had been, as it were, put aside by death. And I cannot forbear thinking, that it may further refer to the *Schechinah* being veiled by this curtain, which bore so remarkable an analogy to the Divine glory of Christ, as veiled by assuming human nature.

^d *Bodies washed with pure water.*] Mr. Pierce would make this the beginning another sentence ; and *having washed our bodies with pure water*, that is, "having been solemnly devoted to God in baptism, let us answer the engagements of that holy ordinance by holding fast the profession of our

our

SECT.
XIX

H. b.
X = 3.

- represent our being cleansed from sin. And since we have received such benefits by the gospel which we have embraced, *let us hold fast the profession of [our] hope*, without ever giving way to the pressure and agitation of any temptation, or *wavering* in a case where we have such certain and indubitable evidence; *for* we know that whatever storms and tempests may arise, *he [is] assuredly faithful who hath promised*: he will stand by to defend us, and to make
- 21 us more than conquerors over all. *And let us consider each other*, and reflect seriously on the circumstances in which we and our brethren are situated, that we may judge what influence we can have over them for their advantage, and may endeavour accordingly *to provoke*, and stimulate them on *to* the exercise of sincere love, and to a readiness *to* all good works, by our exhortations, and especially by *our* example, and by such a conduct towards them as may engage the return of their affection, and the exertion of their zeal for the general good: *Not deserting the assembling ourselves together*, for the solemn purposes of public worship, *as the manner of some now [is]* in order to decline that reprimand and persecution which the attendance on such assemblies may draw after it; *but exhorting and comforting [one another]* as much as we can; *and this so much the rather, as ye see the day approaching*, that awful day in which we must appear before the tribunal of God, and that day of vengeance upon the Jewish nation, which Christ hath described as so terrible an emblem

22 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithful that promised.)

23 And let us consider one another to provoke and to good works.

24 Not forsaking the assembling ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another; and so much the more as ye see the day approaching.

and God, but considering that he is faithful, and that the consequences he was pleased to send unto us by it." But I think the sense will be very easy and intelligible, if it be compared with the general words, as referring to the custom of washing their bodies in clean water, before they went to worship at the temple, especially upon their solemn days.

2. *Partaking of [our] love*. Instead of *comforting*, &c., our translators read *exhort*, talk, upon the authority only of a single manuscript. See Dr. Aldrich's.

3. *Assembling ourselves together*. Mr. Finner is of opinion, that when the apostle adds, *as ye see*, &c. in v. 24, he intends to blame the conduct of those Jews who on account of their old prejudices against the Gentile converts, deserted themselves from the assemblies into which they were admitted, and perhaps also to censure a

similar behaviour in the Gentile converts arising from prejudices they had newly contracted against the Jews. And he imagines this, in some measure, is intimated by the use of the word *one company*. (Compare 1 Tim. ii. 1.) But I think the allusion given of the ground of this caution, in the *participle*, is on the whole much more certain.

4. *Day approaching*. They knew that the day of Christ's final judgment, being certainly future, came nearer and nearer. And from what Christ had said concerning the destruction of Jerusalem, as to happen in the lives of some who had been present with him about thirty years before the date of this epistle, (compare Mat. xvi. 28,) they might infer that *but* was now near, though they should not have been able to trace it up into its causes, or to calculate the exact time.

blem of it. And let none, who would not share with the enemies of Christ in the destruction which shall be poured out upon them, abandon his people now, and basely betray that cause and interest, by which none shall on the whole be losers, whatever they may for the present suffer on its account.

SECT.
xiv.

Heb.
X. 25.

IMPROVEMENT.

WHAT can be more desirable than to *approach to God* ! what more effectually encourage that approach, than the consideration which the *apostle* here urges : *the new and living way* which this great *High-Priest* hath consecrated ! Let us then see to it that we thus approach in the way of his own appointment. But if we desire acceptance, let us attend to the strength of our *faith*, and the *purity* of our *consciences* ; that inward purity, without which our *baptismal* washing will stand us in little stead. To establish us in a resolution of retaining the *profession of our faith and hope*, amidst all the attempts that may be made to wrest it out of our hands, let us often reflect on the importance of those *promises* we have received, and the infallible *fidelity* of that God, who hath condescended to enter himself into such engagements. Let the *community* of that blessed hope which these sacred engagements afford, unite us in the bonds of the most affectionate *love*. Instead of watching over each other for evil, let us consider one another's circumstances with the most friendly and compassionate eye. And whatever we behold of necessity or distress, let us immediately be instigated and quickened, kindly to attempt relief and assistance ; that *every one* may be, as it were, in a confederacy against the evil by which *any one* may be attacked.

Much will this benevolent disposition be promoted, by a diligent attendance on the *ordinances* of religious worship ; and much is it to be lamented, that it is the *manner of so many* to forsake them, even the *assemblies* which are honoured with the promise of the Divine presence ; a promise to the accomplishment of which *thousands* can bear testimony. Let us guard against so ungrateful and pernicious a neglect ; and set ourselves to promote as far as possible, *mutual edification* ; and so much the rather ; as we see the day approaching ; that solemn day, when all our opportunities in this world being come to a period, we must render up an account of all. It is a day, in which God will bring every work into judgment, and every secret thing, whether it be good or evil : let us therefore give all diligence to prepare ourselves for it ; and remember how happily the *ordinances* of public worship are calculated to promote that preparation.

SECT. XV.

The Apostle enforces his exhortation steadily to adhere to their Christian faith, by reminding them of the extremities they had endured in its defence, and of the fatal consequences of apostasy, Heb. X. 26, to the end.

HEBREWS X. 26.

52-5.

XV.

Heb.
X. 26.

I HAVE urged you to a steadiness and courage in the profession of the Christian faith, and have cautioned you against neglecting those acts of public worship by which it is professed, on any consideration whatsoever. And I must continue to inculcate the caution with the greatest seriousness; *for if we sin wilfully** and presumptuously by apostatising, *after having received the knowledge of the truth* with such incontestable evidence and power, *there remaineth yet no more sacrifice for sin*†, nor is it possible to find any atonement that shall be efficacious, after having thus ungratefully and wickedly disowned that which God had appointed. But on the contrary, all that remaineth is a *certain fearful expectation of the judgment of God, and of his very indignation, which is just ready to devour the adversaries* of his gospel, and shall in a very little time be poured out upon them in all its terrors.

28 Thus we might easily infer from the nature of things, even though we had not been so expressly warned of it in the word of God. For if *any one*, of whatever order and dignity, *who set at naught the law of Moses*‡, by any presumptuous

HEBREWS X. 26.
[20] If we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins.

27. But a certain fearful looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries.

28. He that despised Moses' law, died without mercy.

THOMAS.

[*sin wilfully*.] The emphasis of the apostle's argument must lead us to interpret this of apostasy from Christianity. But as Irenæus well observes, it might perhaps be expressed in this more general manner, to intimate how carefully we ought to guard against every degree of *negligence*, lest it should lead to that dreadful conclusion.

[*No more sacrifice for sin*.] This already intimated, as Dr. Bane (*Hebr.* p. 207) well observes, that God will not pardon sin without *repentance* or satisfaction; and the argument would be inconclusive.

[*Set at naught the law of Moses*.] This

evidently alludes to that very important precept, *Numbers* xv. 30, 31, whose doom it is certain death every one who offended with *an high hand*; that is, who was guilty of any actual, deliberate, and presumptuous sin, whether in matters great or small; though a plea of ignorance or inconsideration was allowed where the rebellion and presumption was not undeniably by any *contract*. And this was the foundation of the *curse of law*, which was in some degree analogous to the smaller punishment inflicted among us, for a crime, in other *circumstances*, capital, where *benefit of clergy* is sought and admitted.

J. Timpsted

out mercy, under two or three witnesses :

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace ?

30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompense saith the Lord. And again

transgression of it, though that transgression might in itself seem ever so small, *died without mercy*[on the evidence of] *two or three witnesses*, and was excluded any benefit from those sin-offerings which were appointed for offences of ignorance and inconsideration : *Of how much sorer punishment do ye suppose he shall be counted worthy, who hath not merely insulted a faithful servant, but even trampled upon^d the Son of God, and who hath not only slighted the method of reconciliation and purification which God hath appointed for lower purposes, but hath accounted the sacred blood of the covenant, by which he was sanctified^e, and solemnly set apart to the service of God, a common or an unclean thing, like the blood of a malefactor justly executed for his crimes ?* Now this he certainly doth who rejects the gospel ; which cannot possibly be done without the greatest imaginable outrage to the memory of its Divine Author, who, had he not indeed been the extraordinary Person he professed himself to be, would deservedly have been reckoned among the most detestable of impostors. *And such an offence is in present circumstances the most aggravated, as it is plain, that he who commits it, has offered the most contemptuous injury to the Spirit of grace, by whose miraculous and saving operations the truth of the gospel is demonstrated, to such a degree, that the highest blasphemy against him must virtually be expressed by such a conduct as we here suppose.*

Avoid therefore all approaches to this with 30 the most solicitous care, for the Divine justice is not to be trifled with ; as *we know him that hath said*, (Deut. xxxii. 35, 36.) *Vengeance [belongeth] to me. I will render recompense, saith the Lord ; and again, The Lord will judge his*

^d *Trampled upon.*] As it appears to me that this is a description of a case that could only occur where what was properly the sin against the Holy Ghost was committed, that is, ascribing the miracles wrought by his power to magic, and the operation of demons, I have paraphrased these words agreeable to that principle.

^e *By which he was sanctified.*] As it could not on any principles be certainly inferred, that every one who thus apostatized from Christianity had been truly

renewed, I think it very apparent, that this sanctification must only refer to his being externally set apart, or consecrated to God ; though I will not certainly say, how far it may, as Bishop Hoadly has thought, refer to the sacramental wine representing the blood of the covenant. Hoadly on Episc. p. 453. Some have interpreted it, of the blood whereby Christ was sanctified, or dedicated by God as a High Priest. Comp. John x. 36 ; xvii. 19. But the former sense seems to me more natural.

SECT.
XV.

Heb.
X. 28.

1828
 1829
 1830
 1831
 1832
 1833
 1834

his people; and if he vindicate and avenge the injury done to them, he will much more severely animadvert upon those which are offered to his Spirit and his Son. Now surely you must immediately be sensible, that *[it is] dreadful indeed to fall into the hands of the living God*; who living for ever, can for ever punish, in what degree he pleases, the wretched creatures, who have made themselves the objects of his final displeasure.

- 32 But I humbly hope, you will be delivered from so terrible a ruin; and that you may, I will lead back your thoughts to former events, which if duly considered, may be very instructive, and may prove the means of establishing you in your resolution of adhering to the gospel. And I must particularly urge you to *call to remembrance the former days, in which having been enlightened*, with the knowledge of Christianity, and solemnly engaged in the profession of it by baptism, *you endured a great contest of sufferings*, struggling and contending as for your lives, or what indeed was much more valuable: *Partly as ye were made a public spectacle both by reproaches and afflictions*, like men exposed on a theatre as infamous; and *partly as ye were made partakers with those who were so treated*, and most affectionately appeared in the defence of the Divine cause, at the greatest hazard as well as expence.

- 34 And indeed I have reason to speak this upon my own knowledge *for ye sympathized with me in my bonds, and ye took the plunder of your goods* not only with patience but *with joy, knowing in yourselves that ye have, upon the security of*

again, the Lord shall judge his people.

31 *I it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.*

22 But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great light of afflictions:

33 Partly while ye were made a spectacle, both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly whilst ye bore the company of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in yourselves that ye have

[The Lord will judge his people, &c.] The connection seems plain & requires no interpretation; and it agrees very well with the purpose for which it is here introduced. Very few commentators have considered it in this view; yet since I wrote this, I had Mr. Goodrich's *Exposit. Har.* p. 247, gives it the same sense. And *Raphaels* [*Abel in the*] hath produced a passage from *Ninivian*, in which the original word *habeo*, will judge, is used to signify punishing, or pronouncing sentence in favour of.

[Having been enlightened.] By some this is understood of baptism; and it is certain the *text* is so the phrase in that sense. But I see no reason from contexture, for limiting it to that interpretation; or

supposing, as *Deodate* himself does, there was any efficacy in baptism to enlighten any more than to regenerate. Though it is indeed the ordinance by which persons were solemnly entered into the list of those who were in the main, and in the judgment of charity enlightened and regenerated, my respect for the opinion of so many eminent persons, ancient and modern, has determined me to fast at the abuse, they have generally given to it in the *passage*.

[A great contest.] This is the emphatical signification of the word *afflictio*, which gives a view of their courage and bravery very proper for his purpose, while he was thus commending and animating them.

have in heaven, a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience; that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come; and will not tarry.

38 Now the just shall live by faith; but if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

the gospel-promises, a far better, and an enduring substance in the heavens, where eternal riches and felicity await you, when all the possessions of earth are lost, and all its sorrows come to a perpetual period.

Let the remembrance of these things *therefore* animate you to persist in such heroic resolutions; and *cast not away that confidence of yours*, and that free and courageous profession of it, *which hath* so great and glorious a recompence entailed upon it; even that of eternal life and happiness, which the Divine goodness will bestow as a gracious reward on all who thus maintain it. It will indeed be necessary, that *36* in order to secure it, you should take up a firm and vigorous resolution; *for ye have still need of continued patience, that having done the will of God*, during this short state of probation here, *ye may receive and inherit the promise* of life and salvation, to which ye have already expressed such a firm regard. And I hope you will still *37* go on to maintain the glorious cause; for it is *but yet a very little time*ⁱ, and as God declared by the prophet Habakkuk, though he supposes he might for a while tarry, (Hab. ii. 3,) *he that cometh*, he that is known by that illustrious title of the Comer, even the Lord Jesus Christ himself, on whom our eyes and our hopes are fixed, *will come* to the rescue of his people, *and he will not delay* beyond the period which his wisdom and faithfulness have marked out. He will come and open those important scenes, which shall not only conclude our labours and sufferings, but abundantly repay them all. *But in the 38* mean time, as it is there added, *the just shall live by his faith*, so we are assured by the repeated testimony of the word of God, that the truly good man shall by firm faith in the Divine perfections, promises, and grace, obtain justification and comfort, life and happiness. *Yet if he draw back*^k, *my soul*, saith the Divine oracle, *shall have no complacency in him*: a total apostacy would expose even the best of men to the Divine displeasure and abhorrence; as former

SECT.

XV.

Heb.

X. 34.

i *Yet a little time.*] Some would render it, *a little, a very little time.*—It has been observed, that *ερχομενος*, the Comer, is a title given to the Messiah, Mat. xi. 3.

k *Yet if he draw back.*] We render the phrase in Habakkuk, *lifted up*. And it is

observable, that the alteration of a *single letter* changes the reading into this sense in which the *Seventy* have taken it.—The original word *σπασαμενης* properly signifies *to sneak or to sink away*. Acts xx. 20; Gal. ii. 12.

SCOT.

XV.

Heb.

X. 39.

former experiences of religion would render the guilt of such apostacy more aggravated. But blessed be God, we have a chearful hope of being preserved from so terrible a state; for *we are not of them that draw back to such dreadful destruction, but of them that go on amidst all opposition still to believe; and sustained by Divine grace, will persevere in that happy way, to the preservation and complete salvation of the soul.*

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. We see the dreadful consequences of *sinning wilfully, after we have received the knowledge of the truth*: how diligently should we guard against every, even the least appearance of it. Should we fall into so great an evil, there would remain no more sacrifice for us; and O how dreadful, to lose our part in that great sacrifice, and be consigned over to a certain fearful expectation of wrath and fiery indignation! but blessed be God, it is not yet our case. It is not every wilful sin which thus seals up the wretched soul to condemnation; for who then could hope for heaven? or who in the utter despair of heaven, could enjoy this world? may we not say who could endure it?

If we would avoid this dreadful doom, let us guard against every approach toward any thing which might be interpreted *treading under foot the Son of God, or doing despite unto the Spirit of grace*. On the contrary, let us ever retain the most reverent affection for the Son of God, and ever cherish the influences of the Spirit. So shall we avoid the threatened vengeance, and escape that infinitely dreadful thing, *the falling into the hands of the living God*.

To have experienced in any degree the power and efficacy of religion, is the great preservative against apostacy. They who have already, like those believing Hebrews, made great sacrifices to their conscience, ought to feel the force of the obligation. The struggles through which they have already passed, the combats they have already maintained, should have a powerful influence on their future resolution, that they may not stain the lustre of their former victories.

If such trials be appointed for us, may our faith be proportionably strengthened; that we may take joyfully, not only the spoiling of our goods, but the torture of our bodies; knowing that we have in heaven a better and more enduring substance than worldly wealth, and a far more glorious abode than these tabernacles of clay. Let the recompense of reward be kept continually in our view;

view; that thereby that *patience* may be supported, of which we ever stand in such evident need, that *after we have done the will of God, we may go to inherit the promises.* SECT. XV.

Ver.

Let the certain and speedy approach of *him that is to come*, daily comfort us, and confirm the faith by which we live; and let us still pour out our fervent supplications before God, that we may not *draw back*, which if we do, it will be infinitely fatal. Then instead of *beholding us with complacency*, *God's soul will abhor us*; and that abhorrence will be proportionable to our violated engagements, and dishonoured profession. *Perdition* pursues our retreat. Let every consideration therefore, of honour, of gratitude, of interest and of safety, concur to urge us on, and to support the steadiness of our faith, till we receive the glorious crown of it, in the complete salvation of our souls. 37 38 39

SECT. XVI.

The Apostle enters on a discourse, in which he proposes to the Hebrews, illustrious examples of faith, which had appeared in holy men mentioned in their scriptures, and particularly in Abel, Enoch, Noah; and Abraham and Sarah. Heb. XI. 1—16.

HEBREWS XI. 1.

NOW faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

HEBREWS XI. 1.

I HAVE spoken of the faith by which the just shall live; and that I may excite you to cultivate that blessed principle more and more, let me now enter into a more distinct consideration of it, and set before your eyes, O ye believing Hebrews, some glorious examples of it, with which your sacred history abounds. To consider it then in its nature; *faith is the confident expectation*^a of things hoped for, upon the security of the Divine promise, and the powerful conviction^b of things which are not seen; but of whose certainty and importance there is such a full persuasion, that they act upon the mind, in a great measure, as if they were present.

SECT. XVI.

Heb. XI. 1.

To

^a *Confident expectation.*] Compare 2 Cor. ix. 4; Heb. iii. 14; where the word *υποσπισς*, is used in this sense; and Raphaelius has confirmed it by some pertinent quotations from Polybius.

^b *The powerful conviction of things not seen:* *ελεγχος των βλεπομενων.*] *Ελεγχος*, it hath been observed by many learned men, and particularly by Raphaelius in loc. is a

strict proof or demonstration, that is, saith Mr. Hallet, such a kind of reason and argument, as both convinces the understanding, and engages a man to act according to that conviction. Accordingly I have rendered it by the word *conviction*, which I think properly expresses the apostle's meaning.

c That

SECT.
XVI.
Hob.
XI. 2.

To this I would excite you, by considerations peculiarly suited to your own case, as the children of the patriarchs; *for by it the illustrious elders obtained an [honourable] testimony* to their character, and it lay at the root of many of the most glorious things they have ever done.

3 *By faith we understand that the worlds were adjusted by the word of God, and the several revolutions of them directed by the operations of his secret providence, as the whole universe was at first created by his power, wisdom, and goodness, and the things which are seen, were not made of things which do appear:* it is certain no visible cause could produce those things, which would be in effect to suppose them to have produced themselves; we therefore by faith refer them to a Divine invisible original.

4 And this happy and sublime principle hath wrought even from the beginning of the world, and animated good men to actions most pleasing to God, and honourable to themselves. It was for instance, *by faith that Abel offered to God a greater and more acceptable sacrifice than Cain;*

by

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen, were not made of things which do appear.

4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained

c *That the worlds were adjusted by the word of God.* As the original word is *creavit*, I was much inclined to have rendered it, the various ages of the world were adjusted; and I have included this sense in the parenthesis. But it does not so evidently appear, that the consequence, relating to things not being made of those that appear, could be deduced from that principle; I therefore conclude upon the whole, that this is an instance where *creavit* signifies *world*; as it is often translated in the New Testament. Bishop Pearson would translate it, *new made of things which do not appear*, that is, made out of nothing, without any pre-existent matter, but is God created the worlds. *Philon in the Cent.* p. 28.

d *Some things which are seen, were not made of things which do appear:* so, in *prologus*, s. v. 8. Our translators have rendered this clause, *So that the things which are seen, &c.* But this does not seem to be sufficiently agreeable either to the original, or to the design of the apostle; which was not to destroy the sentiment contained in his former clause, as an inference from the former, but rather to establish the position in the next part of the verse, by the principle laid down in the latter. Accordingly, I have given it this turn in the parenthesis, and have taken the liberty to transcribe it so far as

which clearly appears, I apprehend, the apostle's intention. The construction of *Philon* is, 16, is somewhat similar to this; *Therefore it is of faith, that it might be of grace, for faith is saying we only expect, that is, "that it might appear to be of grace, as we have already proved it is."* The apostle's intention was, by the latter clause as an intimated principle to establish what he now wanted to prove, namely, that justification was by faith; and thus he does from the consideration of its being by grace. It may be proper to consult Mr. Heist on Heb. xi. 1, note q who refers to Eph. i. 12, and 1 Cor. x. 6, where the apostle's words in vs. 28, 29, cannot signify any thing but *in the intent that*.

e *A greater and more excellent sacrifice.* A late ingenious writer, Mr. Newman, (in his *Treatise on the Free of Love, and the Obligations of Conscience*, page 107, has inferred from this word *sacrificium*, which may be rendered a greater or better offering, that Cain presented himself only presenting only the *sheep*, or *beast-offering*, without a victim; whereas Abel sacrificed both, and by presenting a *sheep*, showed his faith in the great sacrifice of the Lord of Gods. After all that has been said to the contrary, I must think that the *Divine regard of sacrifice* is strongly intimated in this point.

i Dead

tained witness, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts; and by it he being dead, yet speaketh,

by means of which he obtained a testimony that he was righteous; God, by the visible tokens of his favour, bearing witness to his gifts, which he presented on the altar; and by it he being dead, yet speaketh^f; and recommends to us in all ages that regard to the great atonement, which he expressed by bringing an animal sacrifice, while Cain contented himself with the vegetable products of the ground. And though Abel became the early victim of Cain's rage, yet that circumstance, in conjunction with the declaration he received of the Divine acceptance and favour, is very instructive, in that it affords so powerful an evidence of a future state.

SECT.
xvi.

Heb.
XI. 4.

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him; for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

By faith the celebrated patriarch Enoch was, 5 in a miraculous manner, translated from among men; so that he should not see death; and he was not found^g any longer among the inhabitants of this lower world, because God had translated him to the celestial regions, in a manner before altogether unexampled, nor ever since equalled among mortals, but in the single instance of Elijah. And God thus translated him, not only because he had a regard for his character, but because he would by such an interposition, give a visible and very important lesson to others, to seek and secure his favour by the exercise of such a disposition. For before his translation, he obtained witness that he pleased God: preceding tokens were given of God's favourable regards to him; and that character is expressed by the sacred historian when it is said, (Gen. v. 24,) that Enoch walked with God: that is, he maintained a constant regard to him, and received the indication of his favour; so that there subsisted a holy intercourse and friendship between God and Enoch. But without a sincere faith, 6 as the great principle of action [*it is*] absolutely impossible to please [him;] for he who approacheth to God, and pretends to walk with him^h, must,

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh

^f Dead, yet speaketh.] Some would render it, And for this they say he died, that is, there is a tradition that he was massacred by Cain, in a dispute about the recompense of a future life, which faith proposes. Saurin's Sermons, Vol. IX. page 54. I rather think it refers to the testimony borne, as it were, to a future state by his story, as he was so excellent a person, and visibly approved by God, yet left to suffer by the cruelty of his wicked brother. Some

would render *καταλειπται*, he is spoken of to this day, as a person of most eminent piety and goodness.

^g Was not found.] The circumstances of his translation are not mentioned; but some have thought this intimates he was privately translated, and sought for, as Elijah afterwards was, 2 Kings ii. 17.

^h Approacheth to God, and pretends to walk with him.] Raphaelius hath shewn, that the original word *ωρροειχομενον* is applied

Gen.
xvi.
H
N. 2.

must, as the foundation of that intercourse, firmly believe that he exists, and [that] he is the rewarder of them that diligently seek him, and will bestow some peculiar and important blessings upon them. For where there are no such expectations as these, the soul cannot be animated to the labours and struggles of a truly religious life.

7 By faith the patriarch Noah, the second common ancestor of mankind, *being admonished by a Divine oracle, concerning things which were not yet seen*, and things of such a nature, that no one had ever seen or heard of any thing parallel to them, the dissolution of the world by a flood, and the destruction of all its inhabitants, believed and revered the awful threatening. And being impressed with a piety, and in that connection, most rational fear of the Divine judgments, with immense labour and cost, amidst all the insults of prophane and wicked men, prepared an ark, which God taught him to build for the salvation of his house and family, by means of which he condemned the unbelieving world, by bearing a public and convincing testimony against them. And thus became *one of the righteousness which is obtained by faith*; he was pronounced by God a righteous person, though his character was not absolutely free from imperfections, and became by divine grace entitled to the promise of eternal life, of which his temporal deliverance, though so amazing, was only an emblem.

8 By faith, that illustrious patriarch Abraham, from whom you justly esteem it a peculiar honour and happiness to be descended, *being called by the God of glory, who appeared to him, to go out, from his Father's house and native land, to a distant place, which God promised that*

cometh to God, must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place, which he should after receive

pled in the *Good Samaritan*, to *runing to God by prayer*; and it is used in chap. x. l. 22, and xii. 17, 18; for *approaching to God in any act of Divine worship*. He therefore justly observes, that it may here be taken in a larger sense, and refer to that steady course of piety and virtue, which is implied in *quoting God*, or walking with him, as in the former verse Enoch is said to have done; and which in the preceding clause, it is declared to be impossible for any one to do without faith.

i *Condemned the world*.] It is plain that here, as in many other places, a person is said to *condemn* those against whom he furnishes out matter of accusation, in which view Titus iii. 14, may be understood. See the note there.

k *One of the righteousness*.] Bishop Cumberland observes, that Noah is the first to whom this name of *righteous* man is applied in scripture. *Camb. Orig. Gen.* p. 418.

receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him

that he should afterwards receive for an inheritance, obeyed without disputing or murmuring, and went out, though he knew not at all whither he was going, or to which part of the world he was to steer his course, humbly resigning himself to Divine Providence to mark out his journey and his abode. *By faith, he sojourned all 9 the remainder of his days in the land of promise, when he knew it to be so, as [in] a strange country, without having any property there, unless it was that of a sepulchre towards the close of his life; dwelling in tents, easily moved from one place to another, some part of the time with Isaac and Jacob¹; who, in their succession, were heirs with him of the same promise, and depositaries of it, yet led the same kind of wandering life. But he passed from place to place 10 with cheerfulness; for he expected at length to be led on to a city, and that not such an one as he had left his native land, or such as he saw in Canaan, or even in Egypt, grand and populous as some of their buildings were; the object of his joyful and confident expectation, was that city, which alone hath firm and immoveable foundations, in comparison with which they were but like a frail tabernacle; a city, of which God [is] the builder and former, who drew and executed the grand plan, and laid out upon it all the richest ornaments, which might raise it to a magnificence, worthy of his own abode, and the inheritance of his beloved children.*

By faith, Sarai herself, notwithstanding some 11 mixture of suspicion, at length, as the worthy consort of such an husband, and worthy mother of such an offspring received strength for the conception of seed, and brought forth a child beyond the due time of age for such a purpose, when she was ninety years old, and in the course of nature absolutely incapable of being a mother; because she accounted him who had promised, to be the faithful and Almighty God, who could with infinite ease accomplish an event, which then seemed to be, and indeed was unparalleled. Therefore by this mighty principle 12 of faith in her, and in Abraham, there sprang even from

SECT.
xvi.

Heb.
xi. 8.

[1 With Isaac and Jacob.] It is plain from the account of the lives of these patriarchs, that Jacob was born fifteen years before Abraham died; and the oracle

given to Isaac before the birth of his children, would sufficiently intimate to Abraham that he was the heir of the promise.

SECT.
XVI.Heb.
XI. 12.

from one father, and he in this respect, as it were, dead, [a posterity] in multitude as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand upon the sea-shore innumerable*, according to that Divine promise, which carried its efficacy into so many remoter ages, and retains it even to this day.

- 13 Now all these worthy and excellent persons, of whom I have here been speaking, *died in faith, not having received the blessings exhibited in the promises: but having seen them afar off, and having been fully persuaded [of them,] and embraced [them] with the most cordial affection, and greatest ardour of mind, and having, through the whole course of their lives, confessed that they were strangers and sojourners on earth*: as we know that these holy patriarchs, and some of their most eminent descendants did, (Gen. XXIII.

4; XLVII. 9; 1 Chron. XXIX. 15; Psal. XXXIX. 12;

- 14 *cxix. 17, 24.*) For they who say such things as these, and speak of themselves as strangers and pilgrims, plainly express that they seek a country*, different from that in which they

- 15 dwell, when they use such language. And as for these excellent men, if indeed they had been mindful of that country from which they came out, they might save have had an opportunity of returning to it, for they were a considerable body, and they might have marched back without the probability of meeting with any resistance, and might have expected a subsistence among the relations of their family, who were themselves in a prosperous state, and often

- 16 expressed on proper occasions, their regard to these their illustrious kinsmen. Now therefore it appears, that they were desirous of a better, that is, an heavenly [country*]; for there was no earthly country, which they seem to have been pursuing. And indeed this is the great excellence of their character, to be governed by such

VIEWS

him as good as dead, as many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea-shore innumerable.

11 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

•

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15 And truly if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: where

in *In multitude as the stars of heaven*, &c.] Mr. Hulse observes here a great propriety in the apostle's saying, that they could be in multitude as the stars of heaven, and as the sand of the sea-shore innumerable, there being an impossibility of numbering the latter, whereas the former, since they have been reduced into constellations, have been numbered with a considerable degree of exactness. See Hallet in loc. where he endeavours to account, consistently with this observation, for Psal. cxlviii. 4, *He telleth the number of the stars*,

and calleth them all by their names, as if this were the peculiar prerogative of God.

11 *Seek a country* [scilicet, &c.] The original word is very emphatical; it signifies, as it were, a *new country*, or a country in which their former dwell, and is opposed to that in which they were *strangers* and *pilgrims*.

16 *Better country, that is, an heavenly*] The argument, according to the turn I have given it, is much the same with that which our Lord argues, Mat. xxiii. 12,

wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God : for he hath prepared for them a city.

views ; therefore God determined to bestow this happy land upon them, and he is not ashamed to be called their God, in such a peculiar manner, as he has assumed the title, because he hath prepared them such a city as they sought ; whereas if he had done nothing more for them than he did here upon earth, it would have been beneath his dignity to have professed that relation ; as the title naturally imports something great and excellent, far beyond what these patriarchs received, and indeed what any can possibly receive in this mortal and transitory life.

SECT.
XVI.

Heb.
XI. 16.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET the many glorious examples of faith, which are here set before us, animate our souls to imitation, and excite in us a generous desire of acting upon that noble and sublime principle, without which it is impossible to please God. And O, may what we call our faith be not merely a speculative and ineffectual assent to the truth, even of the most weighty propositions ; but a firm persuasion of their certainty, and a deep conviction of their importance, that we also may obtain a good report.

May we believe in God, as the former and support of universal nature, as most assuredly existing, and as most bountifully rewarding all that seek him with sincerity and diligence. So shall our sacrifices be acceptable to him, as those of Abel were, while with him we look to that great sacrifice and atonement, of which his victim was the appointed representation. Like Enoch we shall then be animated to walk with God, and favoured with Divine intercourse and communications. And though we cannot expect a translation like his, which should exempt us from the common lot of mortality, we shall be secure of admission into the paradise of God above, and in due time shall ascend to it in our complete persons. We shall then, like Noah, find our safety in the midst of a dissolving world, and while sinners are condemned, be found the heirs of righteousness.

While we wait for this happiness, let us endeavour to approve ourselves the genuine children of Abraham, the father of the faithful. Ever attentive to the Divine call, may we in obedience to it, be willing to go forth, though we do not particularly know whither ; and with an intrepidity like his, may we even be ready to exchange worlds, at the command of God, ignorant as we are of what lies beyond the grave ; thinking it enough, that we know it is a land which God hath promised as the inheritance of his children. It is indeed a city that hath foundations, in comparison of which all the

the most magnificent and established building; of the children of men are but mean and moveable *huts*.

Ver. God boasts in the title of its *builder and maker*, having formed and fashioned it for the highest displays of his glory and his love; and in reference to it, *he is not ashamed to be called our God*; for by bestowing it upon us, he answers all which that high and glorious title might import. May we ever desire this as our *better country*, and live as its citizens ought; *confessing ourselves*, in reference to it, to be *pilgrims and strangers upon the earth*. And though we here receive not the accomplishment of the promises, may we keep our eyes on the *objects* they exhibit, how distant soever they may seem; and being *persuaded of them*, may we *embrace them*; embrace them even with our dying arms, and breathe out our prepared and willing spirits, in full assurance that we are going to receive and possess them.

SECT. XVII.

The Apostle further dilates upon examples and instances of faith in Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph and Moses. Heb. XI. 17—29.

HEB. XI. 17.

I HAVE already mentioned some glorious instances of the faith of Abraham, our illustrious progenitor; but I should be far from doing justice to my subject, if I were not to add another, the most celebrated of all. You will remember therefore, that it was *by faith* that Abraham was supported, *when he was tried*, in that most severe instance, and at the Divine command *offered* his son, his only son, *Isaac*, whom he loved; *yet he who had received the promises*, which terminated not only in his seed, but in Isaac by name, *offered his only-begotten [son,]* in whom they so centered, that they must necessarily have failed if he had perished without any offspring. So that nothing seemed more difficult, on principles of common reason, than the reconciliation of the promise with the com-

mand. Even when he was destined to the altar, *concerning whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.* (Gen. xxi. 12.) yet his triumphant faith surmounted even such an obstacle, and it was as wise and rational as it was pious and heroic: *Reasoning within himself as he did, that God was able even to raise [him] from*

HEB. XI. 17.

By Isaac Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac; and he that had received the promises, offered up his only-begotten son.

17 Of whom it was said, In Isaac shall thy seed be called :

18 Reasoning that God was able to raise him

him up even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure.

from the dead^a; and consequently that he could have brought Isaac to life again, if he had really expired under the sacrificial knife, and been reduced to ashes; *from whence he received him even in a figure*^b. For as his production was a miracle, raising him, as it were, from the dead bodies of those who in a course of nature had no hope of children; so he was in another sense raised from the dead, when God gave him back to Abraham in the mount, in that awful transaction, in which was so significant a representation of Christ's death, (John viii. 56,) and of the method which God took for our redemption, in the sacrifice of his only-begotten Son.

sect.
xvii.

Heb.
Xi. 19.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

By faith, in a revelation which he then received from God, under that superior direction, Isaac when advanced in age, *blessed* his two children, Jacob and Esau^c, and uttered some remarkable oracles concerning things long to come, and of such a nature, that no human foresight could possibly reach them.

21 By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped leaning upon the top of his staff.

By faith, Jacob, when dying, *blessed each of the sons of Joseph*, in full dependence on the Divine promise of an inheritance in Canaan; appointing these his grand-children, tribes in Israel: foretelling the superiority of Ephraim the younger, to Manasseh the elder; and in thankful acknowledgment of that Divine goodness, which he had so long experienced, at the same time *worshipped*^d, bowing down upon the top of his staff, with which he supported himself as he sat on the side of his bed^e.

Again,

^a Reasoning that God was able even to raise him.] Archbishop Tillotson justly observes, that his faith was in this respect the more admirable, as, so far as we can learn, there never had been one single instance of a resurrection from the dead, in, or before, the days of Abraham.

^b In a figure: εν παραβολη.] Some think this implies, that his birth was a kind of resurrection from the dead. But the learned Dr. Warburton contends earnestly for it, that εν παραβολη intimates, that the whole transaction was parabolical or typical of the method God would take for the salvation of men. The learned Wolfius is of the same opinion, (Curæ Philolog. Vol. IV. p. 762.) and observes in support of it, that the Greek word παραβολη answers to the Hebrew לִשְׁלָשׁ, and is so used by the Seventy; and that the Hebrews are wont to say לִשְׁלָשׁ, in or by a parable or figure

when they would express a typical representation. He imagines this interpretation to be the more probable, because the Apostle hath put a mark of emphasis upon εν παραβολη, by prefixing και to it, even in a figure.

^c Blessed Jacob.] He was persuaded that God would one way or another make good his promises to them, though he could not certainly tell how, and was mistaken in the person.

^d Worshipped.] He thought it so great a privilege to be buried in the land of Canaan, that he bowed his head, in token of thankfulness for it; which was another demonstration of faith in God's promise. Gen. xlvii. 30, 31.

^e On the top of his staff, as he sat on the side of his bed.] In the passage referred to Gen. xlvii. 31. it is said according to our English version, Israel bowed himself upon

HEB.
xvii.

HEB.
xl, 22.

Again, it was *by faith* that Joseph, when dying, mentioned the departure of the children of Israel out of Egypt, as a fact which should certainly come to pass, though at a long distance of time; and when in token of his entire dependence upon it, and expectation of the inheritance they would then possess, he gave a charge concerning the carrying his bones with them, to be interred in the sepulchre of his fathers in Canaan.

- 23 The case of our illustrious law-giver will also furnish us with farther glorious examples of that, which was in him a kind of hereditary virtue; for it was *by faith* that Moses, when he was just born, was hidden three months by his pious parents, in their own house, because they saw [he was] a graceful child, who seemed by his aspect to promise something uncommon. And they therefore determined, if possible, to preserve his life, and feared not the commandment of the king, requiring all Israelitish parents, on pain of death, to give up their male-children, that they might be thrown into the river.

- 24 By faith this Moses, when he was grown up to maturity of age, and become great in the dignities and preferments of the Egyptian court, on full consideration of all that could be pleaded in favour of secular views, deliberately refused

22 By faith Joseph when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child, and they were not afraid of the King's commandment

24 By faith Moses when he was come to years, refused to be called

to

upon his lord's head. The *Apostle* says, he worshipped upon the top of his staff, and this agrees with the Greek and Syriac translation; and Wellins adds, that the *Savoy* always render the Hebrew word מַסָּכָה, a staff. Mr. Hallett, therefore, in a learned note upon this place, is of opinion that the Hebrew word signifies either a bed or a staff, and that the English translators too implicitly followed the *making Jews*, and supposed it here to signify a bed, in opposition to the authority of the *Savoy*, and of the *apostle*. The probability may possibly be reversed, if there be any occasion for it, by the circumstance mentioned in the *psalmist*, as it is not likely that Jacob was now a bed, (see Gen. xlvii, 29,) but he might very probably be sitting on the side of it. His leaning in the top of his staff shows that he was very old and feeble, and this circumstance, with Mr. Hallett, is very pertinently mentioned by the *apostle*, to intimate that feeble as he was, he would worship God in the best manner he was able.

[Grown up.] Some would more literally render it, grown stout; that is, a great man in power and dignity. But the reason I have preferred is justified by Eusebius's scholium, and by the learned *Bos*, who, in support of it, cites a remarkable passage from *Homor*, (*Jerem. lxxviii*, p. 242,) and it appears by the account of *Stephen*, Acts vi, 38, that Moses was now forty years old. I have given a list of both interpretations in the *margin*. Some are of opinion, that this passage refers to the story which *Josephus* tells us, of his trampling on the crown when a boy; and that it is as if the *apostle* had said, "He did not do it as a proud action, and when he understood not the value of the crown, but when he knew all the worth it could be supposed to have." See *Tellur's* *Hebr.*, Vol. II, p. 24.—If *Josephus*' account be right, Pharaoh's daughter had no son of her own, and adopted him, with some view to make him successor to the crown; but I do not apprehend the Jews of Egypt would have permitted that, as he was of foreign birth.

& Reproach

called the son of Pharaoh's daughter ;

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season ;

26 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not tearing the wrath of the king ; for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.

to be any longer called, as he had before been, the son of Pharaoh's daughter, but boldly professed himself an Israelite, and interposed to vindicate his brethren from their oppression ; Chusing much rather to partake with the people of God in their affliction, than to enjoy the temporary and transient pleasures of sin, which he might have expected, had he continued in that magnificent, but corrupt court : Esteeming the reproach of Christ^g, the infamy that he might meet with in acknowledging himself one of the Israelites whom Christ had been pleased to take under his special protection, and whom God had acknowledged for his anointed people, greater riches than all the treasures in Egypt, though so opulent a kingdom : for he directed his regards to the recompense of reward^h, which he expected to receive in the invisible and eternal world, and to possess, when princes should have quitted their thrones, and all the pride of monarchs be laid low. It was also by faith, that he left Egypt in that resolute and heroic manner ; not fearing the wrath of the kingⁱ, when he charged him on pain of death to see his face no more ; but before he went, boldly predicted the destruction of the first-born, which was to follow all the dreadful judgments already executed : for he was inwardly strengthened to this dignity and steadiness of conduct, as seeing him who is the great invisible Being, ever present to the eye of the believing mind, and whose presence and friendship is of such infinite importance, that he who fixes his regards on him, will never

SECT.
xvii.

Heb.
XI. 24.
25

^g Reproach of Christ.] There are some who understand this of the reproach of Israel, God's anointed people, and so would render it, the reproach of the anointed ; but I rather apprehend, considering the sense in which this name is every where else used by the apostle, that it refers to the relation in which Christ stood to Israel, as his peculiar people, so that reproach borne on their account was borne for him. (Compare 1 Cor. x. 9 ;) and Mr. Fleming, (*Christology*, Vol. 1. p. 169,) urges this as an argument for Christ's existence before the time of Moses. Du Mont supposes that the Israelites expected deliverance by the Messiah, and that the Egyptians insulted them on that account ; and it is certain, reproach borne on the account of Christ, may be, and is called the reproach of Christ. Compare Heb. xiii. 12 ; Du

Mont's Serm. p. 151—155. And for the illustration of this he quotes, and by this key explains, Psal. lxxxix. 50—52.

^h Recompense of reward.] That reward could not be temporal grandeur, which he might have had with much greater security and advantage in Egypt ; nor the possession of Canaan, which he never saw. It must therefore be the eternal inheritance which was discovered to him by the principle here so largely described and recommended :

ⁱ Fearing the wrath of the king.] As it is so expressly said, (Exod. ii. 14, 15,) that when he first quitted Egypt, and went to sojourn in Midian, he was afraid ; I apprehend the assertion of the apostle, that he did not fear the wrath of the king, refers to the instance mentioned in the paraphrase.

k By

never by any consideration, be influenced to offend him, nor much impressed with the fear of any thing that would tempt him to do this.

VI. 25 *By faith* that God would assuredly send his angel on the vindictive design foretold, and spare the houses properly distinguished, *he celebrated the passover, and the pouring forth the blood* of the lamb, which he sprinkled on the lintels, and the posts of the doors, as the mark of commending those who dwelt under such roofs to the Divine protection; *that he who destroyed the first-born might not touch them*, under the security of this peaceful sign: an emblem of the safety we expect by means of the blood of Jesus, the true and great passover, who is sacrificed for us.

Again, *by faith*, operating in Moses, and in its degree in them likewise, *they passed over the Red sea*, so lately, as if they had matched on dry land, while its waters by the Divine command divided, and left the channel bare to them, so that they completed their march through it, and arrived safely on the opposite shore; *which the Egyptians making an insolent and rash attempt to do, were, all drowned*, and sunk like lead in the mighty waters, which returned upon them with irresistible violence.

25 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born should touch them.

26 By faith they passed through the Red Sea, as by dry land; when the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

IMPROVEMENT.

Let these glorious instances of *faith* be preserved in our memory, and have their due influence upon our hearts. When God Ver. calls us to resign our dearest comforts, let us think of that heroic
17 act of *faith* by which *Abraham offered up Isaac*, and seemed in him to sacrifice all the promises, as well as his son. Yet he therein
19 acted a part the most strictly *rational*, as rightly concluding, that God could with infinite ease call him *back to life* again, and make a person, who had poured forth all his blood on the altar,
20 and been reduced to ashes there, *the father of many nations*. Let
21 dying parents commit their children to the care of the ever-living God, like *Jacob*, and *worship him who hath fed them all their*

18 *By faith* that God would assuredly send his angel on the vindictive design foretold, and spare the houses properly distinguished, *he celebrated the passover, and the pouring forth the blood* of the lamb, which he sprinkled on the lintels, and the posts of the doors, as the mark of commending those who dwelt under such roofs to the Divine protection; *that he who destroyed the first-born might not touch them*, under the security of this peaceful sign: an emblem of the safety we expect by means of the blood of Jesus, the true and great passover, who is sacrificed for us.

persons afterwards mentioned by name, as instances of *faith*, were, on the whole, in such a state of acquiescence with him as to be entitled to God's *impartial favour*. *Supra* 1 Sam. Vol. IX. p. 87.

their lives long, and who will never forsake those that put their trust in him. Let those who are called to glorify God, by opposing the unjust commands of great and powerful men, remember the *parents of Moses*, and remember their illustrious *child*. Does he now repent that wonderful *choice* that he made at an *adult* age? does he now wish that he had been called *the Son of Pharaoh's daughter*, rather than the *servant of God, faithful in all his house*? does he wish that he had secured the *treasures of Egypt*, and the *temporary pleasures of sin*, and declined that *reproach of Christ*, which has ended in eternal glory? Our hearts, our consciences will soon answer; let us then, like him, *have respect unto the recompence of reward*. Let us endeavour more frequently to direct our regards to God, and live *as seeing him who is invisible*. SECT. XVII.

And while our faith is thus viewing him, let us look with pleasure to the *blood of sprinkling*, which places us under his protection; which introduces us to his favour; which secures us from the *destroying angel*. He will lead us on safely to his *heavenly Canaan*, if we fall not by *unbelief*. He will open our passage through *seas of difficulty*; he will send down upon us every suitable supply, and would much sooner command the *skies* to rain down *bread*, or the *flinty rock* to melt into *streams of water*, than desert his people in the *wilderness*. Let all his wonders of power and of love to *Israel* of old, animate our faith; and let them all quicken our obedience; and under a sense of our own weakness and the importance of this leading, this princely grace, let us daily pray, *Lord, increase our faith*.

SECT. XVIII.

The Apostle concludes his discourse on faith, by hinting at many other glorious instances of it, and besides several recorded in scripture, refers also to the case of those who suffered under the persecution of Antiochus Epiphanes. Heb. XI. 30.—XII. 2.

HEBREWS XI. 30.

BY faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed

HEBREWS XI. 30.

I HAVE mentioned the faith which our forefathers exercised on the miraculous power of God to lead them out of Egypt, and through the Red-sea; and I must farther observe, that they continued under the influence of the same principle when they came into the promised land: for it was *by faith* in those who marched round the strongly fortified walls of Jericho, following the ark, and who at the appointed signal blew the trumpets of rams-horns and shouted, that, SECT. XVIII.

SECT. XVIII.

Heb. XI. 30

contrary

2807.

XVIII.

H. b.

XL 30.

contrary to all sensible appearance of possibility they *fell down*, smitten by the hand of God, without any human force, *having been only surrounded seven days* in solemn silence, according to the Divine command, how absurd a spectacle saever their procession might appear to the besieged. It was *by faith*, and in consequence of it, that *Rahab the harlot did not perish with the infidels* of that city among whom she dwelt; *having received the spies* hospitably and dismissed them *in peace*, when an alarm was taken by her fellow-citizens, and they searched for them to destroy them. She therefore hazarded her own life to preserve theirs, believing them to be the servants of the Almighty Jehovah, and assuring herself that he could protect her in her efforts for their security, and could make them the means of delivering her and her family, which was accordingly the case.

32 *And what shall I say farther upon this copious, this inexhaustible subject? for the time would fail me* if I should attempt to discourse at large concerning Gideon, who with so small a band of men cut off so many thousands of the Midianites; and Barak, who freed Israel from the oppression of Jabin, and routed Sisera his general; and Samson, who slew so many thousands of the Philistines with the jaw-bone of an ass; and performed so many other astonishing achievements. I might also speak of the victory of Jephtha over the Ammonites, and the heroic acts of David, in his combat with Goliath, and his other frequent encounters with the enemies of God, and his Israel; and even of Samuel, who though his character seemed more pacific, as a prophet and a judge, yet led on the armies of the Lord on a remarkable occasion, to an illustrious victory. I might also enlarge on the celebrated histories of Elijah, Elisha, and others of the prophets, particularly Daniel, and the three young worthies, whose magnanimous history he hath particularly recorded. I will not dwell on the history of those heroes who have transmitted their names to our age, and shall transmit them to all who are to come, with such distinguished honour; but shall content myself with observing, that it was by the exercise of this great principle, that they were raised to those sublime degrees of reputation and glory. It was *by faith* that some of them, after

passed about seven days.

34 My faith the harlot Rahab possessed not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

32 And what shall I then say? For the time would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephtha; of David also, and Solomon; and of the prophets.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms.

many

doms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

many a painful struggle, subdued the kingdoms of those princes which had oppressed God's Israel ; others of them wrought righteousness^a, and carried their obedience to God, and their zeal for his law to the most extraordinary degrees ; others of them obtained promises of the most unexpected events in their favour, which were exactly and circumstantially performed ; others stopped the mouths of lions, which came roaring against them, as if they would have devoured them in a moment, or into whose dens they were thrown.

SECT.
xviii.

Heb.
XI. 33.

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again : and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might

Nay as to some of them we are expressly said, 34 that they quenched the violence of the fire, when they were actually thrown into the furnace ; others of them escaped the edge of the sword^b, when it was just lifted up to destroy them ; they were strengthened in the midst of weakness^c, and many of them became so valiant in battle, that they repelled the armies of the aliens, or foreign enemies, when they encamped against them. There are also recorded in the prophetic writings 35 other instances, in which women received their dead [children] by a resurrection from the dead ; which till these examples, had never been known or heard of. (Compare 1 Kings xvii. 22, 23 ; 2 Kings iv. 36, 37.) And the credible records of succeeding ages inform us of the triumphs of faith in a still more glorious degree : in which several others, and particularly seven children, and one pious and holy mother, were tortured^d in the most inhuman manner, to compel them to renounce their religion, and commit idolatry ; but endured all with invincible fortitude, not accepting deliverance^e when it was offered them

a Wrought righteousness.] Some have interpreted this, not only of their leading lives exemplary for holiness, but administering justice to others. But I do not know that the phrase has ever that signification.

b Edge of the sword.] Probably this may refer to the deliverance of David from the sword of Saul, and of Elijah, and Micaiah, from that of Ahab.

c Strengthened in weakness.] Some refer this to their being recovered from sickness, by faith and prayer, as Hezekiah, Job, and David were.

d Were tortured.] The original word signifies a peculiar sort of torture, which was called that of the tympanum, or drum

when they were extended in the most violent manner, and then beaten with clubs, which must give exquisite pain, when all the parts were on such a stretch. See Wolfius Curæ Philolog. in loc.

e Not accepting deliverance.] Probably the apostle here refers to 2 Mac. viii. 11, 14, 23, 29, when there is an evident reference to a resurrection, which plainly shews it then to have been assuredly believed among the Jews. Dr. Scott thinks it was revealed to them by Daniel and Ezekiel, in order to prepare them for those severe trials which they were afterwards to undergo for the sake of their religion. Scott's Christian Life, Vol. V. p. 203. But it may be justly debated, how far the passages

sages

sec.
xviii.

II. 2.
21. 25.

them, nor even riches and preferments added to the proposal, *that they might obtain a better resurrection*¹ than their persecutors could offer them, when they seemed more than half dead; even a resurrection to the enjoyment of an everlasting kingdom in the heavens. And others, in the same glorious cause, received the trial of cruel mockings and scourgings; but neither the derision, nor the pain, could prevail upon them to desert their profession. For, they proved also the almost force of bonds and imprisonment, in which many of them languished for tedious months and years, under all the ill-usage which commonly attends such confinements.

- 37 And others were brought out from their bonds to the most infamous and painful executions; and they were some of them stoned, and others *seven aunder*², they were tempted³ by unheard-of cruelties on the one hand, as well as the offers of immediate deliverance on the other, and at length slain with the sword, they wandered about clothed in the meanest manner, and sometimes, when their former habits were worn out,

would obtain a better resurrection.

35 And others had trial of cruel mockings, and scourgings; yea, moreover, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were seven aunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in skins,

only,

now referred to could afford some proof of a resurrection. It is observable, that *Christus*, being probably unknown to some of those whom the apostles had so much distressed, expressed this circumstance, and some took it almost as a mark of a Jewish sect.

[*2^d Verse continued.*] Dr. Owen understands this, *we* the apostles had meant, *the death* mentioned, that is, the resurrection, which is more than the martyr's loss of the spirit. And so it is observed by Jacobus Cappelus, that most probably, in that sense, the words would have been profited by some hearers. The apostles of Christ saw the *Gladius*, II. that the resurrection, as he has understood it, appeared in a person, *some* of them formerly, and this word I have adopted in the preceding translation. It seems a respect to the deliverance which they would not accept, mentioned in the words immediately preceding. Mr. Haller is convinced also, that the opposition lies between the resurrection to *death* (2^d), which these martyrs expected, and the resurrection of the dead *children* to life in the world, mentioned in the next clause of the verse.

[*3^d Verse.*] *Incensum* was translated, *2^d xx. 1.* and some think, *scourged too*, chap. xxviii. 12. But *scourging* was so

frequent a punishment, both slave, and before a capital execution, (compare Dr. Lush's *Commentary* of the *Coepher*, Vol. I. Book I. chap. viii. §. 15, and Dr. Smith on *Matthew* xxviii. 11.) that it is probable it was inflicted on many other poor persons in absent of their religion.

[*A 3^d member.*] Dr. *Frederick*, (Comment. Vol. I. p. 175) and many others, suppose the apostles might then refer to the tradition among the Jews, and the prophet Isaiah was once visible at the conversion of *Martha*. *Calixtus* understands by this expression, *being seen in prison*, as it were, *under a stinking instrument*, consisting of wooden poles, full of sharp iron teeth like a *harrow*. Compare *Mat. xlii. xxviii. 27* with *Mat. xlii. 25*. *Calixtus* *Deo*, Vol. II. No. 5, p. 165, 166.

[*4th member.*] Some suppose a mistake in the reading, and that it should be, *scourged*. They were *scourged* with a rod that was, or *beat* alive, which undoubtedly would give a still stronger sense. The learned *Alford*, (*Notes*, *John*, p. 426,) supposes, that instead of *scourged*, the apostle wrote *scourged*, which expressed their being *scourged* to death by some or *beat* down, and down right about the body; or at least their being *scourged*.

skins, and goat skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented;

only in sheep-skins^k and in goat skins, being destitute of the common accommodations of life, afflicted and even tormented, sometimes by the fury of their enemies, and at other times by the rigour of the seasons. And though these were persons of the most amiable and venerable characters, of whom the world was not worthy that they should inhabit it; they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens, and holes of the earth, that they might hide themselves, if possible, from the rage of their persecutors, who often, like dogs hunting for their prey, followed them even into these last retreats, solitary and inhospitable as they were.

SECT.
xviii.

Heb.
XI. 37.

38

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

And all these heroes in different ages, were 39 supported under their respective trials, severe and extreme as they were, by the exercise of a firm and lively faith, in the fidelity of God, and the invisible rewards and glories of a future state; and it was by this, that having obtained a good report, they persevered to the end. But they did not receive the full accomplishment of the promise made to their fathers, nor have they yet arrived to the full and complete enjoyment of that glory which faith taught them to expect: God having according to the counsels of his infinite wisdom, provided something still better for us, in the gospel-revelation; that so the beauty of his conduct and administration might be so much the more apparent; and that they, without us, might not be made perfect^l; but all might end with the greatest dignity and propriety, in bringing all his children together, to the full consummation of their hopes in Christ Jesus his Son, at the time of his final and triumphant appearance.

In

^k Sheep-skins: *μυδωλαί*;] The Seventy, in the case of Elijah, translate the word which we render mantle, by *μυδωλόν*, a sheep skin. That sheep-skins and goat-skins, or at least the skins of some animals, were frequently worn by the ancient prophets, seems to be intimated, Zech. xiii. 4.

^l That they, without us, might not be made perfect.] It is debated, whether this refers to the most perfect state of the church on earth, and so expresses a decorum in the conduct of providence, in gradually improving the church of God; or to the glory of the future state. I have given in

the paraphrase what seemed to me the most noble and important sense.—The learned Wolfius, *Cwæ Philolog.* Vol. IV. p. 774,) mentions with approbation the exposition of Alexander More, to this effect, that the promise which these worthies did not receive, related to the first personal appearance of the Messiah: that the better thing which God hath provided for us, is the promise of Christ's second appearance, that they might then be made perfect, but not without us, though we have received the accomplishment of the first promise without them.

m Bring

endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right-hand of the throne of God.

He indeed is the most illustrious example of all, *who for the joy and glory that was set before him*^q, in the view of honouring his heavenly Father, and procuring the salvation of men, and so passing to such exalted honour and felicity, *endured all the agonies of the cross despising the shame* of so ignominious an execution. And accordingly, now the infamy, the pain, and the humiliation are ceased for ever, he is ascended to that world, where alone such consummate goodness could receive its proper reward. And there he *is set down* in conspicuous and peerless majesty, *at the right hand of the glorious and exalted throne of God*, there to live and reign in immortal felicity and dignity. And among all the illustrious examples of faith, by whom you may be animated and edified, there is none comparable to him.

SPCT.
xviii.

Heb.
XII. 2.

IMPROVEMENT.

Is it possible we should read these animated periods without feeling our hearts glow with a sacred ambition of acting as becomes those who have heard such tidings and beheld such examples? Ver. 31, 32
If the triumphs of faith in *Rahab*, and *Gideon*, and *Barak*, and *Samson*, and *Jephtha*, cannot move us, nor even those of *David*, and of *Samuel*; if we are insensible of the martial prowess which they exerted in firm dependance on *the Lord God of hosts*; let us behold other combats, in which they who seemed *weaker*; became yet more gloriously victorious. Let us remember, not only *the mouths of lions stopped*, but *the violence of fire quenched*, when 33
the faithful servants of God were thrown into it. Yea, let us behold those who endured its unquenched violence, and turned all 34
those painful and terrible sensations into an heroic occasion of expressing the superior ardour of their *love to God*, and the steadfastness of *their faith* in him. Let us remember those *youths*, and 35
children, and *women*, among the rest of these worthies, indeed among the worthiest of them, who were *tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection*.

In

^q For the joy that was set before him.] Some would render it, *Instead of the joy that lay before him*, meaning the honour and happiness he might have enjoyed in the present world. But *προκειμενης* has so evident a reference to verse 1. that I cannot by any means acquiesce in that interpretation. Besides, the word *αυτη* may well signify, *set against that joy*, and then

the meaning will be, that he despised the shame of the cross, in comparison of the joy set before him. Nor can we imagine any love more distinterested than that, which should make his recovering sinners to God and happiness, the great joy of his heart, and in subserviency to the divine glory, the grand motive of his actions and sufferings.

SECT.
XVIII.

In vain were all the terrors of persecuting rage and cruelty opposed to these triumphs. They submitted to imprisonment, and Ver. banishment, how dear soever liberty and their native country might be; they quitted their commodious habitations for rocks, and caves, and their comfortable apparel for sheep skins and goat-skins. And when deserts and dens could no longer shelter their wretchedness, but they were seized by their blood-thirsty enemies, they beheld, and endured, undismayed, the most horrid instruments of death. When the piercing sword entered their vitals, when overwhelming stones dashed them in pieces, when the torturing saw was tearing out their very entrails, there was a principle within superior to all these, which nothing could pierce, which nothing could rend away, which nothing could overwhelm. God hath done an honour to our nature in raising up such illustrious persons, of whom the world was not worthy, and whose distinguished worth could never have been manifested in the eyes of their fellow-creatures, had it not been called out to such rigorous trials. Well might they rejoice on any terms in their dismissal from a state of existence, so far beneath the elevation of their views. And though their names may be perished from among men, and the distinct history of each, lost in the crowds of countless multitudes, yet are they all in remembrance before God; and the death of each of his saints, in such circumstances, peculiarly precious in his sight. They are now bathing in those rivers of delight, which flow through the celestial paradise, and waiting the full consummation of their hope in that better resurrection, in the views of which they suffered so bravely. In the mean time, they look down, as it were, from the battlements of heaven upon our combats, upon our race. O, let them not see us basely shrinking back, or loitering! Let us lay aside every weight; let us, especially, guard against the sin which most easily besets us. And to establish all our fortitude, and to awaken all our ardour, let us look to an object brighter and nobler than all these, even to the Son of God, the Sun of righteousness, shining in high pre-eminence above all this cloud, and as it were gilding it by the reflection of his effulgent rays. Let us look to Jesus, who leads us on; to Jesus, who will complete the triumph of our faith, and set the crown on the head of every one who overcometh. Let us daily think, what agony, what ignominy, he endured for us; and let every consideration of noble ambition, of duty, and of gratitude, fire our souls, and add wings to our zeal: so shall we at length share in his joy, and sit down victorious with him on his throne, as he hath also overcome, and is set down with the Father on his throne.

Chap.
XV.

SECT

SECT. XIX.

The Apostle animates the believing Hebrews to bear and improve the afflictions to which they were exposed, and to exert themselves vigorously to promote the united interests of peace and holiness.
 Heb. XII. 3—14.

HEBREWS XII. 3.

FOR consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied, and faint in your minds.

⁴ Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

⁵ And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

⁶ For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth,

HEBREWS XII. 3.

IN order to encourage you, my dear brethren, in your Christian course, I have directed you, and I must again direct you, to the Lord Jesus Christ; for what can be more important than to consider him^a, who with patient fortitude, endured such obstinate and perverse contradiction of ungrateful sinners against himself. Think how great and illustrious a Person he was, and what severe things he suffered, that you may not grow weary in your Christian course, nor faint in your minds, when called to share in some degree of his trials. And indeed you will be in-⁴ excusable if you should desert his cause, on account of any such trials as you have yet endured; for you have not as yet undergone the severest proofs of your integrity, nor resisted unto blood, striving against sin,^b as he did, who made his life a sacrifice to duty. And ye seem to⁵ have forgotten the exhortation^c, of the word of God, which speaketh to you, as to his sons, (Prov. iii. 11, 12,) saying, My son, despise not the chastening of the Lord, as if it were a small matter; nor faint and sink, when thou art rebuked by him; but avoid the extremes of proud insensibility, and entire dejection. For whom⁶ the Lord loveth, he correcteth, and scourgeth, with seeming severity, every son whom he re-
 ceiveth,

SECT.
XIX.Heb.
XII. 3.

^a Consider him: *αναλογισασθε.*] The original word is very emphatical; and as Erasmus Schmidius observes, is a metaphor taken from arithmetical and geometrical proportions. So that it signifies the great accuracy and exactness with which they should consider the Author and Finisher of their faith, and especially the analogy between his case and their own.

^b Resisted unto blood. It has been justly observed by several commentators that there are many agonistical terms in this context. In the phrase before us

there seems to be an allusion to the pugiles or boxers, who fought erect, with their hands stretched out, and were often besmeared with blood. Mr. Saurin just observes, in his beautiful illustration of this text, (*Serm.* ix. p. 90,) that sometimes men were killed by the blows of the cestus. See also Dr. Whitby in loc.

^c Ye have forgotten the exhortation.] Beza, and some others, choose to read this clause with an interrogation, Have ye forgotten the exhortation?

^d Whom

SECT.
XIX.Heb.
XII. 7.

ceiveth^d, to peculiar favour. It is evident therefore, that *if ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as wise and affectionate parents deal with their beloved sons; for what son is there whom the father chasteneth not*, more or less?

There are scarce any children, who do not sometimes need correction, and no wise and good parent, who will always forbear it. But *if ye are without chastisement, of which all the genuine children are partakers, then are ye treated as men often treat bastards* about whose education they are often careless as being ashamed of them, and looking upon them as a scandal to their families; and not as they treat their legitimate sons, whom they intend to make their heirs, and concerning whom they are solicitous, that they may be happy themselves, and a credit and comfort to the family they stand related to; which a child left to himself, without correction, is by no means like to prove.

9 Now *if^e when we had fathers of our flesh, who corrected us, we gave them reverence*, and submitted patiently and quietly to their discipline, *shall we not much rather, on the justest principles of filial duty, be in subjection to the great Father of our spirits*, by whom that noble part of our nature was produced, in the production of which our earthly parents had no share? And indeed we know this to be necessary, if we desire

teneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence; shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of Spirits, and live?

d *When the Lord loveth, he correcteth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.*] There seems to be a beautiful gradation in these words. To receive, signifies here to have a particular regard for. Compare Isa. xliii. 3 to the Sonship. The passage is quoted from Prov. iii. 11, 12, and the last clause of the apostle's citation, which is, *that we might give him whom he receiveth*, is by our English version, and the old Latin, thus rendered, *Etiam si pater dei non sit, quem he despiciunt.* And this is agreeable to the modern pointing. But without any change in the Hebrew letters, the clause may be translated as it is by the *Septuagint*, and some other ancient version. See Mr. Hallet's note.

e *Bastards.*] In those dissolute ages there were among the heathen many base-born children. And it is highly probable, that as for such, their education, (like that of Japhet, whose fatal error might perhaps be owing to it,) was much

neglected, so as to come almost into a proverb.

f *Now if*] Instead of *etiam*, the *Synodus tridentina* seems to have read *et*, but *if*. This reading is followed by Conciliabos; Beza expresses some apprehension of it. The learned Albert, and Epiphanius, consider the clause as a smart and animated interrogation, and produce various passages to show that this is the force of the Greek particle *etiam*.

g *When we had fathers of our flesh, we gave them reverence.*] It had indeed been more literally rendered, *We had fathers of our flesh, who corrected us, and we gave them reverence*; which some consider as a Hebraism, as if he had said, *We corrected us, that we might give them reverence.* But it seems much more natural to understand the particle, *etiam*, as connecting the two clauses. *We had fathers of our flesh, and we gave them reverence.* In which view the version I have given fully expresses the apostle's design.

h *And*

desire to *live*^h, since rebellion against him will be infinitely fatal, and expose us to a dreadful and capital punishment.

SECT.
XIX.

Heb.

XII. 10.

10 For they verily for a few days chastened us, after their own pleasure : but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

But not to insist on considerations of terror ; let us attend to those of a more ingenuous nature, and particularly those which arise from the reason of things, and a view of what will on the whole be most conducive to our own truest advantage. As for our earthly parents, *they indeed for a few days*ⁱ, while we were in a state of infancy and childhood, *corrected [us] as they thought good*, and there might sometimes be a mixture of weakness and arbitrary passion in their chastisements ; *but* we are sure this can never be the case with respect to our heavenly Father. O, far from that : if *he* take the rod into his hand, it is *for our advantage*, and *that we may be partakers of his holiness* ; which is indeed the greatest dignity, beauty, and glory of the rational nature, and what most immediately tends to the happiness of time and eternity. Now it is true, that *all chastening for the* 11 *present seemeth not to be [matter] of joy, but of grief* : it is painful to the flesh, and human nature would rather desire to be excused from it : *but afterwards it yieldeth the peaceful fruit of righteousness*^k, *to those that are in a suitable manner exercised therewith*^l. It produces and improves those virtues which afford peace and joy to the mind, and like a nobler crown than that which many endure so much to obtain, richly rewards the most strenuous labours, and most afflictive struggles.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous : nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth the peaceful fruit of righteousness, unto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the

Therefore rally your languid spirits, *lift up the* 12 *hands*

^h *And live.*] This awful, yet tender insinuation of the terrible consequences of rebellion against the *Father of spirits*, (in which there is an *allusion* to the *capital punishment* to be inflicted on a disobedient child, Deut. xxi. 18, &c) is very remarkable ; and an instance of the *apostle's* forcible manner of suggesting the most weighty thought, sometimes in an *oblique* manner, and in very few words. Compare Rom. xii. ult. 1 Tim. iv. 16. Tit. ii. 15. Phil. i. 29. Heb. xii. 28. And many passages to be found in all his writings.

ⁱ *For a few days.*] This is to be applied both to our *earthly* parents, and our *heavenly* Father, and it contains a beautiful and comfortable *intimation*, that this *whole* life, when compared with our *future* be-

ing, is but as *a few days* : indeed infinitely less than the days of *childhood* to those of the *longest* life of man upon earth.

^k *Peaceful fruit of righteousness.*] Possibly alluding to the *crowns of olive* given to the victor in the *Olympic games*, which was also an emblem of *peace*. The learned Bos would translate the word *εὐφροσύνη*, *pleasant, joyful*, it being usual to express *pleasure and happiness by peace* : *Wolfius* is of opinion, that the expression refers to that *peace with God which we obtain by faith*. See *Curæ Philolog.* Vol. IV. p. 783.

^l *Exercised therewith.*] Not only corrected, but *instructed* and *edified* ; setting themselves to search out the proper *lessons* which afflictive dispensations are intended to teach.

m *List*

CHAP.
XIX.

Heb.
XII. 15

hands that hang down, that they may exert themselves in this glorious combat, *and strengthen the feeble tattering armour*, that they may hold out to the end of this important race. *And by the proper exercise of discipline in your Christian societies, and by all the other offices of true and faithful friendship, make strait paths for your feet*. Regulate matters so, that the way of duty may be as obdurate and easy as possible, *that the vigorous, the lazie, and the decrepit, may not, by discouragements and temptations, be turned out of the way, or thrown down, but that every such feeble traveller in the way to Zion, may rather be healed, recovered from falls or weakness, and strengthened to a course of more strenuous and persevering piety.*

- 14 And while the jarring interests of this world so often occasion dissensions and contentions between men, and even between Christians, let it be your faithful and zealous care *to pursue peace with all men, even when it may seem to flee from you*. And at the same time remember, whatever the consequences may be, to cultivate universal *holiness* in all its branches; without which, how ready woever men may be to flatter themselves with vain expectations, *no man shall see the Lord*. For it is his unalterable decree, for ever to exclude those souls in which sin reigns, from that sight of him in the celestial world, for which their tempers and dispositions render them altogether unfit, even to a degree of utter incapacity.

(IMPERY 1741, p. 7.)

In what clearer words can those exhortations of the *apostle* be expressed? by what more powerful motives can they be enforced?

- 14 Behold, the whole of our duty comprehended in one word *to follow after peace and holiness*. Behold the most awful engagements suggested, that *no man*, whatever his profession, or hope,

OR

m Let us be humble, that have done. I The consequence of peace being to, that is, that we have shown that we have done, leads us to understand each of us should give to others. But this must be necessary consequence suggested once to each of us, with vigour and resolution. It is evident that this is a broken promise, by the following statement, made that public of you, but, which some un-

the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.

15 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed.

16 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.

derstand, ordering these things so that others might be directed and encouraged by their example. - Deldate gives it a stronger promise as if it had been said, By your voluntary and cheerful obedience, make the rules of the gospel room easy. I have in the foregoing endeavoured to unite both the views to ourselves and others, as it is certainly could not be intended as exclusive of the other.

or confidence may be, can possibly see the Lord without it ! What a solicitude should it awaken to cultivate holiness in ourselves, to promote it in others, and to remove every obstruction as much as possible. "Awaken our spirits, O Lord, by thy good Spirit, that the most languid hands, and feeble knees, may be strengthened and confirmed." And that they may be strengthened, let us look to our great Leader, to him who passed through so many years, 3 in the midst of the most violent opposition, the most perverse contradiction. Surely we might see enough to animate us to maintain the combat, even till we left the last drop of our blood in the place, when we strive against sin, against his enemies and ours, to deliver us from the power of which, he assumed flesh and blood, and died.

He, the best beloved Son, was distinguished by his Father's chastisement, though there was not the least degree of failing in him to deserve it. But the chastisement of our peace was upon him. And shall we who have merited to be chastised with scorpions, mourn at the rod ? Let this scripture be attentively reviewed, and laid up in our mind, to dispose us to the most exemplary patience under affliction ; and to guard against the opposite and 5 dangerous extremes, of despising Divine corrections, or fainting under them. Would we wish to be excused from the tokens of God's paternal love ? Would we wish to be neglected, as if we were bastards, rather than cultivated with the discipline of beloved children ? Were we submissive to our earthly parents, and shall we rebel against our Father in heaven ? Shall we not be in subjection to the Father of our spirits, and live ? May our 8 souls remember the unanswerable argument and the awful motive to this subjection. In what would opposition end, but in death ? and how unreasonable would that opposition be ? Is God in these later ages of the world become an arbitrary and tyrannical being, that his proceedings should now be suspected and censured ? Is he no longer concerned for the profit and advantage of his children ? or is it no longer desirable to be partakers of his holiness ? 10 of that holiness, which is to fit us to see and enjoy him for ever. Lord, should each of us say, I bless thee, that thou hast made me partaker of thy providential bounties, of thy gospel, of thy grace, in any degree : but Oh, my soul longs to be partaker of thine holiness, to bear thine image more completely, as the great glory and blessedness of my nature. For this therefore would I submit to thy corrections, though for the present ever so grievous, and wait those peaceable fruits of righteousness which will be so 11 rich an equivalent for all.

SECT.
xix.

SECT. XX.

The Apostle solemnly cautions them against despising the blessings of the gospel, and sacrificing them to any secular views, or animal gratifications; and enforces the caution by representing the incomparable excellence of those blessings, and the wonderful manner in which they were introduced; which even the introduction of the Jewish economy, glorious as that was, did by no means equal. Heb. XII. 15—23.

HEBREWS XII. 15.

NOTE.
XX.

Heb.
XII. 15.

- I** HAVE been earnestly exhorting you to cultivate holiness in your own hearts and lives; and I must farther press it upon you, that you endeavour to maintain a friendly and brotherly inspection over each other. *Look to it*, therefore, with the greatest attention and care, for yourselves and one another, *lest any one*, by apostasy from the Christian religion *fall short of the grace of God*, under the day of grace and dispensation of the gospel; *lest any root of bitterness*, and poison, *springing up* unheeded, *occasion trouble* to the society in general, *and by it*, before you are aware, *many be disturbed and defiled*, through the contagion of so bad an example: *Lest there [be,] for instance, any fornicator*, who should abuse the liberty of the gospel into an occasion of gratifying his fleshly lusts; or any other voluptuous and *profane person*^b, who should put an open contempt upon spiritual blessings, sacrificing them to the hope of some present indulgence; *as Esau, who for so mean a thing as one meal, gave away his birth-right*^c, even all the peculiar and religious honours, as well as revenues of his primogeniture.
- 17 *For ye know, that when afterwards he would gladly have inherited the blessing*, which was its most

HEBREWS XII. 15.

LOOKING diligently, lest any man fall of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;

16 Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right.

17 For ye know how that afterward when he

a *Root of bitterness and poison*] The word צמח, which is used, Deut. xxix. 18, properly signifies an *infernal* kind of plant, which by its influence grows other vegetables which grow near it.

b *Profane person*] Esau is called a *profane person* because as a *profane* he was along with the birth-right, there was a *profane* contempt of it in the infamous bargain here referred to. And as an immoderate eagerness in the gratification of

appetite, would naturally imply a contempt of spiritual and Divine blessings, to be sacrificed to such gratifications, it was properly expressed by *profaneness*.

c *For one meal gave away his birth-right.*] That seems the just rendering of *אֶת הַבְּרִיתָה הַזֶּה מָכַר עֵשָׂא בְּעוֹלָה אֶת הַבְּרִיתָה הַזֶּה*. Dr. Barrow, I think, would render it, *for one little eating he sold*: but that seemed not sufficiently grave.

d *He*

he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected; for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

most valuable attendant, *he was rejected*^d; for when he would have persuaded Isaac his father to have revoked and transferred that which he had just before pronounced upon his brother Jacob, *he found no room for repentance*^e; no possibility of changing his father's mind, by all his submissions and intreaties; *though he sought it earnestly*, and even *with tears*, yet still Isaac persisted in what he had done, and said, "I have blessed him. yea, and he shall be blessed." Gen. xxvii. 33.

SECT.

XX.

Heb.

XII. 17.

18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest,

The inestimable privileges and prerogatives, 18 which the gospel brings along with it, so superior to the Mosaic law, add great weight to these exhortations and cautions; *for ye*, who are proselyted to Christianity, *are not come to Sinai again, to the awful mountain which was the object of touch*,^f though the touch of it were prohibited on so high a penalty; *and to the burning fire* that surrounded it, *and the thick cloud, and darkness, and dreadful tempests*, which were the tremendous signals of God's descent upon it; *And to the sound of the trumpet*, 19 which at length waxed exceeding loud, Exod. xix. 18, 19, *and the voice of distinct words*, spoken with a sound which reached all the thousands of Israel, and with *which they who heard*, were so powerfully affected, that they *entreated the word might not be continued*, or carried any farther *to them*, but that the remainder of what the Lord had to say to them, might be delivered by the mediation of Moses;

For

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard, intreated, that the word should not be spoken to them any more;

which at length waxed exceeding loud, Exod. xix. 18, 19, *and the voice of distinct words*, spoken with a sound which reached all the thousands of Israel, and with *which they who heard*, were so powerfully affected, that they *entreated the word might not be continued*, or carried any farther *to them*, but that the remainder of what the Lord had to say to them, might be delivered by the mediation of Moses;

^d *He was rejected.*] From comparing the blessing of Jacob and Esau, Gen. xxvii. 28, 29, 39, 40, it will appear that there must be something *spiritual* in the blessing of Jacob; else Esau would not have been said to be *rejected*, considering what he obtained. See Dr. Goodwin's *Works*, Vol. I. p. 43.

^e *No room for repentance.*] We render it *no place for repentance*. The meaning of this undoubtedly is not, that he would have repented and could not: but that there was no room for his repentance, it would not be regarded; or, in other words, that his father's mind could not be changed.

^f *Mountain, which was the object of touch:* ορει Ἀνταφωμενω. Dr. Wall, in his note upon this place, declares himself

inclined, if he had the authority of any manuscript or version to support him, to read *α Ἀνταφωμενω*, which might not be touched, referring to the prohibition in Exod. xix. 13, and which the apostle mentions in the very next verse. But there is no necessity at all for this alteration. For it is not intimated by the expression, that the mountain might lawfully be touched, but that, as I have translated it, it was the *object of touch*, which indeed is implied in the very prohibition itself. And thus characterizing mount Sinai, it was his intention to intimate that it was an earthly mountain, not like mount Sion, the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem.

g Moses

18. For they were not able to endure that charge which was pronounced, so that there seemed little room for the caution given, and that with so much severity, that it was added, *If so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or struck through with a dart*, if it escape immediate death from the tempest and the lightning.

21 (Exod. xix. 12, 13.) *And the appearance was so dreadful [that] Moses himself, who was happy in such unparalleled degrees of the divine favour, and accustomed to converse with God in so intimate a manner, when urged by the people to act as their mediator in this awful transaction, said, Though I consent to undertake the charge, I do nevertheless exceedingly*

22 *fear and tremble. But ye, my dear brethren, are so happy as to be come to a dispensation, the reverse of all these terrors, even to the mild and gentle discoveries which God makes of his presence on Mount Sion; and to the holy and joyous solemnities which grace the city of the living God situated there, even the heavenly Jerusalem, his sacred and everlasting abode, and to myriads of surrounding angels, whom it is*

23 *impossible to number. Ye are come to the great general assembly, and church of the first-born, the priests of God, who are written in heaven, whose names are registered among the inhabitants of the place, the denizens of that city, and ministers of God's temple there.*

Above

20. For they could not endure that which was commanded. And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21. And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear, and quake.)

22. But ye are come unto Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels.

23. To the general assembly and church of the first-born which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect.

[*Moses said, &c.*] This circumstance is not recorded in the Hebrew language. Saint Jerome, that the people's emotion is by Divine revelation, and which reveals it into a condition, the truth of which is impossible to be denied. Mr. Calves, supposes Moses thinks that words is the name of the people.

[*Mount Sion.*] There seems to be throughout this whole period a reference to the manifestation that made of himself upon Mount Sion, as being holier than that upon Mount Sinai. And the heavenly assembly with which Christians are incorporated is considered as resembling the former, (that is Mount Sion,) in these circumstances, in which it was made possible those who have seen the city of God. In the temple, which stood there, altars were the ornaments of the walls, both in the house, and most holy place, to signify the presence of angels. There was a general assembly and congregation of the people, which were constituted

in instead of the first-born, of whose names, numbers were kept. There was God, as the supreme Judge of controversies, sitting forth his people. The last point, which is mentioned between God and Israel, (compare Luke i. 8—10,) and the blood of Abel was daily used.

[*The general assembly.*] See, p. 1. The learned Albert says, (Oliv. Furlong, p. 44,) that this word properly signifies a stated assembly upon some holy and festive season; particularly that it is applied to the commerce at the Olympic games. In which view, it expresses a very lively and elegant opposition to the case of the Levites, who were struck with a general terror, when they were censured before Mount Sion.

[*First-born.*] Saints are called the first-born, because, under the law, the first-born were particularly appropriated to God, and were of a double honour, and inheritance.

SECT.
XX.

Heb.
XII. 23.

Above all, it is to be remembered, that ye are come to God, the supreme Judge of all, from whose sentence there can be no appeal; and to the spirits of the righteous, whose guilt being entirely expiated, they are made perfect¹, and complete both in holiness and happiness, so far as may consist with the separate state, in which they are joyfully waiting the appearance of their Lord. To this society you are related, and ye shall shortly arrive at that world were it holds its supreme residence; since you have happily drawn near to Jesus, the Mediator of the new and better covenant, far exceeding that established with Israel of old by the mediation of Moses; and to the blood of sprinkling, which speaketh better things than the blood of Abel^m; crying for pardon, whereas his cried aloud for vengeance.

24 And to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.

And since this is the nature of the dispensation under which ye are now brought, let me solemnly charge it upon you, to see to it, that ye reject not him that speaketh to you, with these circumstances of endearment as well as solemnity^b for if they escaped not capital punishment who rejected him that, by Divine inspiration, gave forth oracles on earth,ⁿ how much more [shall] we not be able to escape^e if we turn away from him [that speaketh to us] from his throne in the

[Just men made perfect.] Justified before God, sanctified in their natures, and holy in their lives. Dr. Watts thinks the apostle here uses the expression just, or righteous, to intimate that he included the patriarchs, or Jewish saints; and that there was a peculiar propriety in doing it as he is writing to the Hebrews. *Watts's Death and Heaven*, p. 79.—Mr. Baxter urges this as a proof of the distinct existence of the soul in a separate state.

^m [Blood of] Abel.] By this some understand the blood of sacrifices in general called the blood of Abel, because he is the first of whose animal sacrifices we read: But there is a harshness in that expression not easily paralleled; I should therefore rather understand it of the blood of Abel himself, as referring to the gentle and gracious character of Christ, and the blessings, instead of vengeance, drawn down by his blood. There is certainly some transposition of what one would have thought the most natural order here; but it must be ascribed to the rapturous manner in which St. Paul conceived of these

things, and his fulness of matter when he touched upon them.

ⁿ Him that gave forth oracles on earth.] This is generally expounded of Moses. Mr. Pierce refers it to God; since it is said, his voice there shook the earth, which he saith, must be the voice of God. And the argument of the apostle, according to him, is taken from the different manner of speaking; his speaking on earth being accompanied with earthly signs, &c. whereas his speaking from heaven means speaking by Christ coming down from heaven, and declaring heavenly things, (John iii. 12, 31, 32: 1 Pet. i. 12,) more glorious than the law. (2 Cor. iii. 6,—11.) But it may be objected, that God spoke to them from heaven, when he gave the law at Mount Sinai, and that the word's, whose voice, may refer to the latter clause, Him that speaketh from heaven. Yet even on this supposition, he that speaketh from heaven, must, I think, be God, since it is said, that his voice shook the earth, verse 26.

LECT.
XX.

Heb.
XII. 25

the heavens? If all indignities done to Moses, a mortal man, when speaking by Divine authority, were so severely avenged, how much more those offered to the Lord Jesus, who condescended to come down from heaven, and lay aside the glories in which he there dwelt, to undertake the office of our Law-giver, and our Mediator?

- 26 And indeed the Lord Jesus Christ, by whom God has now spoken to us, is the Person that presided in that great solemnity of giving the law to which we have been referring. It was he *whose voice then shook the earth*, and whose spirit inspired the prophets: *but now he hath promised, saying by one of them, (Hag ii. 6,) Behold, yet once more I make so thorough a reformation, that I may be said to shake not the earth only, but also the heavens.* For it is in such language that he hath chosen to represent the change of the Mosaic economy for that of the
- 27 gospel. And it is evident, that *this* [expression] *yet once more*, or for the last time, not only signifies the removal and change of the things there said to be shaken, that is, of the ordinances of Moses, *as of things which were made and constituted only for a time*; but also strongly intimates, that he would introduce thereby a dispensation to be changed

26. Whose voice then shook the earth: but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

27. And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot

[Shake not the earth only, but also the heaven.] This shaking must refer to the alterations made in the constitution of religion, and be considered not as introductory to, but consequent upon, the coming of the Messiah. Many think this refers to the new heaven and earth, in the state of glory to be at length introduced. Critics explain it of the extraordinary phenomena in the beauty, and on the rock, at the birth, death, and resurrection of Christ, and motion of the Spirit, as in part an accomplishment of this prophecy. But there would be great room to debate, how far these were more extraordinary, than the questions on giving the Mosaic law. I therefore chuse to adhere to the other, as the most probable interpretation.

[Of the things made & constituted only for a time.] The word used is very elegant and expressive; it being, as the learned Bos observes, (*Prælect. Poëtica* p. 259.) a metaphor taken from ships at anchor, which though they are secured from being driven away, yet are in a fluctuating condition and tossed up and down, within a certain

compass, by the force of the wind and waves.

[As of things made and constituted only for a time.] But imagine that there is in the original a mistake of the translators, and for an instance, as of things which were made, he would read *as things made, as of things that were made and were not*, namely, by being made and unmade, and therefore wanting to be changed and repaired. And thus he supposes there is a continuation of the metaphor, which is mentioned in the text above. But conjectural emendations, supported by the authority of not a single manuscript, are not to be admitted, without evident necessity. Mr. Pearce justly remarks, that *again* is frequently used for *opponere* or *constituere*, as in chap. iii. v. Mark iii. 14, and many other places, and that *metonymy* being a principle of the poetic poetical sense, ought not to have been translated, *Things which were made*, as in our English version, but *Things which were as had been made, or constituted and appointed, for a time*; and I have rendered and explained it accordingly.

cannot be shaken may remain.

28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom, which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear:

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

ed no more, *that the things not to be shaken* any more, *might* be set up, and remain fixed on a perpetual basis; even that eternal kingdom of righteousness and peace, which God hath established by Christ Jesus his Son.

As therefore we have received such an unshaken kingdom, which shall never be removed to make way for any different establishment, and which gives the assurance of a reign in eternal glory, let us see to it, that we have grace whereby we may serve God, from whom we receive it, in an acceptable manner. As that grace is so freely offered to us, let us not be so wanting to ourselves as to fall short of it. And while we feel our hearts inspired with all that gratitude and confidence, which suits the genius of so merciful a dispensation, let them be attempered with a becoming mixture of reverence and pious fear; that we may not, by an unworthy abuse of the gospel, deprive ourselves of its invaluable blessings, and sin beyond all possibility of farther remedy. For though our God manifests himself in the beams of such mild majesty, he [is] still possessed of that tremendous power, which was so awfully displayed at mount Sinai, and will break forth as a consuming fire against all those that presumptuously violate his laws, and despise his gospel. (Deut. iv. 23, 24.)

SECT.
XX.

Heb.
XII. 27.

IMPROVEMENT.

THE glories of the eternal Jehovah are indeed inconceivable and immutable. Still he is possessed of all that awful majesty which he displayed on mount Sinai, and able in a moment, as a Ver. devouring fire, to consume the transgressors of his law. But though he kindly reminds us of this dreadful scene, he does not limit and confine our views to it: he appears to us, not on that mountain, which was involved in blackness, and darkness, in tempest and fire: but calls us to the milder glories of mount Sion. Yet even there might our consciousness of guilt cause us to fear. How should we appear in the city of the living God, or presume to mingle ourselves with the general assembly and church of the first-

[As grace is so freely offered.] This is strongly intimated in the words of the exhortation; else there could be no room for it. And this oblique intimation, in

which it is, as it were, taken for granted that we may certainly have grace, if we take proper methods for obtaining it, appears to me peculiarly affecting.

²² *first-born?* How should we hope for a place among *myriads of*
²³ *angels, and the perfected spirits of the just, in the presence of*
²⁴ *God, the Judge of all, if it were not for the refuge and support,*
which we find in Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant, and in
the blood of sprinkling, which speaketh better things than the blood
²⁶ *of Abel?* But being thus encouraged, let us draw near with
humble boldness, though with reverence and godly fear; while we
²⁸ *hear the voice that once shook the earth, speaking to us in accents of*
love, and promising a kingdom that cannot be moved. That king-
dom do we in some degree receive now, and we hope for the full
possession hereafter. It shall indeed be obtained, if we learn so to
value it, as in the expectation of it, to serve God acceptably, in the
improvement of that grace, which awaits us, to make us equal
to his service: only let us see to it, that we do not, by our own
criminal negligence, fail of that grace, that we do not profanely
¹⁵ *and foolishly follow the example of that wretched Esau, who stands*
recorded with so much infamy, as having for one sorry meal sold his
¹⁶ *birth-right, with all his sacred privileges. How many sons of*
Abraham, having followed him, have found, as he did, the impossi-
bility of retrieving so fatal a bargain, found, as he did, that there
¹⁷ *was no place of repentance, though they may have sought it carefully*
with tears; with an anguish of heart, which none can conceive, but
they who know what final and everlasting despair means. May
¹⁸ *God preserve all his churches from such roots of bitterness, as, alas!*
have too often sprung up among them! And since there is so much
danger, that many may be debilitated by them, let those that have a real
concern for their honour and safety, be looking round, with a pro-
per solicitude to guard against the first appearance of what may be
so fatal to their honour, their purity, and peace.

SECT. XXI.

The Apostle exhorts Christians to brotherly love, prudence, compas-
sion, dependence on the Divine care, steadfastness in the profession
of the truth, and to a life of thankfulness to God, and benevolence
to man; from a consideration of the inestimable privileges de-
rived to us from Christ, which ought always to encourage us bold-
ly to endure any injury and suffering which we may meet in his
cause. Heb. XIII. 1—16.

Heb.
XIII.

HEBREWS XIII. 1.

Heb.
XIII. 1.

I SHALL conclude my present address to you,
 with some practical exhortations. And one
 of

Hebrews XIII. 1.

L I I brotherly love
 continued

of the most comprehensive and important I can give you, is this : *Let brotherly love always continue* ^a among you. And remember not only the common obligations of benevolence, by which all human creatures are connected with each other, but those peculiar engagements, which the Christian profession lays you under, to study the good of those, who by faith in the gospel are all the children of one Father, and heirs of one glorious inheritance. This should ² certainly engage you to relieve and accommodate such as are in necessity ; and especially your christian brethren, in their travels from place to place, often undertaken for the service of their great Master. *Be not, therefore, forgetful of hospitality ; for some have, by the practice of it, entertained angels,* as common strangers, *without knowing it* ^b, and have found the hospitalities of many former years abundantly rewarded by one such favourable visit. And thus you know not, but they who come to you under a very mean appearance, may be as messengers from God to you, and the instruments of bestowing some extraordinary favours from him. You see many of your brethren suffering ³ for conscience sake, and some thrown into prison ; *remember them* therefore especially, *who are in such bonds, as if you were yourselves bound with [them] and them that suffer any kind of ill-treatment in such a case, as being yourselves also in the same body* with them, and so obliged to a tender sympathy ; not now to insist on your sharing the same common infirmities of human nature with them all, which should engage you to carry your compassion to strangers, and even to enemies.

SECT.
XXI.Heb.
XIII. 1.

² Be not forgetful to entertain strangers: for thereby some have entertained angels un-
awares,

³ Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them ; and them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body.

^a *Let brotherly love continue.*] Diodate thinks this exhortation was peculiarly suitable to converted Jews as the prejudices against their Gentile brethren were in many of them so strong, that they were ready to disown them with abhorrence.

^b *Entertained angels unawares.*] It is possible that from the story of Abraham and Lot, who had the honour of entertaining angels, under the form of ordinary travellers, some tradition might reach the Indian Bramins, who tell their people that the gods sometimes descend in the form of poor indigent persons ; and that when any of the children of men relieve them, they repay the charity with vast advantage. See Millar's Propagation of Christ-

anity, Vol. II. p. 217. I can lay no stress upon Mr. Pierce's reasoning against our supposing that Christ was one of those angels, that then the apostle would have urged the argument in a stronger view, by observing that they had entertained Christ himself. (See his notes on chap. i. ver. 2. and Mr. Hallet on this verse.) For the apostles were under no obligation, on all occasions, to use the strongest argument that could possibly be thought of ; and as there might perhaps be some room to debate this matter, it was great prudence to build an argument upon a principle, in which all that believe the authority of scripture, must agree.

I

c Marriage

SECT.
XXI.
Heb.
XIII. 4.

I know that some, who pretend to more than ordinary chastity, say many reproachful things of a conjugal life; but I assure you they are much to blame; for *marriage* [is] to be held *honourable in all*^a, and the proper use of the *marriage bed* is to be esteemed as *undefiled*, since none can imagine, that God would make an action in itself morally evil, absolutely necessary for the support of the human race in future generations. But as for *whoremongers and adulterers*, who either despise or pollute it, *God will undoubtedly judge* them, however they may escape human punishment.

⁵ [Let your] conversation [be] free from every degree of *covetousness*, and [be] contented with such things as ye have^d, without eagerly or impatiently desiring what Divine Providence may see fit to withhold. And though being so slenderly provided for, as most of you are, it may seem very probable you should soon come to want, even the necessities of life, especially after the late ravages you have suffered from your enemies, who have plundered your goods, (chap. x. 34.) be not anxiously solicitous about that, for he who hath all the stores of nature at his command, and who owns the relation of a Father to us, hath graciously said, (Josh. i. 5,) *I will not, I will not leave thee, I will never, never forsake thee*. And though these emphatical words were at first spoken to Joshua yet it was not under a personal character only, but considering him in his relation to the Israel of God, and as acting for its support; so that all God's people, as his love to them is in all ages the same, may take a just encouragement from it, and we in particular may take courage to say^e, the Lord [is] my helper, and I will not

⁴ Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled; but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

⁵ Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have; for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.

⁶ So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will

^a Marriage is honourable.] Some critics and (especially the papal writers, to avoid the argument which naturally arises from hence against forbidding marriage to the clergy) would render it, *Let marriage be honourable in all, and let the bed be undefiled*. But the connection of the latter clause introduced by the particle *but*, is sufficient to vindicate our version, unless we should be disposed, with the Vulgate, to prefer the authority of the Alexandrian and Clermont copies, which instead of *et*, read *quia*. For whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

^d Content with such things as ye have.] Phocylides makes use of the very words of the *apostle* in a precept of this kind, *Αποφύγετε επιθυμίας*. But what the age of that writer was, I fear it is impossible to ascertain. There are other passages however in his excellent moral poems, which makes it probable he was acquainted with the New Testament as well as the Old, from whence he has taken so many pious and humane precepts.

^e We may take courage to say, &c.] This application of a particular promise to such general purposes, opens a noble hint for

will not fear what man shall do unto me.

not fear what man shall do unto me: thus comforting ourselves, not only in the seeming uncertainty of future supplies, but in the midst of the greatest dangers, and when threatened by our enemies with the severest sufferings

SECT.
XXI.
Heb.
XIII. 6.

7 Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.

And let me now urge you to remember those 7 dear and venerable persons *who having formerly presided over you* in holy things, *have spoken to you the word of God*, whose course is now finished. Though all your intercourse with them is for the present cut off, do not however forget their instructions and their examples; but be mindful of that *faith* which they taught, and which they exercised. And let it be your great care to *imitate* them, *considering the end of their conversation*. Reflect on the happy manner in which they quitted life, on that support which they found, in their latest moments, from the truths they had taught you, and on that heroic resolution with which some of them were animated to meet even martyrdom itself in that sacred cause; and let the remembrance of these things engage you stedfastly to retain their faith and courageously to follow their steps. And 8 remember for your farther encouragement, that though the most faithful ministers of the gospel die, yet as that sacred dispensation still continues immutable, so *Jesus Christ*, the great Guardian of those who faithfully adhere to it, in the tenor of his declarations, as well as in the glories of his Divine nature, [is] *the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever*; and therefore can well support you, by whomsoever you may be forsaken. And let this be a powerful engagement

8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

for the improvement of the Old Testament, upon this great and solid principle, that God, who is no respecter of persons, intends, that expressions of his favor to this or that eminently good man, should be used for the encouragement of all others of the like character. The emphasis of the original is so well known, that I shall not insist upon it.

f *Presided over you.*] Bishop Lloyd, (*Funeral Sermon* for Bishop Wilkins, p. 7, 8,) thinks this may refer to James the Apostle, and to James, commonly called the first Bishop of Jerusalem; both of which had been put to death there before this epistle was written. Our English version here is very far from being justifiable,

Remember them which have the rule over you; whereas they were now dead. It should have been, *Who have presided, or had the rule, over you*; or as I have rendered the two clauses in connection, *Who having presided over you, have spoken to you the word of God.*

g *Christ the same.*] I think this makes a much nobler sense, if explained of the immutability of Christ's power and grace, than if merely understood of his doctrine; though I have given a hint of the latter sense, out of regard to some great expositors, who have urged Acts v. 42; 2 Cor. iv. 5. 1 Cor. i. 24; as instances in which Christ signifies not his person but his word.

h *Whose*

some.
 10th.
 11th.
 12th.

- ment to adhere to his gospel, and to preserve it uninterrupted. In this view, see to it, that ye *be not carried about by various and foreign doctrines, disagreeing with each other, and with the great standard of truth in the Divine revelation.* Many are zealous for such, and particularly demanding teachers; but remember, *(it is) a good thing that the heart be established in an adherence to the gospel of the gospel, and not zealous in these dissensions between various kinds of truths, and reposing its confidence in titular and observances which some are ready to lay as much stress upon; but by which they, who are both most concerned [in them] and regarded them with the greatest exactness, have not profited, so as to make any real attainment in religion, by all that scrupulousity and mortification.* They boast indeed of many of their privileges, to which they rank themselves superior to us; but it is infinitely more than a balance to all, that we have *an altar of a spiritual nature, even that dignified by the sacrifice of the Son of God, of which they have no authority to eat, and without divine service in the tabernacle.*
- 11 *such.* For it is well known, that *the bodies of these animals, whose blood [being offered] for sin is carried by the high Priest into the holy place, are according to the appointment of the law, is inclosed in the wilderness, to be buried without the camp, and afterwards without the city of Jerusalem; no part of them being eaten*
- 12 *by the people.* Now evidently there is something in this circumstance which may suggest to us matter of pains and comfortable meditation, when we compare it with what we know of the great High Priest of our profession. We may *therefore* methinks say, that *Jesus also, that under his grand sacerdotal character he might sanctify the people, not by animal victims, but by his own blood, which he offered up as a sin-offering for us, to atone our guilt, and consecrate us to God, suffered not within the walls of the temple, or the city, but upon mount Calvary; which you well know lies without the gate*

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines; for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have them occupied therein.

10 We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of these beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burned without the camp.

12 We confess Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

8. *Below Calvary, called, Mt. Zion.* An expression has been used, that it was there, or that some other particular spot

where, he proved that the temple was standing; which does good that question.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him, without the camp, bearing his reproach.

of Jerusalem. And this consideration, as it suggests our leaving the Jewish sacrifices, so it should undoubtedly engage us willingly to suffer all extremities in his cause. *Let us therefore break through every attachment, and go out, as it were, unto him without the camp, bearing our part in his reproach.* If our fidelity to him require, as it very possibly may, that we should submit to excommunication, infamy, and persecution, let us acquiesce and find an equivalent in this thought, that we are hereby rendered more conformable to Christ, And let us submit to this so much the more 14 cheerfully, considering how trivial the interests of this moral life are, when compared with those which relate to eternity; for it is most certain, that *we have here no abiding city*; in which view, I spoke of our sojourning here, as an encampment in moveable tabernacles or tents. But, blessed be God, we are animated with the cheerful hope and expectation of better blessings, and *seek one to come*; a splendid and secure abode, where it will be our everlasting business to admire and adore its great Founder and Sovereign, and to worship in his celestial temple. In the mean time, Jesus is there under 15 the character of our great High Priest, who ever lives to perform that important office for us, to which he is every way equal; *by him therefore let us always offer the sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of [our] lips, giving thanks to his glorious name.* But while we 16 present this verbal tribute, let us remember, that another yet more substantial is required. *Be not therefore forgetful of doing all the good you possibly can, in your respective stations, and of communicating liberally and cheerfully of your substance, to those that are in necessity; for God is well pleased with such sacrifices; which were always more pleasing to him than any victim, which, in the neglect of these, could be brought to his altar.*

SECT.
XXI.
Heb.
XIII. 13.

14 For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate, forget not; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

IMPROVE-

[Sacrifice of praise.] To suppose that this refers to the eucharist, and the following verse to charitable collections made at

the celebration of that ordinance, seems very fanciful.

IMPROVEMENT.

SECT.
XVI.

THOSE other *expensive* sacrifices which the *Mosaic law* required, are now entirely abrogated. Let us consider this as an additional engagement upon us, to abound more and more in those
 16 of unfeigned *benevolence* and *real charity*; rejoicing, that the God of our lives, who gives us all, will condescend to have *any regard* to them. And let our brethren in *Christ* be remembered with that
 1, 2 distinguishing affection which suits the relation in which we stand to them; and in whatever bonds of affliction they may be bound, let us endeavour to make their fetters sit *lighter* upon them, by
 3 every thing which our compassionate assistance can do for that purpose; *considering ourselves as in the body*.

That we may be ready to all such kind offices, let us endeavour to overcome the *love of money*, which is the root of all evil. Let us learn, (and Oh that Divine grace may effectually teach us!)
 5 to moderate our desires, *to be contented* with what Providence allots us, whether more or less, and *to trust in God*, as to the supply of our future wants. Well may we not only *trust*, but even *boast in him*, when we consider in how endearing a manner he hath declared, with such reiterated assurances, *that he will never never, never leave us*; that *he will not, yea, he will not forsake us*. Surely the language of the most cheerful and courageous faith well corresponds to that of so gracious and soul-reviving a promise. Let faith then put a *reality* into it, or rather glory in that certain reality which there cannot but be in every promise; especially as *Jesus Christ*, in whom this, and *all the promises* are confirmed to us, is *the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever*.

7 And let this thought support us under those *breaches* which may be made on the church by *death*. Christ ever lives to guard and protect it, and to maintain those great truths which in every age have been the joy and confidence of his people. Let our
 8 attachment to him therefore, be preserved inviolable, and the purity of our souls unspotted. And let us never fear to share in his *reproach*, in whose glory we have such a security of sharing; but cheerfully go, as it were, *out of the camp* to him, who suffered
 12 *crucifixion* for us *without the gates* of the city. Were we called to endure *martyrdom* for his sake, he would only lead us out of a mean and precarious tabernacle: *for we have here no continuing*
 14 *city*; but then he will conduct us, if we are faithful to him, to a *city*, so durable, that its *foundations* are represented by rocks of solid *gems*, so glorious, that its *pavements* are described as *gold*, and its *gates* as *pearl*. May our faith be daily beholding it as near;
 and

and may we feel every day more of its *attractive* influence, to render us superior to all that earth can promise, and to all it can threaten, while we are passing thither. Under his guardianship, let us daily be offering the sacrifice of praise, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his name, as well knowing, that while we are on our journey to the *New Jerusalem*, no mountain can be so steep and rugged, no valley so deep and gloomy, as not to admit of the songs of *Sion*. SECT. XXI. Ver. 15

SECT. XXII.

The Apostle concludes with recommending to them some particular regards to their pious ministers, and intreats their prayers ; adding some salutations, and a solemn benediction. Heb. XIII. 17, to the end.

HEBREWS XIII. 17.

OBEY them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account: that they may

HEBREWS XIII. 17.

I HAVE been urging you to an affectionate remembrance of those who were once your teachers, but are now dismissed from their labours, and received to their reward. And I must on the same principles, press upon you a due regard to those faithful ministers who still survive. *Obey them*, therefore, *who preside over you*^a, in those rules and directions which they are authorised by Christ to give you, and submit yourselves [to them] with a becoming respect; even though their office should sometimes oblige them to make such addresses to you as may for the present be disagreeable. For they are solemnly appointed to watch for your souls^c, for their everlasting safety and happiness. And well knowing that the trust is of infinite importance, they would execute it as those that must render an awful and strict account of their office, and of the fidelity with which they have discharged it Behave towards them, therefore, while

SECT. XXII.

Heb. XIII. 17.

^a *Preside over you.*] Lord Barrington imagines, that he refers to the apostles of the circumcision, to shew that he would not in any respect derogate from their authority ; (Essay I. p. 87 ;) but I cannot think the word *ἐπισκοποι*, should be thus limited. I rather apprehend, with Mr. Boyce, (Serm. Vol. I. p. 415,) that it refers to those who immediately presided over them

in their religious affairs, that is, the ministers of the several particular churches. The application of it to diocesan bishops is merely arbitrary.

^b *Watch for your souls.*] Chrysostom says, he never read these words without trembling, though he often preached several times in a day.

^c That

407
 408
 409
 410
 411
 412
 413
 414
 415
 416
 417
 418
 419
 420
 421
 422
 423
 424
 425
 426
 427
 428
 429
 430
 431
 432
 433
 434
 435
 436
 437
 438
 439
 440
 441
 442
 443
 444
 445
 446
 447
 448
 449
 450
 451
 452
 453
 454
 455
 456
 457
 458
 459
 460
 461
 462
 463
 464
 465
 466
 467
 468
 469
 470
 471
 472
 473
 474
 475
 476
 477
 478
 479
 480
 481
 482
 483
 484
 485
 486
 487
 488
 489
 490
 491
 492
 493
 494
 495
 496
 497
 498
 499
 500
 501
 502
 503
 504
 505
 506
 507
 508
 509
 510
 511
 512
 513
 514
 515
 516
 517
 518
 519
 520
 521
 522
 523
 524
 525
 526
 527
 528
 529
 530
 531
 532
 533
 534
 535
 536
 537
 538
 539
 540
 541
 542
 543
 544
 545
 546
 547
 548
 549
 550
 551
 552
 553
 554
 555
 556
 557
 558
 559
 560
 561
 562
 563
 564
 565
 566
 567
 568
 569
 570
 571
 572
 573
 574
 575
 576
 577
 578
 579
 580
 581
 582
 583
 584
 585
 586
 587
 588
 589
 590
 591
 592
 593
 594
 595
 596
 597
 598
 599
 600
 601
 602
 603
 604
 605
 606
 607
 608
 609
 610
 611
 612
 613
 614
 615
 616
 617
 618
 619
 620
 621
 622
 623
 624
 625
 626
 627
 628
 629
 630
 631
 632
 633
 634
 635
 636
 637
 638
 639
 640
 641
 642
 643
 644
 645
 646
 647
 648
 649
 650
 651
 652
 653
 654
 655
 656
 657
 658
 659
 660
 661
 662
 663
 664
 665
 666
 667
 668
 669
 670
 671
 672
 673
 674
 675
 676
 677
 678
 679
 680
 681
 682
 683
 684
 685
 686
 687
 688
 689
 690
 691
 692
 693
 694
 695
 696
 697
 698
 699
 700
 701
 702
 703
 704
 705
 706
 707
 708
 709
 710
 711
 712
 713
 714
 715
 716
 717
 718
 719
 720
 721
 722
 723
 724
 725
 726
 727
 728
 729
 730
 731
 732
 733
 734
 735
 736
 737
 738
 739
 740
 741
 742
 743
 744
 745
 746
 747
 748
 749
 750
 751
 752
 753
 754
 755
 756
 757
 758
 759
 760
 761
 762
 763
 764
 765
 766
 767
 768
 769
 770
 771
 772
 773
 774
 775
 776
 777
 778
 779
 780
 781
 782
 783
 784
 785
 786
 787
 788
 789
 790
 791
 792
 793
 794
 795
 796
 797
 798
 799
 800
 801
 802
 803
 804
 805
 806
 807
 808
 809
 810
 811
 812
 813
 814
 815
 816
 817
 818
 819
 820
 821
 822
 823
 824
 825
 826
 827
 828
 829
 830
 831
 832
 833
 834
 835
 836
 837
 838
 839
 840
 841
 842
 843
 844
 845
 846
 847
 848
 849
 850
 851
 852
 853
 854
 855
 856
 857
 858
 859
 860
 861
 862
 863
 864
 865
 866
 867
 868
 869
 870
 871
 872
 873
 874
 875
 876
 877
 878
 879
 880
 881
 882
 883
 884
 885
 886
 887
 888
 889
 890
 891
 892
 893
 894
 895
 896
 897
 898
 899
 900
 901
 902
 903
 904
 905
 906
 907
 908
 909
 910
 911
 912
 913
 914
 915
 916
 917
 918
 919
 920
 921
 922
 923
 924
 925
 926
 927
 928
 929
 930
 931
 932
 933
 934
 935
 936
 937
 938
 939
 940
 941
 942
 943
 944
 945
 946
 947
 948
 949
 950
 951
 952
 953
 954
 955
 956
 957
 958
 959
 960
 961
 962
 963
 964
 965
 966
 967
 968
 969
 970
 971
 972
 973
 974
 975
 976
 977
 978
 979
 980
 981
 982
 983
 984
 985
 986
 987
 988
 989
 990
 991
 992
 993
 994
 995
 996
 997
 998
 999
 1000

while they are pursuing the several duties of it, in such a manner, *that they may do it with joy, and not with inward groaning*, under discouragements arising from your unkind treatment, or from such other irregularities of your conduct as may require them to interpose by any methods of severity: *for that [is] most undesirable and dangerous for you*, and will on the whole be much more for your own detriment than it can possibly be for theirs.

may do it with joy, and not with grief, and that is impossible for you.

- 18 Among the rest of your Christian ministers, we persuade ourselves that you will not forget us. And we intreat, that whole absence may render many other instances of affection impracticable, you would not fail however to *pray for us*. And indeed we may very cheerfully ask, and very reasonably expect this: *for though our enemies may meanly insinuate the contrary, we are confident that we have a good conscience*, and have conducted ourselves, so as to have a testimony in our integrity in yours, that we are *determined, whatever it may come us, in all things to behave honourably*, to converse in the most fair and reputable manner, according to the obligations of our sacred profession and office, though we should *sacrifice every thing to that resolution*. *And I especially beseech you to do this*, that is, to *pray earnestly and affectionately for me*, both in your private retirements, and in your public assemblies, *that I may quickly be restored to you from this confinement*, and may have an opportunity of rendering you those services which were prevented by this unjust imprisonment, occasioned by the *fury of the populace when I was last at Jerusalem*.

18 Pray for us, for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead

- 20 And now to draw towards a close, say that great and blessed Being, who intends in his gospel to reveal himself to us under the endearing character of *the God of power, who reconciling to him himself by his Son, becomes the author of eternal blessings, cause his choicest favours*

That they may do it with joy, and not with groaning. [This must necessarily refer to the present discourse, if these others be it is not possible for any assurance of the people to prevent a faithful minister's going up, or coming back, for a host can not any longer be mingled with those triumphant songs which God will put into the mouths of all his people. But these

Native will remember what they suffered by their power's coming; and will consent that all leave us now, when the sorrows of these faithful persons are all over. Not to say that great power belongs to the people who are preserved from those things which are grievous to their spiritual and eternal peace.

our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep through the blood of the everlasting covenant.

favours to descend upon you. May he, who to confirm these gracious purposes, *hath brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ, who is constituted that great Shepherd of the sheep, by the blood of the everlasting covenant*^d, and by his blood sealed the everlasting and unchangeable covenant, which appoints him to stand in that amiable relation to his people; May he, I say, 21 *make you perfect in every good work, that you may cheerfully and constantly do his will, exerting an holy readiness and alacrity in the discharge of every duty; himself producing in you that temper and disposition of soul which is most pleasing and acceptable in his sight, through the powerful influences of his Spirit, given you by Jesus Christ, who hath procured this invaluable favour for his people: to whom [be] glory in all the churches, for ever and ever: Amen.*

SECT.
XXX.
Heb.
XIII. 20.

21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ: to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation; for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

I have discovered my mind to you in the 22 course of this epistle with great freedom; but as it all proceeds from the most sincere affection, *I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation: for I have written to you above in a few words; but if I were to open all that is in my heart, the letter would swell far beyond the bounds I have here assigned it. In concluding 23 it, I give you the pleasure to know that [our] dear brother Timothy, whose zeal for me had for a while made him a partner in my confinement, is now set at liberty, with whom if he come soon, I hope by the Divine permission, I shall be able to see you, which I cannot but greatly desire.*

23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty; with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

In the mean time, *salute* in the most respectful and affectionate manner, in my name, *all that preside over you, as the officers of your respective churches, and all the other saints, who are private members of them. They who are natives of Italy, joined in the bonds of the same Christian profession, and now with me at Rome, most cordially salute you. May the blessing of 25 God, and the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom I am so often commending you and all*

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

d *By the blood of the everlasting covenant.*] There is an ambiguity in the connection of these words. Some think they refer to God's bringing again from the dead our Lord Jesus Christ, according to that engagement or covenant which was sealed by his blood. Beza and others connect the

clause with the words immediately preceding, namely, *that great Shepherd of the sheep, which our Lord was constituted by the blood of the everlasting covenant.* And this sense seems to be far preferable. Compare Acts xx. 28; and John x. 11.

my

MY Christian brethren, [do] *with you all*. I
 put my hearty *amen* to it; and you assuredly
 know, that I can wish you nothing better. I
 hope therefore, that you will with all your
 hearts put your own *amen* to it.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET those, whom God, in the course of his Providence, hath
called to provide over the souls of others, remember to *watch over*
them with a becoming diligence, considering that an impartial
account will shortly be required; considering, that if they do not
 conduct themselves in this important office, *their blood*,
 which by their neglect, must be *required at their hands*. And
 let the people committed to their care be concerned, that the faith-
 ful servants of Christ may discharge their office *with joy, and not*
with grief, that they may not from time to time be sent with
groanings, and with tears, to the presence of their great Master,
 to lament the obstinacy, perverseness, and rebellion of those over
 whom God hath made these *watchmen and shepherds*. The grief
 would now sensibly affect the minister; yet, on the whole, as he
 would be to God a *sweet smell in Christ, in them that perish*, as
 well as in *them that believe*, the greatest detriment would fall on
 those who have made such ungrateful returns to the Divine good-
 ness, and to *their fidelity*.

That all other duties may be more regularly and properly dis-
 charged, let private Christians be engaged to *pray earnestly for*
their ministers; for those especially, who make it apparent, that
 they desire to *maintain always a good conscience*; and that what-
 ever sacrifices they may be called to make to it, they are *deter-*
mined in all things to live respectably and honestly, so that the
 ministry may not be *blamed*, but the Christian profession in general
 adorned. And God grant, that none but persons of *such a charac-*
ter may be introduced into the *ministry*, or supported and coun-
 tenanced in it!

Let *pastors, and people*, be often looking to him, who is *the great*
Shepherd of the sheep, and whose relation to the flock is established
 on *the blood of the everlasting covenant*. Ever may the thoughts
 of that *blood* engage us to regard him with all due veneration and
 love; ever may we be looking to him, who through this blessed
 Saviour, appears as *the God of peace*, for every blessing we re-
 spectively need.

We all need his gracious influence, to implant the first princi-
 ples of the Divine life; and we need them, to *make us perfect to*
do

to do his will, and to work in us those things which may render us more completely *pleasing in his sight*. And therefore let an humble dependence on his *grace* be daily maintained and expressed; 21 considering of how great importance it is to be *acceptable* in the sight of God, and to *approve* ourselves at all times to him.

SECT.
xxii.

That it may be so, may *grace be with us all*, and continue with 22 us, from the first entrance on the *Christian* life, through the whole course of it, till it *present us blameless in the presence of his glory with exceeding joy*. Amen.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE EPISTLE TO THE
HEBREWS.



THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A
PARAPHRASE

ON
THE CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE
JAMES.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES
ON THE
CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF ST. JAMES.

THE epistle of St. James, and the six following epistles, have been commonly distinguished by the appellation of *catholic* or *general*, because most of them are inscribed, not to particular churches, or persons, but to the body, either of Jewish or Gentile converts over the whole world, or at least dispersed in several countries.

The *first* of these, I mean that of St. James, was from the earliest times received by the Christian church, though not so universally as most of the epistles of St. Paul. But a precise detail and examination of the several arguments relating to the question, would bear too large a proportion in the space allotted to these introductions. It may however be right to observe, in support of the authenticity and authority of this epistle, that considerable stress hath deservedly been laid upon its *antiquity*, which appears both from *internal* and *external* evidence; and also, upon the correspondence of the sentiments it contains, with the tenour of the Christian doctrine; and though this hath been called in question by some through an attachment to particular hypotheses*, yet it is evident, I apprehend beyond all controversy, to those who read the epistle with suitable candour and attention. And it appears to me, that the authority of this, and some other parts of the New Testament, having been early questioned by some *primitive churches*, affords an argument of their particular caution, that no other writings should be admitted into the *sacred canon*, however excellent,

* It is well known, that at the beginning of the Reformation, Luther apprehending the doctrine delivered by St. James concerning *justification*, to be inconsistent with that of St. Paul, opposed the authority of this epistle, in the preface to his German translation of the New Testament, published in the year 1522; though he is not followed in this point by those who at this day are distinguished by his name; and indeed he himself, as we are informed by *Wolffius* (*Cursæ Philolog.* Vol. V. p. 6.) and by *Fabricius*, (*Biblioth. Græc. Lib. iv. cap. v. § ix.*) afterwards changed his opinion.

excellent, besides those which had an undoubted claim to that distinction; and justly challenges our deference to *their* judgment, who doubtless were most capable of deciding, and gave sufficient evidence of their *care* as well as their *exactness*. The epistle before us having passed through a severe and accurate scrutiny, appears to have been at length *universally received*, and accordingly hath been transmitted down to the present age, as an authentic part of those *oracles of God which are able to make us wise to salvation*.

If any particular arguments were to be suggested to second the force of those observations it might be this, that this epistle is found in the *Syriac version*, and was received by the churches in Syria. This version is undoubtedly *ancient*, and is apprehended by most learned men to have been made as early as the beginning of the *second century*. And besides the authority concluded to the epistle of St. James by the *antiquity* of the version, it should be observed, that the version was made for the particular service of the converted Jews, to whom the *epistle itself* was originally written; and it should therefore seem, that its authenticity and authority were from the beginning acknowledged by those for whom it was intended: and I think it can hardly be doubted, that they were better judges of the question than the Gentiles, to whom it was not written, among whom therefore it was not likely to be propagated so early, and who at first might be prejudiced against it, because it was inscribed to the Jews.

If any are disposed to examine the several testimonies of the Christian Fathers, as to the authority of this epistle, they may find them collected with great fidelity and accuracy, by the learned Dr. Lardner, in the second part of his valuable work, *The Credibility of the Gospel History*.

As to the *author* of this epistle, some have imagined it to be James the Elder, the son of Zebedee, and brother of John. But in this they are evidently mistaken. James the Elder was beheaded by Herod, in the year of our Lord 44; whereas this epistle was not written till a very considerable time afterwards. So early as the year 41, the gospel does not seem to have been propagated far beyond the bounds of Palestine; and it cannot be supposed there was any very large number of the Jews of the dispersion, who were then converted to the Christian faith: and though the epistle seems to have been intended in some measure for the general benefit of the *whole flock*, yet more especially for those among them who were *converts* to the Christian religion. Besides, it is intimated in the epistle itself, that the Jewish Christians were at this time sunk into very remarkable degeneracy, both in doctrine and practice, which is not likely to have been the case while they were under the first impressions of their conversion. And indeed in this epistle, there are some plain intimations that the destruction of Jerusalem was near at hand, chap. v. 1—8, which event was accomplished about the year 70; and from this circumstance we may reasonably conclude the *date* of this epistle to be about the year 60 or 61.

It therefore appears, that this epistle was not written by James the Elder, but must have been the composition of another James, called James the Less, who was the son of Alphaeus, or Cleophas, and is said to be the *brother*, that is, according to the latitude in which the Jews were accustomed to understand this expression, the *kinsman* of our Lord. See Mat. xiii. 55; Mark vi. 3. And who is expressly numbered among the *twelve apostles*. See Mat. x. 2, 3; Mark iii. 17, 18; Luke vi. 14, 15; Acts i. 13. And though the time of this James being put to death is not absolutely certain, it is supposed by many learned men to have happened in the year 62, before St. Paul wrote his epistle to the Hebrews, which was in the year 63. And if this account be right, the date of his epistle cannot be later than I have already assigned it.

James the Less stately resided at Jerusalem: whence he hath been stiled by some ancient fathers, *bishop* of that city, though without sufficient foundation, as we observed, (Vol. III. sect. 34, note c.) Now James being one of the apostles of the circumcision, while he confined his *personal* labours to the inhabitants of Judea, it was very natural for him to endeavour by his *writings* to extend his services to the Jewish Christians, who were dispersed abroad in more distant regions. For this purpose there are *two points* which the *apostle* seems to have principally aimed at, though he hath not pursued them in an orderly and *logical* method, but in the free epistolary manner, handling them jointly or distinctly, as occasions naturally offered. And these were—"To correct those errors both in doctrine and practice, into which the Jewish Christians had fallen, which might otherwise have produced fatal consequences; and then to establish the faith, and animate the hope of sincere believers, both under their present and their approaching suffering."

And in prosecution of this *double view*, after inscribing the epistle to the twelve tribes in their dispersion, the *apostle* enters on his subject, by endeavouring to fortify their minds under those trials wherewith they would be exercised, by suitable representations of the benefit of those trials, of the readiness of God to communicate all necessary supplies of wisdom and grace in answer to the fervent prayer of faith, and by exposing the vanity of all worldly enjoyments, which often prove the means of ensnaring and ruining their possessors; chap. i. 1—16. And then as a means of their steadfastness notwithstanding the most powerful temptations to apostacy, he exhorts them to remember and acknowledge the manifold goodness of God in the various blessings bestowed upon them; more especially in that of his regenerating grace, which should constrain them to the exercise of every virtue, especially to an ingenuous and candid reception of his word, and a concern resolutely and constantly to adhere to its directions; particularly by bridling their tongues, and succouring such as were afflicted, ver. 17, *to the end*. And then the *apostle*, by an easy transition having glanced at some of their particular failings, takes the occasion of introducing cautions on sundry

dry other articles in which they needed reprehension; particularly against showing an undue respect to men's external circumstances, and resting satisfied in a partial observation of the Divine precepts, especially when the royal law of charity, or universal benevolence, was in question; chap. ii. 1—13. After this, as several of the Jewish Christians discovered a disposition to rest in an external and empty profession of religion, probably from an abuse of the doctrine of justification by faith, he largely descants on the inefficacy of a mere *historical faith*, and evinces, by most striking instances and illustrations, the utter insufficiency of it for our justification and eternal salvation, ver. 14, *to the end*. And as such a barren profession is apt to inspire men with conceited and vain glorious sentiments of themselves, while they are destitute of every Divine habit and attainment, he deems it expedient to subjoin a caution to these Jewish Christians, against their being too forward in assuming the office and character of teachers; and as spiritual pride tends to inflame men's unbridled passions, and to set on fire their licentious tongues, he resumes and expatiates on a subject which he had before only slightly touched upon, recommending a strict government of the tongue as a matter, though of great difficulty, yet of the highest importance; chap. iii. 1—12. And in close connection with such a topic, it was very natural to inculcate, as the apostle does, a candid benevolent disposition, guarding them against censoriousness and animosities, and that love of the world which tends to excite them; to restrain which, he recommends a humble application to God for Divine influences, ver. 13—chap. iv. 10. Suggesting particular cautions against evil speaking, and vain confidence in the events of fatality, or in any worldly possessions, which often prove a temptation to luxury, and an occasion of ruin. And then as to afflicted and oppressed Christians, he encourages and exhorts them to wait patiently for the coming of the Lord, ver. 11—chap. v. 8. And concludes the epistle, with condemning profane and vain swearing, with recommending moderation, fortitude and prayer, a ready acknowledgment of our faults, and a solicitous concern for the common salvation, ver. 9, *to the end*.

A PARA-

A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE CATHOLIC EPISTLE

OR

St. JAMES.

SECTION I.

The Apostle James endeavours to fortify the Christians to whom he writes, under those trials wherewith they would be exercised, by suitable representations of the benefit of those trials, and of the readiness of God to communicate all necessary supplies of wisdom and grace, in answer to the fervent prayer of faith: and by exposing the vanity of all worldly enjoyments, which often prove the means of ensnaring and ruining their possessors. James I. 1—16.

JAMES I. 1.

JAMES a servant of
God, and of the
Lord Jesus Christ to
the

JAMES I. 1.

THIS epistle is written by James^a, who esteems it his honour to be a faithful servant and constant worshipper of the true and living God, and of his Son the Lord Jesus Christ; and is addressed with the sincerest affection to the twelve tribes^b of Israel in this their state of dispersion

SECT.
I.

James
I. 1.

a James.] That is, as we have already observed, the apostle James, the less: whose antiquity, (I know not on what pretence,) calls bishop of Jerusalem; perhaps because he resided there more than most of the apostles. He was the brother of Christ: and it is said he was exalted to this office,

on the death of James the great, beheaded by Herod. Acts xii. 2, 17.

b Twelve tribes.] Dr. Lardner, (*Credibility*, Vol. I. p. 253, &c.) very justly observes, that Josephus concludes the twelve tribes to be still in being, when he says, that six persons were sent out of every

HE CT.

1.

JAMES

1. 1.

persions; so that he would have every son of Abraham according to the flesh consider it as addressed to him, and would himself be considered as *greeting* them all with the most cordial wishes of grace and peace; though especially as addressing himself to those whom the bond of the same Christian profession unites yet more strictly to the Author.

2 *My dear brethren, count it matter of all joy, when you fall into a variety of trials,* for the sake of the true religion, which so many, instead of embracing with a becoming thankfulness and zeal, are by all possible methods en-

deavouring to extirpate. Far from being discouraged by such trials, in such a cause, rejoice in them, as *knowing that the little and short proof of your faith* to which it is now brought, in its natural consequences, under the influences of Divine grace, *worketh patience*, which will

4 grow by such exercise. *And let patience have [its] perfect work*, that it may rise to its highest improvements, during this little space of time in which alone you will have an opportunity of glorifying God, and adorning Christianity, *that so ye may be perfect and complete, deficient in nothing*: for the other graces of Christianity will generally shine brightest where patience is most conspicuous.

5 *But if any one of you be deficient in wisdom*, and incapable of certainly discerning his duty in such critical conjunctures as these in which you are called out to act: *let him ask* further supplies of [it] *from God*, its eternal fountain, *who gives to all* every necessary communication of that, and all other blessings, *liberally and upbraideth not* any with the importunity or frequency of their addresses; *and it shall be given*

the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations;

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.

every tribe, to assist in translating the scriptures into Hebrew. It is very evident that at the promotion in Jerusalem's time, the Jews stayed behind. See Dr. Wallis to be.

— In this third state of deliverance I. Dr. Wallis is of, hath some very pertinent quotations from Josephus, Philo, and even Origen, to shew that the Jews were dispersed abroad, and were to be found in great numbers, in almost all parts of the world. And Dr. Tappan, besides the evidence in Dr. Whitby, produces another remarkable passage in the same prophet,

from a letter of Agrippa to the Emperor See *Continuity of the Gospel-history*, Part I. Book I. chap. 3. Compare Acts ii. 4—11.

— [If ye one of you be deficient in wisdom.] Several interpret this of wisdom to their edification work, and suppose, that when God is said not to upbraid, it is an expression of favour signifying that this though without being good it nature to Mr. Hume, and in Dr. Wallis, and I p. 107, is one of those broad interpretations which I cannot fully approve.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the wind and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double-minded man is unstable in all his ways.

9 Let the brother of low degree rejoice in that he is exalted :

given him, so far as is needful for his safety, and the discharge of his duty. But then let him take care, that he ask in steady faith, *no thing wavering*, not divided by the desires of obtaining, and the fears of not obtaining the grace he asks, or doubting of God's readiness to bestow it; *for he that wavers*, and has not a firm confidence in the Divine goodness and faithfulness, can have no other solid and substantial support; but *is like a billow of the sea driven on, and tossed by the wind*, in a restless and unsettled condition, (Isa. lvii. 20,) easily discomposed and agitated by every adverse blast, and in the greatest danger of being dashed in pieces. Let not that man there-⁷ fore think, that he shall receive any thing of the Lord, while he continues in such a situation, and dares not trust in him for those supplies of grace which he professes to seek. These unworthy suspicions, as they wrong the Divine goodness, may in many instances prevent the communication of those favours which might otherwise be obtained. Such a *double-minded man*,⁸ whose schemes are divided between God and the world, and who cannot cheerfully and resolutely commit himself, in confidence of Divine support, to be led whithersoever Providence shall please, [*is*] *unsettled in all his ways*; he will perpetually be running into inconsistencies of conduct, and those imperfect and undetermined impressions of religion which he feels, will serve rather to perplex and torment, than guide and secure him.

In nothing are the generality of men more⁹ apt to mistake, than in estimating the value of external circumstances; but let the principles of Christianity instruct you, my brethren, to correct that mistake; and in this respect, *let the brother of low degree*, of a poor and obscure condition, *rejoice in his exaltation*; let him think of his dignity as a christian, and entirely acquiesce in his low sphere of life, for his circumstances

SECT.

i. 1

James

I. 6.

^e Like a wave of the sea.] Mr. Saurin paraphrases it thus: "He ought not to resemble the waves of the sea, which seem to offer to the spectator, that is upon the shore, the treasures with which they are charged; but soon plunge in the abyss from which it cannot be recovered." Saurin's Sermon, Vol. IX. p. 438. But the in-

terpretation given in the paraphrase, appears to me much more simple and natural. He elsewhere paraphrases it, "Like a wave which moves on, and seems to come to the shore, but immediately returns with impetuosity into the gulph from whence it came." Ibid. Vol. V. p. 56, 57.

1 The

NOTE.
1.
James.
1 *

stances do really give him such advantages for religion, by placing him under a shelter from many temptations, that he has a much fairer probability than others, of rising to some eminence in the heavenly world. *But* let the rich man be greatly cautious, and if he allow himself to rejoice, let it not be in the height of his circumstances; but in the *humiliation* of his mind; for all other occasions of rejoicing are very precarious. And as for his dominion in this world, as *the force of the grass he shall quickly pass away*. For *proverb* is the son risen with a *scorching heat*, [but] immediately the grass, which in spring looks so fair and flourishing, is *dried up*, and the *weeds thereof*, that adorned it, loses its painted glories yet much sooner; it *falleth to the ground*, and all the beauty of its lovely form is *perished*; so shall the rich man also *fade away in his path*; and though he may by prudent management, or remarkable success, grow richer and richer, he dies in the midst of all his wealth, and it can no longer enter delight or adorn him.

12 You will be exercised with trials while you continue in the present world; but repine not at them; *happy* is the man who with a proper steadiness and fortitude of mind *endures temptation*; for being *approved* by such a course of them as the infinite wisdom of God shall appoint, he shall receive the *crowns of eternal life*, which the Lord Jesus Christ has graciously promised to all them that love him, and express their

13 love by such fidelity and zeal. *Let no man when he is tempted, say, I am tempted of God*; for God is himself, by virtue of his boundless knowledge and almighty power, *incapable of being tempted by evil*; and such is the perfect recti-
tude

10 But the rich man that he is really poor, because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.

11 But the son is so soon risen with a scorching heat. The 38 somewhat that grows, and the flower thereof, falling, and the power of the falling is so quick that they shall the greenness away in his path.

12 Blessed is the man that endures temptation. For when he is tempted must overcome the power of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God, for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.

[The rich man, in his *humiliation*.] Mr. Pyle explains this of a rich man's being stripped of his possessions by persecution, and so exposed for the sake of his advancement to Christianity; but this seems not properly applied to the context mentioned above. Indeed in my view it must be allowed a very difficult passage. But I have preferred the interpretation which seemed to be best warranted, and indeed to be most agreeable to the context, if we may rely on an observation made by Irenæus, and after him by Epiphanius, (and they are both very critical judges of the

Greek language,) that *homoimous*, the word here used by St. James, signified rather *conformity* of a man's mind, than his *will* and *conscience*, which is properly *homologous*, though it must be confessed, this distinction is not always observed.

1. *Tempted of God*. The phrase it seems had formerly been in use; and there is a sense in which it is allowable. But the objection is not so much more obvious, that the phrase thought proper to adduce it should be avoided for the future. Perhaps the word might have *advised* *strengthened*, as it is not two many words do.

b *Being*

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not err, my beloved brethren.

tude and benevolence of his nature, that he *tempteth not any man*; but on the contrary, abhors all sin, and lays no man, in any imaginable circumstances, under any necessity of committing it: *But everyman is tempted* by the innate weakness of his own nature, in concurrence with the circumstances of life in which he is placed, *being allured by his own lusts, and for want of wisely and resolutely opposing the first rising of them, being ensnared^h to the actual commission of sin*: For the gradation is much more swift and fatal than the generality of mankind are aware; and *indeed lust having conceived brings forth, actual sin*, by a speedy birth, where perhaps the full indulgence of it was not intended; and *sin, when it is finished, or perpetratedⁱ, is impregnated with death*, and tends in its consequences to the final ruin both of soul and body, as naturally as the conception of an animal does to the birth. *Therefore be not deceived^k, my beloved brethren*, by its flattering form, nor venture to trifle with temptations, under a fond conceit that you shall be able to break the connection, by stopping yourselves at pleasure in the advance of the danger, or recovering yourselves again when sin has been committed.

SECT.

I.

James

I. 13.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us learn this holy caution, and guard against those baits of Ver. *lust* under which *death* is concealed; remembering that God has made us with a power of determining our own actions, that he *tempts none* to evil, nor appoints to any such *temptations* as he knows to be in their own nature *irresistible*. Be our spiritual enemies ever so powerful, or ever so artful, they cannot do us any hurt, till we betray *ourselves* into their hands. Yet certain it is, that their artifice and their power, in conjunction with the advantage which the corruption of our own hearts gives them, make it requisite, that *conscious to ourselves of our deficiency in wisdom*, we should ask *it*

^h Being allured and ensnared: ἐξηκρομενος καὶ δελεαζομενος.] The original words have a singular beauty and elegance, containing an allusion to the method of drawing fishes out of the water with a hook, concealed under the bait, which they greedily devour.

ⁱ Finished, or perpetrated: ἀποτελεισ-

ταται.] The word is used in this sense by Polybius, in a passage quoted by Raphaelius in loc.

^k Therefore be not deceived.] This is agreeable to the reading of the *Alexandrian manuscript*, which after *μη* inserts *εν*, therefore; by which the connection is rendered more apparent.

SECT. I
 1 *it of God.* Let the *liberality* with which he gives it, and the *royal*
 2 *freedom* with which he has promised it, encourage us to ask it
 3 *Ver* with such constancy, that we may receive daily supplies; and with
 4 *firm confidence* in his goodness, that we may not *waver*, and *be like*
 5 *a wave of the sea tossed with the wind.*

6 Trusting in that supply of grace we receive from him, let us go
 7 forth calmly and cheerfully to meet such *trials* as the infinite wis-
 8 dom of God shall appoint for us, how various and pressing soever
 9 they may be; remembering they tend to *improve our patience*, and
 10 by *patience* to *perfect* every other grace; and that if we be not
 11 overcome, we shall be *approved*, and made more meet to *receive the*
 12 *crown of life which the Lord has promised to them that love him.*

13 And O, that the *love* of this blessed Lord, who has procured as well
 14 as promised it, may always render us superior to every trial, and
 15 *more than conquerors through him that hath loved us*, and thereby
 16 hath acquired to himself so just a claim to our supreme affection.
 17 With hearts faithfully engaged to him, and established in the firm-
 18 est resolutions for his service, let us look with indifference upon
 19 those *worldly circumstances*, about which they who have no sense
 20 of a higher interest are exceedingly solicitous; and let us regulate
 21 our value of all the good things of life, by a regard to their *aspect*
 22 upon our religious characters and hopes. — If *these* circumstances may
 23 improve *these*, let us look upon them as *true exaltation*; and if
 24 wealth and dignity, and applause, may *endanger these*, let us rather
 25 *fear* them, than *aspire* to them. Whatever we have obtained of
 26 those things which the men of the world are most ready to covet
 27 and admire, is *transitory and fading as the grass*, or even as *the*
 28 *flower of the field*; and sometimes like those beautiful, but tender
 29 productions of vegetable nature, is consumed by the *excess* of those
 30 causes to which it owes its existence and its beauty, “Give us,
 31 O Lord, *durable riches, and righteousness, and that honour which*
 32 *cometh from thee, and is immortal, as its great Original.*”

SECT. II.

The Apostle exhorts them to remember and acknowledge the manifold goodness of God, in the various blessings bestowed upon them; more especially in that of his regenerating grace, which should constrain them to the exercise of every virtue; especially to an ingenuous and candid reception of his word, and a concern resolutely and constantly to adhere to its directions; particularly, by bridling their tongues, and succouring such as were afflicted. James I. 17. to the end.

JAMES I. 17.

EVERY good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.

JAMES I. 17.

THAT ye may be fortified against every temptation, and may be animated to behave in a manner becoming your christian profession, remember, that every good gift, and every perfect gift which the children of men can receive, is from above; and the more compleatly excellent the benefit is, the more reason have they to acknowledge it, as descending from the great and eternal Father of lights^a, the blessed God, from whom reason and light and joy are derived. The sun itself is but a feeble image of his glory, with whom there is no variableness, nor so much as any shadow of turning^b, whereas the sun is continually varying, and has no sooner arrived to its meridian, but it begins to descend to the

SECT.
ii.James
I. 17

^a *Father of lights.*] It is the opinion of Glassius that this phrase only expresses the majesty and glory of God, as if the apostle had said, *The most illustrious and glorious Father.* But the accurate Bos most justly imagines, that the allusion to the sun which there is in the following words, begins here; and that the phrase refers to the heathens calling that glorious luminary, the *Father of light*, and the *author of light*; some instances of which he produces. See *Exercitai. Philolog. in loc.* The learned Albert cites a passage from Macrobius, in which the same title is applied to Jupiter. *Obser. Philolog. in loc.*

^b *Every good gift, &c.*] It is observable that the apostle makes use of two different words to express gift; the one of which is more poetical and, sounding than the other; and he has placed the words in such an order that they make an heroic verse. So that were they to be rendered, "*Every good gift, and every boon complete,*" it might perhaps give the English reader a more exact idea of the original; but as there is all imaginable reason to believe

this was quite an accidental thing, I thought it might have the appearance of affectation to have endeavoured to retain it. As neither *boon*, nor *present*, would have been proper in this connection, I know not how to render *δωσις* and *δωρεμα* by different words: such is the poverty of our language, or the defect of my acquaintance with it. But the words, a *completely excellent benefit*, are inserted in the paraphrase, to preserve some little imitation of the original. As some learned men have observed that *τροπος ἀποδοχῆς* is something of an astronomical phrase, and refers to the different aspects of the sun, as it approaches one or the other tropic, (see Dr. Bate's Works, p. 747,) I have been careful to express that sentiment. It hath been the opinion of some persons that this is intended to oppose some heretical notion of the influence of the stars in the affairs of human life; but I know not that any such ridiculous conceit had so early a footing in the church.

c *Kind*

2077.

11.

Ephesians

2. 18.

the west, or to its summer height, but it verges towards the winter again; causing the direction of the shadows at occasions, proportionably to vary. But the immutable and everlasting God has condescended to multiply these favours upon us, as Christians, which should bind our souls to him in the bonds of unchangeable love; *for of his own sovereign will he impregnated us with the powerful word of his Divine and evangelical truth, that we might be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures, more excellent than others, and in a peculiar manner separated and consecrated to him from among the rest of mankind.* Let us be conscious of the honour he has hereby done us, and take heed that we do not sacrilegiously alienate ourselves from his

- 1) service. *Therefore, my beloved brethren, that we may be thus religiously secured to him, and ever employed to the purposes he has directed, let every man be swift to hear the instructions of his word, and all the good advices which may be given him agreeable to the tenor of it, but be slow to speak, guarding solicitously against every rash and especially every proud and dictatorial expression; and slow to swear¹, not easily yielding to provocations, how injuriously soever he may be treated; For the wrath of man, even where it may be must ready to assume the title of religious zeal, worketh not, but on the contrary greatly obstructs the righteousness of God²; instead of promoting the cause of true religion in the world, it is a reproach to it, and a means of exciting the prejudices of mankind against it. Endeavour therefore to regulate your passions by these great maxims: and saying as at all times, as outward pleasure on the one hand, and all *unlawfulness**

18. Of his own will heget us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-fruits of his creatures.

19. Whosoever, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

20. For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

21. Whosoever let every man be slow to swear, and slow to anger, and slow to wrath.

1. *Not of his own will*—It has often been observed, that that which is said to be, *of his own will* that is called for Christendom, before the gospel was preached to the Gentiles, has it will not follow, that all the disputes of the many times to come by different men be called; and God will not have these various opinions to give dominion between them, and other churches. I think so, therefore, that I think to apply to the referring of some Christian positions to himself.

2. *Slow to speak*—It is well known that the Jewish doctors were apt to contend very passionately their different opinions,

but it is instead to study the general sublimity of human nature, as a happy consequence thereof is, that the nation is of general consensus.

3. *Whosoever let every man be slow to swear*—Some think the meaning to imply, A man, who is often a prey to angry passions, is incapable of performing that piety which God requires; but remembering the wisdom of the language of God says, be slow to swear, the meaning of such a commandment, and this duty that is so often repeated, makes that sense, that I was willing to be the judge in the point out that this passage.

meekness and ingrafted word, which is able to save your souls.

malignity on the other, compose yourselves with all meekness and gentleness of mind, to receive the ingrafted word^f; that word, which when implanted in your minds by the influence of Divine grace, is able to save your souls, and will effectually form them to a meetness for a happy immortality. But then you must remember to be doers of the word, and not hearers only, sophistically deceiving and imposing upon yourselves^g with an unprofitable attendance while it has no inward efficacy upon your hearts. For if any one be merely a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like a man carelessly beholding his natural face in a mirror, or glass, who sees some accidental spot upon it, which it would be convenient to wipe off. For his looking into the glass, and taking notice of it for the present, will signify nothing if he beholds himself and goes away, and immediately forgets what manner of person he was; forgets what rendered him disagreeable, and required to be corrected. But he is the wise and happy man, who bends down as it were his whole attention to this important matter, and is so set upon his own reformation and improvement, that he looketh into the gospel, that perfect law of liberty^h, by regarding which, the truest and noblest liberty is obtained, whatever confinement it may seem to lay us under: he, I say, who not only takes a transient view of its contents and designs, but continues [therein,] deeply reflecting upon it, and charging his own soul with its important doctrines

SECT.
ii.

Jams
I. 21.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your yourselves.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass;

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

^f *Ingrafted word* : ἐμφυτευ λόγος.] Some have translated this phrase, the natural, the innate, or internal word, referring to what hath been sometimes called, the light within; and it must be acknowledged that ἐμφυτός hath frequently this signification. But the version here given is undeniably justified by Bos and Elsner in loc. who illustrates this whole clause by some apposite and elegant quotations from the classics. The word of God is frequently compared to seed, or to a plant; particularly 1 Pet. i. 23; 1 John iii. 9; in which sense it is here said to be ἐμφυτός, ingrafted, or implanted in their minds.

^g *Hearers only, deceiving, &c.*] The Jews did indeed place much of their religion in going up at proper times to the synagogue to hear the law read; and there

may possibly be an allusion to that disposition. The exact signification of παραλογίζομαι, is imposing upon any by a sophistical shew of argument; and here it is used with great propriety, as Mr. Super-ville has observed, Sermon. Vol. IV. p. 124. Yet Dr. Edwards tells us the Jewish writers have a proverb among them, that "he who hears the law and does not practice it, is like a man, who plows and sows, but never reaps."

^h *Bends down his whole attention, and looketh, &c.*] I have endeavoured in the paraphrase to express the emphasis of the original οὐδε παρακινύσας. Compare 1 Pet. i. 12, where there is an evident allusion to the bending posture of the cherubim, who overshadowed the mercy-seat in the holy of holies.

i Not

and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

their affliction^m, with a tender regard to their calamitous circumstances, [and] endeavouring to oversee them, in such a manner as to provide for their relief, performing to others in distress suitable offices of kindness and charity; at the same time, taking a prudent care to *keep himself unspotted* from those bad practices, and irregular indulgences, which so generally prevail in the world about us, where so little either of religion or morality is to be found.

SECT.
ii.

James
I. 27.

IMPROVEMENT.

WITH all gratitude let us direct our eyes and our hearts to the Ver. *unchangeable Father of lights*, and acknowledge every good and every 17 perfect gift, as descending from him; but above all, the invaluable gift of his *regenerating grace*, to which, if we are the *first fruits* of 18 *his creatures*, we are certainly indebted, and are thereby laid under the strongest engagements to *consecrate* ourselves continually to his service. Let us therefore listen with a most *obedient* regard to every 19 intimation of his will, and set a guard upon all our *passions*, that they may move in sweet and harmonious subjection to it. Especially, let us be *slow to wrath*, and not imagine that we can be justified in the exorbitances of our angry transports, because they may possibly arise in the *cause of religion*. The *righteousness of God* is 20 not to be promoted, but on the contrary, will be *disgraced and obstructed*, by such outrageous ungovernable sallies. Let every *im-* 21 *pure and malignant* affection be therefore banished from our minds, and let us pray that the word of God may be so *ingrafted* into our souls, as to become the effectual means of our *salvation*. Let us not 22 rest in a mere *forgetful hearing*, or indeed in an ineffectual *remembrance*; but having *looked into* the gospel, that *perfect law*, which by binding the soul, gives it the truest *liberty*, let us by Divine as- 25 sistance *continue therein*, and improve to the immediate purposes of reformation, whatever knowledge we thereby gain; correcting whatever we observe *amiss* in ourselves. Particularly, let us study a proper command over our *tongues* and cultivate those 26 *charitable dispositions and offices*, in which *true and undefiled religion* is here said to consist; that *widows and orphans* may give us 27 their

^m To take the oversight of, &c.] So *προνομιαν* properly signifies, and may import, entering into measures for their subsistence, as well as sometimes going to

them, and conversing with them in their distresses. See the note on Mat. xxv. 36, Vol. II. § 166, note d.

a The

their blessing, as their guardians and friends, and that an *unspotted* life, untainted with the vices of a degenerate age, may bear witness, that though in the world, are we not of it, and that we act in consistency with those sublime and holy ends to which we profess as Christians to aspire.

SECT. III.

He cautions them against showing an undue respect to men's external circumstances, and resting satisfied in a partial observation of the Divine precepts: especially where the royal law of charity or universal benevolence was in question. James II. 1—13.

JAMES II. 1.

MY brethren, let me now caution you, that you hold not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, [the great Lord] of glory^a in a partial respect of persons, so as to give undue preference to any upon account of their external circumstances; whereas the relation in which the nearest of your fellow Christians may stand to him, who is so glorious a personage as the Son of God, should certainly recommend them to your regard and esteem. For I have observed something of this kind among many, which seems to require such an admonition as this; and have seen, that if a man come into your synagogue^b, when you are met for religious worship, with a gold ring^c, [and] other parts of a splendid dress, and at the same time there come in also a poor man

*James II. 1.
MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, in a partial respect of persons.*

a But if there come into your assembly a man with a gold ring, or with a purple, and there come in also a poor man in filthy raiment;

^a The Lord of glory.] Dr. Whiston would render it, The glorious faith of our Lord Jesus Christ; but I cannot think that he any means necessary.
^b A synagogue.] Mr. Conder and Dr. Whiston explain this of some synagogues, where our Jews held their assemblies, Mat. x. 17. Acts xvi. 13. And they imagine it is probable, that when they were converted to Christianity, they preserved the name, synagogues; and that the parable here proposed, related to two persons, who had chosen to stay, when the visible synagogue given to me, by the setting here in a more honorable place than the other, would tend to prevent justice in the former; and whom Menander says the Jewish priests particularly feared. But the reasoning both the parties as ended, does not rest

on supposition. It is argued that some men's distinctions might reasonably be made, and it would be allowed; that the *synagogue* properly such is used in high, and in cases of preference, when poor people remained there, even in behalf of Christianity, they had some peculiar title to be considered as poor.
[But a gold ring, &c.] Disposition supposed, which might have been rendered, Having a purple, adorned with gold rings. The learned do not say observed, that there was no gold thimble upon the common and luxury of their dress, were inconsistent to such men being with a conspicuous manner of costly and valuable rings, frequently worn upon one finger. *Observe, Paulus ad he.*

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool.

4 Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen then poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and

man in mean and sordid raiment; you are apt to show an undue regard to the former, and to put a visible slight on the latter, at his first appearance, without considering what may be the real character of the one or the other. *And* ³ whatever may be said in excuse for this, it is often blame-worthy; for if *ye have a respect*, as ye naturally have, *for him who wears a splendid dress, and say to him, Sit there in an honourable place; and say to the poor man, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool; And distinguish* ⁴ *not in yourselves* ^d according to the different characters of these two men, but only regard their outward appearance, *you even become judges, who reason ille* ^e; you seem by such conduct to determine, that external circumstances are chiefly to be considered; which certainly is wrong, and if it were to be pursued, would produce very iniquitous and unjustifiable sentiments and practices. By such a conduct as this, you court the ⁵ favour of the rich, and strongly intimate your contempt of the poor, as poor; but *hearken, my beloved brethren*, and consider, for it is peculiarly worthy of your most attentive regard; *Hath not God apparently chosen many, who are among the poor of this world, [to be] rich in faith* ^f; and does it not appear that they are so? Are they not heirs of the kingdom which he has promised to them that love him; and just upon the point of being carried to a glory, that will eclipse that of the greatest monarchs on earth? And does it become you, believing this, to despise those who for any thing you know, may in a few days be carried by angels into Abraham's bosom, and placed in the most distinguished rank among the guests at the celestial banquet? *But* this indeed is the ⁶ case; *you have often dishonoured the poor man*, though God may have condescended to visit him with such a gracious regard, and have enriched him with such inestimable mercies. On the other hand, *do not the rich* whom you court with so much respect and assiduity, *tyrannize over*

SECT.
iii.

James
II. 2.

you

^d *And distinguished not in yourselves*: *non* *discrepant in se ipsis.*] This I take to be the exact rendering of this clause, as the verb is of the middle signification, and that it should not be read as in our English version, with an interrogation.

^e *Judges who reason ill.*] Our English version in this place is literal, but at the same time very obscure and ambiguous.

Beza's observation is a just one, that the phrase in the original is an Hebraism, and it is accordingly rendered by him, *Judices male ratiocinantes, Judges who reason ill.*

^f *To be rich in faith.*] The ellipsis in these words of *to be* or *vivendi*, is common; as Bos, and after him, Albert hath observed. Accordingly I have rendered it, *to be rich in faith.*

2 Tim.
III.

James
II. 7.

you, and draw you to their tribunals? Are not most of the rich your persecutors, rather than your friends? Do they not blaspheme the honourable name of our Lord Jesus Christ, by which you are called? And do they not often compel you to blaspheme it, and inflict the severest penalties upon you if you refuse? So that on the whole, they often prove themselves the vilest of men. And can you think, that when this is the case, and you see so many poor saints courageously enduring these extremities, that you ought to fix your eyes so much on a glaring outside, and overlook that heroic worth which so often appears under a veil of poverty? I beseech you, learn to think more reasonably at all times, and especially to bring better sentiments into your assemblies for public worship. And not only in such instances, but in all others, endeavour to act equitably; for if ye fulfil the noble and royal law, which, according to that expression of the scripture ought with a kind of imperial authority to govern all our sentiments; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself; ye do well: that would be in every thing a rule to you, and particularly here; for none of you if you were reduced to poverty, would wish to be treated with marks of slight and contempt on that account, without any regard to your character in other respects. But if ye do in this partial manner, accept the persons of men, ye work iniquity therein, being convicted by the law I have just now mentioned, as transgressors of it. And give me leave to say, that whatever zeal you may show for any other precepts, if convicted here, you become guilty before God, and forfeit your acceptance with him. For whoever shall keep the whole law in every other instance, but allow himself to offend in one [particular] he is in effect guilty of all; as he that committed but one capital crime, would as surely suffer death, as if he had committed all that ever were prohibited in that light. For it is certain, that he disregards the authority of the Law-giver, which has established every precept equally; as it is evident, he that says, Thou shalt not commit adultery, hath also said, Thou shalt do no murder. If therefore thou art not an adulterer, but committest murder, thou art evidently a transgressor of the law. Hence it appears, that it is not by a regard to the Divine authority

and draw you before the judgment seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfil the royal law, according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convicted of the law as transgressors.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one part, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law.

ty

SECT.
iii.

James
11. 1^o

12 So speak ye; and
so do, as they that shall
be judged by the law
of liberty.

13 For he shall have
judgment without
mercy, that hath shew-
ed no mercy; and
mercy rejoiceth a-
gainst judgment.

ty that thou abstainest from the former crime, since that would equally have preserved thee from the latter. Let it therefore be your care, that ye *so speak and so act as those that shall be judged by the law of liberty*, by the glorious gospel, which is a dispensation that sets us at liberty from the bondage of the Jewish ritual, and directs us to all the branches of that virtue and holiness, which is the truest liberty of the mind, and which being so excellent, must subject us to severer punishment if we presume to condemn it. And especially remember to maintain a regard to it, where the rules of charity are concerned. *For* you know a particular stress 13 is laid upon this branch, as of the highest moment in the sight of God; as we are warned by our compassionate Lord himself, that on the one hand, *he shall have judgment without mercy, who hath not exercised mercy*; and on the other hand, *mercy rejoiceth against judgment* and emboldens our hopes when we stand before that merciful Being, whom we have resembled in that amiable part of his character.

IMPROVEMENT.

THE *apostle* could not intend to condemn those *civil distinctions* which are founded upon the different relations and circumstances of mankind in the present world; but surely God 4 intended to teach us, how *little* esteem he sets upon *riches*, by bestowing them on many of the most *undeserving* of mankind, while he withholds them from his *dearest children*; and to *admire* them, and others, on account of their *riches*, while we pour 6 *contempt* on the *poor*, as poor, though so many of them are distinguished by the riches of the Divine favour, must be highly *unreasonable*, and to God highly offensive. As for those who are *poor in this world*, but *rich in faith*, let them adore the Divine munificence to them, and think with pleasure of those *durable riches*, 5 and of that *everlasting kingdom*, which God has *prepared for them* as their *inheritance*.

Whatever our stations be, let us pray that the *royal law* may be 8 inscribed upon our hearts, and that we may *love our neighbour as ourselves*; guarding against that mean and prohibited *respect of persons*, which would expose us to *conviction*, as *transgressors of the law*. Let us also learn to guard against that *partiality* in our obedience to it, which is utterly inconsistent with *sincerity*. Let us re- 10 member,

SECT. III. member, that the Divine authority *equally* establishes *every* precept of it, and the *generous* nature of the *gospel* dispensation, as a
 11 *law of liberty*, will be a sad aggravation of our presumptuous viola-
 12 tions, which the *best* of men may see reason to charge themselves
 13 with, should certainly engage our most earnest applications to God
 for *mercy*; and as we desire to obtain it, let it be our care to *exer-*
cise mercy to others, both in the *candour* of our censures on the one
 hand, and the readiness of our *liberality* on the other.

SECT. IV.

The Apostle largely descends on the inefficacy of a mere historical faith, and carries, by most striking instances and illustrations, the utter insufficiency of it for our justification and eternal salvation. James II. 14, to the end.

JAMES II. 14.

SECT. IV. IT is with real grief that I perceive many of
 you seem highly to value yourselves upon the
 profession you make of the Christian religion,
 without being suitably impressed with a practi-
 cal sense of its important principles, and influ-
 enced to a life agreeable to them. But *what*
advantage [is there] my brethren, if any one
says, he has faith, but has not suitable works?
 to support the justice of that pretension? Can
 such a *faith*, as may be separated from good
 11 *works save him?* Consider the case, when men
 make professions of *charity*, without producing
 the proper fruits of it, and you will easily see
 how vain such a pretension is. *For instance,*

JAMES II. 14.

WHAT good a pro-
 fit my brethren
 though a man say he
 hath faith, and have
 not works? Can faith
 save him?

13 If a brother or
 sister be naked, and
 destitute of daily food.

a

a *If any one say he has faith, but has not suitable works.* I am surprised at the immense pains commentators have taken, to reconcile St. Paul and St. James; and the many hypotheses they have formed for that purpose. Whereas to me nothing is more evident, than that the ideas they affix to the words, *faith*, and *works*, are entirely different. St. James, by the word *faith*, means merely an assent to the truth of religious principles, without determining whether it be, or be not, *informed*; and then declares, that in man this assent does not produce good works, that is, the solid virtues of the heart and life, it cannot be accepted by God. Whereas St. Paul by the word *faith* means a cordial and vital

assent to Divine truth, which influences the heart to a holy temper, and according to the gracious intent of the gospel, entitles a man to Divine acceptance, without any regard at all to the *Mosaic law*, and prevails to the production of any of those good works which will necessarily be the fruit of it. Had Luther calmly considered this, he would not have denied the *importance* of St. James, out of regard to his supposed *heterodoxy* in the *tenets* of justification; nor would one of his followers have presumed to charge him, especially with *heresy*, as *Landauer* tells us he did, *Mendham est Jacobus in equitatem. Hamburgh. Tract. l. m. 19.*

b Faith

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed, and filled; notwithstanding, ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works; shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

19 Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils

a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food for the subsistence of life. And one of you, who calls himself a Christian, say to them, We heartily pity your case, and feel the tender emotions of that love which our relation to each other requires; depart therefore in peace, whithersoever the Providence of God may lead you, and I sincerely wish that you may meet with suitable accommodations: may ye be clothed and sheltered, warmed, and fed to the full; but with all these soft addresses, if ye give not to them either food, or raiment, or any money to purchase the things necessary for the body; what [does it] profit them to be addressed with such hypocritical professions of love? Yea, does it not rather seem a cruel mockery, than a real kindness? So also faith, how zealously soever it may be professed, and how orthodox soever those articles are, to which an assent is given, if it have not suitable works to attend it, being by itself, is dead^b and producing no substantial fruit, is altogether insignificant. But one better instructed in Christianity, may perhaps say to one of these forward professors, in order to bring matters to a short issue, Thou sayest that thou hast faith, and I make it appear in my life and conversation, that I have works, which naturally spring from that principle: give me then the evidence I offer thee; shew me thy faith by thy works^c and I will also in return shew thee my faith by my works; let us without quarrelling about different explications of faith, make it manifest to each other, that our profession is truly solid, by its substantial effects upon our tempers and lives. Thou assuredly believest that there is one only true and living God, and therein thou doest well: it is the grand fundamental principle of all true religion. But

b Faith, if it have not works, &c.] From this passage it appears, that we should not confine the idea of the word faith; as used by St. James, to a mere assent; for it would be an absurd supposition, that a mere assent should have any works. By this word therefore St. James, (as we observed in the former note,) means simply an assent, whether it be or be not effectual. Nor is it indeed the assent that saves when accompanied with works. So that the apostle's assertion is more critically and

correctly true, than many of his commentators have apprehended.

c Shew me thy faith, &c.] This version is so very different from our own, that many of my English readers will be much surprised at it.—But I have followed the most and best copies, which read it, as in the margin of our bibles, *ἐκ των εργαων σου*—and—*ἐκ των εργαων μου*, though some copies read the first clause, *χωρις των εργαων σου* which our translators have followed.

d The

SECT.
IV.

JAMES
II. 19.

But remember, it is a principle common to those who are entirely destitute of religion; for *the devils also firmly believe it*, and cannot withhold their assent; they are persuaded by dreadful experience of his existence, and of the terrors of his wrath, so as even to tremble in the expectation of that full display of it, to which they know they are inevitably doomed. *But wilt thou save, O vain empty man*, who rearest in that which might be found in equal, or in higher degrees, in the infernal spirits, *that faith without works*, a persuasion of the truths of Christianity, if it produces no solid fruits of holiness, is really *dead* as to any valuable purpose that can be expected from it. Take an instance of this in the most celebrated of all the patriarchs; I mean, the instance of *Abraham, our great and illustrious father*; *was he not plainly justified by works*, when, in consequence of that full persuasion he had of a Divine commission and command to do it, *he offered his son Isaac upon the altar*, intending, in obedience to what he apprehended the will of God, actually to have slain him, and to have trusted in God to accomplish the promise of a numerous seed to descend from him, by raising him from the dead. *Thou seest then in this instance, that faith co-operated with his works*, and animated him to zeal and self-denial in them; and *faith was perfected by works*; the integrity of it was made fully apparent to himself, to angels, and to God. *And thus the scripture was fulfilled, which says*, (Gen. xv. 6,) referring to what passed long before this, *Abraham believed God, and it was imputed to him for righteousness*; and in consequence of this he was treated by God with such peculiar endearment, that *he was even called the Friend of God*; as it is said, (Isa. xli. 8.) the seed of Abraham my friend. This proved the sincerity of his faith, and that he was in some degree worthy the honour of the Divine friendship. *You see then by this instance of the great father of the faithful*, if the characters of the children are to be

devils also believe and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our great father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

22 Seest thou how his faith wrought with his works, and his works was faith made perfect?

23 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness; and he was called the Friend of God.

24 Ye see then how that by works a man is

d The scripture was fulfilled, &c.] This text St. Paul quotes Rom. iv. 3, to prove that Abraham was justified by faith; which plainly shows, that the faith he was justified by, was

such a faith as includes good works in it, as a certain principle of them; and consequently, establishing what was said above for removing from these two apostles in the clearest manner.

is justified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

be estimated in the same manner as those of the father, *that a man is justified by works, and not by faith only*: it is by no means enough, that the great principles of religion be credited, if they have not also their practical influence on the heart and life. *In like manner also,* I 25 might illustrate the matter by the further instance of *Rahab*, who had been *the harlot*, though afterwards reclaimed by Divine grace: *was she not justified by works*, when in consequence of that faith which she professed in the God of Israel, *she received*, entertained, and sheltered *the spies*, who came to observe the state of Jericho, and at the apparent hazard of her life, concealed them from those that came to search after them; till at length, knowing which way the pursuers would go, *she sent them out another way*, and so made effectual provision for their escape. And on such principles must all 26 others expect justification and salvation; *for as the body, without the spirit, is but a dead carcase*, how fair and entire soever it may appear, and will at length fall into putrefaction and dissolution; *so such a faith as remains, without the substantial fruits of good works*, which ought ever to attend it, *is also dead*: it now appears as a carcase in the sight of God, and as such will ere long perish.

SECT.
IV.

James
II. 24.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET this great and important lesson, which the apostle here Ver. teaches so plainly, and inculcates so largely, be never forgotten. 24, &c. It is true indeed, (as *St. Paul* elsewhere fully proves,) that we *are justified by faith in Christ, without the works of the law*. The works of the *Mosaic law*, are by no means necessary; and it is not by our obedience to *any law*, but by embracing and resting upon the *mercy of God in Christ*, for our *salvation*, that we obtain it. Nevertheless, it is vain to pretend to such a *faith, if good works* 26 are not produced by it; and we might as soon expect the guardianship and counsel, the offices and consolations of friendship, from a *dead corpse*, as happiness from a *mere assent*, even to the most important doctrines. Let us therefore endeavour to *shew our* 18 *faith by our works*. Let us be ready, with *Abraham*, to offer up 21 our dearest comforts to God. Let us, with *Rahab*, be willing even to *expose our lives* in the defence of *God's people*, and his cause

¹⁰ ¹¹ ¹² ¹³ ¹⁴ ¹⁵ ¹⁶ ¹⁷ ¹⁸ ¹⁹ ²⁰ ²¹ ²² ²³ ²⁴ ²⁵ ²⁶ ²⁷ ²⁸ ²⁹ ³⁰ ³¹ ³² ³³ ³⁴ ³⁵ ³⁶ ³⁷ ³⁸ ³⁹ ⁴⁰ ⁴¹ ⁴² ⁴³ ⁴⁴ ⁴⁵ ⁴⁶ ⁴⁷ ⁴⁸ ⁴⁹ ⁵⁰ ⁵¹ ⁵² ⁵³ ⁵⁴ ⁵⁵ ⁵⁶ ⁵⁷ ⁵⁸ ⁵⁹ ⁶⁰ ⁶¹ ⁶² ⁶³ ⁶⁴ ⁶⁵ ⁶⁶ ⁶⁷ ⁶⁸ ⁶⁹ ⁷⁰ ⁷¹ ⁷² ⁷³ ⁷⁴ ⁷⁵ ⁷⁶ ⁷⁷ ⁷⁸ ⁷⁹ ⁸⁰ ⁸¹ ⁸² ⁸³ ⁸⁴ ⁸⁵ ⁸⁶ ⁸⁷ ⁸⁸ ⁸⁹ ⁹⁰ ⁹¹ ⁹² ⁹³ ⁹⁴ ⁹⁵ ⁹⁶ ⁹⁷ ⁹⁸ ⁹⁹ ¹⁰⁰ ¹⁰¹ ¹⁰² ¹⁰³ ¹⁰⁴ ¹⁰⁵ ¹⁰⁶ ¹⁰⁷ ¹⁰⁸ ¹⁰⁹ ¹¹⁰ ¹¹¹ ¹¹² ¹¹³ ¹¹⁴ ¹¹⁵ ¹¹⁶ ¹¹⁷ ¹¹⁸ ¹¹⁹ ¹²⁰ ¹²¹ ¹²² ¹²³ ¹²⁴ ¹²⁵ ¹²⁶ ¹²⁷ ¹²⁸ ¹²⁹ ¹³⁰ ¹³¹ ¹³² ¹³³ ¹³⁴ ¹³⁵ ¹³⁶ ¹³⁷ ¹³⁸ ¹³⁹ ¹⁴⁰ ¹⁴¹ ¹⁴² ¹⁴³ ¹⁴⁴ ¹⁴⁵ ¹⁴⁶ ¹⁴⁷ ¹⁴⁸ ¹⁴⁹ ¹⁵⁰ ¹⁵¹ ¹⁵² ¹⁵³ ¹⁵⁴ ¹⁵⁵ ¹⁵⁶ ¹⁵⁷ ¹⁵⁸ ¹⁵⁹ ¹⁶⁰ ¹⁶¹ ¹⁶² ¹⁶³ ¹⁶⁴ ¹⁶⁵ ¹⁶⁶ ¹⁶⁷ ¹⁶⁸ ¹⁶⁹ ¹⁷⁰ ¹⁷¹ ¹⁷² ¹⁷³ ¹⁷⁴ ¹⁷⁵ ¹⁷⁶ ¹⁷⁷ ¹⁷⁸ ¹⁷⁹ ¹⁸⁰ ¹⁸¹ ¹⁸² ¹⁸³ ¹⁸⁴ ¹⁸⁵ ¹⁸⁶ ¹⁸⁷ ¹⁸⁸ ¹⁸⁹ ¹⁹⁰ ¹⁹¹ ¹⁹² ¹⁹³ ¹⁹⁴ ¹⁹⁵ ¹⁹⁶ ¹⁹⁷ ¹⁹⁸ ¹⁹⁹ ²⁰⁰ ²⁰¹ ²⁰² ²⁰³ ²⁰⁴ ²⁰⁵ ²⁰⁶ ²⁰⁷ ²⁰⁸ ²⁰⁹ ²¹⁰ ²¹¹ ²¹² ²¹³ ²¹⁴ ²¹⁵ ²¹⁶ ²¹⁷ ²¹⁸ ²¹⁹ ²²⁰ ²²¹ ²²² ²²³ ²²⁴ ²²⁵ ²²⁶ ²²⁷ ²²⁸ ²²⁹ ²³⁰ ²³¹ ²³² ²³³ ²³⁴ ²³⁵ ²³⁶ ²³⁷ ²³⁸ ²³⁹ ²⁴⁰ ²⁴¹ ²⁴² ²⁴³ ²⁴⁴ ²⁴⁵ ²⁴⁶ ²⁴⁷ ²⁴⁸ ²⁴⁹ ²⁵⁰ ²⁵¹ ²⁵² ²⁵³ ²⁵⁴ ²⁵⁵ ²⁵⁶ ²⁵⁷ ²⁵⁸ ²⁵⁹ ²⁶⁰ ²⁶¹ ²⁶² ²⁶³ ²⁶⁴ ²⁶⁵ ²⁶⁶ ²⁶⁷ ²⁶⁸ ²⁶⁹ ²⁷⁰ ²⁷¹ ²⁷² ²⁷³ ²⁷⁴ ²⁷⁵ ²⁷⁶ ²⁷⁷ ²⁷⁸ ²⁷⁹ ²⁸⁰ ²⁸¹ ²⁸² ²⁸³ ²⁸⁴ ²⁸⁵ ²⁸⁶ ²⁸⁷ ²⁸⁸ ²⁸⁹ ²⁹⁰ ²⁹¹ ²⁹² ²⁹³ ²⁹⁴ ²⁹⁵ ²⁹⁶ ²⁹⁷ ²⁹⁸ ²⁹⁹ ³⁰⁰ ³⁰¹ ³⁰² ³⁰³ ³⁰⁴ ³⁰⁵ ³⁰⁶ ³⁰⁷ ³⁰⁸ ³⁰⁹ ³¹⁰ ³¹¹ ³¹² ³¹³ ³¹⁴ ³¹⁵ ³¹⁶ ³¹⁷ ³¹⁸ ³¹⁹ ³²⁰ ³²¹ ³²² ³²³ ³²⁴ ³²⁵ ³²⁶ ³²⁷ ³²⁸ ³²⁹ ³³⁰ ³³¹ ³³² ³³³ ³³⁴ ³³⁵ ³³⁶ ³³⁷ ³³⁸ ³³⁹ ³⁴⁰ ³⁴¹ ³⁴² ³⁴³ ³⁴⁴ ³⁴⁵ ³⁴⁶ ³⁴⁷ ³⁴⁸ ³⁴⁹ ³⁵⁰ ³⁵¹ ³⁵² ³⁵³ ³⁵⁴ ³⁵⁵ ³⁵⁶ ³⁵⁷ ³⁵⁸ ³⁵⁹ ³⁶⁰ ³⁶¹ ³⁶² ³⁶³ ³⁶⁴ ³⁶⁵ ³⁶⁶ ³⁶⁷ ³⁶⁸ ³⁶⁹ ³⁷⁰ ³⁷¹ ³⁷² ³⁷³ ³⁷⁴ ³⁷⁵ ³⁷⁶ ³⁷⁷ ³⁷⁸ ³⁷⁹ ³⁸⁰ ³⁸¹ ³⁸² ³⁸³ ³⁸⁴ ³⁸⁵ ³⁸⁶ ³⁸⁷ ³⁸⁸ ³⁸⁹ ³⁹⁰ ³⁹¹ ³⁹² ³⁹³ ³⁹⁴ ³⁹⁵ ³⁹⁶ ³⁹⁷ ³⁹⁸ ³⁹⁹ ⁴⁰⁰ ⁴⁰¹ ⁴⁰² ⁴⁰³ ⁴⁰⁴ ⁴⁰⁵ ⁴⁰⁶ ⁴⁰⁷ ⁴⁰⁸ ⁴⁰⁹ ⁴¹⁰ ⁴¹¹ ⁴¹² ⁴¹³ ⁴¹⁴ ⁴¹⁵ ⁴¹⁶ ⁴¹⁷ ⁴¹⁸ ⁴¹⁹ ⁴²⁰ ⁴²¹ ⁴²² ⁴²³ ⁴²⁴ ⁴²⁵ ⁴²⁶ ⁴²⁷ ⁴²⁸ ⁴²⁹ ⁴³⁰ ⁴³¹ ⁴³² ⁴³³ ⁴³⁴ ⁴³⁵ ⁴³⁶ ⁴³⁷ ⁴³⁸ ⁴³⁹ ⁴⁴⁰ ⁴⁴¹ ⁴⁴² ⁴⁴³ ⁴⁴⁴ ⁴⁴⁵ ⁴⁴⁶ ⁴⁴⁷ ⁴⁴⁸ ⁴⁴⁹ ⁴⁵⁰ ⁴⁵¹ ⁴⁵² ⁴⁵³ ⁴⁵⁴ ⁴⁵⁵ ⁴⁵⁶ ⁴⁵⁷ ⁴⁵⁸ ⁴⁵⁹ ⁴⁶⁰ ⁴⁶¹ ⁴⁶² ⁴⁶³ ⁴⁶⁴ ⁴⁶⁵ ⁴⁶⁶ ⁴⁶⁷ ⁴⁶⁸ ⁴⁶⁹ ⁴⁷⁰ ⁴⁷¹ ⁴⁷² ⁴⁷³ ⁴⁷⁴ ⁴⁷⁵ ⁴⁷⁶ ⁴⁷⁷ ⁴⁷⁸ ⁴⁷⁹ ⁴⁸⁰ ⁴⁸¹ ⁴⁸² ⁴⁸³ ⁴⁸⁴ ⁴⁸⁵ ⁴⁸⁶ ⁴⁸⁷ ⁴⁸⁸ ⁴⁸⁹ ⁴⁹⁰ ⁴⁹¹ ⁴⁹² ⁴⁹³ ⁴⁹⁴ ⁴⁹⁵ ⁴⁹⁶ ⁴⁹⁷ ⁴⁹⁸ ⁴⁹⁹ ⁵⁰⁰ ⁵⁰¹ ⁵⁰² ⁵⁰³ ⁵⁰⁴ ⁵⁰⁵ ⁵⁰⁶ ⁵⁰⁷ ⁵⁰⁸ ⁵⁰⁹ ⁵¹⁰ ⁵¹¹ ⁵¹² ⁵¹³ ⁵¹⁴ ⁵¹⁵ ⁵¹⁶ ⁵¹⁷ ⁵¹⁸ ⁵¹⁹ ⁵²⁰ ⁵²¹ ⁵²² ⁵²³ ⁵²⁴ ⁵²⁵ ⁵²⁶ ⁵²⁷ ⁵²⁸ ⁵²⁹ ⁵³⁰ ⁵³¹ ⁵³² ⁵³³ ⁵³⁴ ⁵³⁵ ⁵³⁶ ⁵³⁷ ⁵³⁸ ⁵³⁹ ⁵⁴⁰ ⁵⁴¹ ⁵⁴² ⁵⁴³ ⁵⁴⁴ ⁵⁴⁵ ⁵⁴⁶ ⁵⁴⁷ ⁵⁴⁸ ⁵⁴⁹ ⁵⁵⁰ ⁵⁵¹ ⁵⁵² ⁵⁵³ ⁵⁵⁴ ⁵⁵⁵ ⁵⁵⁶ ⁵⁵⁷ ⁵⁵⁸ ⁵⁵⁹ ⁵⁶⁰ ⁵⁶¹ ⁵⁶² ⁵⁶³ ⁵⁶⁴ ⁵⁶⁵ ⁵⁶⁶ ⁵⁶⁷ ⁵⁶⁸ ⁵⁶⁹ ⁵⁷⁰ ⁵⁷¹ ⁵⁷² ⁵⁷³ ⁵⁷⁴ ⁵⁷⁵ ⁵⁷⁶ ⁵⁷⁷ ⁵⁷⁸ ⁵⁷⁹ ⁵⁸⁰ ⁵⁸¹ ⁵⁸² ⁵⁸³ ⁵⁸⁴ ⁵⁸⁵ ⁵⁸⁶ ⁵⁸⁷ ⁵⁸⁸ ⁵⁸⁹ ⁵⁹⁰ ⁵⁹¹ ⁵⁹² ⁵⁹³ ⁵⁹⁴ ⁵⁹⁵ ⁵⁹⁶ ⁵⁹⁷ ⁵⁹⁸ ⁵⁹⁹ ⁶⁰⁰ ⁶⁰¹ ⁶⁰² ⁶⁰³ ⁶⁰⁴ ⁶⁰⁵ ⁶⁰⁶ ⁶⁰⁷ ⁶⁰⁸ ⁶⁰⁹ ⁶¹⁰ ⁶¹¹ ⁶¹² ⁶¹³ ⁶¹⁴ ⁶¹⁵ ⁶¹⁶ ⁶¹⁷ ⁶¹⁸ ⁶¹⁹ ⁶²⁰ ⁶²¹ ⁶²² ⁶²³ ⁶²⁴ ⁶²⁵ ⁶²⁶ ⁶²⁷ ⁶²⁸ ⁶²⁹ ⁶³⁰ ⁶³¹ ⁶³² ⁶³³ ⁶³⁴ ⁶³⁵ ⁶³⁶ ⁶³⁷ ⁶³⁸ ⁶³⁹ ⁶⁴⁰ ⁶⁴¹ ⁶⁴² ⁶⁴³ ⁶⁴⁴ ⁶⁴⁵ ⁶⁴⁶ ⁶⁴⁷ ⁶⁴⁸ ⁶⁴⁹ ⁶⁵⁰ ⁶⁵¹ ⁶⁵² ⁶⁵³ ⁶⁵⁴ ⁶⁵⁵ ⁶⁵⁶ ⁶⁵⁷ ⁶⁵⁸ ⁶⁵⁹ ⁶⁶⁰ ⁶⁶¹ ⁶⁶² ⁶⁶³ ⁶⁶⁴ ⁶⁶⁵ ⁶⁶⁶ ⁶⁶⁷ ⁶⁶⁸ ⁶⁶⁹ ⁶⁷⁰ ⁶⁷¹ ⁶⁷² ⁶⁷³ ⁶⁷⁴ ⁶⁷⁵ ⁶⁷⁶ ⁶⁷⁷ ⁶⁷⁸ ⁶⁷⁹ ⁶⁸⁰ ⁶⁸¹ ⁶⁸² ⁶⁸³ ⁶⁸⁴ ⁶⁸⁵ ⁶⁸⁶ ⁶⁸⁷ ⁶⁸⁸ ⁶⁸⁹ ⁶⁹⁰ ⁶⁹¹ ⁶⁹² ⁶⁹³ ⁶⁹⁴ ⁶⁹⁵ ⁶⁹⁶ ⁶⁹⁷ ⁶⁹⁸ ⁶⁹⁹ ⁷⁰⁰ ⁷⁰¹ ⁷⁰² ⁷⁰³ ⁷⁰⁴ ⁷⁰⁵ ⁷⁰⁶ ⁷⁰⁷ ⁷⁰⁸ ⁷⁰⁹ ⁷¹⁰ ⁷¹¹ ⁷¹² ⁷¹³ ⁷¹⁴ ⁷¹⁵ ⁷¹⁶ ⁷¹⁷ ⁷¹⁸ ⁷¹⁹ ⁷²⁰ ⁷²¹ ⁷²² ⁷²³ ⁷²⁴ ⁷²⁵ ⁷²⁶ ⁷²⁷ ⁷²⁸ ⁷²⁹ ⁷³⁰ ⁷³¹ ⁷³² ⁷³³ ⁷³⁴ ⁷³⁵ ⁷³⁶ ⁷³⁷ ⁷³⁸ ⁷³⁹ ⁷⁴⁰ ⁷⁴¹ ⁷⁴² ⁷⁴³ ⁷⁴⁴ ⁷⁴⁵ ⁷⁴⁶ ⁷⁴⁷ ⁷⁴⁸ ⁷⁴⁹ ⁷⁵⁰ ⁷⁵¹ ⁷⁵² ⁷⁵³ ⁷⁵⁴ ⁷⁵⁵ ⁷⁵⁶ ⁷⁵⁷ ⁷⁵⁸ ⁷⁵⁹ ⁷⁶⁰ ⁷⁶¹ ⁷⁶² ⁷⁶³ ⁷⁶⁴ ⁷⁶⁵ ⁷⁶⁶ ⁷⁶⁷ ⁷⁶⁸ ⁷⁶⁹ ⁷⁷⁰ ⁷⁷¹ ⁷⁷² ⁷⁷³ ⁷⁷⁴ ⁷⁷⁵ ⁷⁷⁶ ⁷⁷⁷ ⁷⁷⁸ ⁷⁷⁹ ⁷⁸⁰ ⁷⁸¹ ⁷⁸² ⁷⁸³ ⁷⁸⁴ ⁷⁸⁵ ⁷⁸⁶ ⁷⁸⁷ ⁷⁸⁸ ⁷⁸⁹ ⁷⁹⁰ ⁷⁹¹ ⁷⁹² ⁷⁹³ ⁷⁹⁴ ⁷⁹⁵ ⁷⁹⁶ ⁷⁹⁷ ⁷⁹⁸ ⁷⁹⁹ ⁸⁰⁰ ⁸⁰¹ ⁸⁰² ⁸⁰³ ⁸⁰⁴ ⁸⁰⁵ ⁸⁰⁶ ⁸⁰⁷ ⁸⁰⁸ ⁸⁰⁹ ⁸¹⁰ ⁸¹¹ ⁸¹² ⁸¹³ ⁸¹⁴ ⁸¹⁵ ⁸¹⁶ ⁸¹⁷ ⁸¹⁸ ⁸¹⁹ ⁸²⁰ ⁸²¹ ⁸²² ⁸²³ ⁸²⁴ ⁸²⁵ ⁸²⁶ ⁸²⁷ ⁸²⁸ ⁸²⁹ ⁸³⁰ ⁸³¹ ⁸³² ⁸³³ ⁸³⁴ ⁸³⁵ ⁸³⁶ ⁸³⁷ ⁸³⁸ ⁸³⁹ ⁸⁴⁰ ⁸⁴¹ ⁸⁴² ⁸⁴³ ⁸⁴⁴ ⁸⁴⁵ ⁸⁴⁶ ⁸⁴⁷ ⁸⁴⁸ ⁸⁴⁹ ⁸⁵⁰ ⁸⁵¹ ⁸⁵² ⁸⁵³ ⁸⁵⁴ ⁸⁵⁵ ⁸⁵⁶ ⁸⁵⁷ ⁸⁵⁸ ⁸⁵⁹ ⁸⁶⁰ ⁸⁶¹ ⁸⁶² ⁸⁶³ ⁸⁶⁴ ⁸⁶⁵ ⁸⁶⁶ ⁸⁶⁷ ⁸⁶⁸ ⁸⁶⁹ ⁸⁷⁰ ⁸⁷¹ ⁸⁷² ⁸⁷³ ⁸⁷⁴ ⁸⁷⁵ ⁸⁷⁶ ⁸⁷⁷ ⁸⁷⁸ ⁸⁷⁹ ⁸⁸⁰ ⁸⁸¹ ⁸⁸² ⁸⁸³ ⁸⁸⁴ ⁸⁸⁵ ⁸⁸⁶ ⁸⁸⁷ ⁸⁸⁸ ⁸⁸⁹ ⁸⁹⁰ ⁸⁹¹ ⁸⁹² ⁸⁹³ ⁸⁹⁴ ⁸⁹⁵ ⁸⁹⁶ ⁸⁹⁷ ⁸⁹⁸ ⁸⁹⁹ ⁹⁰⁰ ⁹⁰¹ ⁹⁰² ⁹⁰³ ⁹⁰⁴ ⁹⁰⁵ ⁹⁰⁶ ⁹⁰⁷ ⁹⁰⁸ ⁹⁰⁹ ⁹¹⁰ ⁹¹¹ ⁹¹² ⁹¹³ ⁹¹⁴ ⁹¹⁵ ⁹¹⁶ ⁹¹⁷ ⁹¹⁸ ⁹¹⁹ ⁹²⁰ ⁹²¹ ⁹²² ⁹²³ ⁹²⁴ ⁹²⁵ ⁹²⁶ ⁹²⁷ ⁹²⁸ ⁹²⁹ ⁹³⁰ ⁹³¹ ⁹³² ⁹³³ ⁹³⁴ ⁹³⁵ ⁹³⁶ ⁹³⁷ ⁹³⁸ ⁹³⁹ ⁹⁴⁰ ⁹⁴¹ ⁹⁴² ⁹⁴³ ⁹⁴⁴ ⁹⁴⁵ ⁹⁴⁶ ⁹⁴⁷ ⁹⁴⁸ ⁹⁴⁹ ⁹⁵⁰ ⁹⁵¹ ⁹⁵² ⁹⁵³ ⁹⁵⁴ ⁹⁵⁵ ⁹⁵⁶ ⁹⁵⁷ ⁹⁵⁸ ⁹⁵⁹ ⁹⁶⁰ ⁹⁶¹ ⁹⁶² ⁹⁶³ ⁹⁶⁴ ⁹⁶⁵ ⁹⁶⁶ ⁹⁶⁷ ⁹⁶⁸ ⁹⁶⁹ ⁹⁷⁰ ⁹⁷¹ ⁹⁷² ⁹⁷³ ⁹⁷⁴ ⁹⁷⁵ ⁹⁷⁶ ⁹⁷⁷ ⁹⁷⁸ ⁹⁷⁹ ⁹⁸⁰ ⁹⁸¹ ⁹⁸² ⁹⁸³ ⁹⁸⁴ ⁹⁸⁵ ⁹⁸⁶ ⁹⁸⁷ ⁹⁸⁸ ⁹⁸⁹ ⁹⁹⁰ ⁹⁹¹ ⁹⁹² ⁹⁹³ ⁹⁹⁴ ⁹⁹⁵ ⁹⁹⁶ ⁹⁹⁷ ⁹⁹⁸ ⁹⁹⁹ ¹⁰⁰⁰ ¹⁰⁰¹ ¹⁰⁰² ¹⁰⁰³ ¹⁰⁰⁴ ¹⁰⁰⁵ ¹⁰⁰⁶ ¹⁰⁰⁷ ¹⁰⁰⁸ ¹⁰⁰⁹ ¹⁰¹⁰ ¹⁰¹¹ ¹⁰¹² ¹⁰¹³ ¹⁰¹⁴ ¹⁰¹⁵ ¹⁰¹⁶ ¹⁰¹⁷ ¹⁰¹⁸ ¹⁰¹⁹ ¹⁰²⁰ ¹⁰²¹ ¹⁰²² ¹⁰²³ ¹⁰²⁴ ¹⁰²⁵ ¹⁰²⁶ ¹⁰²⁷ ¹⁰²⁸ ¹⁰²⁹ ¹⁰³⁰ ¹⁰³¹ ¹⁰³² ¹⁰³³ ¹⁰³⁴ ¹⁰³⁵ ¹⁰³⁶ ¹⁰³⁷ ¹⁰³⁸ ¹⁰³⁹ ¹⁰⁴⁰ ¹⁰⁴¹ ¹⁰⁴² ¹⁰⁴³ ¹⁰⁴⁴ ¹⁰⁴⁵ ¹⁰⁴⁶ ¹⁰⁴⁷ ¹⁰⁴⁸ ¹⁰⁴⁹ ¹⁰⁵⁰ ¹⁰⁵¹ ¹⁰⁵² ¹⁰⁵³ ¹⁰⁵⁴ ¹⁰⁵⁵ ¹⁰⁵⁶ ¹⁰⁵⁷ ¹⁰⁵⁸ ¹⁰⁵⁹ ¹⁰⁶⁰ ¹⁰⁶¹ ¹⁰⁶² ¹⁰⁶³ ¹⁰⁶⁴ ¹⁰⁶⁵ ¹⁰⁶⁶ ¹⁰⁶⁷ ¹⁰⁶⁸ ¹⁰⁶⁹ ¹⁰⁷⁰ ¹⁰⁷¹ ¹⁰⁷² ¹⁰⁷³ ¹⁰⁷⁴ ¹⁰⁷⁵ ¹⁰⁷⁶ ¹⁰⁷⁷ ¹⁰⁷⁸ ¹⁰⁷⁹ ¹⁰⁸⁰ ¹⁰⁸¹ ¹⁰⁸² ¹⁰⁸³ ¹⁰⁸⁴ ¹⁰⁸⁵ ¹⁰⁸⁶ ¹⁰⁸⁷ ¹⁰⁸⁸ ¹⁰⁸⁹ ¹⁰⁹⁰ ¹⁰⁹¹ ¹⁰⁹² ¹⁰⁹³ ¹⁰⁹⁴ ¹⁰⁹⁵ ¹⁰⁹⁶ ¹⁰⁹⁷ ¹⁰⁹⁸ ¹⁰⁹⁹ ¹¹⁰⁰ ¹¹⁰¹ ¹¹⁰² ¹¹⁰³ ¹¹⁰⁴ ¹¹⁰⁵ ¹¹⁰⁶ ¹¹⁰⁷ ¹¹⁰⁸ ¹¹⁰⁹ ¹¹¹⁰ ¹¹¹¹ ¹¹¹² ¹¹¹³ ¹¹¹⁴ ¹¹¹⁵ ¹¹¹⁶ ¹¹¹⁷ ¹¹¹⁸ ¹¹¹⁹ ¹¹²⁰ ¹¹²¹ ¹¹²² ¹¹²³ ¹¹²⁴ ¹¹²⁵ ¹¹²⁶ ¹¹²⁷ ¹¹²⁸ ¹¹²⁹ ¹¹³⁰ ¹¹³¹ ¹¹³² ¹¹³³ ¹¹³⁴ ¹¹³⁵ ¹¹³⁶ ¹¹³⁷ ¹¹³⁸ ¹¹³⁹ ¹¹⁴⁰ ¹¹⁴¹ ¹¹⁴² ¹¹⁴³ ¹¹⁴⁴ ¹¹⁴⁵ ¹¹⁴⁶ ¹¹⁴⁷ ¹¹⁴⁸ ¹¹⁴⁹ ¹¹⁵⁰ ¹¹⁵¹ ¹¹⁵² ¹¹⁵³ ¹¹⁵⁴ ¹¹⁵⁵ ¹¹⁵⁶ ¹¹⁵⁷ ¹¹⁵⁸ ¹¹⁵⁹ ¹¹⁶⁰ ¹¹⁶¹ ¹¹⁶² ¹¹⁶³ ¹¹⁶⁴ ¹¹⁶⁵ ¹¹⁶⁶ ¹¹⁶⁷ ¹¹⁶⁸ ¹¹⁶⁹ ¹¹⁷⁰ ¹¹⁷¹ ¹¹⁷² ¹¹⁷³ ¹¹⁷⁴ ¹¹⁷⁵ ¹¹⁷⁶ ¹¹⁷⁷ ¹¹⁷⁸ ¹¹⁷⁹ ¹¹⁸⁰ ¹¹⁸¹ ¹¹⁸² ¹¹⁸³ ¹¹⁸⁴ ¹¹⁸⁵ ¹¹⁸⁶ ¹¹⁸⁷ ¹¹⁸⁸ ¹¹⁸⁹ ¹¹⁹⁰ ¹¹⁹¹ ¹¹⁹² ¹¹⁹³ ¹¹⁹⁴ ¹¹⁹⁵ ¹¹⁹⁶ ¹¹⁹⁷ ¹¹⁹⁸ ¹¹⁹⁹ ¹²⁰⁰ ¹²⁰¹ ¹²⁰² ¹²⁰³ ¹²⁰⁴ ¹²⁰⁵ ¹²⁰⁶ ¹²⁰⁷ ¹²⁰⁸ ¹²⁰⁹ ¹²¹⁰ ¹²¹¹ ¹²¹² ¹²¹³ ¹²¹⁴ ¹²¹⁵ ¹²¹⁶ ¹²¹⁷ ¹²¹⁸ ¹²¹⁹ ¹²²⁰ ¹²²¹ ¹²²² ¹²²³ ¹²²⁴ ¹²²⁵ ¹²²⁶ ¹²²⁷ ¹²²⁸ ¹²²⁹ ¹²³⁰ ¹²³¹ ¹²³² ¹²³³ ¹²³⁴ ¹²³⁵ ¹²³⁶ ¹²³⁷ ¹²³⁸ ¹²³⁹ ¹²⁴⁰ ¹²⁴¹ ¹²⁴² ¹²⁴³ ¹²⁴⁴ ¹²⁴⁵ ¹²⁴⁶ ¹²⁴⁷ ¹²⁴⁸ ¹²⁴⁹ ¹²⁵⁰ ¹²⁵¹ ¹²⁵² ¹²⁵³ ¹²⁵⁴ ¹²⁵⁵ ¹²⁵⁶ ¹²⁵⁷ ¹²⁵⁸ ¹²⁵⁹ ¹²⁶⁰ ¹²⁶¹ ¹²⁶² ¹²⁶³ ¹²⁶⁴ ¹²⁶⁵ ¹²⁶⁶ ¹²⁶⁷ ¹²⁶⁸ ¹²⁶⁹ ¹²⁷⁰ ¹²⁷¹ ¹²⁷² ¹²⁷³ ¹²⁷⁴ ¹²⁷⁵ ¹²⁷⁶ ¹²⁷⁷ ¹²⁷⁸ ¹²⁷⁹ ¹²⁸⁰ ¹²⁸¹ ¹²⁸² ¹²⁸³ ¹²⁸⁴ ¹²⁸⁵ ¹²⁸⁶ ¹²⁸⁷ ¹²⁸⁸ ¹²⁸⁹ ¹²⁹⁰ ¹²⁹¹ ¹²⁹² ¹²⁹³ ¹²⁹⁴ ¹²⁹⁵ ¹²⁹⁶ ¹²⁹⁷ ¹²⁹⁸ ¹²⁹⁹ ¹³⁰⁰ ¹³⁰¹ ¹³⁰² ¹³⁰³ ¹³⁰⁴ ¹³⁰⁵ ¹³⁰⁶ ¹³⁰⁷ ¹³⁰⁸ ¹³⁰⁹ ¹³¹⁰ ¹³¹¹ ¹³¹² ¹³¹³ ¹³¹⁴ ¹³¹⁵ ¹³¹⁶ ¹³¹⁷ ¹³¹⁸ ¹³¹⁹ ¹³²⁰ ¹³²¹ ¹³²² ¹³²³ ¹³²⁴ ¹³²⁵ ¹³²⁶ ¹³²⁷ ¹³²⁸ ¹³²⁹ ¹³³⁰ ¹³³¹ ¹³³² ¹³³³ ¹³³⁴ ¹³³⁵ ¹³³⁶ ¹³³⁷ ¹³³⁸ ¹³³⁹ ¹³⁴⁰ ¹³⁴¹ ¹³⁴² ¹³⁴³ ¹³⁴⁴ ¹³⁴⁵ ¹³⁴⁶ ¹³⁴⁷

in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us; and we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things. Behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth!

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity; so is the tongue amongst our members that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of

exact trial we are then to undergo: *for in many things we all offend*^b; we are too ready to trip and stumble in our walk. And it is peculiarly worthy our attention here, that *if any one offend not in word, [he is] a perfect man*^c arrived at so high a pitch and improvement in virtue, that it may be concluded, that he is able also to bridle in the whole body: as it is frequently much more difficult to govern our tongues in a becoming manner, than to avoid enormities in our actions. *Behold, we put bridles into the 3 mouths of horses, that they may obey us, according to their direction; and strong, and sometimes furious, as those creatures are, we turn them hither and thither, so as to influence the motion of their whole body. Behold also how the 4 ships, though they be many of them so large, and sometimes agitated by violent winds, are turned by a very small helm, whithersoever the steersman pleaseth*^d, and the waving of his hand determines their direction. *So also the tongue, 5 though it is but a little member, yet boasteth great things, pretends, and that not unjustly, to have a great deal of influence upon the world. Behold, and observe, how great a quantity of materials a little fire kindleth into a blaze. And 6 thus the tongue [is] a fire, which often produces a great conflagration: it is a little world of iniquity*^e of itself. *The tongue is so set among our members, holds such a rank and place, [that] indeed it defiles the whole body, and inflames the whole course and circle of nature*^f and is, itself also

SECT.

V.

James

11:2.

^b *All offend.*] The word *ὁλοκαίω*, properly speaking, signifies, *we trip*; and Dr. Barrow (see his *Works*, Vol. I. p. 129,) has justly observed, that as the general course of life is called, *a way*, and particular actions, *steps*; so going on in a regular course of right action, is *walking uprightly*; and acting amiss, *tripping or stumbling*.

^c *Perfect man.*] It is certain a man whose words are *inoffensive*, may possibly have some imperfections; it shows therefore in how limited a sense the word *perfect* is to be taken: and the observation may be applied to many other passages.]

^d *Whithersoever the steersman pleaseth.*] As the word is, *ὅπου ᾤκνησεν*, which signifies any person that sits at the helm, and not necessarily the *pilot*, who is called by way of eminence, *οὐκυβερνήτης*, I thought it best to render it *steersman*; though I confess the remark and distinction to be a

matter of small importance. I know not how well to express in English the force of *ὅπου ᾤκνησεν*, which admirably represents the *impetuosity* with which, in a storm, a man at the helm on a critical occasion turns his hand. See Dr. Owen on the *Spirit*, p. 57.

^e *A world of iniquity*; *οὐ κόσμος τῆς ἀδικίας.*] Elsner, (*Observ. Sacr. in loc.*) gives a very singular translation of this clause, *The tongue is the adorning of unrighteousness*; referring to those specious colourings by which wicked men endeavour to excuse or conceal their criminal conduct.

^f *Circle of nature.*] So I thought *κύκλος* might be rendered, which most exactly signifies a *wheel* from the *revolution* formed. And perhaps it may intimate, how the mischief done by the tongue often comes round about. A consideration, which, were it not intimated by the expression, is

ECC.
v.James.
III. 9.

also set on fire by hell; the infernal spirit influences the heart, and its wickedness overflows by the tongue, and tends indeed, by its fatal consequences, to produce a very hell upon earth.

- 7 It is observable, that *every species of wild beasts, and birds, of reptiles and fishes*, though some of them take shelter in inaccessible deserts, and others bury themselves in the earth; though some mount the air, and others have their abode deep in the watery element; yet still every sort is *subdued*, and has in some instances or other been subdued, by men, and many, whose natures are fiercest, are so tamed as to do the human species no harm. But the tongue no man can entirely subdue, neither the tongues of others, nor his own, so that it shall not in some instances be hurtful; for *[it is] an insuperable evil*, and like a serpent, or an adder, full of mortal venom, by which sometimes death, and even damnation itself is occasioned. By it we sometimes bless God, even the Father; and it is our glory, when we make use of it in that sacred and honourable employment; and yet sometimes this noble instrument is degraded to the vilest purposes, and by it we curse and revile men, our brethren, who are made after the likeness of God, and honoured with his image. Out of the same mouth proceedeth the blessing and the curse, and the same tongue is the instrument of expressing both: and too frequently when the act of devotion is over, the act of slander, or outrage and insult commences. Alas! my brethren, these things ought not so to be: it is a shame to human nature, and it is surely a much fouler reproach to a Christian profession. Does a fountain from the same opening send forth alternately, and at different times, sweet [water] and bitter? It is not known in the natural, and it ought not to be known in the moral world.
- 12 Can a fig-tree, my brethren, produce olives, or a vine, figs. No, but every tree has its own proper

of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For every kind of beasts and of birds, and of serpents, and of things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.

9 Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Can a fountain send forth at the same place, both sweet and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olives,

well seeing the nature of every tree is such. Hence, it is said that, by this passage, we learn the corruption of men; as if the apostle had said, The tongue is a part of our nature, it hath the same inclination to us, and is likely to have our passions.

[He added,] He chose to render *fig-tree*, rather than *olive*, that it may include the comparing great and mighty

fishes of the sea, such as *sharks and whales*; of which it would less proper to say they are tamed, as that generally imports a kind of human familiarity to which neither savage beasts are subject, though; but of which large fishes are in their nature incapable; and it may be questioned whether some other animals are not so likewise; and such it was meet to the apostle's purpose to mention.

olive-berries? or a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt-water and fresh.

proper productions. So no fountain produces brackish water and sweet. In like manner there ought to be a great deal of care, that we maintain a consistency in our discourses, and that if we profess religion and devotion, we speak at all times, as those who are often employing our speech to these noble purposes. So shall we honour God, and promote the peace of society, and of our own minds; whereas otherwise, we shall injure both; yea, and injure others, and ourselves the more, in consequence of the profession which we make of religion.

SECT
V.

James
III. 12.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET this *pathetic* discourse of the *apostle* concerning the difficulty and importance of *governing our tongues aright*, engage us to the strictest care on this great *article* of practical religion, on which so many are *careless*, in which the most are so far *deficient*, as to entitle those to the character of *perfect men*, who do not here *offend*. Ver. 1. Let us intreat the assistance of Divine grace, that we may *keep our mouths as with a bridle*; (Psal. xxxix. 1 :) that we may *steer* this important *helm* aright, lest by the mismanagement of it, we *shipwreck* even our eternal hopes. Let us be cautious of every *spark*, where there are so many *combustible* materials; and take heed, lest we, 6 and others, be *defiled*, and *infernal flames* kindled and propagated. It is indeed a *difficult*, but in consequence of this a *glorious* toil, far more glorious than to *subdue the fiercest animals*, or the haughtiest 7 enemies: let us therefore resolutely make the attempt, and learn to employ our tongues, as indeed *the glory of our frame*, to *bless God even the Father*. And let the remembrance of that *similitude of* 9 *God*, in which *men are formed*, make us tender of all their interests; and especially careful, that we do not injure them by unkind reproaches, or detracting speeches; and so much the rather, that we may maintain a *consistency* between the words of *devotion* addressed to God, and those of *converse* with our fellow-creatures. So shall the *well-spring of wisdom*, rising up in our hearts, and streaming 11 forth from our lips, be as a *flowing-brook*. Let those, who are by Providence called to be *teachers* of others, set a *double guard* upon their words, not only in *public*, but in *private* too, as peculiar notice will be taken of them; and the honour of religion, one way or another, be greatly affected by the tenour of their discourses. And 1 let the awful *account* which such are to give, the *greater judgment* they are to expect, prevent any from *intruding* themselves into such

SECT. VI. an office, without suitable qualifications, and a regular call. May God enable them to judge rightly concerning *that call*; and where Ver it is indeed given, may his grace furnish them for their work, and 2 his mercy cover those *many imperfections*, which the best will see room to acknowledge and lament.

SECT. VI.

The Apostle urges a candid benevolent disposition, guarding them against censoriousness and animosities, and that love of the world which tends to excite them, to restrain which he recommends an humble application to God for Divine influences. James III. 13.—IV. 10.

JAMES III. 13.

SECT. VI. **M**ANKIND are naturally desirous of the re-
putation of an understanding superior to
others: consider what is the best display of it.
James III. 13. *Who [is] wise, and a man of sense among you? let him shew himself to be possess of the most valuable kind of knowledge, by exhibiting out of a good, holy, and useful conversation, his honourable and beneficent works. And let him do this, not with vain ostentation or rigorous zeal, but with the meekness and gentleness of true wisdom.*

14 *But if ye have bitter zeal against each other, and uncharitable contention in your hearts, boast not of your improvements in Christianity, and be not against the truth by such groundless*

15 *pretensions. This is not the wisdom that cometh down from above, and which that religion that our Divine Master brought from heaven teaches us; but it [is] on the contrary, earthly, sensual, and even diabolical. It takes its rise from considerations relating to the present world, objects which gratify only our senses, the inferior part of our nature, and which are the baits of the devil's temptations, by which he endeavours to dishonour our profession, and ruin our souls.*

16 *For it is evident in fact, that where uncharitable zeal and contention [is] [there is] wild confusion and disorder and every other evil and per-*

JAMES III. 13.

WHO is a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter envying, and strife in your hearts, glory not, and be not against the truth.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish.

16 For where envying and strife is, there

a Earthly, sensual, diabolical.] Dr. Hales supposes this refers to the three grand temptations of the world, money, a love of pleasure, and ambition; the first of which is

enabled, the second sensual, the third diabolical, being the source whence the second fell. *Patet's Works*, p. 179.

there is confusion, and every evil work,

17 But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace,

IV. 1 From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of

pernicious work; all the turbulent passions are in exercise, and a thousand irregular and fatal effects are produced. *But the wisdom [which is] from above, of celestial original, is first pure from all unclean and corrupt mixtures, and agreeable to the tenor of Divine and evangelical truth; then in consequence of that, peaceable and pacific, desirous to make and maintain peace; moderate and gentle, easily to be intreated, persuaded and reconciled, where any matters of disgust may have arisen; full of mercy, and good fruits, compassionate to the afflicted, beneficent to all; without partiality to those of our own sentiments and denomination, to the injury of others; and without hypocrisy, meaning all the kindness it expresses, and glad to extend its good offices as universally as possible. And thus the good man recommends and adorns religion, and in this he finds his own truest account; for whereas the wrath of man, as I observed, worketh not the righteousness of God; the blessed fruit of righteousness is sown in peace for those that make peace^b; persons of such a spirit promote the spread of the gospel, that great root of righteousness; and while a harvest of goodness by this means spring up in the minds of others, they shall themselves in due time reap joy and blessing in the comforts of the present life, and in the fruits of a glorious immortality.*

On the other hand, when we come to consider the effects of a contrary disposition, how melancholy and how dreadful are they! *Whence [are] wars and fightings among you^c?* Whence all the shocking scenes, which private quarrels, and

SECT.
vi.

James.
IV. 17.

^b *The fruit of righteousness.]* Possibly it might have been rendered, *The fruit of righteousness in peace is sown for them that make peace.* As it had been said, they who shew a peaceful temper, (supposing it to proceed from right principles,) may assure themselves, that they shall reap a harvest, in a world where righteousness flourishes in eternal peace. A seed is sown, and it will spring up, and make them ample amends for all the injuries they have sustained in a contentious world.

^c *Wars and fightings.]* The contentious spirit of the Jews was very apparent, and

drew on them speedy destruction; as many writers have justly observed on this text. Plato says, 'Nothing but the body, and its lusts and appetites, kindle sedition, quarrels, and wars in the world. But Mr. Blackwall observes, that the sentiment is here expressed with greater vivacity; and another beautiful metaphor is added, *Your lusts which war in your members*; intimating, that there is a state of civil war in the soul, either between sensual inclinations and conscience: or between one lust and another. *Blackwall's Sac. Class. Vol. I. p. 212.*

5872.
VI.

James
IV. 1.

and public wars occasion ; even all the carnage of a field of slaughter, and the barbarous attempts which human creatures and brethren make to destroy one another ? [*Is it*] *not hence from your sensual lusts and appetites, which first tear in your members ; that is, do first as it were give battle to your rational powers, and then turn the several members of your bodies into weapons of mischief and destruction ?* *Ie covet* this and that pleasure and gratification, *and* in your present circumstances, ye find that ye *have not*⁸ the means of procuring it ; and therefore ye are ready to *kill*⁹ one another, because you stand in each others way, *and* one possesses what another would be glad to possess, even though it were at the expence of the owner's life. *Because ye thus earnestly desire* for yourselves, *and* envy each other the possession of what ye *cannot obtain*, ye quarrel and *fight*, make one injury beget another, till ye come to *wage* a continued *war* with each other. *Yet* after all, ye miss the surest way of obtaining the most desirable blessings, which would be earnestly to seek them of God in prayer ; but this is omitted, and so ye *have not* the blessings ye might otherwise easily obtain, *because you ask not*. Or if you do pray, it is with little devotion, and so to little purpose ; *ye ask and receive not, because ye ask amiss*, without a becoming faith and fervency, or without that regard to the glory of God, which ought to animate all your desires. Whereas ye seek these things only, *that ye may squander away them upon your lusts*, and indulge yourselves in the height of luxurious pleasure, while your poor brethren die in the last necessity ; and surely the dearer any man is to God, the less likely will he be to succeed in such petitions as these.

Ye

of your lusts that war
in your members ?

8 Ye lust, and have
not : ye kill and desire
to have, and cannot
obtain ; ye fight and
war, yet ye have not,
because ye ask not.

9 Ye kill, and re-
ceive not, because ye
ask amiss, that ye may
squander it upon your
lusts.

[*And ye ask and have not*] Dr. Whitte-
rcliffe has particularly of the Jews.
They heard, after two times, *James*
Hebrews, and did not ever comprehend
his words ; and they continually asked
for signs, without considering whether
there was indeed according to the will
of God ; and aiming at nothing more
than the gratification of their sensual
desires in them. But the apostle seems to
imply, they would have had the desirable
things here referred to, if they had asked

aright ; and I think, that a good reason
for the Jews' unbelief, which ac-
cording to my usual manner, I have given
to the world.

10 Ye kill. Beza, and Erasmus Schim-
dini, would read it *desidera*, or *covet*,
things without the authority of a single
manuscript. But slaughter is agreeable
enough to what was said above of *mur-*
der and *fight*, and the contentious and an-
gry temper of the Jews.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?

6 But he giveth more grace: wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble,

7 Submit yourselves therefore to God, resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

[*Is adjudged to be an enemy.*] So Dr. Barrow, (see his Works, Vol. I. p. 228,) justly observes, that the word *antipathicus* signifies; and there is a considerable emphasis in the expression; it is now declared and adjudged beyond controversy, that he is an *enemy of God*.

[*Does the Spirit—lust, &c.*] This rendering, (with Dr. Whitby,) I prefer to

Ye adulterers and adulteresses, for I cannot give you a milder name, while guilty of this spiritual whoredom, while you are lavishing away your best affections upon objects so far beneath him to whom you have vowed them, *know ye not that the friendship of the world, which you so much court and caress, is enmity against God? Whoever therefore will be a friend to the world, and resolves to pursue it as his chief good, is by a necessary consequence declared and adjudged to be an enemy^f of God*, as he will be led into that rebellion against his law, which makes up the grand character of that enmity. *Do you think the scripture speaks in vain* in all the passages in which it guards us against such a temper as this, and leads the mind directly to God, as the supreme good; teaching us to abandon every thing for him? Or *does the Holy Spirit that dwells in us Christians, lust to envy^g?* does it encourage these worldly affections, this strife and envying which we have reprov'd? or can it be imagined, that we who appear to have so much of the Spirit, have any interested views in the cautions we give, and would persuade you from the pursuit of the world, because we should envy you the enjoyment of it? No; *But* we rather pity such fond and wretched attachments; for *he gives us greater degrees of grace*, than to leave us the slaves of so wretched a disposition; *as it is said* in those ever memorable words, (Prov. iii. 34,) *God sets himself in battle-array against the proud but to the lowly he giveth grace and favour. Subject yourselves therefore to God; and being^h listed in his army, keep the rank^h which he has assigned you; resist the devil steadily and courageously, as the great enemy of your eternal salvation; and though he may for a while combat you with his varied temptations, he will at length flee from you, and your progress in religion*

SECT.
vi.

James
VI. 4.

our own, which intimates the latter clause to be a *quotation*. Bishop Patrick supposes it is borrowed from Numb. xi. 29. But I think it would be doing great violence to that *text*, to suppose this an intended *quotation* from thence.

^h Keep the rank.] So the expression *antipathicus* properly and exactly signifies.

John
IV. 8.

ligion, and your victory over your spiritual adversaries, will give daily more ease. *Draw near to God with humble submission and earnest prayer, and he will draw near to you with mercy.* Cleanse [your] hands, O ye sinners, from all the pollutions with which they are soiled; and rest not merely in a freedom from evil actions, but labour to purify [your] hearts as much as possible, from all irregularities of affection. O ye double-minded, who continue thus wavering between God and the world, and have as yet learned to exert no laudable resolution in religion, that it is matter of doubt, whether you have any principles of it at all. And when you reflect upon the former part of life, so unprofitably and so unworthily spent, lament the guilt of such a conduct; and mourn and weep for the injuries which you have exposed yourselves to by it. And instead of these vain indulgences, let your laughter be turned into mourning and [your] ill-timed joy, into expressions of the deepest sorrow. On the whole, humble yourselves in the very dust before the Lord, when by your sins you have offended; and you may hope he will return to you in the mercies of his mercy, and raise you up again from that prostrate condition.

8 Draw near to God, and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purify your hearts, ye double-minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep; let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heaviness.

10 Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

IMPROVEMENT.

Case. — If we desire the character of wisdom, let us learn from the oracles of eternal truth, how it is to be obtained—by *meekness* and a *good conversation*. Let us avoid that *infernal wisdom*, here so severely and justly branded, which consists in knowing the most effectual methods to distress others. On the contrary, let us give, and study, and labour for that which is *from above*, and of which so valuable a character is here given. And so far as it can be obtained without injuring conscience, let us cultivate universal peace; and let a gentle and pliable temper, an *impartial* and *unswerving* disposition, be ever inviolably preserved, even when we are obliged to contend with others, about matters of the highest importance; remembering that the more sacred the cause is, the more solicitous we should be that we do not injure it by a passionate or suspicious management of it. Thus let us see the *fruits of righteousness in peace*, and wait the promised harvest, leaving

wars and contentions to others, lamenting them, and praying that God would cause them entirely to cease. And that we may be less obnoxious to those temptations, whereby others are betrayed into them, let us endeavour to guard against those *lusts and passions* which give a disproportionate value to the *objects* about which those 2 *contentions* arise. Does God brand them with this character of *adultery*? Let us preserve our souls pure from such affections, as 4 ever we desire that our *prayers* should be acceptable to God. May 3 his grace subdue all the workings of *pride*, of *luxury*, and of *envy* ; and produce in our hearts more and more of that *humility*, to which he will give *more grace* ; engaging us, when thus invited, to draw 6 near to him, to ask aright what we need from him, trusting his promise that he will draw nigh to us, and that when we humble ourselves 8 before him, he will raise us up. Cleansing our hands, let us endeavour to purify our hearts too. So may those who have hitherto been double minded, hope to attain an establishment in religion, in conjunction with that established peace, which no carnal affection, even when most fully gratified, can neither afford or admit.

SECT.
vi.

Chap.
iv. 1.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle suggests particular cautions against evil-speaking, and vain confidence in the events of futurity, or in any worldly possessions which often prove a temptation to luxury, and an occasion of ruin ; and concludes the section with encouraging and exhorting afflicted and oppressed Christians to wait patiently for the coming of their Lord. James IV. 11.—V. 8.

JAMES IV. 11.

SPEAK not evil one of another, brethren. He that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law : but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

JAMES IV. 11.

LET me now charge you, my brethren, that ye speak not evil of one another ; for he that speaketh evil of [his] brother, and judgeth [his] brother with a rash severity, therein speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law ; condemning it as if it were an erroneous rule, in so expressly forbidding such a conduct. But if thou thus judgest the law, and passest, as it were, a condemning sentence upon it, thou art then not a doer of the law, but a judge. And how the arrogance of setting up such a superiority to the

SECT.
vii.

James
IV. 11.

a Speaketh evil of [his] brother, &c.] Dr. Whitby explains this of the unbelieving Jews reproaching their Christian brethren for their non-observation of the Mosaic law ; and thinks, the apostle inti-

mates, that as the ceremonial law was not originally intended for the Gentiles, this conduct was a reflection upon the wisdom of God in giving it. But I chuse the more extensive explication.

LECT.
VII.

James
IV. 12.

the great Governor of the universe will pass, when it comes under his final review, it well becomes you seriously to consider. For it is certain, *there is one great Almighty Law-giver who is able abundantly to assert the honour of his own government; and as he can save his faithful and obedient subjects from the greatest extremity of danger and calamity, so he is also able to destroy the most obstinate and audacious rebel, and to smite him with irrecoverable ruin in the full career of his crimes. Who art thou therefore that judgest another? and darest to invade the office of this supreme and universal Law-giver, and thereby exposeth thyself to his condemnation?*

- 13 But to insist no further upon this; let me now turn myself to those who are quite immersed in their worldly schemes, and promise themselves assuredly an opportunity to accomplish them. *Come now, ye that say, To-day or To-morrow, we will go to such a city, and spend a year there, and traffick, and get gain by our merchandize, and then return and enjoy the fruits of our labours.* Alas! upon what an uncertainty do you proceed in such a supposition as this! *whereas,* instead of being able to count on a year to come, *ye know not even what [shall be] on the morrow,* and much less, what the days and months of a year may bring forth. *For what [is] your life,* upon the continuance of which all your worldly projects depend? *For it is only like a vapour that appeareth for a little while, and then vanishes away,* and is seen no more; how gay soever its form might be, and how wide soever it might have extended itself. *Whereas ye [saith] to say in consideration of this, If the great Lord of our lives will please to lengthen them, we shall live, and do this or that,* intimating even by your manner of speaking, the sense that you have, of his being able at pleasure to cut you short in all your purposes and appointments. *But now ye rejoice in your boastings; you take pleasure in this arrogant and confident manner of talking; whereas, all such rejoicing is evil,* and ought to be corrected: And so much the rather, as you have been better instructed than many others, and therefore ought to shew the good effect of these instructions. *For to him that knows to do good, and does it not, to him it is aggravated sin; and it would have been*

12 There is one Law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

13 Go to now, say that now, To-day or To-morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain:

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow, for what is your life? It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanishes away.

15 For that ye say to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this or that.

16 But now ye rejoice in your boastings; all such rejoicing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin.

been

V. 1. Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries, that shall come upon you.

been much better for him, that he had wanted that degree of knowledge he had, than that he should thus abuse it.

SECT.
vii.
James
V. 1.

I direct these things especially to those who have the advantage of the Christian revelation and institutions; but I confine not myself wholly to them. Let others pay them regard, in proportion to the degree in which they have opportunities of attaining Divine knowledge. Let them take the greatest care, that they do not abuse it. And let those especially be careful, whom Providence has distinguished by the fullness of their circumstances; which often proves a temptation to vice, though it should in all reason and gratitude be an engagement to virtue and piety. Experience will soon teach many such the vanity of those things in which they pride themselves, and which embolden them in their transgressions of the Divine law. *Come now therefore, ye rich men^b, weep, and even howl over the miseries that are speedily coming upon you*, in those days which are nearly approaching. You have been solicitous to lay² up abundant stores for your future subsistence and security; but *your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten. Your gold, and your silver*, which should have been brightened by a generous circulation, have been hoarded up, till they are cankered, and their rust shall be a witness against you in the sight of God, and so bring upon you such awful rebukes from him, that it shall, as it were, eat into your flesh, with an anguish as piercing and corroding as fire itself. *Ye have laid up treasures for the last days^c*; for the last days are now coming, and the enemy shall seize and dissipate them all to your infinite vexation and distress. *Behold^d the wages of the labourers, who have reaped your fields, who have been defrauded by you of their due reward, cry for vengeance against you; and*

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last days.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth;

^b *Ye rich men, &c.*] Josephus, (Bell. Jud. v. 20, 30; iv. 19,) particularly observes how much the rich men suffered by the Romans in the Jewish war.—I have rendered ταλαίπωροις ταῖς ἐπερχομέναις, *miseries which are coming upon you*, and I think it more agreeable to the original than our English version; ἐπιχειρήματα being a participle of the present tense.

^c *The last days.*] This phrase does not merely signify, for the time to come, but for that period, when the whole Jewish economy was to close, and when those awful judgments threatened in the prophets to be poured out upon wicked men in the last days, are just coming, Acts ii. 17; Heb. i. 2; 2 Pet. iii. 3; and the like. Compare Mat. xxiv. 33, 34; 1. Cor. x. 11.

^d *For.*

sect.
viii.

James
V. 4.

and the out-cries of those who have gathered in your harvest, have come into the ears of the Lord of hosts. Ye have lived delicately and luxuriously upon the earth, indulging yourselves in every desire that rose in your minds, without restraint. Ye have pampered your hearts, as beasts are fed for a day of slaughter: and truly to you it is much nearer than you are aware. And well has the vengeance been deserved by you; for ye have condemned (and) at last murdered the righteous one, the Son of God himself; [and] he doth not yet resist you^c with that display of power which he can easily exert to your utter destruction; but the day will speedily come, when God will avenge his cause, and pour out the judgment he has threatened, on those who have treated him in so base and unworthy a manner.

7 Since this is the case, since our Divine Master has met with such injurious treatment, and borne it with such steady patience; be ye therefore, my brethren, long-suffering and patient, even till the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ; behold the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth: [and] though it does not immediately appear, when sown, or ripen when it appears; yet he exerciseth patience with respect to it, till he receive the former rain, to produce it, and the latter, to bring it on to perfection.

8 Be ye also patient, and strengthen your hearts in every good resolution; for the appearance of the Lord is near: he will quickly come, and reward all your long-suffering, and take vengeance on your implacable enemies, for all the outrages they have committed against you.

crieth; and the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of sabbath.

4 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just; and he doth not resist you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient, stablish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

IMPROVEMENT.

Chap.
ix. 12.

Let the law of that our great Legislator, who is able both to save and to destroy, be always seriously remembered and considered; that we may not affront his authority in pretending to judge others,

d For a day of slaughter: as a beast is fed, &c. [There are some who render this, as in a second, when many your hearts are slain. But Watts observes, that the word is always used in the Scripture to signify not a day of feeding, but of slaughter. A Not read you.] Instead of *as*, Dr. Bentley would read *as*, for a *so*, &c., the

Lord; and would render it, and the Lord made you: that is, you have brought the vengeance of his almighty arm upon you. *Marginal of Levitic. Ver. VI. p. 17.*—Commentaries interpret it of the most sufferings of the disciples of Christ, in conformity to the example of their Master.

others, nor set up for judges, and in effect *condemners of the law*, by the severity of those censures which we pass upon our brethren, We are happy in *knowing* that sacred rule of life, if we obey it ; otherwise, that *knowledge* of it which adds an aggravation even to *sins of omission*, will much more aggravate every presumptuous *opposition to it*. SECT. vii.
Chap. iv.
11
17

Let us look on this world as a scene of great uncertainty ; and on *life*, as *aflattering vapour*, which *vanishes* while we are beholding it ; and let a sense of its shortness and uncertainty, and of our own *ignorance what shall be on the morrow* engage us to be very careful, that we do not *presume upon the future*, as if it were in our own power ; but set ourselves with all possible diligence *to improve the present time*, referring the disposal of all future events, to the wisdom of *that God* on whom it depends to determine whether *we shall live, and do this, or that*. 14
15

Let *rich men* read the address of the *apostle* to persons in their circumstances, with *holy awe*, and with a jealousy over themselves, lest their present *prosperity* be succeeded with *misery*, and their *joy with weeping and howling* ; as it undoubtedly will be, if wealth be *unjustly gotten*, or *sordidly hoarded up*, or *luxuriously employed* to pamper their appetites, while the truest and noblest use of it, the relief of the poor, and the benefit of mankind, is forgotten. Especially have they reason to tremble who abuse wealth and power as *the instruments of oppression* ; soon will all their stores be wasted, soon will they become naked and indigent, and find a terrible account remaining, when all the gaieties and pleasures of life are utterly vanished. In the mean time, the *saints* of God may be among the *poor and the oppressed* : but let them *wait patiently for the day of the Lord*, for *his coming is near*. They *sow in tears*, but let them *comfort their hearts* with the view of *the harvest* ; in like manner as the *husbandman* demands not *immediately* the fruits of that seed he has committed to the furrows. Adored be that kind Providence, which gives *the former and the latter rain in its season*. To him from whom we have received *the bounties of nature*, let us humbly look for the *blessings of grace*, and trust him to fulfil all his promises, who without a promise to bind him, in particular instances, *gives us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness*. Acts xiv. 17. Chap. v.
1
2, 5
6
8
7

SECT. VIII.

He concludes the epistle with inculcating moderation and fortitude, cautioning them against profane and vain swearing, and recommending prayer, a ready acknowledgment of our faults, and a solicitous concern for the common salvation. James V. 9, to the end.

JAMES V. 9.

JAMES V. 9.

AND now, to draw to a conclusion, *be not inwardly incensed against each other, brethren*, so as to grudge or envy one another any superior advantages in life, or to harbour even that malignity of disposition which should groan in secret ; while it waits opportunities of mischief, *that you yourselves be not condemned, for behold the judge is standing before the door* ; he is now present, and sees all the irregularities of your tempers, as well as actions ; in consequence of which he will quickly bring these inward disorders of mind into judgment, as well as the

10 *enormities of the life*. And that you may be fortified against such trying circumstances, *my brethren take for an example of enduring adversity, and of long-suffering under the greatest provocations, the holy prophets of old, who spake to our fathers in the name of the Lord*, and gave such convincing evidences of their Divine in-

11 *spiration*. [Heb. xi. 36, 37.] *Behold*, in this respect *we esteem them happy*, who endure steadily and patiently the trials which God appoints for them. In this view, *we have heard of the celebrated patience of Job*, with how much honour it is proclaimed from generation to generation ; *and we have also seen the end of the Lord* ; how much to his honour, and how much

GRUDGE not one against another brethren, lest ye be condemned ; behold, the judge standeth before the door.

10 Take my brethren the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count, them happy who endure. I have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord ; that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy,

to

a *Grave is secret.*] Then I have pronounced the words, because it is well known, that the eternal judge, the Divine observer, like this explication. Austin Martyr represents the Jewish converts, as the most just of Christians, who were apt to be impatient of the tribulations, and to regard themselves as the objects of a merciful judgment.

b *We esteem them happy, &c.*] The Apostle speaks of this, not only as his own judgment, but that of all Christians who judged right, and understood the nature of things. And it is indeed a judgment in which all Christians should be agreed.

c *See the end of the Lord.*] It is observed, that in Job xlii. 7, &c. God desires to stand in his glory, and calls him

him

SECT.
viii.

James
V. 11.

to his comfort, his various and heavy afflictions concluded; *that the Lord is full of compassion, and of tender mercy*, and it is with the bowels of an affectionate Father, that he corrects his beloved children, not for his own gratification, but from a view to their advantage.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath; but let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.

Among other effects of that impatience, against which I am cautioning you, may be reckoned the irreverent use of the name of God, and profane oaths and execrations, into which in the transport of their criminal passions, some unhappy wretches are ready to fall; *but be ye above all things, my brethren*, careful, that ye swear not, upon such occasions, or on any other, lightly and profanely^d, *neither by heaven the throne of God, nor by earth, his footstool, nor by any other oath*; but remember the command of our blessed Lord, (Mat. v. 37,) and *let your yea be yea, and [your] nay nay*; content yourselves with a simple affirmation or negation, and take care to maintain such constant integrity in all your words, that nothing more may be needful to gain them credit; *that ye may not fall under condemnation* for profaning the name of God, and lessening the regard due to an oath, when used on the most solemn and necessary occasions.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

Accustom yourselves to the frequent exercises of devotion, as what will have the surest tendency to promote the comfort and happiness of your lives in every circumstance. *Is any among you afflicted? let him pray*, and cast the burden of his cares and sorrows upon the compassionate God, always ready to sustain his people. *Is any cheerful*, in easy and agreeable circumstances? *let him rejoice in God, and sing psalms* of praise to him in a thankful acknowledgment of his mercies.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:

Is any one among you sick? let him under his confinement call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him for his recovery, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, if they feel themselves so instigated to do it by the secret workings of the Spirit of grace upon their minds, as may encourage them to

him his servant Job four times in the compass of a few verses.

^d Swear not.] This the Jews were very apt to do upon trifling occasions.

c The

SECT.
VII.
J. A. 1807
V. 15.

to hope for an extraordinary cure: *And the prayer of faith*, in such a circumstance as this, *shall save and recover the sick; and the Lord shall, in answer to prayer, raise him up, and if he hath committed sins, which have brought this sickness upon him by way of extraordinary punishment, they shall be forgiven him*; and the Lord shall have mercy upon him, and recover him according to the words of his servant.

- 16 When you are conscious of having been really to blame, do not perversely vindicate a conduct which your own hearts condemn, but be frank in acknowledging it. *Confess [your] faults one to another*^c. for we are all too ready to stumble in the way of our duty; *and pray for one another*, especially when your brethren are under God's afflicting hand, or have been under any visible declension in religion, *that you may be healed, and recovered*. *The earnest prayer of a righteous man, the effect of good affections wrought in his heart by the energy of the Holy Spirit*^d is of great efficacy. Many instances of this you know are recorded in scripture; and among others, that of *Elijah*, who *was a man subject to the like infirmities with us*, [compare Acts. xiv. 15,] and had himself no greater command over the clouds and the rain than any of us; yet *he prayed with a prayer*, that is, with great faith and fervency, *that it might not rain*; which was not the effect of any resentment he had

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up, and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man avails much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: And it

c The *prayer of faith*. I can by no means think, that this is intended, merely physically. By the *prayer of faith*, I understand, such a state as is founded on some more than ordinary impressions, by which God intimates an intention of sending a miracle; and I look upon it as a very considerable proof, that, as the power of working miracles was not absolutely confined to the apostles, so it must in some instances continue something longer in the church than their days. Lord Barrington indeed thinks, that the expression, *if he hath committed sin*, &c. refers to the commission of such a sin as had engaged the apostle to deliver them to Satan, in order, to temporal punishment. But I hardly think an elder of the church would then have been mentioned, and one cannot imagine, that when the apostles were so few, and two of them comparatively so seldom together, the expression,

"Send by the *elder of the church*," should mean, send for one of the apostles. How vastly different this is from the extreme severity, pointed by the papists, not for cure, but only when life is despaired of. I think every reasonable man may easily judge.

d *Confess [your] sins, &c.* The general ecclesiastical sense which I have given to the words, and which is a very important one, seems to me utterly to supersede all promises to deliver from such any *potent* power, or to the requiring *confession*. In the manner which the church of Rome does. For the confession here mentioned is plainly spoken of as *mutual*.

e *Wrought—by the energy of the Spirit.* The word *energy*, as Bishop Hopkins, (in his *Works*, p. 749,) observes, seems to imply this sense. I have not confined it to the prayer of miraculous faith.

h *These*

it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

had against his country for the ill usage he met with, but in obedience to a secret intimation, that it was the will of God to glorify himself by sending upon them such a punishment for their idolatry; and the event, though so improbable, was correspondent to his prayer; for *it rained not upon the land for three years and six months*^h; computing the time from the beginning of the famine to the end of it. *And he prayed again*,¹⁸ at the end of that time, that God would be pleased to remove the heavy affliction which the drought occasioned; and the small cloud which appeared at first, soon spread itself over the whole horizon, so that *the heaven gave rain in abundance, and the land put forth the green blade again, and yielded its fruit in great quantity, to repay the barenness of former years.*

And now *brethren*, let me conclude with one¹⁹ exhortation of the greatest importance both to yourselves and others; which is, that you labour to the utmost to promote the spiritual good of your fellow-creatures; for *if any one of you wander from the truth, and one turn him back to it, and lead him to tread its forsaken paths, he performs the most important charity that can be imagined: For let him know, that he who*²⁰ *thus turneth back a sinner from the error and fatal wanderings of his way, shall produce a much happier effect than any miraculous cure of the body; for he shall save a precious soul from everlasting death*ⁱ, ruin, and condemnation, and so veil, or cover, a multitude of sins; not only procuring the pardon of these committed by the convert, but also engaging God to look with greater indulgence on his own character, and to be less ready severely to mark all he shall have done amiss.

IMPROVE-

^h *Three years and six months.*] Elijah is said, 1 Kings xviii. 1, &c. to have showed himself to Ahab in the third year; that is, from his going to live at Zarephath, 1 Kings xvii. 9, 8, 14, but from the beginning to the end of the famine was three years and six months, according to the account given by St. James, as also in Luke iv. 25.

ⁱ *Save a soul from death, &c.*] This way of expression intimates in the strongest manner, the infinite importance of such an

event; as to *save a soul from death* is yet more than *hiding the sins* of the convert. As to the latter clause, Bishop Atterbury, and Dr. Scott, urge the interpretation given in the last words of the *paraphrase*. See *Atterbury's Sermon*. Vol. I. p. 46—48; *Scott's Christian Life*, Vol. I. p. 368. And I have not seen reason, on the most attentive enquiry, to disallow the force of their arguments. Compare 1 Pet. iv. 8, and the note there.

IMPROVEMENT.

May it ever be remembered by *all*, and especially by the *ministers of the gospel*, of how great importance it is to be instrumental in saving a *soul from death*, an *immortal soul from everlasting death*, that so they may be animated to the most zealous and laborious efforts for that blessed purpose; and think themselves richly rewarded, though it were for the otherwise *unsuccessful labours*, of a *whole life*, by succeeding even in a *single instance*. In this view, may there be a *care to bring them to the truth*, that so they may be *converted from their wandering ways* that their understandings being convinced of the truth and importance of the *gospel*, their conduct may be practically influenced by it; and that upon such *steady principles*, as may effectually prevent their *return to their wanderings again*. Thus may a *multitude of sins be hidden*, and the glory of God, and the salvation of men, be effectually promoted.

Whatever *trials* we may meet with in these charitable efforts, or in any other path of duty, may we *take the prophets of old, and the apostles of our Lord, for examples of suffering adversity and patience*; especially remembering *their Lord and ours*; remembering how abundantly the patience of good men has been rewarded, *the end of the Lord* with respect to holy *Job*, and many others, who have trod in his steps in succeeding ages; and remembering especially, that *the judge stands at the door*, that in a very little time he will appear, not only to put an end to the trial of his servants, but to crown their virtues and graces. In the mean time the bowels of his *compassion* are abundant, and he will not be wanting in communicating all necessary consolations and supports. May we be so happy, as to be acquainted with *those of deviation*, that in our *affliction* we may *pray*, and in our *cheerfulness*, *sing psalms*; that we may know by blessed experience the efficacy of such a temper to open the sorrows of life, and to sweeten its enjoyments. And as we desire to be *visited of God* in our *afflictions*, may we with *Christian sympathy* be ready to visit and relieve others in their sickness, or other kinds of *distress*. It is indeed the special office of the *elders of the church*, who should be sent for upon such occasions with readiness, and who, if they be worthy of their office, will attend with pleasure. But it is not *their office alone*. Let us all be ready to *pray for each other*, in *faith and charity*; and where offences have been committed, let there be a frank and candid *acknowledgment* of them on the one side,

and

and as hearty a forgiveness on the other. In a word, let the efficacy of the fervent prayer of the righteous be often reflected on, to excite fervour, and to engage to righteousness, and to lead us to honour those who maintain such a character, and who offer such petitions and supplications; that God may in answer to their requests, shower down his blessing upon us, that our land may yield its increase, that righteousness may spring up out of the earth, and that in every sense, God, as our own God, may bless us. (Psalm lxvii. 9; lxxxv. 11.)

SECT.
viii.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE CATHOLIC EPISTLE
OF ST. JAMES.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE
PETER.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

EXHIBIT. EXPOSITION

OF THE

THE FIRST & SECOND EXHIBITION OF THE

ARTS

AND MANUFACTURES
OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF ST. PETER.

THE Apostle Peter makes a very eminent and illustrious figure on the theatre of the evangelical history, and was, on several occasions, favoured by our Lord with peculiar and distinguishing marks of honour. One instance, which I shall alone recite, among the many which might be recited, if it was needful, and which happened very soon after our Lord's ascension, is, that he was deemed worthy, under the impulse and inspiration of the Holy Ghost, to open the gospel-dispensation, and *first* to preach salvation through a crucified Redeemer to the Jews, (Acts ii.) and Gentiles (Acts x.) And I the rather suggest this instance, because it affords some colour to my own opinion, that this epistle was written both to the Jewish and Gentile converts, who were dispersed in various regions of the world.

The sentiments of learned men upon this question—*To whom was this epistle written?*—are very various. The principal and most remarkable are these—That it was to the converted Jews of the dispersion—Or to the converted Gentiles—Or lastly (which is the opinion of Lord Barrington, embraced and defended by Dr. Benson) to the converted *proselytes of the gate*. It is not necessary in this place*, to enter into a particular confutation of the last mentioned *hypothesis*; especially as I apprehend what is suggested in my *notes* on several passages of the Acts, may convince an attentive reader, that there is no sufficient ground to suppose there were ever any such persons as *proselytes of the gate*. And as to the *two former* opinions, when the several arguments by which they are

* The learned author intended, had Providence prolonged his valuable life, to have published a distinct dissertation on this subject. But this, and many other designs he had projected, for the benefit of the church and the world, were prevented by his justly-lamented death.

are supported, are duly considered and examined, we shall perhaps be inclined to imagine that the *apostle* rather designed his epistle for the Jewish and Gentile converts *both*, than for either of them *distinctly* and *separately*. Without discussing the reasons for the opinion I have adopted, I shall leave the reader to form his own judgment, after he hath perused my *paraphrase* and *notes* on those passages of this epistle on which it is founded.

It is not very easy to assign the date of this *epistle* with exactness. The most commonly received opinion is, that it was written in the year 61, the seventh of the emperor Nero; and this seems to be a *medium*, between the sentiments of those who place it some years higher, and those who place it lower, which bids fairest for the truth.

It is evidently the *design* of this epistle, "To induce the Christian converts, in various parts of the world, to maintain a conversation, not merely inoffensive to all men, but in all respects worthy of the gospel; and to support them under the severe persecutions, and fiery trials they already endured, or were likely to endure, by the noblest considerations which their religion could suggest."

The *first* branch of this design the *apostle* seems to keep particularly in view from chap. i.—iii. 7. And in pursuance of it, after having congratulated his brethren, who were dispersed abroad through various countries, on their happiness in being called to the glorious privileges and hopes of the gospel, which was introduced into the world in so sublime a manner by the prophets and apostles (chap. i.—12.) he exhorts them to watchfulness, to sobriety, to love, and to universal obedience, by an affecting representation of their relation to God, their redemption by Christ's invaluable blood, and the excellence and perpetuity of the Christian dispensation, and of its glorious fruits and consequences, compared with the vanity of all worldly enjoyments. (ver. 13, *to the end*.) Urging them, by the like considerations, to receive the word of God with meekness, to continue in the exercise of faith in Christ as the great foundation of their eternal hopes, and to maintain such a behaviour as would adorn his gospel among the unconverted Gentiles (chap. ii. 1—12.) For the same end, he exhorts them to the exercise of a due care as to relative duties; and particularly, a subjection to civil governors, and to masters, even when their dispositions and injunctions might be harsh and severe; enforcing all by the consideration of that patience with which our Lord Jesus Christ endured his most grievous sufferings. (ver. 13, *to the end*.) He likewise exhorts Christian wives to submit themselves to their husbands, and to study the ornaments of their minds rather than of their persons; and husbands to treat their wives in a becoming and honourable manner, from a tender sense of those infirmities to which the sex is peculiarly liable. (chap. iii. 1—7.)

In the ensuing part of the epistle, the *apostle's* arguments and exhortations more immediately and directly refer to those dreadful

ful sufferings and persecutions to which the Christian converts were exposed, or which they actually endured, from the malevolence and rage of their implacable enemies. And here, well knowing that such treatment, unmerited and unprovoked, is apt to embitter and narrow men's spirits, and inflame their resentments; in which case the religion of the meek and lowly Jesus would be greatly dishonoured, and its spread and influence in the world retarded by the indiscreet behaviour of its friends and advocates; therefore St. Peter urges many arguments on the Christian converts, in order to engage them to an inoffensive, benevolent, and useful life, and conversation; and to a steady, courageous adherence to their religion amidst all opposition. (ver. 8—17.) And then animating them to endure their sufferings with patience and resignation, from the endearing consideration of what their Divine Saviour had suffered for them, he expatiates on his atonement, resurrection, and exaltation; on the obligation of their baptismal covenant, and on the awful solemnity of the last judgment, as powerful arguments to a life of mortification and holiness, whatever discouragement and opposition they might be called to encounter, (ver. 18—iv. 6.) And as eminent vigilance, fidelity, and courage, would be requisite for rightly improving their talents, and for discharging the duties of their respective stations in the church, at all times, but especially in times of imminent danger and persecution, he distinctly inculcates these several virtues; and by way of inference from the trials to which good men were exposed, he observes, that a tremendous, inevitable destruction will overwhelm the impenitent and unbelieving. (ver. 7—19.) And at the close, he addresses some particular cautions both to ministers and private Christians; urging on the former, humility, diligence, and watchfulness; and exhorting the latter to a steadfast and faithful discharge of their several duties, animated by this sublime consideration, that the God of all grace had called them to his eternal glory, and would, after they had suffered awhile, make them perfect, according to the *apostle's* earnest prayer for them; chap. v. *throughout*.

From this imperfect delineation of this admirable epistle, the production of another eminent *apostle*, it is no unnatural or improper remark, that all the principles of our holy religion, as here represented, are perfectly consistent with the *analogy of faith*, and with the whole tenor of the New Testament, that they are directly levelled against all manner of corrupt affections and immoral practises, as well as urged in the light of motives to all those virtues and graces, in which our conformity to God, and the true glory of our nature consists. And (which, if it were the only circumstance that could be pleaded, would exalt our religion to an infinite superiority to the institutions of the most renowned heathen philosophers and law-givers, and in connection with its amazing progress, is a demonstration of its Divine original) Christians are here instructed to encounter outrageous violence

lence and persecution only with the hallowed weapons of patience, meekness, and charity, and to silence the cavils, and blast the machinations of their own and their Master's bitterest enemies, with the lustre of a pure and holy life, and the fervour of a generous and invincible benevolence. How amiable, how elevated, how divine, how worthy of all acceptance is the religion of Jesus!—In delineating, as we have seen, the grand and essential branches of which even Peter and Paul, notwithstanding all their contention about things of inferior moment, or of a personal and private nature, are perfectly consistent and harmonious.

A PARA-

A
PARAPIHRASE AND NOTES
ON
THE FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE
OF
ST. PETER.

SECTION I.

The Apostle Peter begins his address to his brethren, who were dispersed abroad, with congratulating their happiness in being called to the glorious privileges and hopes of the gospel; and takes occasion to expatiate upon the sublime manner in which it was introduced both by the prophets and apostles. 1 Pet. I. 1—12.

1 PETER I. 1.

PETER, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered

1 PETER I. 1.

PETER, who has the honour to be invested with the office of an *Apostle of Jesus Christ*, inscribes and addresses this epistle to the elect strangers who are scattered abroad^a; to those Christians

SECT.
i.

1 Peter
I. 1.

^a Scattered abroad.] Lord Barrington (*Miscel. Sacr. Essay* II. p. 84—88,) strenuously maintains, that St. Peter wrote only to the converted *proselytes of the gate*; and in favour of this opinion he urgeth their being called *strangers*; which he thinks is the stile *peculiar* to those who having renounced idolatry, and receiving the seven precepts of Noah, were yet *strangers to the commonwealth of Israel*. He supposes they must have been *Gentiles*, because they are said, *once not to have been a people*, chap. ii. 9, 10, and to have been ignorant, verse 14, and to have wrought the will of the *Gentiles*,

chap. iv. 3; and he also pleads, from chap. i. 22, where they are said to have *purified their souls by obeying the truth*, that it is likely they were *proselytes of the gate*, because a parallel expression is used by St. Peter concerning Cornelius and his friends, (Acts xv. 9. See Vol. III. § 33, note b,) whom he supposes to have been such. He likewise argues from their being addressed in these words, *If ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons, judgeth according to every man's work*, (chap. i. 17.) by St. Peter, who had himself addressed Cornelius in almost the same terms. (Acts x. 34, 35. See Vol.

ASCT.
I.1 Peter
I. 1.

Christians whom Providence has dispersed *through* various countries, and whom Divine grace has taught to consider themselves, wherever they dwell, as strangers and sojourners on earth; and particularly to those who inhabit the regions of *Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia*, and those in the provinces of *Asia and Bithynia*. I call you [*elect*.] because you are indeed chosen *according to the fore-knowledge of God the Father*, who has projected all his schemes with the most consummate wisdom, and perfect discerning of every future event. He has been pleased, according to the steady purposes of his grace, to bring you *by means of the sanctification of the Spirit*, by the sanctifying influence of the Holy Ghost operating upon your souls, *to evangelical obedience*. He has subdued all your prejudices against the gospel, and effectually engaged you to submit to it; and thus you are interested in the pardon of sin, and in all the other blessings which proceed from *the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*, whereby forgiveness is obtained for us Christians as it was for the Jews under the law upon sprinkling the blood of the sacrifices; and may this, and every other instance and degree of *grace*, and all the *peace* consequent upon it, *be multiplied unto you* all, wherever you are, and whatever your condition and circumstances in life may be. Whatever your afflictions are in this variable and troublesome world, I hope you will never forget, how indispensably you are obliged to thankfulness on account of your Christian privileges, and to such thankfulness let me now excite you and myself: *blessed therefore [be] the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant mercy hath regenerated us to a great, important and lively hope of future happiness by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead*, upon whom indeed,

throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.

2 Elect according to the fore-knowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ; Grace unto you, and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.

III. § 24, note c.) His phrase in support of the same opinion, their being called Christians, (chap. iv. 10.) a title which he supposes was first given to the converted *people of the Jews*, of which the church at Antioch, where they were first called Christians, in his apprehension, consisted. (Acts x. 26. See Vol. III. § 45, note f.) But all this appears to me to be utterly inconclusive; it is in part obviated already in my notes on the Acts; and as

for the form which may seem to remain in his *brother's* arguments, arising from the phrases in which St. Peter addresses those to whom he writes, it is, I think, entirely annulled, by supposing that the epistle was written both to the converted Jews and Gentiles; of which the reader will be able to form a judgment, by observing whether my *paraphrase* of the several passages in question be natural and easy.

b Undeclined

To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away; reserved in heaven for you,

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be,) ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations :

7 That the trial of your faith being much more

deed, and upon whose resurrection all our hopes depend. And by whom we are brought to the cheerful and confident expectation of an inheritance, incorruptible, undefiled,^b and unfading, which nothing can spoil, which nothing can pollute, and which is incapable of any internal decay, as well as external violence. This inheritance is reserved in the heavens for you, and for all true believers; *Who*, though now 5 surrounded with many apparent dangers, are not left defenceless, but are guarded, as in a strong and impregnable garrison^c, by the almighty power of God, through the continued exercise of that faith which this almighty power wrought in your hearts; and he will still maintain it unto that blessed hour, when you shall receive the complete and eternal salvation which is already prepared, and though now kept as under a veil, is to be revealed in its full radiance of glory, in the last time^d, the grand period, in which all the mysteries of Divine Providence shall beautifully terminate. This is the blessed 6 state and condition to which by the gospel you are brought, in which, and in the glorious hopes which it inspires, you cannot but rejoice, though now for a little while, if it be necessary you are grieved, and distressed amidst various trials. You know they are all under the direction of the infinite wisdom of your heavenly Father, who would not subject you to them, did he not see them to be subservient to your truest happiness; and they will ere long be brought to an everlasting period. His intention in all 7 is most kind and gracious, namely, that the little trial

SECT.
I.
1 Peter
I. 4.

b Undefiled.] That is, into which nothing that polluteth can enter. The land of Canaan was said to be defiled by sinners; to which perhaps there may here be an allusion. Compare Rev. xxi. 27.

c Are guarded, &c.] The original word, φυλασσεν, is very emphatical, and properly signifies, being kept as in an impregnable garrison, secure from harm, under the observation of an all-seeing eye, and protection of an almighty hand. Blackwall's Sacred Classics, Vol. I. p. 196. Compare 2 Cor. xi. 32, in the Greek.

d In the last time.] This plainly refers to the second appearance of Christ, called the last time, because it will be the con-

cluding scene of all the Divine dispensations relating to this world. For the same reason it is called the last day, John vi. 39; and xi. 24. And the design of the passage before us confirms this interpretation, since the apostle is here speaking of the full manifestation of the future happiness reserved in heaven for them. Some would connect, in the last time, with their being kept by the power of God; and understand it, as if the apostle had said, Though our lot is cast in the last time, when the temptations to apostacy are so great and powerful, we are, notwithstanding, preserved from all the dangers to which we are exposed.

e Not

SENT-
E.1 Peter
I. 7.

trial of your faith, which is far more precious and valuable than that of gold which perishes and wears out in time, though it be tried with fire, and purified to the highest degree; may be found to praise and honour and glory, in the great day of the revelation of Jesus Christ, the Divine Author and Finisher of our faith, who having endured yet sorer trials, will rejoice to applaud and reward the fidelity of his servants in his
 8 *scance: I say, in the revelation of Jesus Christ, that glorious Redeemer, whom not having seen*^a
with your bodily eyes, nor personally conversed with him, ye nevertheless love, and in whom, though now you see [him] not, yet assuredly be- lieving, ye rejoice, as your almighty Saviour, Friend and Protector, with unutterable and even glorified joy, with such a joy as seems to
 9 *anticipate that of the Saints in glory; Receiving with unspeakable delight, as a full equivalent of all your trials, the great end of your faith, even the complete salvation of [your] souls, a prize of infinitely greater importance, than all*
 10 *you can be called to sacrifice for its sake! Con- cerning which salvation the prophets, who pre- dicted the grace of the gospel [which was ap- pointed] to you, sought and diligently enquired: Searching with the deepest and most attentive*
 11 *reflection, to what period or to what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ which was in them, did refer [when he referred long before] they came to pass, the various sufferings which were to come upon Christ, and the exalted and permanent glory which was to succeed them, and render him and his kingdom so perpetually illustrious, and*
 12 *his servants so completely happy. To the memorable testimony of these prophets it be- comes*

more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ;

8 Whom having not seen, ye love, in whom though now you see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory;

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.

10 Of which salvation the prophets, who predicted the grace of the gospel [which was appointed] to you, sought and diligently enquired: Searching that should come unto you;

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified before-hand the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto

^a Not having seen. It is very possible that among those dispersed Christians, there might be some who had visited Jerusalem whilst Christ was there, and might have seen, or even conversed with him; but as the greater part had not, St. Peter speaks according to the usual apostolic manner, as if they all had not. Thus he speaks of them all as loving Christ, though there might be some among them who were distinct both of this divine principle, and of the joy which he speaks of, as, *Idi- gnoscentes, non tamen infirmos in gloria.*

[*Spirit of Christ which was in them, &c.*]
 It is well worthy our notice, that the

Spirit which dictated to the prophets, is called the *Spirit of Christ*; which (as Mr. Fleming observes, *Christus*, Vol. I. p. 132) both proves his existence before his incarnation, and illustrates the full view he himself had of all he was to do and suffer under the character of our Redeemer; the particulars of which therefore must have been comprehended in the agreement between him and the Father.—The apostle in discoursing so largely concerning the prophets, seems to have a special reference to the converted Jews, who would enter more thoroughly into the part of his reasoning than the converted Gentiles.

unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into,

comes us to pay a sincere and profound regard, to whom such extraordinary discoveries were made, as no attentive reader can view without conviction and astonishment; and *it was revealed*g to them among other things, *that [it was] not to themselves, but to us, that they ministered these things*: they knew that we, when the events arose, should have a more complete understanding of these oracles, than any who declared them, had. Consider then, how happy you are in that dispensation under *which* you now live, when those Divine mysteries, which were only in a more obscure manner hinted at by the prophets, are most clearly and expressly declared to you, by those who have published the glad tidings of the gospel among you, by the evident authority and attestation, as well as by the assistances of the *Holy Spirit sent down from heaven*, with such visible glory, and testifying his continued residence amongst us by such wonderful effects. And indeed, the doctrines which they preach, as *things* of so great excellence and importance, are to be well worthy the regard of *angels*, as well as men; and accordingly, (as the images of the cherubim on the mercy-seat, seemed to bow down, to look upon the tables of the law laid up in the ark, so those celestial spirits do, from their heavenly abode, *desire to bend down*^h to [contemplate] such glorious displays of Divine wisdom and goodness, and attentively to survey those important scenes that are opening upon us here on earth; which is become so much more considerable than it would otherwise be, as it is honoured with being the theatre of such glorious events.

SECT.
I.

1 Peter
I. 12.

IMPROVE-

g To whom it was revealed, &c.] I think this text plainly proves, that the prophets had some general intimation, that their prophecies referred to the Messiah; but that they did not understand every clause of them in their full force, nor so well as we understand them, who are capable of comparing them with the event.

h Angels desire to bend down, &c.] Thus it is in the original *ἰσχυροὶ καὶ ἄγγελοι*, desire to look down to, in allusion no doubt, (as Mr. Saurin, Diss. Vol. II. p. 266, has

beautifully illustrated it, and many others have remarked,) to the bending posture in which they were represented on the mercy-seat. And Mr. Blackwall observes, (*Sacred Classics*, Vol. I. p. 431.) that it may denote, not only the attentive curiosity with which they may inquire into the gospel, but the humility of their adoration, whereas it is very probable that their apostate brethren refused to stoop to such a scheme,

IMPROVEMENT.

ARE we desirous of rendering it apparent to ourselves, and all around us, that we are *indeed the elect of God*? Let it be, by
 Ver 2. in humble application to the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus, on the one hand, and by the evident fruits of the sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, on the other.

3 The abundant mercy of God, hath begotten real Christians to the lively hope of an incorruptible, undefiled, and unfading inheritance, reserved in heaven for them; let us keep it steadily in view, and earnestly pray, that God would preserve us by his mighty power through faith unto salvation. Whilst we are waiting for this salvation, it is very possible, yea, probable, affliction may be our portion; but let us remember, it is *if need be*, that we are in heaven through manifold temptations. Our faith, and our other graces, are as it were thrown into the furnace, not to be consumed, but refined, that they may be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearance of Jesus Christ. Even at present, may this Divine faith produce that love to an unseen Jesus, which is here so naturally expressed by the apostle, and though we see him not, yet may that love be eminently productive of joy; even that joy which is unspeakable and full of glory; and in the lively and vigorous exercise of these graces, may we all receive the end of our faith, even the everlasting salvation of our souls!

10 Let what we are told of the prophetic writers be improved as it ought, to confirm our faith in that glorious gospel, of which these holy men have given in their writings such wonderful intimations and predictions; writings which we have such excellent advantages for more distinctly and clearly understanding, than even they themselves did. What exalted ideas should we entertain of a dispensation introduced by such a series of wonders, preached by the inspired prophets, and by the Holy Ghost in his miraculous gifts and salutary influence sent down from heaven: a dispensation into the glories of which the angels desire to pry: how much more worthy then, the attention of the children of men, who are so nearly concerned in it, who were redeemed from everlasting destruction by the blood of the Son of God? O! let us review it with the closest application, and improve it to the infinitely gracious and important purposes for which it was intended. Then will grace and peace be multiplied to us; and however we may now be dispersed and afflicted, pilgrims and strangers, we shall ere long be brought to our everlasting home, and

and meet together in the presence of our dear and condescending Saviour; where having a more lively sense of our obligations to him, and beholding his glory, we shall love him infinitely better than at this distance we have been capable of, and feel our joy in him increased in a proportionable degree.

SECT.
i.

SECT. II.

The Apostle enforces his general exhortations to watchfulness, to sobriety, to love, and to obedience, by an affecting representation of our relation to God, our redemption by the invaluable blood of Christ, the vanity of all worldly enjoyments, and the excellence and perpetuity of the gospel-dispensation. 1 Pet. I. 13, to the end.

1 PETER I. 13.

WHEREFORE, gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

1 PETER I. 13.

I HAVE been endeavouring to give you some general ideas of the excellence and importance of the gospel-dispensation; reminding you of the wonderful manner in which it was introduced by the united labours of the prophets and apostles, and of the regard paid to it by the native inhabitants of the heavenly world. Regard it therefore as worthy the closest attention; and let the blessings of it be most vigorously pursued; and girding up the loins of your mind, that you may be capable of the most strenuous action, and being continually sober and temperate, and watchful against every thing that would ensnare and pollute you, hope unto the end for the grace and mercy which shall be brought unto you, in the great and glorious day of the revelation of Jesus Christ. Live in the view of his second appearance, and think every labour, and every self-denial happily bestowed, which may subserve your prospect of felicity in that important day. You have now the honour to be adopted into the family of God; conduct yourselves therefore as his obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts, which you indulged in the time of your ignorance, when you knew not this gospel, and were many of you in heathen darkness, and others under the imperfect dispensation of Moses: But as he that has called you to this glorious light, and participation of such invaluable blessings, is holy, be

SECT.
ii.

1 Peter
I. 13.

14 As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance;

15 But as he which hath called you is holy,

8007.
11.

1 Peter

4. 11.

10

17

18

19

be ye yourselves also holy in the whole of [your] conversation, in every thing you say and do; aspiring after this as your greatest honour, to bear the image of God in the moral perfections of his nature; For it is written in several passages of the Mosaic scriptures, (Lev. xi. 44; xix. 2; xx. 7.) Be ye holy, for I am holy. There is the same force in the argument now, respecting us Christians, which there was with regard to the Jews; yea greater force, in proportion to the degree in which the sanctity of the Divine Being is now more illustriously displayed; *And accordingly let me exhort you, if ye call upon the God and Father of all, who without respect of persons, or any kind of partiality, whether to Jews or Gentiles, judges every one according to [his] works, to converse during the time of your sojourning here, with all becoming reverence and humility, in the religious fear of God;*

And so much the rather, inasmuch, the price of your redemption to have been so rich and invaluable. This is an important article of Divine knowledge, of which no Christian can be ignorant, that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, as with silver and gold, which however regarded by men, have no value in the sight of God; thus, I say, was not the price which bought you from your vain, trifling, and unprofitable conversation, received by tradition from your fathers, from those hereditary superstitions, follies, and vices, which had in succeeding generations assumed the name and the garb of religion, and from the guilt which they had brought upon your souls. If eternal had all the treasures of the earth been to purchase help for us under so sad and deplorable a circumstance.

That God was pleased to find out the only ransom, and has redeemed us with the precious blood of Christ his Son, as of a lamb unblemished and unspotted, free from the least degree

ly, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation;

16 Because it is written, be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear;

18 Inasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot;

of

a Redeemed with corruptible things, with silver and gold, &c.] Some think here is an allusion to the lamb, which made an atonement, and was bought at the common expense foretold by the constitution of the patriarchs, as an atonement for their souls. Compare Exod. xix. 11, &c. As for those that think here is a reference to the stamp of a lamb on the Jewish coin, I am neither sure of the truth of the fact,

nor can I perceive the elegance of the supposed allusion. Compare Heidegger's Commentary of the Old Test. Vol. I. p. 176.

b Redeemed by tradition, &c.] Some think this refers to the Jewish tradition; but perhaps it may express those vain rites of worship, which for successive ages had been delivered down from parents to their children in the Christian world.

SECT.
ii.

1 Peter
1. 19.

20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you ;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren ; see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed but

of moral pollution, and therefore properly represented by those lambs, free from all corporeal spots and blemishes, which the Jews were required to offer as an expiation for their souls. And as the paschal lamb was chosen, and set apart some time before it was sacrificed, so the Lord Jesus Christ, *who was indeed typified by it, was known, approved, and fore-appointed from the foundation of the world, but made manifest in these latter times*, by the clear preaching of the gospel, *for your sakes*, that ye might obtain redemption and salvation by him ; Even ye all, *who by him*, and the manifestations of the Divine grace and mercy in him, are brought to repose your trust and confidence in God, *who raised him from the dead, and gave him such exalted glory and majesty in the celestial world; that so your faith and hope might be in God*, and ye might be encouraged to commit all your concerns to him with cheerful confidence, when he has appointed you such a Saviour ; and to expect all blessings from that friendship with him which is founded upon the incarnation, atonement, and blood of his own Son. Let it be your care, therefore, that *having purified your souls by an application to this fountain which God has opened, and by that obedience to the truth which will through the assistance of the Spirit be the result of such an application ; and since the whole genius and design of this religion, which you have imbibed and professed, leads to an undissembled brotherly love ; let it be your care, I say, to enter affectionately into its design and tendency ; and to love one another out of a pure heart ; operating fervently and intensely^d, and not to rest merely in those deceitful forms and professions of affection, with which the men of the world amuse themselves and each other ; or in those trifling instances of friendship which can do little to approve its reality and sincerity. The temper and conduct which I recommend, may justly be expected from*

c *Who by him trust in God.*] This phrase is remarkable, and I think with Mr. Hall (see his *Notes and Discourses*, Vol. I. p. 58.) that the meaning is, that Christians, who before their conversion were ignorant of the true God, learnt his Being and Providence from the great fact of

Christ's resurrection, and the power with which God invested him on his ascension into heaven.

d *Intensely.*] So I think the word εὐσεβως properly signifies ; according to the sense in which it is used by Polybius and Herodotus. See *Raphelius Annot. in loc.*
e *The*

- from you, considering your relation to God, and to each other, as *having been regenerated, not by corruptible seed*, not by virtue of any descent from human parents, *but by incorruptible*; not laying the stress of your confidence on your pedigree from Abraham, if you had the honour to descend from that illustrious patriarch; for that descent could not entitle you to the important blessings of the gospel. It is *by* means of the efficacy of *the word of God* upon your hearts, even that powerful word *which lives and endures for ever**, that you are become entitled to these glorious evangelical privileges. For as the prophet Isaiah testifies, (Isaiah xl. 6.) *all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of the grass, which is yet feebler than that; the grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth*; quickly deprived of its blossoming honours, it drops, blasted and dying, to the ground. And thus precarious and uncertain are all the dependencies which we can have on perishing creatures; *But the word of the Lord abideth for ever* in undiminished force and vigour, nor can ten thousand succeeding ages prevent or abate its efficacy. Now *this*, which the prophet refers to in the oracle I have just been quoting, *is the word which is preached to you in the gospel*; shew therefore your regard to it by such a temper and behaviour, both towards God and man, as it was intended to inculcate and produce.

but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. LET it be matter of our daily delightful meditation, that while we clearly discern the uncertainty of all human dependencies, which wither like the *grass*, and fall like the *flower of the field*, the *word of God* is *permanent and immutable*. Let us cheerfully repose our souls on this stable, unfailing security; gratefully acknowledging the goodness of God, that he hath condescended to lay a foundation for our hope, so firm and durable as his own infallible word, and to make that word *the incorruptible seed of our regeneration*. If we have indeed experimentally known

115

* *The word of God, which lives and endures for ever*. That is rendered by some, *Who lives and endures for ever*, referring it to God himself. But it is more agreeable to the design of the apostle, and (as Wals-

ton observes to the order of the original words) to refer this phrase to the word of God, which is here called *incorruptible seed*.

its efficacy and power, so that our souls are purified by obeying the truth, let us carefully express our obedience to it, by undissembled, fervent brotherly love; and animated by our glorious and exalted hopes as Christians, even that Divine and illustrious hope of the grace to be brought unto us at the revelation of Jesus Christ, let us set ourselves to the vigorous discharge of every duty, as knowing that we should be children of obedience, having the excuse of ignorance no longer to plead for the indulgence of our lusts, but by a holy God being called with a holy calling, and instructed to invoke him, at once, as our gracious Father and impartial Judge.

It is worthy of our special remark, that the blessed apostle urges us to pass the transitory and limited time of our sojourning here in fear, from the consideration of our being redeemed by the blood of the Son of God, which is a price of infinitely more value than all the treasures of the universe. And certainly there is a mighty energy in the argument; for as it is a very amiable, so it is also a very awful consideration. What heart so hardened, as not to tremble at trampling on the blood of the Son of God, and frustrating, as far as in him lies, the important design of his death? Frustrating the design of a scheme, projected from eternity in the councils of heaven, and at length made manifest with every circumstance to convince our judgments, and engage our affections. And while we are reflecting on the resurrection and exaltation of our Redeemer, as the great foundation of our eternal hopes, let us dread to be found opposing him, whom God hath established on his own exalted throne; and with the utmost reverence let us kiss the Son, in token of our grateful acceptance of his mercy, and cheerful and humble submission to his authority. (Psal. ii. 12.)

SECT. III.

The Apostle urges them, by representation of their Christian privileges, to receive the word of God with meekness, to continue in the exercise of faith in Christ, as the great foundation of their eternal hopes, and to maintain such a behaviour as might adorn his gospel, among the unconverted Gentiles. 1 Pet. II. 1--12.

1 PETER II. 1.
WHEREFORE, laying aside all malice, and all guile, and

1 PETER II. 1.

I HAVE been reminding you of the everlasting permanency and invariable certainty of the word of God; let this therefore, engage you to pay it a becoming regard; and laying aside all

SECT.
iii.

I Peter
II. 1.

sent.
11.
1 Peter
II. 2.

- all malignities, and all deceit, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings*, which are so contrary to its benevolent design. With all simplicity, as *new-born infants*^a who are regenerated by Divine grace, *desire that spiritual nourishment, that rational and unmingled milk*, if I may so call it; *that so ye may grow thereby to a state of adult Christianity*. And this may reasonably be expected of you, *since you have so experimentally felt and tasted that the Lord [is] gracious*^b, since you have known the sweetness there is in Christ, and how suitable he is to the necessities and desires of an awakened sinner ;
- 4 *To whom coming [as to] a living stone*, who is capable of diffusing spiritual life into those who are united to him, though *disallowed* indeed and *rejected of men*, yet *chosen of God*, [and] *inexpressibly precious* and valuable ; *Ye also as living stones*, united to him, and deriving life from him, *are built up as a spiritual house*, consecrated to his service ; and in another view, ye may be considered as *a holy priesthood*, destined *to offer up the spiritual sacrifices* of prayer, praise and obedience, which are all *acceptable to God by Jesus Christ*, who is the great High Priest over the house of God, whose intercession alone can recommend to the Father such imperfect services as ours. *Therefore it is contained in a well-known passage of the scripture*, (Isaiah xxvii. 16,) *Behold I lay in Zion a stone, even a chief corner stone, chosen, precious, and he that buildeth in it, shall not be ashamed* ; which words undoubtedly refer to the Messiah, as the great
- 7 *hope and confidence of his church. To you therefore who believe [it is] precious* : you, who rest your salvation on this corner-stone, know by blessed experience its value, as infinitely beyond all that can be compared with it. *But as for those who are disobedient*, these words of the Psalmist are accomplished with regard to them, and may well be recollected in the present connection. (Psalm. cxviii. 22.) *The stone which*

hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

^a As new-born babes desire the precious milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby ;

^b If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Ye also as lively stones, are built up as a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

6 Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold I lay in Zion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious ; and he that buildeth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which believe, he is precious ; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which

which

^a As new-born infants. This expression very emphatically denotes those who are newly converted, or regenerated ;—*in Greek, νεογεννητοι*, (Cyprian's Epist. to K. V. p. 107.) that the English Church may guard her children from any such error, 1627, 1639, 1789, 1789, 1789, and 1789, 1789.

^b Since you have tasted, &c. This is the proper rendering of *εσθίετε*, and not, according to my translation, *if ye be*. See Blackwell's Sacred Classics Vol. II. p. 107.

^c *Is a precious*.—*εσθίετε*, *Precedent*, *itself*.

which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner:

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed,

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

which the builders rejected, is become the head of the corner; all their opposition to it is in vain: they can never pretend to prevent the honour to which it is destined in the Divine purpose; And to themselves, it is also, as Isaiah expresses it in the preceding context, *a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence*; they who would attempt, as it were, to remove it out of the way, find it an over-match for their strength, and are dashed in pieces by it. *They being disobedient* to the Divine revelation, *stumble at the word*^d of the gospel, which contains this awful testimony, and bring inevitable ruin upon themselves; *to which also they were appointed* by the righteous sentence of God long before, even as early as in his first purpose and decree he ordained his Son to be the great Foundation of his church. But *ye*, on the contrary, who unfeignedly believe in him, [are] *a chosen generation, a royal priesthood*, who bear at once the dignity of kings, and sanctity of priests: *a holy nation*, set apart in a special manner for the service of God; and *a peculiar people*. When these titles were given to Israel of old, it was in an inferior sense; and it is in a much nobler signification, that these words may be applied to you. Consider it therefore as the wise intention of Divine Providence, *that you should declare and proclaim all abroad, the virtues*^f *of him who has called you out of that darkness*, in which you originally were, *into his marvellous and glorious light*^g; that clear light of the gospel, which opens so many illustrious scenes of Divine wonders

SECT.
iii.

I Peter
11. 7.

8

9

^d *They being disobedient, stumble, &c.*] A learned writer, I think, very well observes, that it is doing violence to the text, to read it as one continued sentence, as it is in our translation. The truth is, the apostle runs a double antithesis between believers and unbelievers: *ὑμῖν ἐν—πιστεύουσιν*, saith he, *To you who believe, it is precious: ἀπιστοῖς δέ, but to them who are disobedient, and unbelievers, a stone of stumbling: αἱ πρὸς σκοπλίσαι, they stumble: ὑμῖν δέ, but you are a chosen people, &c.* See Taylor's Key to the Romans, § 71.

^e *Ye are a chosen generation.*] Dr. Whitby shews at large that the phrase of God's chosen is applied to the whole nation of the Jews, good and bad, and not to those among them who might be supposed elected to eternal life. But it seems very unreasonable to limit such phrases as these

when applied to Christians just to the idea, which the like phrases had, when applied to the Jews.

^f *The virtues.*] We render it *praises*; but the word *ἀρεταί*, is well known commonly to have the signification here assigned it.

^g *Marvellous and glorious light.*] A most beautiful expression of the wonders the gospel opens on the enlightened eye. But perhaps no interpretation was ever more unnatural and servile to an hypothesis than that which the author of *Miscellanea Sacra* gives to these words, when he explains their being called out of darkness, by their being first made proselytes of the gate from their state of heathen idolatry, and then being brought into the marvellous light of the Christian religion. *Miscel. Sacra*. Vol. II. p. 25.

h *Were*

SECT.
III.1 Peter
II. 10.

- ders. To this, are you, my brethren called, *who once [were] not a people, but [are] now the people of God: who had not obtained mercy, who, many of you, lay in the ruins of the Gentile world, but have now obtained mercy, and are gathered into the church of God, and by his*
- 11 *favour entitled to all its privileges.* My *beloved* brethren, let it be your special care to walk worthy of these privileges; and that you may, *I beseech [you] as strangers in this world, and sojourners in the body, who are to be here but for a very little space of time, and must soon quit this state of mortality to dwell in another world, that ye abstain from carnal lusts, in the gratification of which, only a very mean and transient pleasure is to be found: for these are appetites which are suited only to that part of our nature, which so soon is to be laid down, and which do indeed make war against the nobler powers of the immortal soul, and have a tendency, not only to injure, but for ever to ruin it, if they are suffered to prevail and govern;*
- 12 *Having your conversation honest, fair, and honourable among the Gentiles, particularly in an exemplary discharge of all social and relative duties; that whereas they speak against you, as evil doers, in separating from the worship of the true gods, and joining yourselves with what they presumptuously call the impious sect of Christians, they, being eye-witnesses continually of [your] good works, may not only lay aside those blasphemous reproaches, but exchange them for commendations and praises; and so may glorify God in the day of [their] visitation, during the season in which the gospel is preached among, whereby they are visited with the offers of pardon and salvation.*

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul:

12 Having your conversation honest, fair, and without guile among the Gentiles; that whereas they speak against you as evil-doers, they may by your good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

IMPROVEMENT.

Let us examine our own hearts seriously and impartially, with respect to those branches of the *Christian temper*, and those views of the Christian life, which are exhibited in this excellent portion of holy writ. Let us, especially, enquire, in what manner, and

62

[I am not a people.] I think it plain that Verse 10, (16) where there seems to be a reference to the Jews, is not there quoted. But it may not be found precisely so connected

to the Gentiles, that I thought it much better to give it more a turn, than to suppose it here spoken only of Jewish converts.

to what purposes we receive *the word of God*? Is it with the simplicity of babes, or children? do we desire it, as *they* desire the breast? do we lay aside those *evil affections* of mind, which would incapacitate us for receiving it in a becoming manner? And does it conduce to our *spiritual nourishment*, and growth in grace? have we indeed *tasted that the Lord is gracious*? do we experimentally know, that to the *true believer* the Redeemer is inestimably precious? have we indeed *come to him, as the living stone*; and notwithstanding all the *neglect and contempt* with which he may be treated by many infatuated and miserable men, by wretches who are bent on their own destruction, do we regard, and build on him as our great and only *foundation*? and do we feel that *spiritual life* diffused through our souls, which is the genuine consequence of a real and vital union with him?—If these be our happy circumstances, we shall never *be ashamed or confounded*: for this is that *foundation which God hath laid in Zion*; and the united efforts of earth and hell to raze or overturn it, will be scattered as chaff and stubble, and by the breath of God be rendered utterly vain and ineffectual.

Are we conscious of our high dignity, as we are a *chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people*? are our hearts suitably affected with a sense of the *Divine goodness*, in calling us to be a *people*, who once were *not a people*; and us *beloved*, who were *not beloved*; in leading us from the deplorable *darkness of ignorance and vice*, in which our *ancestors* were involved, into the *marvellous light of the gospel*; yea, in dissipating those thick clouds of prejudice and error, which once veiled this sacred light from our eyes, that its enlivening beams might break in upon our souls! And are we now *shewing forth his praises*? are we now *offering to him spiritual sacrifice*, in humble dependence on *Christ*, our great *High Priest*, who continually intercedes for our acceptance with God? Then shall we indeed *make our calling and our election sure*, and shall ere long appear in his heavenly temple, both as *kings and priests unto God* to participate of our Redeemer's glory, to reign with him, and minister to him for ever.

Let us be careful, in the mean time, to remember, that we are *strangers and sojourners on earth, as all our fathers were*; and that our days in this transitory life are but *as a shadow* that declineth; and let us learn to regard the appetites of our animal nature, and the interest of this mortal life, with a noble superiority; reflecting for how little a space of time they will solicit our attention. And as for *fleshy lusts*, let us consider them as *making war against the soul*; arming ourselves with that resolution and fortitude which is necessary to prevent their gaining a victory over us; which would be, at once, *our disgrace and our ruin*. There

SECT.
III.

is an additional argument to be derived, for a strenuous *opposition* to them, for our circumstances and situations in the present
Ver. world, where there are so many enemies to our holy religion,
12 who cannot be more effectually *silenced than by our good conversation*. Let it be, therefore, our principal care to cut off from them *the occasion of speaking against us as evil-doers*: and by exhibiting a clear and unexceptionable pattern of good works in our daily conversation, let us invite and allure them to improve the day of their visitation, and glorify their Father who is in heaven.

SECT. IV.

In order to adorn the gospel, the Apostle urges upon them the exercise of a due care as to relative duties; and particularly a subjection to civil governors, and to masters, even where their dispositions or injunctions might be harsh and severe; enforcing all by the consideration of that patience with which our Lord Jesus Christ endured his most gracious sufferings. 1 Pet. II. 13, to the end.

I PETER II. 13.

SECT.
IV.

1 Peter
II. 13.

HAVING been already urging you to set a good example before those who are without, for the farther illustration of that general precept, let me exhort you to be particularly careful to be *subject to every human constitution* of government, under which you are providentially placed, *for the Lord's sake*, and that ye may not bring any reflection upon the religion of Jesus; *whether it be to the king or emperor,*
14 *as supreme*: Or whether it be to governors and presidents, *as sent and commissioned by him from Rome, in order to the punishment of evil-doers* but to the praise of them who do well*: for this is indeed the true intent of magistracy, and this will be the care of them who rightly understand the nature and honour of their office.

For

1 Peter II. 13.

SUBMIT yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the king as supreme,

14 Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

* *A Every human constitution.* The whole course of the apostle's reasoning in this place so plainly shows how very important it is to apply this to the instructions of men in matters of religion, that some cannot but wonder that any rational writer should ever have mentioned the argument which has been drawn from it.

13 *In order to the punishment of evil-doers.* The Roman governors had the power of life and death in such conquered provinces as these mentioned, chap. i. 11. There is therefore, the exactest propriety in this stile, as Dr. Lardner hath observed, *Cred.* Vol. 4. p. 167.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not using *your* liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.

17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

18 Servants, be subject to *your* masters with all fear ; not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy

For so is the will of God in this respect, that by doing good ye should bridle in the ignorance of foolish men, which might be ready to cast reflections upon you. *As* those who are indeed in the noblest sense free, in consequence of your relation to Christ, and your share in the purchase of his blood, *yet not using your liberty as a veil* and covering for the practice of wickedness, as the Jews too often do ; *but* behaving continually *as* becomes the servants of God, as those who are now more than ever his property in consequence of your having been bought with such a price. *Honour all men* ; maintain an esteem for human nature in general, and observe with pleasure whatever is truly honourable in the meanest and most undeserving of mankind. *Love the Christian brotherhood* with a peculiar and distinguishing affection, suitable to that fraternal relation into which you are brought by your joint adoption into the family of God, and insertion into the body of Christ. *Reverence God*^d at all times with the sincerest and profoundest humility ; and let a sense of the honour and favour he has conferred upon you increase, rather than diminish that reverence. *Honour the king* whom God hath set over you, and all the subordinate governors who derive their authority from him ; paying obedience to all their just commands, and taking heed that there be nothing rebellious or factious in your behaviour, which would turn to the hurt of society, and bring a reflection upon your holy profession. *Ye who are domestic servants and slaves be in subjection to [your own] masters* in all things lawful, *with all reverence* and submission ; and remember to pay this regard *not only to the good and the gentle*, whose moderation, clemency, and benevolence make your yoke easy ; *but also the froward* and perverse. *For this [is] graceful* indeed, and deserves applause ; *if any one for the sake of conscience*

SECT.
iv.

1 Peter
II. 15.

16

17

18

19

c *The ignorance of foolish men.*] By the *foolish men* here spoken of, Dr. Whitby understands the heathens, who might be ready *foolishly* to judge of Christians by the behaviour of the turbulent Jews, and so might represent them as a people naturally *averse* from subjection to kings, as Josephus says of his own nation.

d *Reverence God, &c.*] Perhaps no finer and stronger instances of the *Laconic style*, are to be found any where than in this place. It is remarkable that they are required to *honour the emperor*, though so great a persecutor, and so abandoned a character as Nero himself.

SECT.
IV.

1 Peter
II. 22.

science towards God, and a desire of performing his duty to him, patiently endures grief and sorrow, though he suffer unjustly: For after all, what glory [is it,] or what can you possibly value yourselves upon, if when you have committed an offence, and are buffeted and corrected for it, ye endure [it?]. How can you indeed do otherwise? or if you could, how shameful were it in such a case, to rise against the hand of your injured masters? But if when you have done good and yet suffer through their tyranny and perverseness, ye endure [it] meekly and patiently, this [is] acceptable and grateful before God: his eye, which always judges of the true beauty of characters aright, is even delighted with such a spectacle, though exhibited in the lowest rank

- 21 of human life. And I would particularly urge this meek and patient temper upon you; for to this you were called, when you were brought into the profession of the Christian faith; because Christ himself, pure and spotless as he was, suffered not only buffetings and stripes, but deep and mortal wounds, for you, leaving yours, an example and copy, that you might with certainty trace, and with constancy and diligence follow his footsteps, and by imitating them as his, be charmed to an imitation, even where it was most
22 difficult and painful. We cannot expect indeed to arrive at a perfect resemblance of it; but let us endeavour to approach as near as possible, even to the amiable character of him, who did no sin, neither was any degree of deceit found
23 in his mouth. When being reviled, reviled not again, and suffering the most grievous insults and injuries, threatened not the vengeance which he had it in his power to have executed; but committed [himself] to him who judgeth righteously, and who in his own most proper time will make the righteous and innocent
24 triumphant over all their enemies. Yet we know this spotless and Holy Person, was as much distinguished by the grievousness of his sufferings, as by the integrity of his character.

For

a *If when ye have done good, and yet suffer, ye endure [it,] this [is] grateful before God.* [The apostle Ambrose quotes it as an excellent saying of Augustine, that it is truly good to do good, and to be reproached, *Am. Med. I. vii. § 50.*

b *Because Christ himself, &c.* [It is observable, that upon the mention of the name of Christ, the apostle falls into a

worthy, if a man for conscience sake toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

c *For what glory is it, if when ye have suffered for good faults ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do evil, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God.*

d *For even know ye what ye called; because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps.*

e *Who did no sin, neither was any deceit found in his mouth.*

f *When he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously:*

g *Who his own self bore our sins in his own body on the tree, that we*

public and animated discourse of several verses, to the end of the chapter; afterwards continues to pursue his exhortation to relative duties.

h *Suffered for you, leaving you, &c.* [I here prefer the reading of the Alexandrian and other MSS. in most agreeable to the sense and connection.

i *That*

we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.

For it is He, who himself bore the punishment of our sins in his own body, when he hung in the agonies of crucifixion on the accursed tree; that we being freed from the guilt of our sins^h, and the misery to which they exposed us, might live unto righteousness: by whose stripes and bruises ye are healedⁱ of evils infinitely greater than the cruelty of the severest masters can bring upon you; according to the well-known phrase of the prophet, (Isaiah liii. 4, 5, 6.) *For ye were like 25 sheep going astray*, exposed to want and danger, and wandering in the way to destruction; but now ye are by Divine grace recovered, and turned again to him who bears the important and tender character of the great Shepherd and Bishop of your souls^k, who has graciously received you under his pastoral care, and will maintain that inspection over you which shall be your continued security from returning to those fatal wanderings; and the sense of this may cheer and comfort you under any oppression or injuries to which you may be exposed.

SECT.
iv.

1 Peter
II. 24.

25 For ye were as sheep going astray: but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

IMPROVEMENT.

As the honour of God is eminently concerned in the regard Ver shewn by his people to their relative duties, let us out of a due re- 13—18 spect to that, pay a very careful and diligent attention to them; that the ignorance of foolish men, of those who reproach our good 15 conversation in Christ, may be utterly silenced. Let magistrates 13, 14 especially be revered, and in all things lawful, obeyed. And if they desire to secure reverence to their persons and authority, let them remember the end and design of their office, namely, to be a terror to evil doers, and a praise and encouragement to the regular and virtuous. And let us, who rejoice in our liberty, that liberty wherewith Christ has made us free, be very careful, that it be

^h That being freed from sin: ταῖς ἀμαρτίαις ἀναλυσόμενοι.] That our common translation is agreeable to the frequent signification of the original word, is certain. But so is the version I have chosen, which is approved by Beza, and is preferred and adopted by that judicious and learned critic Erasmus Schinidius.

ⁱ By whose stripes, &c.] Mr. Cradock supposes the meaning of this is, as if he had said, The blood of Christ, by which your souls are saved, may be a sufficient balm for those wounds and bruises which

your cruel masters may inflict upon you; that is, it may so delight your minds as to raise you above an undue regard to and concern about such corporeal sufferings. *Apost. Hist.* p. 407.

^k Bishop of your souls.] This is an instance of that duplicity of design which is often to be found in the epistles. The apostle urges these things peculiarly upon servants: yet does it in general language, as well knowing that many of them were the concerns of all Christian readers.

he not abused as a cloak of licentiousness; but as we would manifest our fear and reverence of God, let us remember to honour the king; yea, to render every man, and every station and character, the esteem and respect which he justly claims; feeling at the same time, the constraints of a peculiar affection to all those who are united to us by the endearing character of our brethren in the Lord.—Should men who fill superior stations and relations in life, not be so regular, and without exception, in their private and public deportment as they ought, let us perform our duty, not only to the gentle and obliging, but to the perverse and forward; remembering our Lord's example, which was set before us that we might follow his steps. And let his marvellous love in bearing our sins in his own sacred body on the tree, endear both his example and his precepts to our souls, and constrain us to a holy conformity to him.

Since he who is the great Shepherd and Bishop of souls, came on the most gracious and condescending errand of seeking and saving that which was lost, of gathering us into his fold, who were wandering in the way to perdition, let us shew so much gratitude and wisdom, as not to wander any more; but as we regard our security and our very life, let us keep our Shepherd in our eye, submit ourselves to his pastoral inspection, and cheerfully follow him, in whatsoever path he shall condescend to conduct us.

SECT. V.

Christian wives are exhorted to submit themselves to their husband and to love the ornaments of their minds, rather than of their persons; and likewise husbands are exhorted to treat their wives in a becoming and honourable manner, from a tender sense of those obligations in which the sex is peculiarly liable. 1 PET. III. 1—7.

1 PETER III. 1.

1 PETER III. 1.

I HAVE been discoursing of the duty of a servant; let me now likewise consider those of some other relations; and particularly urge it upon you, O ye Christian wives, that ye [be] in subjection to your own husband, in all things just and lawful; that if any of them be disobedient to the word of the gospel, and have refused to yield to all the other mighty arguments by which Christianity is supported, they may, without attending upon the word, be gained over, to the love and practice of it, by the amiable and edifying deportment of [their] wives: Particularly,

LET WISE ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands; that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives,

2 Wills they behold your

your chaste conversation coupled with fear :

3 Whose adorning let it not be that outward *adorning* of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel ;

4 But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands ;

6 Even as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord : whose daughter

larly, *beholding your chaste and spotless conversation, in the fear of God, and with a due reverence to your husbands, for his sake, and not merely on constraint.* Be careful to behave in every respect as becomes those *whose happiness it is to be acquainted with the great principles of Christianity ; and particularly consider, how they should influence your conduct in the adorning of your persons*^a. And as to this, *let it not be merely external*^b nor consist in the *plaiting and braiding the hair, or in putting on chains of gold about the neck, or earrings, or bracelets of gold on the arms, or in wearing of sumptuous and splendid apparel :* But let your ornament be of a much more glorious nature ; let it consist in a well-regulated temper of mind, in having *the hidden man of the heart* rightly formed : let it be seated in *what is more incorruptible* by far than gold, or gems, which, stable as they are, may in time wear away, and are liable to a variety of accidents ; I mean, in the beautiful and harmonious disposition of *a meek and quiet spirit*, silently submitting to the conduct of your husbands, and gently accommodating yourselves to them as far as reasonably you can ; *which argues an inward wisdom and goodness, that is highly precious in the sight of God himself ; who looks with comparative contempt on those little artifices by which the notice of vain men is often attracted.* This has long been the prevailing fashion in God's family ; *for so the holy women also, who hoped in God, and served him in the integrity of their hearts, long since, adorned themselves, being, agreeably to the exhortations I have been giving you, in subjection to their own husbands : As you may particularly recollect* in the instance of *Sarah, who you know obeyed Abraham her husband, calling him constantly, when she spoke of him, her lord, though she*
was

^a *Whose adorning, &c.] Plutarch quotes a passage from Crates, in which he observes, in words greatly resembling these, "That neither gold, nor emeralds, nor pearls give grace and ornament to a woman ; but all those things, which clearly express, and set off her gravity, regularity, and modesty."* *Precept. Cong.* p. 86. But St. Peter's precept is enriched with a variety of much more noble and agreeable

thoughts ; especially when recommending virtue as *the ornament of the hidden man, incorruptible, and precious in the sight of God, the truest judge of beauty and perfection.*

^b *Let it not be, &c.] This is not to be interpreted as absolutely prohibiting the ornaments of dress, but only the making these things our chief concern. Compare John vi. 27 ; with 1 Tim. v. 8.*

c *Not*

SECT.

v.

1 Peter
111. 3.

SECT.
V.
1 Psalm
111 6.

was not only of the same family with him, but was herself in so peculiar a manner dignified by God, and had her name changed in token of her being a mother of many nations, and of the veneration in which she was to be held in all succeeding ages. Remember therefore the character of this excellent woman, when those of you, who are of Jewish extraction, are so fond of calling your mother; and whose daughters you indeed are, *in long as ye do well, and preserving, by such a conduct, your inward tranquillity and fortitude, are not meanly terrified, so as to act out of character, with any apprehension of danger, which may meet you in the way of your duty.* The want of a becoming and necessary fortitude in this case, would indeed be attended with fatal consequences, and render you unworthy of so honourable a title. And that the duty of the wife may be rendered more easy and agreeable, and ye husbands may have more reason to expect it to be cheerfully performed, let it be your care *likewise that ye dwell with [your wives] according to knowledge*, and in such a manner as becomes those who have been instructed in that great system of wisdom and duty, the gospel of Christ. And particularly be careful so to order your affairs, that you may not be prevented from *affording an honourable and comfortable subsistence to the woman*; for this is a piece of respect which is due to the tenderness and infirmity of her sex, as being upon the whole *the weaker vessel*; less able to endure the

daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid, with any amazement.

7 Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto

c. Not terrified with any amazement.] Many have apprehended this last clause as suggested as an argument to persuade them to do well, that they would be preserved from those odious and dangerous which a perverse and rebellious conduct with superior power might bring along with it, and which would indeed prove as injurious to their power as to their character. But the structure of the *first woman* makes it evident, that he speaks of the condition on which they were to preserve the characters of daughters of Sarah. Possibly the apostle might have in his mind the instance in which Sarah acted beneath her usual character, when through fear and sudden amazement she denied her having laughed. Gen. xviii. 15. And if so be, it is the design of this sentence to intimate, that though in that instance she could not possibly acted in a very different manner, but

as she had a very different, I choose not to express it very strongly in the present case, though I have indeed glanced at it.

d. Dwelling in honourable subsistence to the woman.] This would may not a very different, and truly I think, a very agreeable interpretation of those words in 10. Whitty; which I shall not so much as translate. — It is to be remembered, that many of the Christians were persons of one rank in life; whom might mean such a prospect of maintaining their wives decently, and not subjecting them to hardship more than they could bear, (when they might be tempted to do from vain and proud circumstances,) according to power. The sense of the word *eye*, as denoting maintenance or subsistence, is so much confirmed by 1 Tim. v. 17, that I think I need say no more to justify it.

unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.

the fatigue of labour, and subject to various indispositions which peculiarly require succour and accommodation. See therefore that this duty be properly and carefully performed, that your hearts may be endeared to each other; and upon the whole, converse together, as [*those who are*] joint heirs of the grace of eternal life, and are solicitous, that your behaviour may be correspondent to so exalted a hope, and may be so ordered in every respect that your joint prayers may not be hindered^e, nor the pleasures of devotion impaired by any secret alienation of heart, but rather be increased by the strictest union and sincerest affection.

SECT.

V.

1 Peter III. 7.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us observe with a pleasing attention, how greatly solicitous all the *apostles* are, not only to establish the *doctrines* of Christianity, but to inculcate its *precepts*; particularly those, which refer to the *relative duties* of life. The comprehensive argument by which St. Peter enforces those of *one* peculiar relation, may be considered also as enforcing *all the rest*; I mean, the tendency of our exemplary behaviour, to win over those who are without the word, or are disobedient to it. In this manner let us all plead the cause of our Lord and Master. And this silent, this winning eloquence will, by the Divine blessing, be powerful and effectual.—
The veil of *modesty* is decent in *all*, and an humble caution, and fear of offending, are to be considered as duties of *universal* obligation. But if the *weaker sex* are commanded to aim at a noble superiority to the concerns of this *animal* life, and to the parade and vanity of *dress*, it may with greater reason be expected from *men* who boast of their superior understanding and larger experience. They, not only from Christian humility, but, one would think, even from a *manly pride*, should be raised above such childish ornaments, in contriving and adjusting which, many who are stiled rational creatures, spend much too large a portion of their *precious time*, and for the sake of which they neglect the cultivation and embellishment of their intelligent and immortal part, and the securing a happiness that will never have an end: as if glittering in the eyes of our *fellow-worms* were so desirable a thing, that it were worth while, for the sake of it, to expose ourselves to *condemnation* from

^e That your prayers may not be hindered.] These words seem strongly to intimate the great importance of social prayer; as, when we shortly expect to unite in acts

of domestic devotion, a concern not to be notoriously unfit for it, will be a guard upon our general behaviour,

^{807.} *from God?* Let the hidden man of the heart be more our care; and
 ——— when that is rightly governed, the proper conduct of our external
 Ver. behaviour will be natural and easy.

7 Let us labour to walk *according to knowledge*, to behave as those who have been well instructed in the science of the gospel, in comparison of which all other sciences are *ignorance and vanity*. Let us be ready to make allowance for the *natural infirmities* of those about us. Especially let *husbands* consider *these* of their wives, (not as an encouragement to *oppression*, than which nothing could be more ungenerous, but) as an engagement in all honour and conscience, to a *tender and respectful* behaviour. How becoming and amiable is such conduct in those who through Divine grace are *heirs of eternal life*? And if a due care be not maintained on this head, there will be an indisposition for *social* and for *secret prayer*; and when the pleasures of *devotion* are destroyed or embittered, it is not to be expected any *other kind* of pleasure worth the regard of a *rational* creature, can long continue.

SECT. VI.

The Apostle urges various arguments on the Christian converts, to engage them to an unfeigned, benivolent, and useful life and conversation, and to a steady courageous adherence to their religion amidst all opposition. 1 Pet. III. 5—17.

1 Peter III. 5.

^{807.} *VI.* **T**O conclude this head; my brethren, [be] all
 ——— *unfeigned*, guarding against all unneces-
 sary occasion of contention; be *sympathizing*,
 full of brotherly love to all Christians, *compassionate*
 to those that are in distress, and *friendly* to
 5 all those that need your assistance: *Not re-
 turning evil for evil, nor reproach for reproach*:
 but on the contrary, *salute blessing*, even to those
 that curse you, according to our Lord's precept;
knowing that in this purpose ye were called to the
 profession of Christianity, *that ye might inherit*
 a *glorious* inheritance and eternal, the expectation
 of which, (considering its infinite importance,) may well keep your spirits calm and composed,
 whatever be the injury and ill-usage you may
 10 meet with from your fellow-men. For this
 you know is the language of the Psalmist, and
 it ought never to be forgotten, (1'sal. xxxiv. 12,
 13.)

1 Peter III. 8.

FINALLY, be ye all
 of one mind, having
 compassion one of an-
 other, love as brethren,
 be pitied, be comfort-
 ed;

9 Not rendering evil
 for evil, or railing for
 railing: but contrari-
 wise, blessing; know-
 ing that ye are there-
 unto called, that ye
 should inherit blessing.

10 For he that will
 love life, and see good
 days,

days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

11 Let him eschew evil, and do good ; let him seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers : but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good ?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousness' sake, happy are ye : and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled ;

15 But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts ; and be ready always

13,) What man is *he that would love life^a*, in the truest sense of loving and enjoying it, and would see good, prosperous, and happy days ? *let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking deceit : Let him turn away from the practice of all that is evil, and do good to the utmost extent of his power ; let him seek after peace, and resolutely pursue it*, even though it may appear to fly away from him. *For the favourable eyes of the Lord [are] continually set upon the righteous*, to watch over and protect them ; *and his ears [are] ever [open] to listen to the voice of their supplications ; but the face of the Lord, his countenance full of wrath and resentment, [is] set against them that do evil ;* insomuch that he will even blot out their names from the book of the living, and cause their remembrance to perish from the earth. These are the things which on the one hand may be hoped for, and on the other, dreaded as the consequence of practising, or neglecting religion.

And now reflect with yourselves, who shall hurt you ? who shall have the ability, or inclination to hurt you, *if ye imitate him who is supremely good*, if you copy after the benevolence of the Divine Being, and of your great Master, whose whole life was so illustrious an example of the most diffusive generosity and goodness to his followers ? *But if you should suffer on account of righteousness, [ye are] still happy* in spite of all the malicious and outrageous efforts of your enemies to render you miserable : *therefore fear not their terror^b, neither be troubled*, as they are, under the various calamities of life, who are, alas ! utterly destitute of your support. *But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts ; behave towards him continually with that reverence, with that dutiful and obedient regard, which his unrivalled perfections and glories demand ; and [be] always prepared*, by a ready and familiar acquaintance with the contents and evidences of your holy religion, and by that cheerfulness and

SECT
vi.
1 Peter
III. 10.

^a *He that would love life, &c.]* The apostle here urges in favour of the virtues he recommends, that by these the comforts of life will be secured, ver. 10, 11 ; the favour of God engaged, ver. 12. and the malice of men in a great measure disarmed, ver. 13, &c. And these three arguments are indeed of very great weight and importance.

^b *Fear not their terror.]* Mr. Joseph Mede understands it, as if he had said, Fear not the Jew, nor the Gentile ; but sanctify, reverence, and worship the one living God. Diater. on Luke xi. 2. But I think the interpretation given in the paraphrase is much more natural.

^c *That*

EPIST.
VI.1 Peter
III, 15.

and presence of mind which arises from a consciousness of your practical regard to it, to *[offer] an apology to every one that demands of you an account of the exalted hope which is in you*, and which enabled you to maintain such serenity and composure, under those troubles and persecutions to which the profession of Christianity may expose you. And that this noble defence may be rendered the more effectual, let it be made *with meekness and reverence*, the good fruit of your religious principles appearing in the piety and gentleness of your minds.

- 16 Let it be your constant endeavour, that, *having a good conscience*, you be always bold and courageous in the defence of that system of religion which gives to such a conscience so mighty and stable a support; *that wherein they, who bitterly oppose your religion, speak against you as evil-doers*, and lay to your charge crimes of the most detestable nature, *they may be ashamed*; they, I say, *who revile your good*, unoffensive, and useful *conversations* in the profession of that religion which brings you into such an intimate relation to *Christ*. For *[it is] certainly better to suffer, (if it be the will of God, that you should suffer, for doing good, than for doing evil*, the testimony of a good conscience, and the sense of the Divine favour, affording the noblest supports in the former case; whereas in the latter, the severest torments that can be endured, are those which the guilty mind inflicts upon itself to which we may add, that while we suffer for the truth, we have the pleasure of reflecting, that we follow our blessed Redeemer; and this is another most powerful source of consolation, of which I shall presently have occasion to discourse more particularly and largely.

always to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear;

16 Having a good conscience; that whereas they speak evil of you as of evil-doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well-doing, than for evil-doing.

IMPROVEMENT.

How very astonishing, and lamentable is it, that when the way to happiness is so plainly delineated, so few should find it!

16 That whereas they speak against you, they may be ashamed. (Consider this remarkably illustrated by the story of that critic of Pilate, in which he goes in account of his own conduct, in persecuting

the Christians, by which it plainly appears that he was ashamed at what the law required, when he considered how *unprofitable* their behaviour was.

it! *What man is there, who does not desire life, and love many days, in which he may see good?* Yet how few tongues are kept from evil, how few lips from speaking guile? How few decline from evil, and do good! How few seek peace, and pursue it! On the contrary, how much low cunning and artifice, and what discords and contentions reign among mankind! And they often issue in those bloody wars and fightings, which arise from those lusts that war in our members. How detestable, and how miserable, do these perverse and ungovernable passions render us! How sadly do they prevent the ascent of our prayers to God, and the descent of his mercies upon us! Mercies, which he is ever ready to impart to those who are meet and disposed to receive them.

SECT.
vi.

Ver. 10

There is notwithstanding a little remnant, who are righteous before him; and of them his gracious eye is continually directed for their good; to their cry, yea to the soft whispers of their supplications, his ears are ever open. Honoured and happy above all the children of men are they who have the favour and the attention of the great Sovereign of the universe. Who will be able to hurt or injure them, should they have malignity enough to wish and attempt it? And as this loving-kindness of the Lord is thus productive of security and happiness to his people, let it engage us to be followers and imitators of him, who is supremely good. We may then face all the menaces of a frowning world with an holy intrepidity, and sanctifying the Lord God in our hearts, making him our fear, and our dread, we need not have any terrible apprehensions of what men or devils can do unto us. Yea, we shall in that case, not only have nothing to fear, but every thing to hope, which can conduce to our real and everlasting felicity. Encouraged by these important considerations, let it be our care in the fear of God, to study and endeavour clearly to understand the foundations of our religion, and of our glorious hope, that we may be able to defend it against every attack, however formidable, and to give an account of our hope to all who shall demand it, in sweet harmony and complacency of soul, undisturbed with the disquietude, and untainted with the example, of those who render evil for evil, and railing for railing. On the contrary, let us greatly triumph over all ill usage, by repaying it with good; and may a sense of that important blessing, which by the gospel we are called to inherit, diffuse that pleasure and happiness, through our own souls, which may carry them above the resentment of the little injuries we receive from the unkindness of men, and dispose us to every genuine expression of that unlimited benevolence, which should fill and expand the hearts of

12

13

14, 15

9

8

of those who are thus feasted with the Divinest hopes and consolations.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle Peter urges on the Christian converts the atonement, resurrection, and exaltation of their Divine Saviour, the obligation of their baptismal covenant, and the awful solemnity of the last judgment, to engage them to a life of Christian mortification and holiness, whatever opposition they might be called to encounter. 1 Pet. III. 15—IV. 6.

1 PETER III. 18.

1 PET. III. 18.
1 PET. III. 18.
IHAVE already observed, that if it be the will of God you should suffer, it is better it should be for doing well than for doing evil; and it is very evidently so, because hereby we are made conformable to Christ our Head and Leader, whom it cannot but be our glory and happiness to resemble; for he *also once suffered for sin*^a, he, who was so eminently, and perfectly the just, suffered for the unjust, for our benefit, and in our stead, that he might introduce us to God; and fix us in a state of acceptance and favourable intercession with him, being indeed put to death in the flesh, by those enemies whom God permitted for a while to triumph over him; but quickened by the spirit of God^b, which soon re-animated his body, and raised it to an immortal life. Even that Spirit, by the inspiration of which granted to his faithful servant Noah, going forth, as it were in that progress in which he employed him, he preached to those notorious sinners, who for their disobedience, have since experienced the just severity of the Divine vengeance, and are now to the condon of separate spirits, reserved, as it were, in prison,

to

1 PETER III. 18.

FOR Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

18. By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

^a *Quoniam Christus etiam pro peccatis passus est.* The suffering here, though it seems a kind of expiation conditioned by the sinner's meritorious obedience or holiness. *Moss*, says he is the same, properly understood, and his purpose of punishing them under that influence.

^b *Quickened by the Spirit.* The *Moss* renders it, *re-animated* with the Spirit,

and urges it as an argument against the sleep of the soul. *Moss's Third. Works*, p. 15.

^c *The spirits in prison.* Hardly any text has been more differently interpreted than this. Some understand it of souls who went in before Jesus' time to paradise, or purgatory, or a middle state, where they were waiting for Deliverance coming; others

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto even baptism, doth also now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

to the severer judgment at the great day. I speak of those, *who were long since disobedient, when once the abused and insulted long-suffering of a compassionate God, waited upon them, in the days of the patriarch Noah, during the succession of one hundred and twenty years, while the ark was preparing; in which few, that is, eight souls, of Noah and his wife, his three sons and their wives, were carried safely through the water*^d, in which the residue of mankind perished. *The antitype to whiche*, (or ²¹ that which corresponds to, and was figured by it, that is, by the preservation of Noah's family in the ark,) *does now save us, or is the instrument of our safety and preservation, as the ark was of theirs; [I mean baptism] whereby we are received into the Christian church, and numbered amongst the heirs of salvation; but then it is to be remembered, that it is not merely the putting away the pollution of the flesh by the use of material water, for that would be very insignificant; but the answer of a good conscience*^e, the reply that it makes when interrogated *in the presence of God, and*

SECT.
iv.

1 Peter
III. 20.

others of those *in hell*, whom he delivered, to grace his triumph. See Dr. More's *Theolog. Works*, p. 18. Bishop Pearson *on the Creed*, p. 228. Lord Barrington understands it of Noah's preaching to his own family, shut up with him in the ark, while Dr. Whitby and Burnet understand it of those who were in the darkness of heathen ignorance. Burnet's *four Disc.* p. 68, 69. Compare Limborch's *Theol.* 3. xiii. 27, 28. Upon the whole, I think the sense given in the paraphrase is most easy; and next to that, know none more probable than that of Mr. Cradock, who explains it of *Christ's preaching*, while he was on earth, to those who were now *spirits in prison*; which might engage them to a holy caution, lest they also should trifle with the means of salvation which they enjoyed, and perish as the former did. Compare Mat. v. 25; Rev. xx. 7.

^d Carried safely through the water: δι' ὕδατος.] Raphelius abundantly justifies this sense of the particle δια, when used with a genitive case. See *Annot. ex. Xenoph. in loc.*

^e The antitype to which.] That is, the thing which corresponds, not with the water, but with the ark.

^f Baptism, not the putting away the pol-

lution of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience.] It is well known the Jews laid a great stress upon their lustrations. The apostle therefore very properly cautions them against such foolish dependencies. A courageous readiness in the performance of their whole duty, and even in suffering persecution for the sake of truth, was absolutely necessary, in order to maintain that good conscience, to which in their baptism they professed such a regard, and to the exercise of which they so solemnly engaged themselves.—Archbishop Leighton has observed in this place, that the word ἐρωτημα, here used, is a judicial word, and signifies interrogations used in the law for a trial, or executing a process, which is much preferable to the translation Dr. Barrow gives us, namely, the free and sincere stipulation. Barrow's *Works*, Vol. I. p. 355. It is a credible fact, supported by Cyprian, and other ancient writers, that the catechumen had certain interrogations put to him at baptism, concerning his faith in Christ, and his renunciation of Satan, and all the works of darkness, and the vanity of the world; and it is very probable the apostle may refer to that custom,

SECT.
VII.

I Peter
III. 21.

and spoken in such a language as he only is capable of hearing and understanding; and when this likewise is found, then we attain salvation, by that great event in which at baptism we declare ourselves believers: I mean the resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ from the dead;

22 Who is now set down at the right-hand of God, being gone into heaven; there to take possession of the glory prepared for him, where he reigns supreme over all worlds, all the angels, and authorities and powers, which are there enthroned, being made subject to him, and humbly bowing before his superior dignity and authority.

IV. 1. As Christ therefore has suffered for us in the flesh such extreme and amazing sufferings as are not to be described, and even when their weight lay heaviest upon him, even in the agony of death, persisted in his generous design to accomplish all that was needful for our redemption and salvation; I beseech you, arm yourselves likewise with the same fortitude and resolution of mind in his cause, whatever extremities you may be called out to endure. And let this engage you, on the like principles to mortify all your irregular desires, and to die to sin; for he who hath, in conformity to our Lord Jesus Christ, suffered this crucifixion in the flesh, of which I now speak, he has ceased from the habitual practice of all sin whatsoever^a, and considers himself as absolutely and finally dead to it, as never to return to it any more. And no longer to live [this] remaining time in the flesh whether it be shorter or longer, according to the lusts of men, those lusts by which they are too frequently and generally governed; but according to the will of God in a holy conformity and obedience to the Divine precepts, how contrary soever they are to his own carnal and sensual inclinations, or to his worldly interests. For surely the time of life that is past [may] appear to

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right-hand of God; angels, and authorities and powers, being made subject unto him.

IV. 1. Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh arm yourselves likewise with the same mind; for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin;

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may not

^a *But he gave into Prison, &c.* When the apostle speaks of the resurrection and glory of Christ, he means not only to represent him as the object of our confidence, but to intimate, that if we labour him in his triumphant glory, we may hope to partake likewise in his glory.

^b *He who hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin, &c.* It is plain, that suffering in the flesh, cannot signify infir-

mity; because the apostle in the very next verse mentions the remaining part of life as not to be spent in the lusts of the flesh. The word, to be born, is something obscure; and I have sometimes doubted whether it may not intimate, that the consciousness of having endured such suffering for Christ, greatly confirms our motives to abstain.

face us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil of you:

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be

to [be] sufficient, and more than sufficient for us, to have forgotten the great end for which life was given, and to have wrought the will of the Gentiles; following those pleasures and pursuits to which the heathens that know not God, are addicted; when ye walked in all the variety of lasciviousness, inordinate desires, excess of wine, banqueting, drunkenness, and unlawful detestable idolatries¹: In respect to which abominable course of life, they who were once your partners in such enormities, now think it strange^k that you run not with them, as ye once did, into the same profusion of the most profligate riot¹ speaking evil [of you,] wretched creatures as they are, Who, though forgetful of the true⁵ honour and happiness of the human nature, shall nevertheless give an account of all this disorder and abuse, to him who is ready in a little time to appear, that he may judge the living and the dead: For it was to this purpose that the gospel was preached also to the dissolute Gentiles, who might truly be said to be dead in tresspasses and sins, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh^m; that they might be brought to such a state of life, as their carnal neighbours will look upon as a kind of condemnation and death;

SECT.
viii.

1 Peter
IV. 3.

i Unlawful idolatries.] Considering how very averse the Jews were, in the apostle's times, to idolatry, I cannot think in this passage he hath a respect to them, and therefore I look upon this as one argument among many, which might be urged, to prove that this epistle was written to Gentile, as well as Jewish Christians.

k Think it strange: ξενίζοντες.] *Raphilius* (*Annot. ex Polyb. in loc.*) and others have observed that the original word is very emphatical, and expresses a perfect amazement and consternation of mind.—The same word is used below at the 12th verse.

¹ Profusion of riot.] This is a very literal translation of Archbishop Leighton.

^m That they might be judged, &c.] This interpretation, which is preferred by Brennius and Dr. Whitby, appeared to me, on a full examination, most probable; though the text must be confessed to be extremely difficult. Some have thought the apostle refers to those who then suffered martyrdom for Christianity; as if he had said, "It was gospel indeed, good tidings, even to those who died for it; for though men condemned their bodies, yet the salvation of their souls, which is of infinitely greater importance, has been

secured by it." Dr. Whitby renders the latter clause, "That they might condemn their former life, and live a better." But this does not preserve the force of *κρίθωναι*, nor the opposition between *κατ' ἀνθρώπους* and *κατὰ Θεόν*. Sir N. Knatchbull supposes *αὐ* to be understood before *κατὰ*, and renders it, "That they who are according to men in the flesh, that is, live a sensual life, may be condemned; and they who live according to God in the spirit, (that is, a holy life) may live." No interpretation seems more singular than that of Mr. Saurin; who seems to consider it as referring to chap. iii. 19. and understands it of the sinners of the old world, and founds upon this text some hopes of the salvation of some of them; as if the meaning were, God sent his message to them with a kind design, that though their bodies perished, their souls might be saved; and he fancies that for this reason the flood came gradually upon them. *Saur. Diss.* Vol. I. p. 112. If that interpretation be preferred, which refers it to those actually dead, it will be, (as Mr. Baxter observes,) a proof of the existence of spirits in a separate state. The chief objection against the sense I have chosen, is, that it changes the signification of the word *dead* so soon.

ROM. VII.

1 Peter IV. 5.

death; but might live according to God in the spirit, might be brought to a truly spiritual and Divine life: and if when men hear of the gospel, they will not receive and improve it for this important purpose, they must expect to render to God an impartial and severe account for their abuse of it, and must stand by all the terrible consequences of their folly.

be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

IMPROVEMENT.

Chap. III. 11.

LET our devoutest meditations frequently dwell on the benefits we receive by the death of Christ, and the wonderful manner in which they are conveyed. The important end, for which he suffered, the just for the unjust, was to introduce us into the presence and favour of God: let us rejoice, that we are brought nigh to the Infinite Majesty of heaven, the indefectible source of perfection and blessedness; and always live as in a state of nearness and intimacy with him; dreading the most distant approach to that disobedience to the heavenly message, which even after the
 20 *patience of God waited on them*, proved fatal to the sinful inhabitants of the old world. That patience indeed waits upon us; but as their time was limited, so is ours.—For ever blessed be the Father of mercies, that by Christ he hath made provision for our salvation, as he did of old for Noah and his family, by commanding him to prepare an ark. But then let us remember, the bap-
 21 *tism that saves*, is not the putting away the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God. If we have this in-
 22 *ward witness*, let the resurrection of Christ, and his exaltation to supreme glory at the right hand of the Father, encourage our sublimest hopes; and let us triumph in him as our all-sufficient Saviour, who, though he were once crucified, now sits on the throne of his glory, *principalities and powers being made subject to him*.

Chap. V. 7.

Let the recollection of his latter sufferings excite our zeal and courage in his sacred cause, and arm us with a conformity of
 2 *sentiments and resolutions to his own*: that we may cease from sin; that we may spend the residue of our lives, not in following the lusts of the flesh, but in fulfilling, in all respects, the will of our God. Let us often reflect, that, perhaps, we were long in-
 3 *sensible of his sacred authority*, and in many instances were the sport of irregular appetites and passions: let the past part of our lives suffice, and be deemed more than sufficient, to be spent in this inglorious and detestable slavery. By mortification let us assert our liberty. And though others wonder at our abstinence, severity,
 and

and self-denial, let us not envy that *excess of riot* into which, with unbridled eagerness, they allow themselves to run. But seriously considering the *awful account* they must render, (though alas! so ill prepared for it,) to the great Judge of quick and dead; let us readily choose, and cheerfully submit to the severest mortification which God may require of us. Let us rather embrace a life which *infidels* would esteem death, than expose our immortal souls to the judgment of God, to his condemnation, from which there lies no appeal, and which will consign over impenitent sinners to an execution infinitely dreadful, beyond their utmost fears and apprehensions.

SECT.
viii.

SECT. VIII.

The Apostle exhorts the Christian converts to watchfulness and to fidelity, that they might rightly improve their several talents, and discharge the duties of their respective stations in the church; and to courage and fortitude amidst their discouragements and persecutions; and by way of inference from the trials to which good men were exposed, he observes that a tremendous inevitable destruction will overwhelm the impenitent and unbelieving.—
1 Pet. IV. 7—19.

1 PETER IV. 7.
BUT the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

1 PETER IV. 7.

HOW strongly are vain and sinful men attached to the amusements and interests of this mortal life, and to the gratification of their lusts! *But the important end of all things is at hand*^a, when this earthly globe, and all things which are therein, shall be burnt up, when the eternal state of all its inhabitants shall be determined, and immutable happiness, or misery, shall be their final portion. *Be sober therefore, and watch* against all occasions of intemperance and of impurity, and endeavour to preserve your souls in so Divine a posture, as that you may be habitually qualified for joining in prayer and those other exercises of devotion, which have such

SECT.
viii.

1 Peter
IV. 7.

^a *The end of all things, &c.*] I cannot think this signifies the destruction of Jerusalem; an event, in which most of those to whom the apostle wrote, were comparatively but little concerned. It must undoubtedly signify either death, which may be considered as the end of the whole world

to every particular person; or the consummation of all things, which may be said to be at hand, in the sense in which our Lord, long after the destruction of Jerusalem, says to the church, "Behold I come quickly." Rev. xxii. 7, 20.

^b Love

SECT.
VIII.1 PART.
IV. 5.

- such an influence on our whole conduct. *And above all things* be careful to remember the distinguishing badge of your religion, having and *maintaining fervent love towards one another*; which as it will be very comfortable and honourable to yourselves, will be very pleasing and acceptable to God; *for* on the whole, as the wise man assures us, *love will cover a multitude of sins*^b; it will cause us to excuse them in others, and it will entitle us through Divine mercy to the expectation of forgiveness for numberless slips and failings. *Be hospitable to each other, without grudging* the expence which may attend the exercise of a virtue which in present circumstances is so important and necessary. *As every one has received the free gift of God* exercise it towards each other, as becomes those who know they are not themselves proprietors, but merely stewards, of what they possess, and who desire to approve themselves *good stewards of the manifold grace of God*, with which they
- 11 have the honour to be intrusted. *If any one speak* in public assemblies, discoursing on the great topics of the gospel, *[let him handle the subject]* with seriousness and reverence, and as becomes one who knows that sublime dispensation contains no discoveries of doctrine or duty, but what are indeed *the oracles of God*. *If any one minister* in any office of kindness to others, and particularly in the work of a deacon, *[let it be]* according to the utmost ability which God supplies: that God may in all things be glorified by Jesus Christ, who has called us to his service, and to the hope of enjoying him for ever; to whom, as our great Redeemer and Saviour, be glory and dominion ascribed for ever and ever. Amen.

- 12 And now, my beloved brethren, let me seriously caution you, that you *be not surprised at the*

8 And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak let him speak as the oracles of God; if any man minister, let him do it as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the

^b Love will cover a multitude of sins. This is agreeable to the interpretation given of the parallel text, James v. 20. For the further illustration of it, compare James iii. 10; Phil. iv. 13; Prov. ix. 10; Dan. iv. 27. It would be monstrous to imagine, that any of mankind, in the present state, can promise the pardon of sin, while men continue in a course of iniquity and unbelief. For by this the whole gospel would be subverted. But when men of charity to the souls and bodies of men,

spring from an inward principle of love to God, and faith in Christ, with that humble regard to his command and righteousness, which every true Christian will have, it abundantly may engage our hopes of finding many merciful allowances from God in our final account with him, which those who are destitute of this Divine principle, in which so much of the image of God consists, must never expect, whatever faith or sanctity they may pretend to. Compare Mat. vii. 1, 2; James ii. 17.

c The

the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you :

13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy are ye, for the Spirit of glory and of God, resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil-doer, or as a busy-body in other men's matters.

c The fiery trial: πυρωσις.] This is a metaphor, borrowed from chemical operations, and very emphatically expresses the nature of those trials, in the furnace of affliction, which were intended to refine their graces, and separate all the dross and alloy from the pure gold.

d When his glory shall be revealed.] There is no occasion with Mr. Fleming to interpret this of the glory of the Shechinah, appearing at the millenium, to excite the exceeding joy of the saints after the first resurrection. *Flem. Christol.* Vol. III. p. 368. It probably refers to the great and glorious day of Christ's second appearance, which is so often spoken of as the grand jubilee of Christians, though not inconsistent with great joy to be received by the spirit of every good man, immediately on its entrance into the intermediate state.

e Spirit of glory and of God.] The *Velesian* reading is, "The spirit of honour, and of glory, and Divine power, even the

the fiery trial^c, at the dreadful series of furious and bitter persecutions *which is to try you, as if some strange and unexampled thing*, beyond all reasonable expectation, *had befallen you*: But rather rejoice in these trials, *as being therein partakers of the sufferings of Christ*, the memory of which should ever be dear and precious to you; *that when his final glory shall be revealed, ye*, in the participation of it, *may be even transported with joy* far beyond what can now be described, or conceived. In the mean time, ¹⁴ while you are in this present world, and obnoxious to persecutions and injuries, *if you are reproached for the name of Christ, [ye are] happy*, and ought to reckon yourselves so, *because the Spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you^e*; which will support you under it, and spread a lustre around you; and *[though] he*, in whose cause ye suffer so unjustly, *is blasphemed on their part, yet on yours, he is glorified*: it shews the excellence and sublime spirit of true religion, that it can support you under the opprobrious and cruel treatment which you endure, for adhering to it and defending it. ¹⁵ But let not any of you, who have the honour to bear the Christian name, by any means suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or a malefactor, of any other kind, or even as over-busy and assuming in the affairs of others^f, aspiring to direct, over-
rule

spirit of God, rests upon you." But I take the meaning to be in general, you shall have the Spirit of God in a very glorious manner to support you in proportion to the trials you are called out to; and this will spread a glory around you, even though you may be treated in the most infamous manner, as the vilest of malefactors, which we know many of the primitive Christians were.

f As over-busy in the affairs of others.] *Ἀλλοτριεπισκοπή*, says the learned Dr. Lardner, cannot here signify merely a prying into the concerns of private families; which could not be ranked with such crimes as are here mentioned, nor expose a man to the punishment of the civil magistrate: but it may signify a man that affects to inspect or direct the affairs of others; perhaps that aspires to public authority, a temper which appeared much amongst the Jews, particularly at Alexandria, and Cesarea, and which would naturally give great offence to the Romans, and

SECT.
VIII.1 Peter
IV. 13.

- rule and determine them in a manner not suiting your station in life; in consequence of which you may bring any degree of ill-will upon yourselves. *But if it please Providence to appoint, that [any of you] should [suffer] as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, though the punishment, like that inflicted upon his Divine Master himself, should be ever so infamous; but rather let him glorify God in this respect, despising the shame, as well as resolutely enduring*
- 17 *the agony that may attend it; Because the time [is coming,] and just at hand, when judgment is to begin at the house of God; for he hath determined to exercise his own people with very severe trials, giving them up for a while to the malice of their enemies; that by this means their characters may be approved, and those who are hypocrites, may be separated from those who are sincere in their christian profession; and if [it begin] first with us, what [shall be] the end of those, who are obstinately and presumptuously disobedient to the gospel of God, and who not only reject it, but persecute its professors, and en-*
- 18 *deavour to root it out of the world? And if the righteous himself beayed with difficulty, how miserable must the ungodly and the unner-*
be?

16 Yet if any are
suffer as a Christian,
let him not be ashamed,
but let him glorify
God on this behalf.

17 For the time is
come, that judgment
must begin at the
house of God; and if
it first begin at us, what
shall the end be of
them that obey not
the gospel of God?

18 And if the
righteous scarcely be
saved, where shall the
ungodly

and makes them very dangerous enemies. If therefore, and (being of this kind) might a more accurate translation, it would be of perfecter and stronger ground in these times. *John, Ch. VII. 1. p. 10. I have perceived the words so, as to suggest this, yet so as to take in the most that could be imagined to be intended.*

g. Time is coming when judgment is to begin at the house of God. And we had said, "I do not think this a matter of concerning speculation. No, the time foretold by Christ [John xvi. 8. Rev.] is coming." I think that there is an allusion to that passage in Mark. ix. 1. where it is said to him that he so made was to finish the mystery; but this cannot be interpreted as of the *Triumph of Jerusalem*, because it answers to, beginning with us, that is, Christians, immediately after. So that Grotius' criticism upon this word *begin* in the latter clause of this verse, answering to *ἡρξεται*, *Tran. ix. 17.* and *ἡρξεται* in *Mat. xxiv. 6.* seems quite foreign to the purpose.

h. If the righteous be saved with difficulty. The apostle seems to quote *Psal. xl. 11.* according to the *Synagoga*, which is more, though not exactly in such, agree with the *Hebrew*. He cannot intend deliverance from the *Roman* empire, in which

as very few of those Christians were concerned; nor merely deliverance from any of those persecutions, because he takes it for granted, that in this sense the righteous would be saved, though with difficulty; whereas multitudes led by persecution, even of those Christians in Bithynia, as appears by *Pliny's* letters. It is necessary therefore to understand it more generally of the difficulty with which good men yet to persevere, through this dangerous and ensnaring world. Compare *Acts xiv. 18; xxv. 7, 8, 10.* where *ἡμῶν* signifies with difficulty; in which sense it is also used by *Paul.* (see *Wald's* *Cor. Philippi.* Vol. V. p. 161.)—The turn of the latter clause of the verse in the original, which I have endeavoured to preserve, is very good; it seems as if the apostle were solicitous to lead the reader to consider, when he should hide his head, since wherever he was, he would find God immediately appearing against him as an insurmountable enemy. This he might say by way of warning to persecutors, and to encourage Christians to hope that God would vindicate their cause, and preserve them from turning aside to carnal pity. And this the contexture with the following verse suggests.

ungodly and the sinner appear?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well-doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

be? *where shall he appear* in the day of Divine vengeance, when all nature shall be, as it were armed with terror by the God of nature, for his destruction; and when all impious transgressors shall be brought forth in his awful presence, that his just, though dreadful sentence of condemnation, may be executed in its rigour? *Therefore let them also, who now suffer this temporary punishment, which according to the will of God so permitting, their enemies have at present a power of inflicting, acknowledge the Providence of God in this mysterious event, and commit their souls [to him] as to a faithful Creator, in well doing; assured that while they continue to act as under a sense of his presence, and endeavour to approve themselves to him, he will regard them as his creatures, and even his children, and will render their immortal interests secure, whatever injuries of a temporal nature he may suffer them to sustain.*

SECT.
viii.

1 Peter
IV. 18.

19

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us continually bear in mind the approaching *end of all things*; and then we shall neither omit the exercises of devotion nor grow supine and careless in the discharge of them. Then shall we be engaged through a sense of our need of the Divine clemency and indulgence, to exercise *forbearance and candour*, and maintain the most *servent charity* to all without distinction; and we shall then be more disposed to consider ourselves as *stewards*, and as such, be concerned to behave with all good *fidelity*, both in the use and enjoyment of our *possessions*, and in the exercise of those gifts and endowments with which God hath been pleased to entrust us. To this they should especially attend, who are called to *speak in God's name*; they should consider, that his *oracles are committed to them*; and though they cannot pretend, that the instructions they deliver from thence, are revealed to and impressed upon their minds by *immediate inspiration*, yet a reflection on the general nature of the glorious gospel, and on its important and everlasting consequences, may well dispose and form them to an humble awe and reverence in their manner of handling and dispensing it; and may remind them, that on the whole, in every ministration of the word of life, in every distribution of charity, and office of kindness, the main end to be pursued is, *That God may be glorified*.

If, in the cause of *Christ*, Providence shall call us out to en-

T 2

counter 12

counter the severest persecutions, and even *fiery trials*, let us not be astonished, as if some *strange* thing had happened to us; let us not be discouraged, nor think ourselves hardly dealt with in such Divine appointments; remembering that in this case we are only *partakers in the sufferings of Christ*, that we only tread in the same rough and thorny path in which he walked before us; and that in due time, if we continue faithful to him, we shall also be made *partakers of his glory*. In the mean while, the *Spirit of God and of glory will rest upon us*; only let us be jealous of his honour with a *godly jealousy*, and be greatly concerned, that our sins and indiscretions may not throw a blemish on a *profession* which derives its appellation from him. Glorious are the privileges indeed which belong to the disciples of *Christ*; but they, notwithstanding, draw very awful consequences after them. For *judgment begins at the house of God*, and even his dearest children are exercised with trials of their fidelity and patience. Let us prepare for them before they come, that when they do come we may bear them honourably, committing the *keeping of our souls to him, as to a faithful Creator, in well-doing*. But let the wicked and the *ungodly meditate terror*; for the vengeance of God will find them out; *the great day of wrath will come; and who can be able to stand?* May divine grace reclaim those who are now exposed to so terrible a condemnation; lest they know by experience, what no words can describe, no thought conceive, *the end of those who obey not the gospel of God*.

SECT. IX.

The Apostle concludes this epistle with particular cautions to ministers and private Christians; urging on the former humility, diligence, and watchfulness; and exhorting the latter to a stedfast and faithful discharge of their several duties, animated by this consideration, that the God of all grace had called them to his eternal glory, and would, after they had suffered awhile, make them perfect, according to his earnest prayer for them. 1 Pet. V. 1, to the end.

1 PETER V. 1.

1 Peter V. 1.
I WOULD now in the most affectionate manner address myself to those who are the *elders among you*, or any other Christian societies into whose hands this epistle may come; and I would exhort them with the greater warmth and freedom, [as I also am] an *elder with them*, and an eye-witness of the sufferings of *Christ*, and as I also hope, through Divine grace, that I shall be

1 PETER V. 1.
THE *elders* which are among you I exhort, who are also *pastors*, and a witness of the sufferings of *Christ*.

be

Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed :

2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof ; not by constraint, but willingly ; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind ;

3 Neither as being lords over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock,

[a Discharge the episcopal office.] This idea is so plainly suggested by the word *ἐπισκοπῆτε*, that I thought it matter of duty, to translate it as I have done ; that every reader might observe, what all candid people seem to confess, that those who are stiled *bishops*, from their having the oversight of others, and also presbyters or elders, are spoken of as the same persons. Compare ver. 1. And I hope the time will come, when good men will join their efforts to remove that very hard imposition, by which the ministers of some churches are obliged, in order to their entering into the ministry, to declare, not only that they are different orders, but that it is evident unto all men diligently reading the holy scripture, that they are so.

b Not by constraint.] It is true, that in the primitive church some were almost against their will forced into the episcopal office by dint of importunity. And one would hope, it was not an affected modesty with which they declined the office, especially as it was then attended with no temporal emoluments ; but exposed them to distinguished labours and sufferings. It is difficult to see how any could in the strictest sense be constrained ; but perhaps the apostle saw some good men too unwilling to accept the office, when the churches chose them to it, and when inspired teachers urged it upon them. And though little gain could have been made of it, and the temptation to lord it over God's heritage was not so great, as when ecclesiasti-

be a partaker of the glory, which shall hereafter be revealed, when he shall appear the second time, in circumstances so different from those in which we have seen and conversed with him on earth. By all the engagements of love and duty to him, and by all the regard you owe to your own honour and happiness in that important day, let me beseech you to feed the flock of God that is among you, the churches of Christ which you are called to preside over ; discharge the episcopal office^a, with that due inspection which its very name imports ; not by constraint^b as if it were an ungrateful burthen, but willingly and cheerfully ; not for the sake of dishonourable gain^c but of a ready mind, and because you love the flock, and really desire its edification and welfare. Not assuming to yourselves dominion over those who fall to your lot^d ; but being humble, and behaving towards them with such gentle tender solicitude for their souls, and such

SECT.
IX.

1 Peter
V. 1.

2

3

cal persons were invested with civil power (in which most of the honour and influence of their ecclesiastical character, as such, has been generally lost,) yet foreseeing what would happen in the church, and observing perhaps some discoveries of such a temper beginning to prevail, the caution was exceedingly just, proper and important. Compare Luke x. 2, and the note there.

c Dishonourable gain.] See the note on 1 Tim. iii. 3.

d Those who fall to your lot.] The word *God's* is not in the original. I think therefore it is with abundant reason that the learned Mr. Boyse refers this to their not domineering over the particular congregations, or bishoprics, which were by Providence committed to their care ; alluding to the division of Canaan by lots ; *Boyse's Serm.* Vol. II. p. 413. An interpretation much preferable to Dr. Whitby's who explains it of the possessions of the church. (Compare Col. i. 12, note k.) And yet after proposing this interpretation at large, he admits at the close of his note, that what is here stiled *κληρος*, being in the same sentence expressed by *ποιμνιον*, the flock of God, it seems to establish the common interpretation. What the learned Mr. Dodwell had offered in support of the sense Dr. Whiby mentions, is particularly considered and refuted, by *Wolfius, Curæ Philolog.* Vol I. p. 163.

c Mighty

no. 1.
18.

1 Peter
V. 2.

such an entire freedom from the very appearance either of avarice or ambition, that your *examples* may be rendered worthy the imitation of the flock, and your conduct as instructive as any of your cautions and precepts can be: And if this be indeed your character and behaviour; you will render up your accounts hereafter with joy; for *when* he, who does you the honour to acknowledge himself the chief Shepherd of the flock, shall appear, to take the final survey of it, and examine into the conduct of those to whom he had partly committed it, *you shall* be most magnificently and nobly rewarded, and receive an *unfading crown of glory*; a crown which shall bloom in immortal beauty and vigour, when all the transitory glories of this world are withered like a fading flower.

- 3 But it is proper that I should *likewise* address some exhortations to others besides ministers; and particularly to you, *O ye younger persons*; and that I should urge you to be in *subjection to those [who are] more advanced in age*, and to pay a decent respect to their hoary hairs. *You let all [of you] be subject to one another*, endeavouring, by mutual condescension, to make each other as easy and happy as possible; and for this purpose be clothed with *unfeigned humility*; for *God opposeth himself to the proud*, and draws up all his terrors, as it were, in battle array against him; *but giveth grace and favour to the humble soul*. *Humble yourselves therefore* with that just reverence *under the mighty hand of God* (under all the dispensations of Divine Providence, even though wicked men should be made the instruments of effecting its purposes,) *that so he may exalt you in due time*; for in his own most proper and well-chosen season, he will certainly raise you up, though for the present you may seem to be depressed to the lowest condition. In the mean while, whatever uncertainties and dangers may attend you, endeavour to live as easy as possible; *casting all your anxious care* and all those burthens that might other-

wise

4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder (ye, all of you, be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility); for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.

7 Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you.

6 *Mighty hand of God*.] Perhaps by this expression, the apostle may intend to remind them, that the hand of a righteous Providence was manifested in those events which were owing to the wickedness of them; as far concerned, as to *retributions* them, and rendered them instrumental and subservient to the accomplishment of his

own wise designs; as is strongly intimated Isa. x. 5; Psal. xvii. 14; and in many parallel places.

7 *Your anxious care*.] So I have rendered *gymnasia*, because that is the proper signification of it; what does, as it were, *cool* and *loose* the mind to pieces. See *London's Weekly*, Vol. 11. p. 629.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.

9 Whom resist, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

wise occasion it, *upon him*; leaving it to his all-wise and all-gracious Providence to determine every event of your lives; *for he careth for you* in a manner the most effectual; and his tender care will accomplish infinitely more than your utmost anxiety can possibly effect. Turn your solicitude therefore into the right channel; *be sober* in the government of your appetites and passions; *be watchful* against every occasion of mischief from your spiritual enemies; *for your great and inveterate adversary the devil is continually walking about^b, like a roaring lion, or evening wolf, prowling round the fold, seeking whom he may assault with the greatest likelihood of success, and may suddenly devour and swallow up*: Whom therefore, as you regard your safety and life, be careful stoutly to resist, being *steadfast* in your adherence to the Christian faith, and armed with the most heroic courage and resolution in its defence. And to this you should the rather attend, as *knowing that* the trials, with which you are exercised, are not peculiar to you; but that *the same afflictions*, which you are called out to encounter, are accomplished in others of your Christian brethren, who are in the world; and you may reasonably hope, the same grace which is their support, will be also yours. But may the God who is the great fountain of ¹⁰ all grace, from whom descendeth every good and every perfect gift, and who hath displayed his goodness in innumerable important instances, even He who has called us to the hope and enjoyment of his eternal glory in Christ Jesus; may he grant you his perpetual presence and enlivening favour; and when you have suffered for a little while; such trials as his infinite wisdom shall see fit to appoint, may he make you perfectⁱ in

g *Be watchful.*] St. Peter might well give such a caution as this, having himself received such particular and express warning from Christ his Master, (Luke xxii. 31, &c.) and so shamefully fallen immediately after, for want of the watchfulness he here recommends.

^h *Walking about.*] I chose to express *peripateti* with this exactness, that the force of its signification in this similitude might be observed. The word *salutin* expresses more than devouring, even swallowing up; and so represents the indefatigable rage of

the enemy of our salvation, with great advantage.

ⁱ *Make you perfect.*] If any one please to peruse Archbishop Leighton's excellent discourse on these words, he will have a fine specimen of his commentary on this epistle; which I esteem to be among the most instructive and useful books our language affords, and cannot but consider it as a great honour conferred upon me by Providence, to have been an instrument of presenting it to the world in so correct a form; as well as of rescuing many other instructive

- in every good disposition; in whatever improvements you are enabled to make, *may he confirm, strengthen, and establish [you] upon a firm and unshaken foundation. To him, therefore, who of all beings is infinitely most worthy of it, [he] glory and dominion ascribed for ever and ever, Amen. I have written briefly unto you by the bearer Silvanus, in whom I place great confidence, as I suppose and conclude him to be a sincere Christian and faithful brother*¹; one who hath the interest of Christ at heart, and on whose fidelity we may rely; and I send it, *exhorting and testifying with the greater solemnity that this is the true grace of God wherein ye have hitherto stood*, and urging it therefore upon you, that you steadily adhere to it in the midst of all your difficulties and persecutions.
- The [church, which is] here in Babylon [climeth with] you to partake of the privileges of the gospel; saluteth you; and [so doth] Marcus, whom I may call my son*², as being my convert and believing to me with all filial tenderness and respect. Salute one another with a kiss of pure and unfeigned love in your Christian assemblies; and may grace and peace, and the truest happiness, ever [be] with you all who are in Christ Jesus, who is the corner stone which God hath laid in Zion, and the great foundation of all our eternal hopes. Amen.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus, a faithful brother unto you (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, saluteth you; and so doth Marcus thy son.

14 Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

IMPROVEMENT.

N^o. I This apostolic charge should be received with the profoundest regard and submission, by all those who profess to reverence the authority of Christ, who thus, by the mouth of his servants, be-

instructive pieces of that excellent and amiable writer from the collection in which they had so long been buried.

1. Silvanus, as I suppose, a faithful brother? Whether this was the same, or several, mentioned several times in the Acts as the companion of St. Paul, and by St. Paul himself (2 Tim. i. 18) a Flood, i. e. a Friend, &c. I do not certainly say. The phrase, as I suppose, does not seem to imply any doubt. Compare Rom. ix. 30, and v. 19, in the margin.

2. I do suppose. Alonzo Bump, Counsellor and Mr. Cradock argue, that probably St. Peter wrote from the north-east of Babylon, and found many Jews remaining there over since the Babylonish captivity, among whom he had preached the gospel with considerable success,

— Marcus my son. That is, my convert, or at least my groom in the ministerial work. I have observed, Vol. VIII. sent. xxviii. note 5, that John Mark, who was the companion of Barnabas and Paul, was a different person from Mark the evangelist, who was the intimate companion of the apostle Peter. And as he was so, it is likely that the evangelist is the Mark of whom the apostle here speaks. Under St. Peter's instructions, he is said to have written his gospel, probably receiving at different times historical facts from him, when he records without very exact order, and which St. Luke afterwards greatly improved, without changing the order by adding many more important circumstances.

bespeaks their attention ; and it should both regulate their conduct, and animate and exalt their hopes. Let us therefore attend to this venerable *elder*, *this witness of the sufferings of Christ*, Ver. who on the mount of transfiguration had been favoured with an illustrious representation of *that glory*, wherein our Lord shall be hereafter revealed, and with which he will then invest all those, who, in his cause, have approved themselves *faithful until death*. Let *ministers*, especially, ever maintain a most affectionate and respectful regard for the *flock of God*, and take the oversight thereof² with a *ready* and generous *mind*, and be *examples to it*, in the mild and condescending temper of their *common Master*, as well as in³ all other graces and virtues. It is indeed possible, they may pursue such a conduct as this, and meet with very little esteem or recompence, yea, with injurious and unworthy treatment, from their fellow-men. But a *crown of glory*, a royal diadem, *incorruptible* and immortal, will be hereafter conferred on them by their exalted Saviour, in the day of his triumphant appearance ; and this crown, in itself so illustrious, will be a mark of still more distinguished honour, as it will be placed on their victorious heads in a season of such solemnity, in the view of the whole assembled world, and of *the innumerable company of angels*.—But in the mean time, while we are continued in so lowly a condition⁵ in the present world, let us all cultivate *humility* of mind, being *cloathed* with that amiable virtue, which is certainly the most *graceful* ornament of our nature ; an ornament of singular value in the eye of that God, whose approbation is the surest mark and criterion of excellence and honour. And that we may accordingly entertain the more humble and lowly conceptions of ourselves, and the more grand and venerable ideas of the almighty Creator, Preserver, and Disposer of all things, let us often and seriously reflect upon *his mighty hand* ; how gloriously it hath been displayed in the infinite variety of the works of *nature*, in the continual agency and operation of *Providence*, and in the wonderful scheme of *redemption* and *salvation* ; how powerful and resistless it is in the execution of all its works ; and yet how graciously its awful power is tempered and moderated, and to what kind and merciful purposes it hath been already exerted, and still is, in behalf of such degenerate and unworthy creatures as ourselves. By these considerations, let us be disposed to *bow* to every Divine dispensation with all resignation and submission ; fixing our dependence upon a power so wisely and graciously exerted ; rejoicing that we are permitted to *cast our cares on God*, and abhorring both the ingratitude and folly of fainting and sinking under our burdens,⁷ when we are favoured with the permission of relying on him ; indeed, with a *paternal command*, as well as permission ; which accordingly

SECT.
ix. accordingly requires our obedience in point of duty, as well as of gratitude and honour.

Ver. Our great *adversary the devil* is still continually prowling round the fold of *Christ*; and therefore it behoves us to be constantly on
8 our *guard*. And if we would escape both his wiles and his power, let us be especially careful, that neither our *security*, nor *intemperance*, give him an *advantage* over us: but, on the contrary, as it is nothing less than our utter and eternal destruction he aims at let us strenuously *resist him*, in the exercise of a *steady faith*, and with
9 a firm resolution. Let us also remember, that trials and *afflictions* have been the lot of all the people of God in all generations; and that *the God of all grace* is able, if it seem good to his infinite wisdom, to shorten and *contract* the time of our *sufferings* and by means
10 of them whilst they last, to *strengthen* and *perfect* our immortal souls. Let us, therefore, at the close of all, continue to *stand fast* in what is so authentically *testified to be the true grace of God*; and real substantial *peace will be with us*, will be our everlasting portion, in *Christ Jesus. Amen.*

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITION ON THE FIRST CATHOLIC
EPISTLE OF ST. PETER.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A
PARAPHRASE

ON
THE SECOND CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE
PETER.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

SECOND CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF ST. PETER.

THERE were some in the primitive church, who called in question the genuineness and authority of *this epistle*, though it expressly claims St. Peter for its author, and contains very strong *internal characters* of its authenticity. But this being no proper or convenient place to enter largely into the argument, if any are desirous to see it truly and accurately represented, as far as it depends upon the testimonies of the *Christian fathers* they may consult the second part of Dr. Lardner's *Credebility of the Gospel-History*. As to the *internal evidence*, there are some general observations, which having made already in the Introduction to the epistle of James, I think it unnecessary to repeat, though they are very applicable to the present occasion. But it is fit to observe, in *particular*, that the author of this epistle hath some allusions or appeals to facts and circumstances as relative to *himself*, which evidently refer to St. Peter; and, that besides, there is a remarkable coincidence between the sentiments of *this* and of the *former* epistle; insomuch that it is extremely probable, it was the production of the same author, intending to confirm the doctrines he had already advanced, in opposition to the scruples of honest men, and the objections of designing ones. St. Jerom, acquainting us with the dispute which had been raised concerning the author and authority of this epistle, informs us at the same time, that it was owing to a remarkable *difference of stile*, in this and the former unquestionably genuine epistle of St. Peter. But the truth is, there is, properly speaking, no difference of stile between the *two epistles*, but only between the *former epistle*, and a *part of this*, namely, the *second chapter*; which indeed is as different from the stile of the *remainder* of this, as it is from that of the *whole* former epistle. The fact therefore seems to be, (as the learned Bishop of London, Dr. Sherlock, supposes, in his *first dissertation*

sertation, at the end of his *discourses on prophecy*, which is well worth the reader's perusal;) I say, the fact seems to be, that the apostle in the second chapter of this epistle, describing the character of such seducers and false teachers, as endangered the faith of the Christian converts, adopts the language and sentiments of some Jewish author, containing a very strong description, in the eastern manner, of the character and conduct of some false prophets of that, or earlier ages. And as St. Jude hath likewise described these false teachers as well as St. Peter, and there is a remarkable similitude in some respects, and variation in others, between the account of these two apostles, it appears extremely probable, that they both took the principle features of their descriptions from the same author. And if this be a just account, the foundation of all the doubts concerning the genuineness of this epistle, is exceeding feeble; and no other reasonable conclusion can be drawn from them, except the singular caution of the primitive Christians, what writings they honoured with the veneration due to the *oracles of God*.

This epistle was very probably written about the year 67; which was six years after the date of the former. For the apostle speaks of his death as very near at hand: *I think it meet*, saith he, *as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting you in remembrance; knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me*, (chap. i. 13, 14;) and ecclesiastical history informs us, that the apostle finished his race by martyrdom in the year 68, the 14th of the Emperor Nero.

The general *design* of this epistle is, To confirm the doctrines and instructions delivered in the former; “to excite the Christian converts to adorn and stedfastly adhere to their holy religion, as a religion proceeding from God, notwithstanding the artifices of false teachers, whose character is at large described, or the persecution of their bitter and inveterate enemies.”

The apostle, with this view, having first congratulated the Christian converts on the happy condition into which they were brought by the gospel, exhorts them, in order to secure the blessings connected with their profession, to endeavour to improve in the most substantial graces and virtues. (chap. i. 1—11.) And that their attention might be the more effectually engaged, he reminds them, both that he spoke to them in the near view of eternity, it being revealed to him that he should shortly put off his earthly tabernacle; and that the subjects on which he discoursed, were not cunningly devised fables, but attested by a miraculous voice from heaven, and by divinely inspired prophecies, (ver. 12, *to the end*.) And that this exhortation might not fail of producing the most kindly and genuine effects, he cautions them against the false teachers, whose character he describes; reminding them of the judgments executed on the *apostate angels*, on the *old world*, and on *Sodom*; and at the same time, of the deliverance of Noah.

Noah, and of Lot; as suggesting considerations, which on the one hand, should terrify such ungodly wretches, and on the other, comfort and establish the hearts of upright and pious Christians. (chap. ii. 1—9.) He then further describes the character of these seducers; warning all true Christians of the danger of being perverted by them, and *them* of the dreadful destruction to which they exposed themselves. (ver. 10, *to the end.*) And that the persons to whom he was writing, might more effectually escape the artifices of those who lay in wait to deceive, they are directed to adhere steadily and closely to the sacred scriptures, and to consider the absolute certainty and awful manner of the final destruction of this world: and then the whole is concluded with several weighty and pertinent exhortations. chap. iii. *throughout.*

A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE SECOND CATHOLIC EPISTLE

OF

St. PETER.

SECTION I.

The Apostle Peter, after his salutation, begins his epistle with congratulating the Christians on the happy state into which they were brought by the gospel; and urges them, in order to secure the blessings connected with their profession, to endeavour to improve in its most substantial graces and virtues. 2 Pet. I. 1—11.

2 PETER I. 1.

SIMON Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ :

2 PETER I. 1.

SIMON Peter, who has the honour to stile himself a servant, and even an apostle of Jesus Christ ; being selected by his heavenly Master to that exalted and important office, sends his most affectionate salutation, with this his epistle, to all those to whom it may come, who have obtained like precious faith with us, in that glorious gospel, which is a declaration of life and salvation by the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ^a ; in which, sinful as we are, we obtain acceptance with the Father, through

SECT.
i.

2 Peter
I. 1.

^a Of our God and Saviour, &c.] The order of the original words rather favours this translation, though I confess it is not absolutely necessary, and it may be ren-

dered as in our version, of God and our Saviour. It is observable, that the order in the next verse is different, and determines it to the translation there used.

^b Life

through that atonement which our Divine Redeemer has made, and the perfect righteousness he has introduced for the justification of all his believing people.

2 For this purpose, that this invaluable blessing may be ensured to you, may *grace and peace* in all your concerns, temporal and spiritual, be multiplied unto you by the acknowledgment of the great God and of Jesus Christ our Lord; by a faithful and courageous profession of whose name we put ourselves into the way of receiving the most important blessings. This we may cheerfully expect, as his Divine power has given unto us all things in such rich abundance, which [relate] both to life and godliness^a; whereby the present life is rendered much more comfortable to us, and the future and eternal life of our souls is secured. And thus we obtain, by the knowledge of him who has, by his gospel, called us by that glory with which he has now invested us, and that strengthening virtue^c, and

4 energy of his spirit: By means of which^d illustrious seal, set to the declaration of the gospel, are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, relating to blessings infinitely more valuable than any present enjoyments or expectations. And the design of God, in bestowing this inestimable favour is, that by these you may be made partakers of the Divine nature^e, transformed into the image of God's moral perfections; having escaped the corruption [which is]

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord;

^a According as his Divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue;

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these ye might be partakers of the Divine nature, having escaped the corruption

b *Life and godliness*.] Some imagine this to be an Hebraism for a *goodly life*, but the meaning is so much enriched by understanding it more literally, that I choose to retain our version, and to paraphrase the words according to it.

c *By glory and virtue*.] *his life and his*.] This is the proper rendering of *ἐν* with a genitive case, as several critics have rightly observed. Dr. Whitby supposes these words to be an *anathema*, and understands them of the glorious and powerful effluvia of the Spirit. It is remarkable that the word *ἀγαθόν* used so frequently in heathen writers, seldom occurs in the New Testament; and when it does, it does not always signify the *virtue of a right principle*, but generally *outward*. (See note h below.) And therefore as the learned Albert observes, (*Observ. Philolog.* p. 468) some interpreters, apprehending the word *ἀγαθόν* to be in no sense applicable to God, but only to men, have rendered this clause,

contrary to the Greek idiom, *in glory and virtue*. But it may very properly be understood of that *exceeding energy* which God communicates to the human mind, which appeared to us so extraordinary a manner in the apostolic age.

d *By means of which*.] Some would render *ἐν*, *for the sake of which*; that is, as they understand the clause, that we might attain to the *glory and virtue*, God has made unto precious promises, of the pardon of sin, the assistance of his Spirit, and at last, eternal happiness. Dr. Whitby would read it, *ἐν*, *by means*, that is, by Christ; for which he both the authority of some manuscripts.

e *Partakers of a Divine nature*.] I cannot think the promises, which are produced from Philo and Josephus, as parallel to this, are sufficient to justify Dr. Whitby's interpreting this phrase of *union* and *prophetic ennoblement*.

corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue; and to virtue, knowledge?

6 And to knowledge, temperance, and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness:

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity.

is] so generally prevalent in the world, through the *lust* which men are ready to indulge, to the reproach and destruction of their immortal souls. And for this purpose ^f, applying with all possible diligence, as you have believed the gospel, be careful to accompany that belief with all the lovely train of attendant graces; associate ^g, as it were, to your faith, virtue ^h, true fortitude and resolution of mind, which may enable you to break through that variety of dangers with which your faith may be attended; and to this heroic virtue and bravery, that knowledge which may direct your resolution aright; And to knowledge, temperance; that if you should be in the most plentiful circumstances, they may not be a snare to you, and the bounties of Providence may not be abused to the dishonour of God, and your own detriment; and to this temperance add patience, as you are not apprised what afflictions may possibly succeed your prosperity, nor how severe they may be; and to patience add godliness, that devout temper of mind, which will be so powerful a support to your patience, both by the views it gives you of the wisdom and goodness of all the Divine dispensations, and by the pleasure which it will mingle with the most painful exercises and trials; And to godliness, add brotherly kindness, that peculiar affection which you owe to your fellow-Christians, as your brethren in the Lord; and add to this brotherly kindness, universal love to all your fellow-creatures, extending your kind affectionate regards to those who are entirely strangers to that religion which you are so hap-

py

^f For this purpose : *αὐτοῦ τοῦ*.] The learned Albert supposes the particle *αὐτοῦ* to be understood, and I have translated it accordingly.

^g Associate.] The word *συνεχόμενοι* properly signifies to lead up, as in a dance, one of these virtues after another in a beautiful and majestic order. See Goodman's *Parable of the Prod.* p. 296; and Sir Norton Knatchbull in loc.

^h Virtue.] *Virtue* cannot here signify an universal regularity of mind and manners, (see Titus iii. 8,) because every particular afterwards mentioned, is a virtue in that sense; and the apostle speaks of each as additional to what went before. It must therefore here signify courage, as the original word *ἀρετή* often does (Com-

pare note e above.) And it is properly added to faith, in reference to the need faith has of a courageous defence, and of the advantage it gives us for that purpose. The knowledge to be added signifies not that general knowledge on which faith and virtue must be founded, but an acquaintance with the importance of the several principles and duties comprehended in that general knowledge; and by this courage would properly be directed, which might otherwise act at random. Nor can we imagine, that one of these good qualities can entirely subsist without another; but every one is to make up, as it were, a part of the chorus, appearing together in a lovely and venerable train.

SEC.

i.

2 Peter

1. 5.

2 COR.

I.

2 Peter

I. 8.

py as to embrace, and even to those who are most unrighteously oppose it, and injure you for your profession of it; *For if these excellent things which I have now described, exist and abound in you, they will permit [you] to be neither inactive nor unfruitful, in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ; but as they must put you upon exerting yourselves in consequence of that knowledge, they will make these your endeavours delightful and effectual for that purpose. But he that is deficient in these things, is blind as to the most important objects of knowledge; at best he is very short-sighted, his views are limited to a narrow circle of low and mean objects, which lie immediately before him, and cannot take in that enlarged and noble prospect which Christianity sets before him. He shews that he hath contracted a sad forgetfulness of [his] baptismal engagements, and of that purification from the sins of his former life, which he professed to be in search of, and hoped to find by that solemn ordinance which initiated him into the Christian church.*

- 10 And as it would be very fatal to fall from these bright views and expectations into a state of such aggravated condemnation, *therefore my brethren, endeavour so much the more diligently to make your calling and your election sure; and firm; that having been called into the church of Christ, and chosen to such exalted external privileges, and such glorious hopes, you may not finally lose them; but may be assured upon the best grounds, that you are indeed effectually called by Divine grace, and chosen to the possession of life everlasting. And this important end will be secured, if you resolutely persist in your duty, according to the directions I have*

now

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore, my brethren, endeavour to make your calling and election sure, for if ye do these things,

Ye shall

[*Calling and election sure.*] Mr. Bruegel, the ingenious author of the *Christian Warfare*, hath taken pains to prove that calling and election alludes to the manner in which armies were raised, first, by calling together all of a proper age to bear arms; and then, choosing out such as were reckoned most proper for the purpose. And he supposes that making the calling and election, *between, steadfast*, was acting in such a manner that they might not be *carried and discarded*, as unworthy a place in the army into which they had been *raised*. He has indeed proved by a great number of learned quotations, that this was the case in the Grecian armies;

and Rev. xxi. 14. may perhaps be a further illustration of it, as he well argues. But I cannot think, that by this we are to determine our notion of the *Christian calling and election*; and whoever should attempt to apply this idea to such persons in the multitude of places, would find it utterly unsuitable. I have therefore not taken in the idea, which this agreeable writer suggests, as not entirely to drop others, which I think it extremely probable the *apostle* might have in his view. And it will certainly be a good source, if we understand the *election*, Make it an *ensured thing to yourselves*, that you are called and chosen of God.

things, ye shall never fall :

11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

now given ; for if ye do these things ye shall never fall ; God will support you with communications of grace, suitable to any extraordinary trial, to which you may be called, till the whole is brought to a happy issue and conclusion. For so an entrance shall be richly and abundantly administered unto you into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ ; you shall not only be secure of obtaining happiness there, but shall be received into it with circumstances of solemn pomp and distinguished honour ; and those graces which adorned your profession here on earth, shall, as it were, attend you in a radiant train to those mansions of everlasting felicity and glory, which the Divine mercy shall then assign you, through Jesus Christ, to whom the praise of all is to be ascribed, and with whom you shall reign through the endless ages of eternity.

SECT.
I.

2 Peter
I. 10.

IMPROVEMENT.

WITH all humility let us adore the Divine goodness, in making *Ver.* us partakers of the like precious faith with that which he bestowed on the primitive believers. And let it often be considered 1 in this comprehensive and edifying view, as terminating on the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ, on that method of justification by him and his gospel which Divine grace hath found out and proposed. With thankfulness let us own the abundant provision made for us, of all things pertaining to life and godliness ; and above all, let the exceeding rich and invaluable 3 promises, contained in the gospel, be reviewed with sincere de- 4 light, and be esteemed as our securest and most important treasure. May they actually have all that efficacy they are suited and intended to have, to procure and secure our escape from the pollutions which are in the world through lust, and to advance the Divine resemblance in our souls. How various, and how lovely, 5, are the graces which are here recommended, as what we are with all diligence to add to our faith : courage and temperance, patience and godliness, brotherly kindness, and universal charity ! These are the genuine fruits of the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ ; 8 these, while they honour him, and adorn our profession, will be no less honourable and beneficial to ourselves. Short-sighted 9 indeed we are, if we perceive not on the one hand the happy and delightful consequences which they will finally produce ; and, on the other, how utterly vain our baptismal honours and

and engagements, and all external privileges of church-communion, will be, if these *vitals of christianity* are wanting. In order to ex-

Ver. cite our indolent minds to pursue these Divine graces with a spirit in some measure proportionable to their excellence, let us frequently reflect on our speedy removal from this world, and all its vanities; how soon we must enter upon *eternity*. O, how desir-

- 11 *able* *then* to enter on the *kingdom of Christ*, to be honoured with an *abundant entrance* into everlasting mansions, to be received as with a cordial welcome, to sail, as were, into that blessed harbour with a full gale of consolation and joy! Be not *deceived*: *God is not mocked*; it is the invariable design of the gospel to produce and advance our *holiness*. it is the immutable constitution of the *kingdom of Christ*, that without it *no man shall be permitted to see the Lord*. (Heb. xu. 14.)

SECT. II.

The Apostle, on the view of his own approaching dissolution, reminds his Christian brethren that their religion was firmly founded, as it was attested both by the miraculous voice from heaven, which declared Jesus to be the Son of God, and by the divinely inspired prophecies, which also bore testimony to him under that character. 2 Pet. I. 12, to the end.

2 PETER I. 12.

SECT.
II.

2 PETER
I. 12.

- I HAVE been exhorting you to cultivate the several graces of Christianity, and urging this as necessary for the security of your eternal salvation; *therefore I will not neglect, always to put you in mind of these things*: though I am aware, that you already *know them*, and are well established by the instruction you have received in the present truth, relating to the practice of these virtues. But I account it right and expedient, yea, what by my office in the church of Christ I owe to you, and my other brethren, *as long as I am in this tabernacle*, and inhabit this frail mortal body, from which, God only knows how soon I may be dislodged, *to stir you up by way of remembrance*, and to endeavour to keep your hearts under as lively a sense of Divine things as I can; *Knowing that* all these opportunities of service are confined within very narrow limits; and that *I must quickly put off this my tabernacle* by death, *even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me* by an express prophecy,

2 PETER I. 13.

WHILE YOU LIVE, but not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yes, I think it meet, as long as I am in my tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting you in remembrance;

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Christ hath shewed me.

15 Moreover, I will endeavour, that ye may be able, after my death, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn,

a Surer prophetic word.] Some are of opinion that the apostle intended no comparison in this place, but that the comparative is used for the positive; so that it only signifies a very sure prophetic word. As in Heb. xiii. 23. *ταχέως* is used for quickly. Acts xxv. 10, *καλῶς* for well. Compare 1 Tim. iii. 14; 2 Tim. i. 17, 18. And *μικρολογῶς* for the least, Mat. xi. 11; Luke vii. 28. Others assert, that the series of prophecies, when explained in the light of

phesy, and that memorable action of his, when just after his resurrection, he commanded me to follow him in token of my readiness to die for him, by the same kind of death which he suffered. (John xxi. 18, 19, 20.) But I will endeavour, to the utmost of my ability, while it pleases God to continue me among you, that you may have these things so familiar to your minds now, that ye may also every one of you have them in remembrance after my departure, when I shall have made my exit from the stage of mortality. For we have not been pursuing after a series of artfully devised fables, while we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ; they were not fallaciously invented, nor rashly credited by us; but we were eye-witnesses of his majesty, and of the solemn pomp and grandeur with which he appeared at his transfiguration. For he then received from God the Father illustrious honour and glory; sublime honour was done him, and a refulgent glory was shed round about him, when such a voice was sent forth to him from the magnificent glory of the Shechinah, which then appeared so conspicuous and glorious, and made that ever memorable proclamation, *This is my well-beloved Son in whom I acquiesce*, (Mat. xvii. 5,) and in whom my soul is perfectly well-pleased. And this voice which came down from heaven. we, his three distinguished friends, James and John, as well as myself, actually heard, when we were with him in the holy mount, which was, for the time, consecrated by the visible appearance of the Divine glory upon it. And we have a surer and firmer prophetic word^a, the evidence of which, on the whole, is far more extensive and important than that of any single miracle, how conspicuous soever: to which, therefore, ye do very well to adhere, and to take heed to its contents, as to a lamp shining in a dark, obscure,

the New Testament, is a much clearer proof of Christ's being the Messiah, than any single miraculous fact, as this was. It is also debated, whether prophecy signifies the gift so called among Christians, or the written prophecies of the Old Testament. But I think it cannot be doubted, that it refers to the latter, and is the same with what is called below, in the 20th verse, the prophecy of scripture, and is said to have come in old time, by the will of God.

PECT.
ii

Peter
i. 10.

- obscure and gloomy places. Observe it therefore, and adhere to it, *till the day dawn, and the morning star arise in your hearts*, with resplendent beams, as the sure herald of an eternal day, whose sun shall no more go down, nor its moon withdraw itself: *Knowing this first*, as a matter of chief importance; *that no prophecy of scripture is of private impulses*, or original.
- 21 *For prophecy was not brought of old*, to the minds of those that uttered it, *by the will of man*; they could not work themselves up to the attainment of this extraordinary gift, nor divinely foretell what they themselves desired, and whenever they pleased; *but holy men of God*, whom he honoured with that important work, *spoke as they were borne on by the Holy Spirit*; and they were only his organs, in declaring to the people what he was disposed to suggest to them.

down, and the day star
arise in your hearts.

20 *Knowing this first*, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private inspiration.

21 For the prophets were not by old time by the will of man; but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. MAY that uncertainty, that frailty and brevity of human life,
- 14 which the ministers of Christ are frequently inculcating upon others, be seriously considered by themselves. Let them remember, that they must *quickly put off this tabernacle*, and be dismissed from their present state of service; and while they have opportunity therefore, let them *stir up the words* of the prophets committed to their charge, *by way of remembrance*, and give diligence to make such impressions upon their hearts, that when they themselves are laid down in the silence of the grave, and sleeping among the clouds of the valley, by the recollection and improvement of the lessons
- 15 they taught, survivors, may be quickened in their preparation to quit

to lamp, about this and there] Bishop Chandler supposes, prophecy is so called, because it gives gradually brighter and brighter, as its approach nearer and nearer to its accomplishment. [Bishop Chandler's *Discourse of Christianity*, p. 100.

c No prophecy of scripture is of private impulse.] So I render *original*; and take it to signify, that men and men took themselves up into such positions, as led them to utter the predictions and oracles recorded. And this, I think, the original will very well bear, and the apostle justify. To interpret it in opposition to the right of private judgment in the interpretation of scripture, is quite foreign to the apostle's purpose, as well as extremely injurious to common sense. See

True Christianity, Vol. I. p. 147. Dr. Clark and Mr. Baxter have understood this, as if the apostle had said, *Prophecy is not to be interpreted merely according to this particular point of view, it is literally spoken*, but as having a farther ground to which the expression of the prospects were to be related than the influence of the spirit, in reference to the general disposition, in respect to which these human things were excited further than they themselves were aware. Mr. Jeffrey, (after Dr. Hammond,) observes, that *original* signifies *original* in your words, and given to the readers when they were to start. See *the Reason of the continuance of these the author of the grounds, etc. and an advertisement*, p. 149.

quit *their dissolving tabernacles* likewise, and to follow their pious leaders into the *joy of their Lord*. SECT.
ii.

It must undoubtedly yield us an inconceivable satisfaction as *Ver. Christians*, that we *have not followed cunningly devised fables*; that *16* the persons on whose testimony we rely as an authentic evidence to the truth of our holy religion, were *eye-witnesses* of the illustrious facts on which it is founded ; and particularly, that important oracle, *the voice from heaven*, by which the true and living God declared *17, 18* *Jesus of Nazareth* to be his well-beloved Son, and recommended him to the *obedient regard* of all who reverence his own authority, was, on the mount of transfiguration, distinctly heard by *Peter, James, and John* ; who at the same time were *eye-witnesses of his glory*. Yet are we bound to acknowledge the Divine oracles of the *Old Testament*, and the numerous and various *prophecies* they contain, to be to us a superior, and more sure and incontestible evidence : let us *therefore take heed to it, as a glorious light to our feet, and a lamp to our paths*. And let what is particularly said of the *ancient prophets* recommend to our regard *the whole sacred volume* ; namely, that it was not written by *private impulse*, but by the *inspiration of 20 the Holy Ghost*. Let us receive it with the profoundest humility, not as *the word of man*, but as it is indeed and in truth *the word of God, which is able to make us wise unto salvation* : and let us follow its sacred illumination, till at length it conduct us to *the dawning of 21 an eternal day*, and to the rising of that bright and *morning star*, which will shine out hereafter with the full glory of the *Sun of righteousness*.

SECT. III.

The Apostle cautions Christians against false teachers ; mentioning the judgments which God executed on the fallen angels, on the old world, and on Sodom, and the deliverance of Noah and of Lot, as considerations which should, on the one hand, terrify the ungodly, and on the other, comfort and establish the hearts of good men.
2 Peter II. 1—9.

2 PETER II. 1.

BUT there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in

2 PETER II. 1.

IHAVE observed to you, that it was by a Divine impulse that the prophets delivered and wrote their predictions in former times ; *but* they were not always regarded in a becoming manner ; for *there were also false prophets among the*

SECT.
iii.

2 Peter
II. 1.

part.
100.
2 Part
11. 1.

the people^a of the Jews, as there shall also be among you^b, the disciple of a greater Master than Moses; *false teachers, who will make parties among you, and privately introduce pernicious and destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought and redeemed them*: as those false prophets denied the God who had redeemed Israel from its bondage and misery; but they will at last be found in the same dreadful circumstances, *bringing upon themselves swift destruction*. And yet many will persist to follow their pernicious courses, by means of whom the way of truth, the cause of genuine and uncorrupted Christianity, will by many others be blasphemed; as if the errors and madness of those members who are corrupted, were to be charged on those who are not infected with their disorders, or the vices of a few, were to be imputed to all. And as for the false teachers I mention, they will order both their teaching and their conduct by views and maxims of *covetousness*, and with *deceitful words will make merchandise of you*, trafficking as it were for your immortal souls. These are wretches, whose judgment for a long time delays not, but advances apace; and their destruction does not slumber^c how fondly soever they may dream of escaping it. But if they consider the numerous examples God has already given, of his righteous indignation, they must certainly take the

in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

^a And many shall follow their pernicious ways, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

^b And though covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you; whose judgment now of a long time lingers not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

^a *There were also false teachers among the people* [Dr. Blacklock, the late bishop of London, has observed in his first sermon, at the end of his discourse on purgatory, that there is a sensible difference, not so much between the *flat and round* speeches of *Perry*, as between the *round* chapter, when mingled with the *flat* and *small*. This chapter abounds in pompous words and expressions. It is a description of false teachers, and seems to be extracted from some Jewish writer, who had given a description of the *false* prophet, either those of his own time, or those who had lived before him. This remark accounts for the great resemblance between the chapter and the *quails of Jude*; as was observed in the introduction. He supposes it might be transcribed, or translated by them, from some Jewish or Hebrew book that contained an account of them. See the epistle of Jude, note c.

^b *As there shall also be among you* [Hence Mr. Mede, I think somewhat precariously, infers a similitude between the errors propagated by the *false* prophets among the Jews, and those which were to overrun the Christian Church, and institutions in image worship, and the worship of departed saints and heroes, customary in the church of Rome. *Modestus*. Dr. Wesley applies all these things to the Numbaitans, and Simstickes, who were a branch of them.

^c *Their destruction* [Mr. Blackwall observes, that this is a most *beastly figure*, representing the *vengeance*: that shall destroy such incorrigible sinners, as an angel of judgment, pursuing them upon the wing continually approaching nearer and nearer, and in the mean time keeping a watchful eye upon them, that he may at length discharge an avenging blow. See his *Ser. of Creation*, Vol. I. p. 177.

d *Did*

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eight person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

the alarm: For if God did not spare the angels that sinned^d, but, having cast [them] down from heaven, and sunk them to the abyss of hell, delivered [them] to be reserved in chains of darkness, & to the judgment of the great and terrible day of account; we may from hence reasonably conclude, that he will find out a proper season to punish wicked men, the confederates and instruments of those rebellious spirits.

And indeed the history of mankind furnishes us with many awful instances of this kind; and one, in which almost the whole human species was made the monument of Divine displeasure; for when God had been long insulted and provoked by their continued wickedness, we know that he spared not the inhabitants of the old antediluvian world. Nevertheless, it is worth our while at the same time to observe the favourable manner in which God interposed amidst the general ruin, for the preservation of the only good man that remained; for he kept Noah, the eight [person^e] who was a preacher of righteousness

SECT.
iii.
2 Peter
II. 4.

d Did not spare the angels, &c.] Some have imagined this to be an imperfect sentence: I think it complete in the 9th verse. But as the length of the sentence is so necessarily increased, by such a method of paraphrasing as I have chosen, (though brought into the narrowest limits, which were judged consistent with answering the end,) I have thought it proper here, and in many other instances, to divide what, in the original, makes one sentence, into several; else I must have left many passages of the sacred writings far more intricate than I found them.

e Cast [them] down to hell.] Mr. Mede would translate the words, When God had condemned the angels than sinned to the punishment of hell, he delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved to judgment. I cannot but think that the word *ταφάρωας* is illustrated by the description given of Tartarus in Homer, (*Iliad*. ©, *Lin*. 13—25,) as a deep gulph under the earth, where there are iron gates, and a brazen entrance. It is derived from a word expressive of terror, and signifies the doleful prison in which wicked spirits are reserved, till they should be brought out to public condemnation and execution.

f In chains of darkness.] It has been queried, how the confinement of these unhappy spirits in chains of darkness, is con-

sistent with their wandering up and down in the air, and upon earth. I think we are to answer, not by saying, that the darkness is moral, or that the light is disagreeable to them, as some have suggested, (compare *Keynot's Inquiry concerning the Angelic world*, *Query* xxx. p. 191;) but rather, that a general confinement may be reconcileable with some degree of liberty, yet still liable to restraint, as God shall see fit. Compare *Luke* viii. 31; *Rev.* xx. 1, 3. And this air, over which they seem indeed to have some power sometimes granted them, (*Eph.* ii. 2.) is to be sure darkness, when compared with the light in which they originally dwelt.

g The eight [person] a preacher of righteousness.] Bishop Pearson would render this clause, Noah the eight preacher of righteousness, supposing that Enos was the first, (*Gen.* iv. 26,) from whom Noah was the eight; that all the intermediate persons bore the same office, and that Christ preached by them all. 1 *Pet.* iii. 19. *Pears.* on the *Creed*, p. 113. To which Bishop Cumberland assents, supposing God had a continued succession of extraordinary persons in the patriarchal church. *Cumb.* on *Gen.* p. 49. But I think it certain, that Enos could not be the first preacher of righteousness: Adam was in a wonderful manner fitted to perform that office in the first world; as Noah was in the second, and

NOTE.
III.
1 Peter
II. 5.

ousness, and seven others, who were with him in the ark, *when he brought the irresistible destruction of the universal deluge upon the whole world of the ungodly*, and destroyed all the impious wretches who had derided the admonitions of that faithful patriarch.

6 And in a succeeding age, when the inhabitants of those places were sunk into the lowest degeneracy, *he condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, with the most dreadful destruction, reducing them to ashes*, by raining down fire and brimstone from heaven upon them; *setting [them] as an example and pattern of that final vengeance he will bring on those sinners who should afterwards be ungodly*, that they might learn their own condemnation and misery from the memorials of the destruction of those once noble, pleasant, and flourishing cities of the plain. And by the miraculous interposition of his Providence, *he reversed righteous Lot, who was so long a sinner and afflicted by the destruction even*

8 *company of these wicked men. For Lot, a righteous man, who did dwell among the ungodly, and hearing from men to day, the remembrance of their profligate and abandoned wickedness, lamented his upright soul by [those] unrighteous and scandalous men, whose cry came up at length to heaven, and brought down upon them this flaming destruction.* And thus in the whole, we discern in this memorable example, that on the one hand, *The Lord knows how to reverse the golly from temptation and danger, and on the other, to reverse the unrighteous in the day of judgment to be punished with a severity becoming their guilt and wickedness.*

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an example unto them that after should live ungodly;

7 And righteous Lot, being vexed with the ungodly conversation of the cities, dwelt with them.

8 For that righteous man, Lot, dwelling among the ungodly, was vexed with their unrighteous conversation; and his righteous soul was vexed with the unrighteousness of them that dwelt with him.

9 And Lot, being vexed with the ungodly conversation, and he vexed the unrighteousness of them that dwelt with him.

IMPROVEMENT.

THERE is no church so pure, but some *false members*, and even *false teachers*, may insinuate themselves into it; yet it is our duty to watch and pray, that the churches to which we respectively

and what excellent instructions both might give. Dr. Wither has finely represented Wither's History of Knowledge, Vol. I. p. 17, &c. p. 87-88. Bishop Pearson adds, that if we are not disposed to reflect on the apostles, and translate it, the end of the apostles, it may be understood as denoting, not the cities in which they were, but the cities of the ungodly.

of persons that were with him, Noah with seven others, or Noah and eight, and accordingly I have determined it to this sense in the paragraph. The Bishop hath produced several passages in the Greek text in support of this sense of the word; and others may be seen to Epiphanius. Compare also 1 Peter iii. 20.

spectively belong, may be guarded against their *pernicious* insinuations, and especially against the *destructive heresies* of those who *deny the Lord who bought them*. As we regard the edification of the church, and the salvation of our own precious and immortal souls, let us *guard* against whatever may justly deserve such an imputation as this. *Woe* be to those teachers who are actuated with a *Ver. covetous spirit*, who *teach things which they ought not for the sake of* 3 *filthy lucre, and make merchandise of the souls of their hearers!* How swiftly does their *damnation* approach, though they perceive not the gradations by which it advances; and with what irresistible terror will at length overwhelm them!

That our hearts may be preserved under an awful impression of 4 the *Divine judgments*, let us often meditate on those displays of them of which the *scripture* informs us. And let us, in particular, reflect on the fall of the *apostate angels*, who were for their first offence precipitated from heaven, and *reserved in chains of darkness to the judgment of the great day*: and while we contemplate this awful dispensation, let us adore that distinguishing grace and compassion which laid hold on *apostate man*, and provided an all-sufficient Saviour for him. Let us call to remembrance the dissolution 5, 6 of the *old world*, by a deluge of water, and the tremendous destruction of the *cities of the plain* by fire from heaven; and let us fear that *God*, who can at pleasure *break open the fountains of the great deep and open the windows of heaven*, and emit from these his various magazines, deluges of water, or torrents of burning sulphur, to execute his vengeance. Who can flee from his pursuing hand? or who can be secure and happy but under *his almighty protection*? Yet awful as the terrors of his indignation are, *his eyes are upon the righteous, and his ears are open to their cry*. What a noble sup- 7, 8 port and encouragement may it therefore be to the small remnant, *who from day to day are vexing their righteous souls at the ungodly deeds of the wicked among whom they dwell*, to reflect on the deliverance of *Noah*, and of *Lot*, from that general destruction with which they were surrounded. A more perfect and *complete deliverance* will be at length accomplished for all the faithful servants of *God*, and there will be no possibility of doubting any more of his ability, or his willingness to *rescue them from every evil*; for he will make the day of his vengeance on his enemies, a day of complete and everlasting salvation to *his saints*. And the *Lord grant that we may all find mercy of the Lord in that important day*.

SECT. IV.

The Apostle describes in very emphatical terms, the infamous character of some wickedly and seducing teachers, who were crept into the Christian church; and warns the Christian converts of the danger of their being perverted by them, and them of the dreadful destruction to which they exposed themselves. 2 Pet. II. 10.—22.

2 PETER II. 10.

SECT.
IV.2 Peter
II. 10.

- I HAVE been just mentioning the Divine vengeance which will be poured out on audacious and impudent sinners; but I would especially be understood to intend *those who go after strange flesh, in the lust of uncleanness*. for they are particularly detestable in the eye of God, and the crimes they commit so much resemble that of Sodom, that it is the less to be wondered if they share in its punishment: and with them I also comprehend those who *despise dominion*, of which there are many among the licentious wretches before described, *daring and self-willed*, uncontrollable in their own ways, and ready to face and withstand any opposition in the prosecution of them; *they fear not to speak evil of those who possess the highest dignities*; Whereas the angels, even those who are greater in strength and power than the rest of those glorious beings, *bear not a reviling testimony against them before the Lord*: but abhorring all scurrility and violence of language, they with all calmness and decency declare matters as they are, as revering the presence of God, how much soever they may abhor the characters of ungodly men. (Jude 9.) But these men behave as if they were irrational animals^a, made by nature to be taken, and destroyed, and consumed: the fiercest savage beasts, whom men for their own security and preservation, hunt down and destroy, can hardly be more violent, and outrageous than they; *blaspheming things which they do not understand*, and the consequence will be
- 11
- 12

2 PETER II. 10.

BUT only them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities:

11 Whereas angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

12 But these as natural beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of things which they understand not, and shall

^a Irrational animals]. Dr. Whitby would render this, But there are no natural brute beasts: referring it to their presumptuous enormity of lust. And indeed it is evident, it must be explained as a general assertion, relating to some violence of temper; as no sin of the tongue, which is

immediately afterwards spoken of, could be the resemblance of a beast. It may refer to their running headlong into extreme danger, which they thoughtless manner of speech, especially when attacking the characters of governors, might very naturally expose them to.

shall utterly perish in their own corruption;

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day-time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin? beguiling unstable souls. An heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children:

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness:

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb

be, that they *shall be utterly destroyed in their corruption*^b; and many of them by their own intemperance, rashness, and folly, will hasten upon themselves that irretrievable ruin; *Receiving indeed the just reward of their unrighteousness*, and irregularities; *while they account it a pleasure to riot in the day*: they are spots and reproaches to the society to which they belong, *living luxuriously* in other places, *by means of those deceits*^c, which they conceal under the mask of Christianity, *banqueting with you* at the holy table^d. Many of them are as lewd as they 14 are gluttonous, *having eyes full of adultery*^e, and that cannot cease from sin, even when the powers of animal nature are exhausted; but by their words and gestures they endeavour to fan the flame; *ensnaring unstable souls* by their artful addresses, and *having their heart continually exercised in avaricious schemes*; on all which accounts they are the children of a curse, and they shall find that in the end it will indeed fall heavy upon them.

For, *deserting the straight and upright way* 15 of truth and integrity, *they have wandered in dangerous and destructive paths*; *following in the way of that infamous person Balaam, the son of Bosor*^f, who so loved the wages of unrighteousness, that he was willing to sacrifice every other interest to obtain them. But he 16 received, in a very extraordinary manner the reproof

b *Destroyed in their corruption.*] The original phrase is ἐν τῇ φθορᾷ αὐτῶν κατεφθαρμένοι, and some would render it, *are destroyed by destruction*, that is, certainly, or utterly destroyed. Compare Cradock's Apostolical History, p. 117. They boasted of being beyond the power of corruption and punishment, but are lost in both together.

c *Living luxuriously, &c.*] This is so good and proper a sense, that one is not tempted to wish the establishing of the reading of ἀνεπαίς for ἀνωμαλίας, which some have proposed, and so explain it of the riot of those pretended love-feasts, into which indeed it is not impossible that luxury might soon come, when persons of such a character were concerned in them; and probably that was the occasion of laying them aside.

d *Banqueting with you*] It is not to be thought that luxury could be introduced into those feasts, which they celebrated

with the church, without detecting their own characters; and therefore I think it most reasonable to consider their luxury as practised elsewhere; and to refer this banqueting, of which the apostle speaks, to their attending the sacred banquet of the Lord's supper, as a cover for their licentiousness.

e *Having eyes full of adultery*: ὀφθαλμοί;—μαίης; μοιχαλίδες.] There is a prodigious strength in this expression; it properly signifies, their having an adulteress continually before their eyes.

f *Balaam [the son] of Bosor.*] There is one manuscript which reads Beor, and this reading is confirmed by the Syriac version. Mr. Ainsworth and Dr. Lightfoot suppose, that the apostle, in writing Bosor for Beor, used the Chaldee dialect, as he writ in the neighbourhood of Babylon. See Ainsworth on Num. xxii. 5; and Dr. Lightfoot's Adversus to his Hæc Hebraica, on 1 Cor. xiv. cap. 4.

17. *reproof of his transgression; for the dumb beast on which he rode, speaking with the voice of a man, restrained the madness of the prophet, when he would have pressed on to his own destruction.*

2 Peter.

11. 16.

17 *These, notwithstanding all their boasted pretensions, are fountains without water; they are clouds agitated by a whirlwind, easily yielding to every wind of persecution or temptation, and themselves big with storms and tempests: But after all their turbulence and mischief, they will be found in the number of those to whom is reserved blackness of darkness for ever, even the*

18 *judgment of eternal darkness and despair. They sometimes indeed affect sublime strains of language, which are often void of any real meaning, and speaking swelling [words] of vanity, they ensnare in the lusts of the flesh, which they practise and promote in all variety of lasciviousness, those who were, so far as we can judge by their external behaviour, quite escaped^b from them that have their conversation in error, and they draw back into apostacy some, who appeared to have set their faces in good earnest towards the kingdom of heaven, by which means they become partakers in the guilt of that aggravated condemnation and ruin which these deluded and unhappy persons bring upon themselves.*

19 *For promising them liberty, they are so far from performing their engagements, that they are themselves the despicable slaves of corruption, and have not power and spirit enough to extricate themselves out of that infamous bondage; for by whomsoever any one is defeated and conquered, by him he is of course also enslaved; and it is too evident to admit of dispute, that these wretched men are continually conquered by sin.*

20 *And they ought certainly to be reckoned among the most miserable of mankind; for if, having escaped the pollutions of the world, by the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they*

dumb ass speaking with man's voice, had the madness of the prophet.

17 These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them: who live in error:

19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same he is brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and

[Swelling words of vanity.] It is observed, that here, and in many other places, these heretical teachers are represented as seducing their followers, not by the power of miracles, but by the arts of seduction.

b Quite escaped, &c.] The words *erue*; and *exiit*, which is the received reading, certainly signify, those who were thoroughly or entirely escaped. But the Alexandrian

an reading *exierat*, which some other copies in some degree imitate, where they do not entirely follow, leaves a strong suspicion on my mind, that the apostle might intend those who had almost escaped. I have therefore taken a medium, and returning the usual reading in the *version*, have paraphrased the words in what I apprehend the most natural sense, with some regard to the other copy.

i Rom.

and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and, The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

they are entangled and subdued by them again, caught as it were in their nets, and so lying at their mercy to be wounded and destroyed by them, *their last state is certainly much worse than the first*;

For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness at all, than having known [it] and professed a desire and resolution of walking in it, to have turned aside from the holy commandmentⁱ delivered to them; for by this means their guilt is so much the more aggravated; their conduct is the more pernicious to others, and consequently to themselves. But indeed when the matter comes thoroughly to be considered, it will appear, that under all the external appearances of reformation, there was still an evil nature and principle remaining, which at length prevailed; so that it is happened to them according to the true proverb, The dog [is] returned to gorge up his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed from the filthiness she had before contracted, having still the same unclean nature prevailing, is returned to wallow in the mire, and so makes herself as filthy as she had ever been before. (Comp. Prov. xxvi. 11.)

SECT.
iv.

2 Peter
II. 20.

IMPROVEMENT.

It is indeed matter of grievous lamentation, that such wretches as those who are here described, should be any-where found in the christian church. Let us be the less surprised, if any such spots and blemishes are discovered among us, on whom the ends of the world are come; but let the licentious character, here drawn, be noted with a just abhorrence, that if any such persons are found, they may with becoming indignation be put away. Many there are who seem to be as irrational and ravenous as brute beasts, and are far more pernicious to society than the race of savage or poisonous animals. They are indeed children of a curse, and they will inherit the curse, who thus contrive to make their lives one scene of iniquity, whose eyes, and lips, declare more wickedness in their hearts than they have power to execute. But it should be

Ver.
13

14

ⁱ From the holy commandment.] The learned Dr. Sherlock, the late bishop of London, interprets this of some directions drawn up by the apostles, relating to the conduct which Christians should maintain with regard to these seducing teachers they are here cautioned against. See his Dis-

courses on Prophecy, Diss. I. p. 124. It is, however, certain, that it is capable of a larger interpretation, as many holy commandments remain upon record in the New Testament, which might guard them against the evils referred to in the preceding discourse.

a This

be remembered, they are accountable to God, not only for all they *do*, but for all they *desire* and *wish* to do ; and they are incessantly aggravating that terrible account. These disciples of *Balaam* will surely receive *his reward* ; those *dark clouds* will quickly, if they continue thus to *obscure* with their crimes the *horizon* in which they ought to shine as *stars*, be doomed to *blackness of darkness for ever*. May persons of such a character, how specious soever the *form* which they wear, be universally detected and disgraced ; may none of their *swelling words of vanity* entice and ensnare those who appear just *escaping* from the delusions of error and the fetters of vice ; and may none permit themselves to be seduced by *promises of liberty*, from such mean and miserable *slaves of corruption*.

Finally, let us learn, by the awful conclusion of *this chapter*, to guard against all temptations to *apostasy* ; may we never, after having long *escaped the pollutions of the world*, be *entangled* again, and *overcome*, by them. Better, far better, would it have been for us, *not to have known the way of righteousness*, than, *having known it, to turn away from the holy commandment* ; our *last end*, in this case, would be *worse than the beginning* ; and those expressive *studies*, taken from such loathsome and detestable animals, would not be sufficient to paint out the degree, in which we should ourselves be loathsome and odious, in the sight of that God, *who is of purer eyes than to behold iniquity, and cannot look upon evil*. (Habak. i. 13.) May we therefore, with the *righteous*, *hold on our way* ; and taking care to preserve the *cleanness of our hands and hearts*, may we daily *wear stronger and stronger*, Job. xvii. 9,) and *shine with an increasing lustre* ; for the *path of the just should be as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day*. (Prov. iv. 18.)

SECT. V.

That they might be effectually guarded against the artifices of those who *rest at religion*, or *he is wroth to deceive*, the apostle directs them to *adhere closely and steadily to the holy scriptures*, and represents to them the absolute certainty, and awful manner, of the destruction of this world, concluding with several weighty and pertinent exhortations. 2 Pet. III. throughout.

2 PETER III. 1.

THIS second epistle I now write to you, my dearly beloved brethren, with the same purpose

2 PETER III. 1.

THIS second epistle, beloved, I now write unto

^a This second epistle. Archbishop Tillotson seems to think, the last chapter to

be a distinct epistle by itself. See his Works, Vol. II. p. 176. Another interprets that

unto you: in both which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance :

2 That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour :

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming ? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

that it was written after the destruction of Jerusalem, and expresses the triumph of profane men, when they saw that Christ did not come to judgment, as it was expected he would then do. He infers from hence, that this *epistle* was written not by *Simon Peter the apostle*, but some other *Simon*. But I confess, I see no reason at all for any such conclusion ; nor do I perceive these scoffers were then actually come, but only predicted.

b *The commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour.*] Some translate this clause, *The commandment of us the apostles of our Lord and Saviour* ; and would from hence infer, that *Simon*, who wrote this epistle, was not an apostle himself ; but the version I have given, is most agreeable to the order of the original words. The learned author, whom I mentioned above, (sect. IV. note g) observes, that the apo-

pose with which I write the former ; in [both] which, I stir up your sincere and upright minds, for such I hope they indeed are, in the remembrance of those glorious principles of our holy religion, which may be of the greatest importance to your spiritual improvement. For it is my ardent desire, that in order to your advancement in true religion, you may be mindful of the words which were spoken long before our own time, by the holy prophets who lived in remote ages ; and also of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour^b, who hath condescended by our instrumentality, to send you messages upon which your salvation evidently depends ; a method which Divine wisdom and love hath pitched upon, to accomplish that important and desirable end : Knowing this³ first, as what is most necessary to be remembered and considered, that in the last days, which are now approaching apace, there shall come profane mockers^c, walking in a most scandalous and licentious manner, according to the impulse of their own ungoverned lusts and appetites : And they shall deride the hope of the faithful⁴ followers of Christ, saying, " Where is the boasted promise and declaration of his coming, in which these silly deluded creatures reposed so great a confidence ? For since the fathers of former ages are fallen asleep^d, all things remain just in the same state and situation as [they were] from the beginning of the creation ; the

SECT.

V.

2 Peter
III. 1.

stolic constitutions affirm, there was a council of the apostles called on the occasion of these teachers, whom St. Peter guards against, and that all in common delivered this advice, which he has admonished the Christian converts to regard.

c *Mockers.*] Archbishop Tillotson explains this of the *Carpocratians*, a large sect of the Gnostics, who denied the resurrection of the dead, and the future judgment, and appeared quickly after the writing this epistle. See Tillotson's Works, Vol. II. p. 711.

d *Since the fathers are fallen asleep.*] Mr. Grove would render it, for except that the fathers are fallen asleep ; that is, That the inhabitants of the world are continually changing, and new generations rising instead of the old, all other things continue as they were. See Grove's Addit. Posthum. Serm. Vol. I. p. 200.

e Whereby

the times and seasons revolve as they did before
 and there is no such marvellous interposition
 of this Jesus, as to turn the sun into darkness,
 and the moon into blood, to cause the stars
 to fall from heaven, to bring down vengeance
 and destruction on all his enemies, and to confer
 an ample reward on his servants." But
this they willingly are ignorant of, and they
 continue ignorant of it through affectation,
 plain and obvious as it is from the word of God,
 that all nature is in his hand, and at his disposal,
 and that he can in whatsoever time and
 manner he pleases, change and overthrow its
 universal system; they know and consider not,
that by the almighty and ever-efficacious word
of God, the heavens, with all their host, were
produced of old, and the earth subsisting from
the water, with which the mass of it was at first
covered, till by the Divine command, it emerged
from it, and the liquid element flowed to
its appointed channel; and God ordained that
the earth should be nourished and supported by
water, which is the life of the vegetable crea-
tion. Yet that very element from which it
 had its original and support, became at length,
 by Divine appointment, the means of its destruction;
whereby, that is, in consequence of
 which constitution of things, under a different
 direction and agency of God, *the world that*
then was, being deluged with an irresistible in-
undation of water, perished, and every thing upon
 the face of it was destroyed; none of the human
 race, or other terrestrial animals surviving,
 but those who, by God's special Providence,
 were preserved in the ark. It appears from
 hence credible in reason, as well as certain from
 Divine revelation, that the earth may be dissolved,
 and its inhabitants removed. But we know
 that God has determined to effect this great revolution,
 by a method far different from that of
 the former; for *the heavens and the earth, which*
now [exist] are treasured up, as it were, *by the*
same word, and guarded from all dangers of a
 second deluge of water, *being kept to be dissolved*
by a deluge of fire, on the day which God
 has

^d For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

^e Whereby the world that then was, being over-flowed with water, perished.

^f But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store reserved

^e *Whereby*. } Very possible *h.* as refers to *genesis*, the heavens, mentioned above, and may relate to the *treasure of heaven*

being opened, and pouring forth upon the earth a destructive deluge of water.

reserved unto fire, against the day of judgment, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, That one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise. (as some men count slackness;) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night: in the which the hea-
vens

has appointed for the display of his righteousness at the universal judgment, and for the destruction of ungodly men, who alas! so generally abound, and towards whom his patience has been so long exercised. This is indeed in the course of Divine Providence long delayed; but let not this one thing be hid from you, my dearly beloved, that one day [is] with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day, all the divisions of our time are so absolutely disproportionable to his eternity, that the difference between one and another of them seems to be lost in his presence; and a vengeance certainly to be inflicted after a thousand years, is nearer in his estimation, than that which is to be executed to-morrow is in ours. And indeed 9 as to the delay of this awful season, the Lord is not slow concerning the accomplishment of his promise to his people, who look for this complete deliverance, as some under the infirmities of their impatience, may be ready to count [it] slowness, but good reasons are to be assigned for it, most consistent with the perfections of the Divine nature; especially this, That he is long-suffering towards us, and endures in great compassion, as not willing that any should perish, but that all should come over to repentance, and thereby to salvation; to which, by the exercise of this patience, he seems tenderly and graciously to invite the worst and most unworthy of mankind. But at length the day of patience 10 will have its period, and this day of retribution will come suddenly and irresistibly; yes, sirs, the day of the Lord's will come as a thief in the night, Mat. xxiv. 43, will break in up upon men, when they least expect it, with a terrible alarm; even that day, in which the heavens shall pass away

SECT.
V.

2 Peter
III. 7.

f One day as a thousand years.] This was, as many have observed, a proverbial expression among the Jews, to signify, that no finite duration bears any proportion to the eternity of God. Plutarch has a passage exactly parallel to it in his discourses on the slowness of the divine vengeance.

g The day of the Lord.] It has always appeared surprising to me, that Dr. Hammond should refer this context to the coming of Christ to the destruction of Jerusalem. Mr. Ray has most solidly confuted him at large, in his three Discourses,

p. 244, 245, urging the opposition between the deluge, and the day here spoken of in the preceding verses, and that a long delay was intimated in the word thousand years; whereas the destruction of Jerusalem happened, at farthest, about twenty years after the writing of this epistle. The day of judgment of ungodly men, mentioned ver. 7, does also, I think, afford a sufficient answer to this hypothesis; as well as the mention of a new heaven and earth, as what was immediately to succeed this important scene.

h Hastening

SECT.

v.

2 Peter

111. 10.

away with a great noise, and the elements, of which this goodly frame of nature is composed, being set on fire, shall be dissolved, and the earth and all its works, shall be burnt up, so that none of the ornaments of nature, or of art, shall any longer continue ; but the whole shall be one un-

11 distinguished heap of smoking desolation. O, therefore, be persuaded to lay this to heart, and seriously and daily reflect with yourselves, since all these things which are now so ready to engross your thought and your affection, shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in

12 the exercise of holy conversation and piety. We, Christians, I say, who have the express revelation of these things, how should we be affected with them, looking for, and as it were hastening on, without ardent wishes, the coming of the day of God, though it be attended with so much terror, though it be the day in which the heavens being on fire, as I said, shall be dissolved, and the

13 elements shall melt with fervent heat. Yet still, though the Divine grace, it is a day that we have reason, not only to wish, but even to long for, as we, according to the tenor of his unfailing promise, look for a glorious and transporting change, which will then commence, for new heavens and a new earth, new and everlasting abodes, which Divine mercy will then open to our raptured view, into which it will conduct us, and in which righteousness, perfect

14 holiness and felicity, dwelleth. Therefore, my beloved, bearing these great truths in your minds, give up your whole souls to their influence, and expecting these things, these most awful and important scenes, endeavour with the utmost diligence, that ye may be found by him, by your great Lord, who will preside over even this dissolving word in peace, and may be presented

15 spotless and blameless before him. And while this triumphant season is delayed, account the long-suffering of our Lord Jesus Christ to proceed, as it really does, not from the least defect of power, or forgetfulness of his promise, but from his gracious desire to promote the salvation

yeus shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness.

12 Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat ?

13 Nevertheless, we according to his promise, look for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness,

14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot and blameless ;

15 And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation ; even as our beloved brother Paul saith, according to the wisdom given

h Hastening on, &c.] This is the sense of the original expression, according to the version of Erasmus. Schmidius, supported by several pertinent quotations

from the fathers, in *Hastening*, (*Hastening on*, *Paul's*, and in *Threat on him*) and by Mr. Blackwall, [Ser. Coun. Vol. II. p. 180.

given unto him, hath written unto you ;

of his people, and to afford to all who are willing to embrace it, an opportunity of securing this final and everlasting deliverance; *as also our beloved brother Paul*ⁱ, whom I am far from honouring the less on account of his being sent to the Gentiles, *according to the wisdom given to him*, by the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, *has written*. The passage to which I refer, is in a letter immediately directed to the Romans, but it may be considered as designed for *you*^k, and for the general use of all Christians : I mean that in which he expressly testifies, that the goodness of God leadeth to repentance ; (Rom. ii. 4.) *As also in all [his] other epistles ; speaking in* 16 *them of such persons as I have now described ; for undoubtedly the words are peculiarly applicable to them : In which writings of his, and particularly in that from whence these words are taken, there are some things hard to be understood*^l *which the unteachable and unstable torture and wrest, as they also do other scriptures, whether belonging to the Old Testament or the*
New

SECT.
V.

2 Peter
iii. 15.

16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things : in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

i *Our brother Paul.*] It is very evident from hence, not only that Peter maintained a reverend regard for St. Paul, and looked upon him as a *brother*, but also, that he had seen *his epistle* before he wrote this.

k *Has written to you.*] Lord Barrington is of opinion, that this refers to *some epistle* not now extant, which St. Paul wrote to the *proselytes of the gale* ; imagining the converting and edifying them to have been a mixed province, partly managed by the *apostles of the circumcision*, and partly by those of the *uncircumcision*. *Miscell Sacra. Ess. II. p. 110.* But as I think the whole foundation of this distinction groundless, I look upon this passage as a very instructive admonition to all Christians, to consider St. Paul, and the other apostles, as writing to them in their epistles, so far as a *similarity* of circumstances would admit. In which view it is of infinite importance that we should consider them, as written to us, in like manner as St. Peter tells us, even the ancient *prophets* considered the great subjects of which these epistles treat as relating to them. 1 Pet. i. 12.

l *Some things hard to be understood.*] Some by *εὐσεβείας* ; understand not the epistles of Paul, but the things spoken of. But as these are plainly mentioned as spoken of in the *scriptures*, this interpretation will still leave us under a necessity of vin-

dicating the perspicuity of some part of scripture. Not to mention that there are several manuscripts of considerable authority which read *εὐσεβείας* : which expressly refers to St. Paul's epistles. It is remarkable, that Barclay explains this of the ninth chapter of the Romans, in which there are some things which seem to be contrary to God's long-suffering to all, and which are very liable to be perniciously wrested. See *Barc. Apol. p. 155.* It is by many writers justly remarked, that the difficulty is said to affect, chiefly *ἀμαθῶν* and *ἀσταθῶν*, *unteachable and unsteady men*, whose prejudices indispose them for admitting the truth, or whose levity prevents their due solicitude to retain it ; but not persons of *humble teachable minds*, resolute in pursuing and maintaining the truth. And the remedy prescribed, is not *laying aside* the scriptures on account of their obscurity, as some would persuade us to do ; but a concern to *grow in grace*, &c. ver. 18.) The expression *ερεβλασιν*, *wrest*, or *torture*, as on the wrack, plainly implies, that *violence* is done, by these bad men, to some passages of scripture, to make them speak an unnatural sense, which may answer their own purposes. And truly he must know little of the history of theological controversies, who hath not observed many deplorable instances of this.

SECT.
V.

2 Peter
III. 10.

17 Now, to *their own destruction*: putting such perverse interpretations upon them, with some shew or colour of reason, as no candid man would on the whole have thought of, or will admit. *You therefore dearly beloved knowing [these things] before*, knowing especially, in how awful a manner the scene will close, and what dreadful vengeance will be executed on all wicked men, and especially on those that pollute the church of Christ, into which they have professed to enter; *guard [yourselves] that ye may not, being entangled with the error of the ungodly, fall from your own steadfastness*, which by God's assistance you have hitherto retained.

18 *But grow in grace*, more and more, advancing from one state of practical religion to another, and increasing daily in the knowledge of our Divine Lord and almighty and all gracious Saviour, *Jesus Christ, to him [be] glory* throughout all the churches, and all the creation of God, *both now and for ever. Amen.*

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these things* before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness.

18 But grow in grace and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. 5. Who is there, that can be so sluggish and lethargic, as not to be in some measure awakened and alarmed by the awful views here given, of the dissolution, as well as the *creation of the world, by the word of God*? Who must not even tremble, when he turns his eye back to the dreadful ruin brought on it by the universal deluge, *when that element*, which had been, and is, the means and instrument of life to the whole animal creation, at the Divine signal, became the means and instrument of death? Who can be unaffected, when he seriously reflects on the heavens *passing away with a great noise? on the elements melting with fervent heat? on the burning up the earth, and all things therein?* Let scoffers who walk after their own lusts, madly deride the promise of his coming; let them deliver over their taunts and insults to each other, through the succession of a thousand years; were his coming at the distance of ten thousand generations, or a yet remoter distance, they who have any just impression on their minds, of the *eternity of God*, or the immortality of the human soul, would discern the important day of final retribution, as immediate and present to their view. While they scoff and deride the tremendous reality, let us hear the declaration of its approach with the profoundest attention; and let our souls enter deeply into the alarming and important reflection. If indeed we look for such great

great things as these, *what manner of persons ought we to be in all* SECT.
v.
holy conversation and godliness, that we may be found of him in peace,
without spot or blemish? And if we desire this blessedness, (as who Ver.
can fail earnestly to desire it, who hath a firm and steady persuasion ¹⁴
of its reality?) can we possibly live in tolerable *composure*, if we
have little or no reason to conclude we shall obtain an interest and
share in it? Let us be all concerned *that we may grow in grace, and*
in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour; by the knowledge of ¹¹
whom every grace will be greatly revived and strengthened. On
these lively and important subjects of meditation let our thoughts
frequently dwell, and let us endeavour, that the sentiments which
result from them, may be wrought into our hearts, and controul our
lives. And as for those *hard sayings*, which occur, either in *St. Pe-* ^{15, 16}
ter or *St. Paul*, or any other sacred and inspired writer, let us nei-
ther *wrest* nor torture them to our own *mischief* and destruction, nor
be so curiously and sedulously diving into their meaning, as to neg-
lect these, and the like plain and serious admonitions, this *sincere*
milk of the word, that we may grow thereby. May all the powers of
our souls be exerted in securing their deliverance from wrath to
come, that so *the patience of God*, and his *long-suffering towards us*,
may indeed prove *salvation*. And if that be indeed the case, the
light of heaven will mightily illustrate those *mysteries* both of the
Divine word and Providence, which our weak and defective organs
of vision have not enabled us clearly to discern and unfold, while
by the comparatively fainter, though in itself glorious, light of re-
velation, we are guided through this dark and gloomy valley.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A
PARAPHRASE

ON
THE FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF
ST. JOHN.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN.

THE Apostle John, to whom the unanimous suffrage of the *ancients* hath ascribed *this epistle*, is the same with John the *evangelist*, who is said to have written his gospel in extreme *old age*; and, as Eusebius informs us, with a view to record some particulars concerning our blessed Lord, which had been omitted by the other evangelists, though he explicitly acknowledged the truth of their history, as far as it went, and confirmed it by his own testimony. (See *Euseb. Eccles. Hist.* lib. iii. cap. xxiv.) According to the title of this epistle in the *old Italic version*, and the account which is given us by St. Austin and others, it was written to the christian converts in Parthia, which was a part of the Upper Asia. But in the opinion of the learned Dr. Mill (see his *Prolegom.* p. 18, § 150, *Edit. Kuster*,) this notion had its sole original from a tradition, that the apostle John had preached the gospel in that country; whereas, if we may credit the report mentioned by Eusebius, it was St. Thomas who exercised his apostolical office among the Parthians. Others have conjectured, from some passages in this epistle, in which the persons, whom St. John addresses, are represented, as *having known Christ from the beginning*, (see chap. ii. 13, 14, and other places,) that he writes only to the Jewish Christians, who inhabited Judea and Galilee. But I very much question, whether these expressions will support the stress which hath been laid upon them; and accordingly, in my *paraphrase*, I have assigned them a more general interpretation.

And as we find nothing but conjecture and uncertainty concerning the *persons* to whom this epistle was addressed, so there is very little precision to be expected, in our enquiries concerning the *time* when it was written. From the *apostle's* saying, chap. ii. 18, *It was now the last time*; and chap. iv. 1, that *many false prophets are gone out into the world*, compared with Mat. xxiv. 24. where this is mentioned as a sign of the approaching dissolution of the Jewish commonwealth; some have indeed inferred this epistle was written a very short time before the destruction of Jerusalem; whereas,

whereas, several others, (and in particular Dr. Mill) are of opinion its date should be assigned to the year 91, or 92.—It was probably written before the *apocalypse*, as I shall have occasion to observe hereafter, in sect. iv. *note b*.

In the *style* of this *apostle* there is a remarkable peculiarity; and especially in this epistle. His sentences, considered separately, are exceeding clear and intelligible; but when we search for their connection, we frequently meet with greater difficulties than we do even in the epistles of St. Paul. The principal signature and characteristic of his manner, is an artless and amiable simplicity, and a singular modesty and candour, in conjunction with a wonderful sublimity of sentiment. His conceptions are apparently delivered to us in the order in which they arose to his own mind, and are not the product of artificial reasoning, or laboured investigation.

His leading *design* is, "To demonstrate the vanity of faith separate from morality, to soothe and refine the warm and over-zealous tempers of the Christians to whom he writes, into that amiable charity and love for which he himself was so eminent and illustrious, and to guard and arm them against the snares and efforts of *anti-christ*, the grand *apostate* and the seducer of the Christian church; and of all who were endued with his spirit.

In pursuance of which pious and benevolent intention, he first testifies the Divine purity and holiness, and the grace and mercy which is exhibited in Jesus Christ, to all who lament and confess their sins with sincere desires of reformation and amendment; (chap. i. 1, *to the end*.) And then he urges the propitiation and intercession of Christ, as arguments to that obedience, that brotherly love, and that victory over the world, which are the genuine fruits of Divine love. (chap. ii. 1—17.) And that they might not be perverted from their course of fidelity and holy obedience, he forewarns them of the many *antichrists* who were springing up in the world; directing them to the best preservatives against their seducing and ensnaring doctrines (ver. 18—28.) With the same intention of awakening a generous ambition in their breasts, to attain the Divine resemblance, he discourses of those exalted privileges, to which Christians, as the children of God, are entitled, and urges the necessity of holiness, both in heart and life, to prove that we are in that blessed number, (ver. 29—10. 10.) In this view, namely, as the grand characteristic of the children of God, he further enforces brotherly love, (ver. 11, *to the end*.) Cautioning them more particularly against being deceived by seducing spirits, and directing them in what manner they might distinguish between the spirit of truth and the spirit of error; (chap. iv. 1—12.) Drawing to a conclusion, with declaring his general design to be the confirmation of their faith; reminding them of the ground they had to hope their prayers should be heard for themselves and others, who had not sinned unpardonably; and at the close, adding a reflection on the happy difference, which their knowing God in Jesus Christ had made between them and an ignorant and ungodly world, ver. 13, *to the end*.

A PARA-

A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE FIRST CATHOLIC EPISTLE

OF

ST. JOHN.

SECTION I.

The Apostle John opens the pious and charitable design which he had in writing this epistle, and lays the foundation of what he has further to say, in bearing his testimony to the holiness of God, and to the mercy which he exhibits in Jesus Christ to all who are truly sensible of their sins, and confess them with sincere desires of reformation and amendment. 1 John I. 1, to the end.

1 JOHN I. 1.

THAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and

1 JOHN I. 1.

MY Christian brethren, I am now going to address you on a very important subject; to speak of *that which was from the beginning* of the gospel-declaration, and indeed from the beginning of the world, and previous to its existence; of *that which we have heard* most credibly attested by authentic witnesses, and *that which we have* not taken merely on their credit, but have *seen with our own eyes*; we are going to treat of *that which we have attentively looked upon*^a and viewed so near and so long, that it is

SECT.
I.

1 John
I. 1.

^a *That which we have attentively looked upon*: ο θεωροῦμεθα.] Mr. Blackwall ob-

serves, (in his *Sacr. Class.* Vol. II. p. 152,) that it is by no means synonymous with the

SECT.

I.

1 John

1. 1.

is impossible we should mistake in it; and which, in allusion to the condescension of our blessed Redeemer in submitting himself to be examined by our touch and feeling, I may venture to say, that even *our hands have handled* ² *of the word of eternal life*. And well may it be styled the word of life; for *even Jesus*, who himself is the living word, and *eternal life*, was graciously *manifested*, in human flesh for the redemption of sinful men; and *we saw* [it] in its full evidence, and *we cheerfully bear our renewed testimony, and declare unto you that eternal life, which from the foundation of the world was with the Father*, most intimately conversant with him, and united to him; but in due time, by assuming the human nature into an union with the Divine, *was manifested to us* with all the genuine characters of the promised Messiah.

3 And in consequence of this, *what we have seen and intimately conversed with*, and have not only heard of, but have ourselves *heard* speaking to us, *we declare unto you, that ye also may have communion with us* in that dignity and felicity to which we are, by Divine grace, exalted: and *truly* it is a glorious privilege well worthy your most ready acceptance and earnest pursuit; for *our communion is with God the Father, and with his only-begotten Son Jesus Christ*, as we are happy in an intimate and inseparable union with each. And *these things we write to you*, that the Divine life may be so improved in your souls, and your meetness for the heavenly inheritance, may be so apparent, and so advanced, *that your joy may*, as far as possible, *be fulfilled*, and no circumstance, which this mortal state will admit, may be wanting to complete it.

5 And *this is the great declaration which we have heard from him*, upon which our faith most cheerfully centers, and which we again *declare unto you, that God is perfect light*, consummate

and our hands have handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us.)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us and truly your fellowship is with the Father, and with the Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him

the former clause, but had a more emphatical signification, namely, that of beholding it, *intimately*, with a kind of delight and admiration.

2 (Our hands have handled.) This probably refers to Thomas's having insisted upon handling Christ's body, in proof of his resurrection, which being permitted, was a confirmation of this important fact to all

after him. Dr. Hecceus supposes these words were particularly levelled against the Monothelites, who denied the real existence of the *person of Christ*, and asserted that it was only a visible appearance; they were therefore called *visiones*, and *visionaries*. See his *Diss.* of the *Trin.* p. 77.

5 (God is light.) This expresses his most clear and perfect knowledge, for light discovers

him is no darkness at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth :

7 But if we walk in the light as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make

mate knowledge and holiness; and in him there ^{scrip.} ^{i.} ^{1 John} ^{1. 6.} is no darkness at all, not the least mixture of ignorance, or of sin. And if we pretend to say, that we have communion with him, and walk in darkness, that is, go on in the practice of sin, which is as contrary to his holy nature, as darkness is to that of light, whatever professions we may make of our acquaintance with Christianity, and of being zealous for its interest, we lie, and do not the truth, but act in direct opposition to it. But if, on the other hand, we walk in the light of it, and surrounded with it as his brightest glory, we have then communion with him, and with one another in him; and though we are indeed conscious to ourselves of many past offences, for which so holy a God might for ever banish us from his presence, and of many remaining imperfections, which might discourage our approaches to him, we have this grand consolation, that the blood of Jesus Christ his Son, cleanses us from all our sins, be they ever so numerous, or ever so heinous. And indeed it is a consolation which we absolutely need; for if we say, that we have no sin, it is too evident that we grossly deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us; we must be destitute of every good principle, if we are utterly insensible of our own guilt and imperfection. But if we confess our sins^d to God, with a becoming lowliness and contrition of spirit, he is not only merciful and gracious, but faithful and just, to forgive us our sins, in consideration of his engagements to our great Surety, and to us by him, and effectually to cleanse us from all unrighteousness, by his atoning blood, and the influence of that sanctifying spirit which it has purchased for us.

This is our ground of confidence, and our refuge as sinners; and let us often renew our applications to it: for as on this foundation we are indeed secure, so on the other hand, if we are so rash and presumptuous, to say, that we have

covers all things; his unspotted holiness, for light is incapable of any pollution: and his sovereign goodness and happiness, for light, joined with vital heat, inspires pleasure into universal nature. See Dr. Bates's Works, p. 537.

d If we confess our sins.] This so evidently refers to confessing our sins to God,

and not to the priest, that one could hardly forbear being astonished, that it should ever have been urged in behalf of auricular confession; if it were not for the many examples we have of such shameful and preposterous reasoning in the arguments which are pleaded in favour of popery.

e H.

SENT.

1.

1 John

1. 10.

have not sinned, we not only lie ourselves, which in every instance must be displeasing to the God of truth; but we, in effect, *make him a liar*, who in the constitution of the gospel, which he hath sent to all, goes on a supposition, that every soul to whom it is addressed, is under guilt and condemnation. And consequently, if we assert and maintain our own personal innocence, we shall shew, that *his word is not in us*, that this humbling message of his grace has never been cordially received by us, nor hath produced its genuine effects on our hearts.

make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. How seriously should we attend to the *word of life*, when addressed to us by those who were so *intimately acquainted* with it, and with him who brought it and revealed it to the world! In like manner may all concerned in dispensing it, be able to say that it is what they *have heard*, and as it were, *seen and handled*; yea, tasted and let in all its sweetness and energy. Jesus Christ is indeed that *life which was with the Father*, and is now *manifested unto us*; may we ever regard him as such, and have *communion with John*, and the other sacred writers, in their *communion with the Father*, and with his Son Jesus Christ. Surely they, who by experience know the delight and benefit of that *communion*, will desire that others may be partakers of it with themselves. Their own joy, instead of being diminished, will be rather rendered more complete and intense, by being in this manner imparted to others.
- Nothing can be of more importance than to form right and worthy conceptions of God; and that we may do so, let us reflect on him, as the purest and even unmixed *light*, without any the least shade of *darkness*, as *truth* in perfection, without any mixture of falsehood or evil. And let us be particularly concerned, that as we desire to have *fellowship with him*, we allow not ourselves to *walk in darkness* of any kind, but *put off all its works*, that we may *put on the whole armour of light*, and *walk in the light*, as he is of the light. Let every action of our lives, every thought of our hearts, be brought to the *light of the gospel*, and tried and proved according to it. And as it would be very vain and criminal in us, to *deny our having any sin*, as it would be self-deceit to imagine it, and self-confusion to affirm it, let us, with humble thank-

* We make him a liar. This text plainly implies, that Christianity does in effect assert, that we are all in a degenerate state,

and consequently is a clear proof of the corruption of human nature.

thankfulness, apply to that *blood*, which is able to *cleanse us from all unrighteousness*. Most freely *confessing our sins*, in all their aggravations, so far as our weak and limited thoughts can attain to the view of them, let us humbly plead his promise, and his covenant; and then *fidelity* and *justice* will join with *mercy*, to insure our deliverance from the punishment they merit: so that instead of being, as we have deserved, *companions* in condemnation and ruin, we shall *share together* in that complete freedom from all the penal consequences of sin, which will be the portion of all those who truly repent, and obey the gospel.

1 CT.
i.

Ver.

10

9

SECT. II.

Farther to promote that holiness of temper, which it is the great design of this epistle to recommend, the Apostle urges the propitiation and intercession of Christ, and the necessity of shewing our love to God, by obedience, by brotherly love, and by overcoming the immoderate love of the world. 1 John II. 1—17.

1 JOHN II. 1.

MY little children,
these things write
I unto you, that ye sin
not. And if any man
sin, we have an Advocate
with the Father,
Jesus

1 JOHN II. 1.

PERMIT me now to address myself to you, with all tenderness and endearment, as *my little children*, and to assure you, that *I write these things* concerning the readiness of God to forgive sin, not to encourage you to offend, but with a contrary purpose, *that you may not sin*. And I hope you will consider it as your highest interest, to guard against that greatest and most formidable of all evils. *But if any man*, through the surprise of a violent temptation, and remaining infirmity of human nature, do fall into *sin*, let him not absolutely despair, as if his case were hopeless; for we have still this great and important consolation, that if we are true believers, *we have an advocate with the Father*,^a to plead

SECT.
ii.

1 John
II. 1

[*a An Advocate with the Father.*] The word, *advocate*, in our language commonly signifies one who is to *plead* for a person in a court of judicature; but Dr. Samuel Harris hath taken great pains to show, that it properly signifies the same with *patron* amongst the Romans, or עֵזֶר in the Hebrew, a *great person*, who used to patronize the cause of some of inferior rank, and who was also a *sponsor* for their good behaviour. By this he imagines several scriptures may be illustrated, and particularly Isa. l. 7—9: Job. xxix. 12;

Psal. lxxii. 12; Job. xxxiii. 23, &c. And in confirmation of this sentiment he brings some remarkable quotations from the *ancients*. Harris's *Observ.* p. 49—61. Perhaps there is nothing that illustrates the matter more, than the *residence* of some eminent persons from distant provinces, in the *courts* of great princes or states, whose business it was constantly to negotiate with them the affairs of those whom they represented, to vindicate them from any unjust aspersions, and to advance their interest to the utmost of their power.

b For

SECT.

II.

1 John
II. 1.

plead for our pardon and renew our peace, even *Jesus Christ, the righteous one*; that great exalted Saviour, who was himself, by way of eminence, and in such a degree, as no other person dwelling in human flesh ever was, so perfectly righteous, that his obedience absolutely answered the demands of the Divine law in all its extent and purity. *And he is the great propitiation for our sins*, to whom, under that character, we have fled with cheerful confidence; and it is a joy to us to reflect, that he is *not only the propitiation for ours, but also [for the sins] of the whole world*^b: no nation under heaven is excluded from a share in the blessings he hath purchased, nor shall any person whatsoever be excluded, let his iniquities have been ever so great and aggravated, if he be disposed to make a proper application to him. *And by this certain mark and evidence, we know that we are acquainted with him* to the most happy and effectual purposes, even if we faithfully and uprightly keep all his commandments. For he that saith, *I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar*: he falsely pretends to a knowledge of him, of which he is quite destitute; and therefore in this respect the truth is not [in him]. But *whosoever* uprightly and impartially *keepeth his word, in him certainly is the love of God perfected*: it is plain he has it truly in his heart, and does not, like those who are regardless of the Divine authority, make a false and hypocritical pretence to it. And *by this we know, that we are interested in the Son of God*, and united to him by this influence of our faith upon our practice. *He that saith, he abideth in him*, and pretends a claim to his saving benefits, *ought himself so to walk, as he*, whom he calls his Divine Master, *walked*, when he was here on earth. He ought in every thing to trace, and endeavour to imitate his example.

Jesus Christ, the righteous :

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

5 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

3 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

And

[For the sake of the whole world.] Mr. Revier has argued thus as a proof, that the merit of Christ's death shall extend, not only to *believers*, but to *infidels* as well; and I do not see that Christianity can receive any prejudice by our acknowledging that if there are Oases in which a *good sentiment* takes possession, they may be accepted of God, in consideration of the

atmosphere which Christ hath made. But this will by no means prove the doctrine of *universal salvation*, in the sense in which some persons have stated it. But it seems to me, that the apostle is to be understood, as speaking only of all those who believe, whether Jews or Gentiles, over the whole world.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him, and in you: because the darkness is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkness even until now.

10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkness, and walketh in darkness,

And this is so obvious and natural a truth, that I persuade myself, *brethren*, ye already know it; for herein *I write no new commandment to you, but the old commandment*, founded in nature, recommended by the Mosaic law, and that *which ye had* especially inculcated from the beginning of your acquaintance with the gospel, the great practical intent of which was, doubtless, presently made known to you by whomsoever it was preached. I may therefore well say, it is *the old commandment*; for it is *the word which you heard from the beginning* of your acquaintance with Christianity. Yet considering its peculiar obligations, and the new motives with which it is enforced upon us continually, I may say again, *a new commandment I write to you, which expression is true in him, and in you*, for he has laid us under new engagements to observe it, by his admirable love declared and exhibited to us; *because the darkness of heathenism, and twilight of the Jewish state, is now passed away, and the true light now shineth*, and in proportion to our knowledge, he may reasonably expect that our care to act suitably should be awakened. *He that saith, he is in the light*, that he enjoyeth, that he understands and receives the gospel, *and hateth his brother*, and does him any designed injury, *is in the darkness even till now*. And his ineffectual acquaintance with some principles of religion, which do not influence his heart to charity and beneficence, will, as to his real and final happiness, stand him in no stead. But *he that loveth his brother, abideth in the light*, he improves the advantage which he enjoys by the Christian religion, and as he answers its end, he will continually share the pleasure and the security, which it gives; *for there is no occasion of stumbling in him*; this will secure him from giving any just cause of offence; whereas the malevolent passions turn a thousand circumstances into temptations, which prove fatal to a man's credit and repose in this world, and his salvation in the next. But on the contrary, *as I said before, he who hateth his brother, is in darkness, and walketh in darkness; and the consequence of that is, that as one who walketh in the night, without any light to guide him, knows not whither he goeth; so such an one, while he flattereth himself with hopes of salvation,*

5:17
11.

1 John
4: 11.

vation, on account of his knowledge and profession, is really ignorant of his own state, *because darkness hath blinded his eyes*; and so he is in the utmost danger of falling, before he is aware, into the bottomless pit, from whence there is no redemption.

- 12 These things I say unto you, and they are of universal concern; I hope therefore you will all attend to them, and improve them for your own advantage. *I write unto you, little children*, amongst the rest, to guard the least and weakest of you against sin: *because by his name*, even the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, who has made an atonement for them, *your sins are forgiven you*, and I am very solicitous that you may make all due return for so inestimable a favour, as a pardon purchased at the expence of such sacred blood. [*I write to you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning*, because ye have heard of his divine dignity and glory, who was in the beginning, who was with God, and himself God; that ye may believe aright towards that Divine Saviour, who submitted to such abasement for us, though originally he was so exalted and glorious. *I write to you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one*, have bravely bid defiance to his allurements and terrors, in taking upon you, in so solemn a manner, the Christian profession; and I would by no means have you disgrace the victory you have already gained. *I write to you, little children*,] *because even the youngest of you have known God, as the Father of his people, have been taught*

darkness, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his name's sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

e *Young, little children*, &c.] There is such an apparent redundancy in these three verses, as cannot but strike all, unacquainted with any other part of scripture. Some have imagined that the repetition of *little children* here, (as the *old and aged*,) is distinct from that in the 12th verse, (where the word is *young*;) which *Wolton* says is used to signify Christians in general; whereas such a reference either to those who were going to Rome, or lately converted to Christianity. (See *Case Pleading*, Vol. V. p. 359.) And they have supposed the meaning of the *apostle's* exhortation here to be, that as one of the first persons *called* became acquainted with, is their *father*, so they should know God, and improve more and more in a practical acquaintance with him; and each of these *conjunctions* contains a tacit exhor-

itation to go on in that which he commends them for, or congratulates them upon. But on the whole, comparing the beginning of the 12th with the 13th verse, where the *new words* are repeated, I am ready to conjecture, that if they were written in the original, they were left out again, and were written more perfectly afterwards in the 14th; and consequently, that all that should be retained, is the *last clause* of it, in connection with the 12th. *You are acquainted because ye have known the Father*. Thus all tautology is avoided, and every sentiment and expression, in either of the verses, is preserved. I have therefore included in a parenthesis all that part, both of the text and paraphrase, which may be left out without taking away any thing from the sense, or burdening it with an unnecessary repetition.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

taught to call upon him as your Father in heaven; and I desire you may, with all filial reverence and love, approve yourselves dutiful and grateful to him under that relation. And (as I have before said;) *I have written to you, fathers, because ye have known him who is from the beginning*; so also, *I have written to you, young men, because ye are strong*, you are in the full vigour of nature; and may God preserve your hearts in a right frame, and lengthen out your lives to do him much service in future and distant years. And this may the rather be expected, as *the word of God abideth in you*, as you have been instructed in the principles of Divine truth by your pious parents, and other teachers, *and many of you have given noble specimens of the good effects of their instructions*, in that ye have already *overcome the wicked one* in many of his attacks; for otherwise ye could not have assumed the profession of the Christian faith in these circumstances, nor have retained it for such a length of time.

SPEC.
II.

1 John
II. 13.

14

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

And now whatever your age, station, and circumstances may be, suffer me to address to you one farther word of exhortation; which is this, *Love not the world, nor the things [which are] in the world*, in an irregular and excessive degree^d; for *if any one love the world* with too great an attachment, and have his heart chiefly set on its interests, or its pleasures, it may justly be concluded, that *the love of the Father is not in him*; for there is a real inconsistency between the love of the world in this sense, and that of God: which will easily appear, when we consider what we may justly understand by the world: *For 16 all that is in the world*, when it comes to make up the largest catalogue of good things, which it can promise to those who eagerly and idolatrously pursue it, [*is*] to be comprehended under these three well known particulars, *the lust of the flesh*, that is, the pleasurable indulgence of our carnal appetites; *and the lust of the eyes*, that is, the acquisition of money, which if not expended for other purposes for which it is designed, only serves us to behold and count over; and

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of

^d In an irregular and excessive degree.] It is plainly necessary to attend to such a limitation; for otherwise there is a degree of love to worldly enjoyments which is ra-

tional, and which we must have for them, or we cannot in a proper manner attend to the duties of life.

2807.
11.
4 John
11. 16.

and the pride of life*, some ambitious pursuits in consequence of which we may make a parade in the eyes of our fellow-creatures for a little while, in our way to the grave, which is to strip us of it all. Now it is evident, that [*these things*] considered as the food of luxury, avarice, and ambition, *are not of the Father, but of the world*. It plainly appears, that God, considered as the author of all good, cannot be pleased with such affections and pursuits; and it would be profane to suppose that they are produced or excited by him, or that the prevalence of them can be acknowledged by him, as consistent with his love in the heart. Endeavour therefore, my brethren, to get more and more above such snares and entanglements as these; and so much the rather, as *the world and all the luxury of it*, and whatever belongs to it which can serve to the gratification of our desires, *passes away* like a glaring pageant, which only amuses the eye for a few transient moments, and then disappears. *But he that doeth the will of God faithfully and steadily, abideth for ever*: he hath built his happiness upon a basis which nothing can remove, and accordingly finds it secure, even when he quits this momentary world, and enters on an eternal and unalterable state.

of the same, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world *passes away*, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver 1 O, let us be lifting up our eyes and our hearts to him who is our great *Advocate with the Father*: too frequently do the infirmities of our lives demand our application to him under that character. Let us rejoice that he is, *Jesus Christ the righteous*, that he is *the Lord our righteousness*. While we joy in him as the *propitiation for our sins*, let it comfort our heart to think, how wide the efficacy of his atonement extends. O, that *all the world* might be engaged to apply to him under this important consideration!

O,

[The words of life; *ἀνάσσειν τοῦ βίου*.] Linsius, Semidius understands this of that vain and empty boasting of the continuance of life, and of projects to be executed in some future part of it, which St. James condemns. (James iv. 16.) But some say us to have been at first of the same import; see *Antioch. ex Xenoph.* in loc. afterwards from the use of the word *ἀνάσσειν*, in Polybius, (see *Arrian. ex*

Polybi. in loc.) he was disposed to understand it in general, of the *splendor and luxury*, which vain persons affect in their whole manner of living. But more strictly the phrase, *ἀνάσσειν τοῦ βίου*, refers to that ambitious turn of mind, which prompts men to engage in all those pursuits, which will supply materials for their vanity, and enable them to make a figure in the world. See *W. Jam. Cura Philolog. in loc.*

O, that all those who profess so to apply to him, might remember ^{SECT. ii.} how necessary it is, that if they would shew they *indeed know him*, they should keep his commandments; this, rather than any of those Ver. passionate transports of mind, on which some are ready to lay ^{3, 5} so great a stress, is *the perfection*, of love to God. May the spirit of *Christ* impress upon us more of our *Master's image*, and teach us with greater care and exactness to order to our *walk and conversation* by his example. Since we have an illustrious *light* to direct ⁶ our path, let us make use of it to this purpose, lest eternal *darkness* come upon us. Let us learn the Divine lesson we are here taught, *to love our brethren*, and gradually to rise higher above that *9 love of the world*, that attachment to temporal and present interests, which is inconsistent with the love of the Father! When we are tempted too fondly to admire, or too eagerly to pursue this gaudy ¹⁵ pageant, let us survey the *inventory* here given of its boasted *trea- sures*. Let us compute the most it can even pretend to confer upon us, and impartially weigh all that can gratify *the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, and the pride of life*, against those solid ¹⁶ pleasures which arise from *the love of God*, against those infinite benefits which will finally result from it. *They who do his will abide for ever*, nor is their removal from this empty and transitory world any objection against it. Yea, rather, how would it be pos- ¹⁷ sible, or how desirable, they should *abide for ever*, were not a *re- moval* from such a mutable, such an unsatisfying, and in many respects afflicting world, to make a part of *the plan*, formed by Divine Providence and grace in their favour.

SECT. III.

The Apostle discourses of the antichrists which then began to arise in the world, and directs Christians to the best preservatives against their seducing doctrines. 1 John II. 18—28.

1 JOHN II. 18.

LITTLE children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby

1 JOHN II. 18.

AND now, my beloved, dear to me as *little children* to the most affectionate parents^a, attend to my cautions against those many seducers, with which not only the world, but even the church abounds. *It is indeed the last time*^b, the

SECT. iii.

1 John II. 18.

^a *Little children.*] Mr. Cradock has observed, that *little children* are not so apt to love the world; but seem by reason of the weakness of their understanding, more likely to be seduced by artful and designing men: and therefore he imagines that

in this place there is a peculiar propriety in this appellation. See *Crad. Apost. Hist.* p. 489.

^b *The last time.*] Some explain this of the last age of the Jewish church and commonwealth, because it was the period in

SAINT.
III.1 John
II. 18.

the last dispensation God will ever give to the world, is now promulgated; and it is no wonder if Satan endeavour to the utmost to adulterate a system from which his kingdom has so much to fear. *And as you have heard, that one great seducer, from his opposition to Christ called antichrist, is coming, so I must assure you, that even now there are many aspiring and interested men, who act in such opposition to the Redeemer's cause, and the whole purpose of his appearance, that though they profess his name, they may not improperly be called antichrist, by which indeed we may know that this is the last time; for when we compare this event with the predictions of our Lord, it is so far from contradicting them, that indeed it is a great accomplishment and illustration of them.* Once

- 19 indeed they pretended to join themselves to us; but that it was only an hypocritical pretence to Christianity which they made, appears from the issue of it; *they went out from among us, and yet they were not upon the whole of us, nor did truly belong to our number, while they seemed to adhere to us. For if they had ever been sincerely of us, so as to feel the inward power of our gospel on their hearts, they would doubtless have continued with us; upright men would never have seen any cause to leave us, and Divine grace would have preserved such from the temptations by which these artful deceivers have been ensnared. But [this hath happened] that they might be made apparent, and that we might also reap an advantage from the detection of their hypocrisy, because it would thereby appear that all who join with us in external forms, are not indeed of us^d; but that even in the purest churches, there may be a mixture of tares among the wheat, which it will be prudence to remember, and to guard against.* And as for you, I hope and trust you will not be seduced by

whereby we know
that it is the last time,

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us; but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the Holy One,

in which our Saviour had foretold the rise of many *false Christs*; and this observation, to be sure, is material: but the expression of *the last time*, from comparing other scriptures, seems to be more extensive.

a Many antichrist] Dr. Whaley explains these antichrists of unchristian Jews opposing Christianity. I rather understand them to be apostates, who had once professed themselves Christians, and

brought in pernicious heretical notions.

d That they might be made apparent, be cause all are not of us; or we are warning of apoc.] Thus, I think, these words may be rendered; and the meaning is, that as there are some, who only pretend to be Christians, when they are not, and for some sinister end mingle themselves with us, God has suffered these to be discovered, to awe and alarm others who may yet be concealed.

e Denieth

One, and ye know all things.

by them; for *ye have an inward anointing of the Holy One*, even the spirit of purity and joy, which Christ the Holy One of God, hath poured forth upon us; and *ye know all things* relating to Christianity, in such an experimental manner, as will effectually preserve you against those snares of this vain world, which have been ruinous to those unhappy apostates I have just mentioned. And as to what I have now said, ²¹

SECT.
iii.

2 John
II, 20.

21 I have not written unto you because ye know not the truth; but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

I have not written to you, because ye know not the truth, nor have I entered so largely into the discussion of this matter, as would then have been necessary; but on the contrary, have contented myself with these short hints, *because ye know it*, and I am desirous to confirm you in it, and to awaken your zeal to join with me in testifying it to others, and opposing the many false doctrines which are taught in opposition to it; *for every lie is not of the truth*; there is an irreconcilable inconsistency between truth and falsehood, and the more you are confirmed in the one, the more faithfully will you guard ² against and oppose the other. And *who is a liar* and a seducer in the most dangerous sense that can be imagined, *but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ?* This is the most pernicious of all errors, and tends most directly to overthrow all virtue and religion in the world, and utterly to subvert and destroy men's souls; and he who maintains this detestable doctrine, *is in a sense antichrist, who in effect denies both the Father and the Son*: For however some may pretend ²³ a zeal for the honour of God, while they are crying down that of our Lord Jesus Christ, yet so it is, that *every one who denieth the Son, hath not any real regard to the Father*, nor any interest in him: for God hath declared with an evidence which all who sincerely love and honour him will not fail to receive, that no man cometh to the Father but by Christ; that he is well-pleased in him as his beloved Son, and maintains a favourable intercourse with sinful men only by him. [*But he who acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also*] and taketh the most

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: [but] he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

e Denieth that Jesus is the Christ.] Some are of opinion this was written against Cerinthus, who in his doctrine separated Jesus from Christ, maintaining them to be two distinct persons, and denied him to be the Son of God. See Dr. Berriman's Hist. of the Trin. p. 38. Compare Dr.

Whitby's Preface to this epistle. Mr. Baxter also takes in the Symonians, Manandrians, and Carpocratians, with other heretics in those early ages. Baxter's Works, Vol. III. p. 218.

f He who acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.] These words, which I have included

SECT.
III.

1 John
II. 24.

most effectual method to secure the continuance of his favour.

As for you therefore, to whom I now address myself, let what I here say be improved by way of caution to yourselves; be on your guard against the numerous artifices of those who would ensnare and seduce you, and let that word which you have heard from me, at the beginning of the gospel, abide in you so steadily, that no man may ever wrest it from you. And if it be indeed so, and that word which ye have heard from the beginning, thus abide in you, you also will abide in that state of blessed union, in which you are, with the Son and the Father; you will dwell under their united protection, and find a source of delight springing up in your souls from communion with them, to which there is

- 25 nothing comparable in any of the enjoyments of the present world. *And this will readily be acknowledged, if you only consider, with what exalted hopes you will then be supported; for this is the promise which he hath promised to us; (which while I mention, I cannot but exceedingly rejoice in the consideration of my own interest in it,) even the possession of that invaluable treasure, eternal life, in comparison of which, whether we consider its excellence, or its duration, all the glories of the world, and even the world itself, are lighter than vanity, and unworthy the reflection of a single moment.*

- 26 *These things therefore I have written unto you concerning those who would deceive you, and rob you of that inestimable treasure, that you may guard against them with the utmost vigilance.*

- 27 *And, I trust, this will indeed be the case, for as for you in general, I esteem you sincere in the profession of your religion, and therefore may reasonably say, that the unction of the Holy Spirit, which you have received from him^b, who*

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning. If that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, eternal life.

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you, and ye need not

included in *enckeis*, are generally printed in our version in *fallen characters*; but they are to be found in so many good manuscripts, that I cannot but believe they made a part of the original, by whatever accident they were omitted in some early copy, to which, as it seems, too much regard has been paid. See *Mss and Versions* &c.

g *Those who would deceive you.* It is in the original, *they who do deceive you*; but it is plain, as has often been observ-

ed, from the commendations given them elsewhere, that it signifies no more than an *endeavour to seduce*; and there are many passages, both in sacred and profane authors, in which a person is said to do a thing, which he attempts. See *Mr. Blackwell's Sac. Crit.* Vol. p. 121.

b *The unction which you have received from him. &c.* The Spirit of God is compared to an anointing, because of his precious and cheering gifts which rendered Christians more fit to encounter with

them.

not that any man teach you : but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie ; and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him; that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

who hath given you the promise of eternal life, *abideth in you* perpetually and powerfully ; and in consequence thereof *you have no such necessity* as others, *that any one should teach you* the first principles of true religion. But let it be your care uprightly and humbly to yield up your souls to the superior instructions of this Divine Spirit ; and *as this same unction from him teacheth you concerning all things*ⁱ, and it is true, and has no mixture of falsehood in it, even as that has taught you, abide in him to whom by that spirit ye are thus vitally united. Yea, let 28 me now repeat it again, as a matter of the highest importance, comprehending in one word the whole of our duty and happiness ; my dear Christian friends, dear to me as *little children* to their affectionate parents, *abide in him, that when he shall appear*, as he assuredly will, in all his pomp and glory, *we may have humble boldness, and may not be put to shame* and confusion before him at his coming ; but may welcome him with cheerfulness, as those who have approved their fidelity to him, and expect by his grace, an abundant reward.

SECT.

iii.

1 John

II. 27.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us not be surprised, if there are some who revolt from Ver. Christianity in our days ; evincing thereby the insincerity of their 18, 19 former professions ; since even the apostolic age produced some instances of this kind. But notwithstanding this, *the foundation of God standeth firm, and the Lord knoweth them that are his* : (2 Tim. ii. 19.) They will continue united with his church in faith and love, and no temptation will be able entirely to separate them from it.

Vain

their spiritual enemies ; as wrestlers were anointed with oil to make them fitter for their various exercises, and to prevent the advantages which might otherwise be taken against them. Whether this passage will be less capable of yielding support to the popish doctrine of *chrism*, or that of the Quakers, which asserts such an inspiration of all Christians as renders the office of a stated ministry unnecessary, it is hard to say. Compare *Limborch's Theol.* v. 77, 4, and *Barclay's Apology*, p. 52. With relation to the latter, it may be of some moment to observe, that the Christian ministry was in the highest repute in

the church, when the gifts of the Spirit were poured down upon it in the greatest abundance.

[i *Unction teacheth you all things.*] It seems manifest from hence, that every Christian is supposed to have been anointed by the Holy Ghost. But as it would be most absurd to pronounce it impossible, that a man in any degree of error should be a true Christian, it plainly shews, in how restrained a sense many general expressions, occurring in scripture, may be taken, and in that view is well worth our attentive regard.

SECT.

III.

Vain are all pretences to adhere to the *Father*, if we desert the Son. To his gospel therefore let us stedfastly cleave, animated by the infinitely important promise of *eternal life*. Can we go to another Saviour? Can we expect from any other hand a nobler, or even an equal reward? May we all, who profess a relation to him, receive an anointing from above, which may teach us all those things it is of importance for us to know, and which may engage us to abide in him with inseparable fidelity. Yet a little while, and he will again come, will appear with a glory which will warrant, and will reward the firm attachment we have manifested to his interests. May we not, at that important period, have reason to be ashamed before him; may he not be ashamed of us; but having confessed him before men, may we be confessed by him before his Father, and his holy angels. (Luke xii. 8.)

SECT. IV.

The Apostle discourses concerning the exalted privileges of the children of God, to which all true Christians are entitled, and urges the necessity of a holy temper, and of a holy life, in order to demonstrate that we are of that happy number. 1 John II. 29.—

III. 10.

1 JOHN II. 29.

SECT.

IV.

1 John II. 29.

I HAVE before been discoursing of the Divine holiness and purity: now the consideration of this may enable you to judge, whether you are, or are not, in the happy number of the children of God. For since ye know, that he is perfectly righteous, ye may know, that every one that practiseth righteousness, is born of him; as the production of righteousness in the mind argues a Divine agency upon it, therefore he, in whom it is produced, is by regeneration, the Son of God.

III. 1 Now on this view I would intreat you attentively to dwell; as indeed no subject can be more worthy of your serious regard. Behold, my brethren, behold with delight and holy admiration, what manner of love, what immense, unutterable, inconceivable condescensions of love, the Father of universal nature, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, hath bestowed upon us, sinful mortals, that we should be honoured with so sublime an appellation, should be called the chil-

1 JOHN II. 29.

IF ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doeth righteousness is born of him.

III. 1 Behold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be

becalled the sons of God : therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be : but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him ; for we shall see him as he is,

a *We should be called the children of God.*] The original word is *τεκνα*, not *υιοι*, and therefore should be rendered *children* rather than *sons*. It is worth observing upon this text, that when the *Danish missionaries* appointed some of their Malabarians converts to translate a *catechism*, in which it was mentioned as the privilege of Christians to become the *sons of God*, one of the translators was startled at so bold a saying as he thought it, and said, *It is too much ; let me rather render it, They shall be permitted to kiss his feet.* *Let. of Dan. Miss. No. 7, p. 56.*

b *It doth not yet appear, &c.*] It is observable that these are the words of John, of him who had not only so familiarly conversed with Christ on this sublime and delightful subject, but had seen his transfiguration, when Moses and Elias appeared in such refulgent glory. He also, as Mr. *Baxter* observes in this connection, (see his *Works*, Vol. III. p. 16.) saw a most glorious vision of the *New Jerusalem*. But it may be doubted whether this epistle were not of an earlier date than the *apocalypse*, and it seems most probable that

children of God^a ; as he hath himself expressed it, I will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and my daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Cor. vi. 18.) It is true indeed, this is a dignity which only attracts the observation of very few, and in this respect the world knows us not, and doth not acknowledge us for what we really are ; because it knoweth not him, who is God's eternal and first-born Son, the Head of the family, through whom we have received the adoption. Such are the unhappy prejudices of apostate man against the Divine will, and the Divine image, that Christ himself was unknown while he dwelt in human flesh ; and therefore it is no wonder that we are so, in that respect in which we resemble him. Nevertheless, my² beloved, it is a most certain, and a most joyful truth that now we are the children of God, and a truth which draws after it a long train of glorious consequences ; for it doth not yet perfectly appear what we shall be^b ; the inheritance we expected is far beyond what we can at present conceive. But this we know in the general, that if he, by whom we have received the adoption, be revealed^c, as he will certainly at length be, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is^d ; we shall have so clear and distinct a view and

it was, both considering the great age of the apostle, when banished to Patmos, and how naturally some things on which he touches in this epistle, especially relating to anti-christ, might have been illustrated by what he saw there.

c *If he be revealed.*] This is one of the many places, wherein the particle *αν* or *α*, which is nearly equivalent to it, does not imply any uncertainty of the event, but is put for *when*.

d *We shall see him as he is.*] Archbishop Tillotson well observeth, and proves at large that the sight of God is put to express the knowledge and enjoyment of him, because of its excellency and dignity, its largeness and comprehension, its spirituality and quickness, its evidence and certainty. (See his *Works*, Vol. III. p. 194.) Seneca has some most sublime passages in his 102d epistle, relating to that Divine light which good men should behold in a future state ; the very thought of which, he says, will prohibit any thing sordid, base or malevolent, from settling in the mind that entertains it.

SECT.
IV.

1 John
III. 1.

SECT.
IV.1 John
III. 2.

and discernment of him, as shall transform us into his image, even the image of his holiness, the brightest and most illustrious of the various glories with which he is invested.

- 3 But let not any imagine this is an expectation indiscriminately to be entertained by all who stile themselves Christians, or in any measure consistent with an unprofitable and wicked life. No, it is of the most generous tendency, and produces the most happy effects; for *every one who hath this hope in him on a solid foundation, purifieth himself from every pollution, with a sincere desire to advance daily in every branch of moral perfection and excellence, till at length he becomes pure, even as he is pure, so far as the Divine holiness can be resembled by any creature in this mortal and imperfect state.*

- 4 On the other hand, *every one who practiseth sin, practiseth also the violation of the Divine law; for this is the very nature and essence of sin, and what is common to every kind, and every act of it, that sin is the violation of the law**, either natural or revealed. *And ye know, that he who is so familiar to our thoughts, and our discourses, even our Divine Master and Saviour, was manifested, that he might take away the guilt and power of our sins, by his atonement, and by the sanctifying influences of his spirit, and there is no kind or degree of sin in him, nothing but what is of the most opposite*

- 5 *nature. It is plain, therefore, that every one who abideth in him, sinneth not, cannot make a trade and practice of it; and that every one who thus habitually and allowedly sinneth†, hath not seen him nor known him: his views and knowledge of him have been so superficial, as that they deserve not to be mentioned, since they have not conquered the love and prevalence of sin, and brought the man to a holy temper and life.*

My

e *Sin is the violation of the law.* I choose to construe it rather a more expressive word than transgression, and so answering more exactly to *νόμος*, which implies not only expression, a pointing the finger of God's law, but an attempt, if possible, to violate and destroy it.

f *Every one who habitually and allowedly sinneth.* It seems absolutely necessary to interpret the expression *δοξάω*, not only to prevent some of the heat of Christians from falling into disputes, on account of

g And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

h Whosoever committeth a sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

i And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins: and in him is no sin.

k Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither known him.

those remembrances of sinful imperfection, which their very entrance in religion causes them to discern, and to lament; while others, evidently their inferiors, are vain and ignorant enough to conclude themselves perfect, and looking nothing; and likewise to make one scripture consistent with another, (compare James iii. 2,) and even to render the true assertion to other passages in this epistle before us. See chap. v. 8—10.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous:

8 He that committeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth

g *He that practiseth righteousness is righteous.*] It is very necessary to interpret the phrase *thus*, to avoid an indulgence as extravagant as the *severity* we have opposed above. For certainly it is not every one who performs *some* one just or righteous action, that can be denominated *righteous*; nor can any man be intitled to that character, who doth not in the main course of his life, practise *universal* righteousness.

h *Sinneth from the beginning, &c.*] Mr. Limborch imagines this phrase refers to repeated acts of sin, and a continued course of it which preceded Satan's expulsion from heaven. See *Limb. Theol. lib. ii. cap. xx. sect. 4.* But it seems, that the use of the *present tense* implies a *continuance* in a course of sin; which is indeed the case with respect to this malignant and unhappy spirit, who continues incorrigible, notwithstanding, he has already suffered,

My dear little children, let no one deceive you on this important matter by vain words, with whatever pomp, or solemnity, or plausibility, they may be attended. A being himself immutably holy, can never dispense with the want of holiness in his reasonable creatures. *He who practiseth righteousness is righteous* g, *even as he himself is righteous*: it is his own image, and he must invariably love and delight in it, and must as invariably abhor sin, as utterly contrary to his nature. For indeed *he who practiseth sin, is of the devil*: he imitates his character, and complies with his instigations; *for the devil sinneth from the beginning*: he introduced sin into the creation of God, and he continues still to promote it ever since, to the utmost of his power and influence^h: *whereas* the appearance of *the Son of God* was to a quite different and contrary purpose; for he *was manifested* in human flesh, *that he might dissolve and destroy the works of the devil*ⁱ, that he might recover mankind from the apostacy into which they were seduced by the temptations of Satan; and delivering them from the bondage of sin, might restore them to the practice of universal righteousness, and thereby to the favour and enjoyment of God. *Every one who is born of God*,⁹ who is regenerated by Divine grace, and adopted into the number of his children, *doth not practise sin, because his seed abideth in him*; there

and all which he certainly knows, he has farther to endure.

i *Destroy the works of the devil.*] *λυση.*] This expressive word leads us to look on sin and misery as a *fabric*, of which the devil is the great *architect*, and which Christ is come to *overthrow* and demolish. Accordingly he has already broken, as it were, the *compages* and strength of it; and we may hope it will gradually be levelled, and its very ruins removed. He has certainly done what has a most powerful tendency to produce such an effect. But it seems driving matters to a very unjustifiable extremity, to argue from hence, as some have done, the utter *extirpation* of all moral and penal evil from the universe. And were not the *judgment* so palpably biased by the *affections*, as we see it to be in many instances, it is not to be conceived that men of penetration should have laid any stress on so precarious an argument.

k *He*

2d. E.
17.1 John
III. 2.

there is an immortal principle implanted by God in the heart, which will not suffer a man, who hath received it, entirely to over-bear it; and *he cannot sin*, in such a manner, and to such a degree as others¹, *because he is thus born of God*.

- 10 *In this* therefore, and by this, as the grand characteristic, are the children of God manifested on the one hand, and the children of the devil, on the other. Every one who doth not practise righteousness, is not of God; and I may add, as a matter of great consequence, that *he who loveth not his brother*, as he cannot practise righteousness, a great part of which consists in brotherly love, is not of God; neither can he, without great presumption, pretend to claim a place amongst his children.

remaineth in him; and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifested, and the children of the devil; whose ever doeth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Ver. How inestimable a privilege is it to be *born of God*! What
 1 infinite reason have those that possess it, to rejoice and be exceeding glad! With what astonishment should we reflect upon the Divine condescension, in admitting us to such an endearing relation! Let us behold with admiration and joy, *what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us*, that we sinful wretched mortals should be called *the sons of God*! Let us behold how high it rises, how wide it diffuses its effects; How glorious the inheritance, to which in consequence of this we are entitled! *The world indeed knows it not*, nor do we ourselves completely know it. Even *John*, the beloved disciple, who lay in the bosom of our
 2 Lord, and drank so deep out of the fountain head of knowledge and holiness, even he says, *it doth not yet appear what we shall be*. But let us, in sweet tranquility of soul, depend on our heavenly Father, that he will do whatever is becoming his perfect wisdom and goodness, in respect to the advancement and felicity
 3 of his own children. During our state of minority, let us be contented to be at his allowance, and rejoice, that we are in the general told, that *when Christ*, the first-born of the family, shall make his second triumphant appearance, *we shall also appear with*

1 *He cannot sin.* It is certain these words must be taken in something of a qualified sense, or they would prove not only the *inven* perfection of every child of God, but also the *impossibility* of every such person, or the *impossibility* of his sinning, which none have been wild and enthusiastical enough to assert. It must therefore, I think, be understood only as expressing a *strong disinclination* to sin, in

the kind and degree referred to before.— And it is certain, there are many passages of scripture, in which the word, *cannot*, must be taken in such a latitude. Compare Luke xiii. 32; Heb. ix. 5; Neh. vi. 3; Numb. xxi. 18. And this phraseology *Raphaëla* well illustrates by similar passages from the *classics*. See Annot. ex Polyb. in loc.

with him in glory, new dressed from the grave, to adorn his train, and transformed into his illustrious image, not only with respect to the glories of the body, but the brighter glories of the immortal spirit. With him we shall have an abundant entrance into his everlasting kingdom, and for ever experience the efficacy of that near and intimate *vision* of him, which we shall there enjoy, to transform us into the same likeness *from glory to glory*. O, that in the mean time, we may all feel the energy of *this blessed hope to purify our souls*, that our hearts and dispositions may correspond to our expectations! When *Christ* came in human flesh, it was with this important purpose, *that he might take away sin, that he might destroy the works of the devil*, and reduce to order and harmony that confusion and ruin, which *Satan* by his malicious insinuations had introduced into the world. *Blessed Jesus!* may this thy benevolent design be more and more effectual. May the empire of sin and corruption, which is the empire of *hell*, be entirely subdued, and thy celestial kingdom of Grace and holiness advanced. And may none *deceive themselves*, nor forget, that *he alone is righteous, who practiseth righteousness*. By this let us judge of ourselves, whether we are the *children of God*, or of the *devil*. And instead of flattering ourselves that though we do *commit sin* with allowance, yet there may be some secret *seed* of God still concealed in our hearts; let us judge of our having received this *regenerating seed*, by its tendency to preserve us *from sin*, and the victories it enables us to gain over its destructive wiles and insufferable tyranny.

SECT.
iv.

Ver

8, 5

9, 10

SECT. V.

The Apostle discourses of the necessity and importance of brotherly love, as a distinguishing mark and characteristic of the children of God. 1 John III. 11, to the end.

1 JOHN III. 11.

FOR this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

1 JOHN III. 11.

I MENTIONED the want of brotherly love, as an argument of not belonging to God; and a little consideration may persuade you, that it is indeed so. *For this*, as you know, *is the message which you heard of us the apostles and ministers of Christ, from the beginning* of our appearance among you, as our Lord had frequently in person inculcated it, and almost with his dying breath, *that we should love one another*; And that we should not be as *Cain*, [who] was most apparently of the wicked one, and barbarously

SECT.
v.

1 John
III. 11.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one,

12

SECT.
V.

1 John
4: 12.

roadly *slay his own innocent and pious brother. And for what cause did he slay him?* Truly for this, *because his own deeds were evil, and those of his brother righteous*, in consequence of which he was disapproved, and his brother approved by God: and this excited not his repentance, but his envy and hatred, which at length settled into the most rancorous malice, and produced

13 that horrible effect. And as there is a great deal of the same malignant temper remaining in the world, and there are many, in that sense, though not by natural descent of the seed of Cain, *wonder not my brethren, if, under this influence, the world hate you.* But we, on the other hand, *know that we are passed over, from the boundaries and territories of death, to those of life, because we unfeignedly love the brethren*, as they are the children of God as well as ourselves, and the members of one body with us. *He that loveth not this brother*, can have no good principle, but necessarily *abideth in spiritual death*, and must for ever continue in that miserable state, if the frame and temper of his mind be not entirely changed.

15 And this you may easily apprehend, if you consider, that *every one who hateth his brother, is a murderer*; and were it not for the restraint of human laws, that private malice which is harboured in his thoughts would produce, as it did in the instance of Cain, actual murder. *And ye assuredly know, that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him*, nor can any person of that detestable character enter into the celestial kingdom, the region of perfect love.

16 Jesus Christ, who reigns in that blessed world, has given us various and numberless proofs of an unparalleled charity: and it is in *this*, above all the other instances of it, that we know by experience the greatness of *his love, as he hath laid down his life for us*: and we in imitation

and, and slew his brother. And whosoever loveth his brother, shall be in him: because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 He that loveth his brother, shall be in him: because he hath laid down his life for us: and we ought

of

a Parallel from John 13: 1. This is another view of the last of sect. 5, which illustrates by a strong comparison, that they now, as it were, have in the kind and strictness of unity, as that the good God is true in such a condition, as to be able to communicate and distribute to the extension of a kind of unity. And it seems to me, that such a kind of unity speaks such unity in them, as a unity is positively continuing and abiding.

b It is said, *as we, as he hath laid down his life for us*. This is, as it stands in our version, too generally been understood as if it should be laid on, as when, as he who had done for us the son of God, as well as man, God is said to have done that which the man ought to have done. But it is not so to be understood, that many express, which I have before said, and only will be understood of the same as persons who do. And there are many places, where

ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

17 But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him.

18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence towards God.

of such an example ought to be ready to lay down our lives for the brethren^c, when the good of his church, or of any number of our fellow-Christians requires it. And if we ought to be willing to die for the good of others, how much more to relieve them in any of those necessities, which require us only to impart to them a little of our substance? *Whosoever therefore hath the good things of the present world, and when he seeth his brother in necessity, shutteth up his bowels from him:* so that he will not impart any thing out of his own abundance for his relief; *how dwelleth the love of God in him*, or with what face can he presume to call himself a Christian?

My little children, let me speak freely to you on this head, and let us not love merely in word, or in tongue, nor content ourselves with any external and complimentary expressions of regard: but let our affections prove the sincerity of our professions, and shew that we love in deed and in truth. *And in this we know, that we are of the truth*, and that we are real Christians; and in the consciousness of this shall assure our hearts before him, when we draw nigh in the exercises of devotion. *For if our own heart condemn us* of any evil which we secretly indulge, while we preserve our characters in the sight of men unsullied, we may well be thrown into terror and anxiety; knowing that *God is infinitely greater than our hearts, and knoweth all things* without exception; so as continually to view numberless follies, which we never observed, or have entirely forgotten, and numberless aggravations attending each, which it was impossible for us fully and distinctly to conceive. But, *beloved, if our hearts condemn us not*, but we have the testimony of our consciences before him, as to the sincerity of our repentance and faith, the integrity of our general walk and

SECT.
V.

1 John
III. 17.

where the relative evidently refers to a remote antecedent. Compare Heb. vii. 2. note a.

c *Lay down our lives for the brethren.* That is, when the life and happiness of many are concerned, we ought to be willing to sacrifice our own. If one only were to be rescued on such terms, the argument would in a great measure fail,

unless that one were of so great importance that in dying for him we died for many; and the heathens themselves saw the obligation to submit to death in such a case, though they were unacquainted with that noble motive to which the apostle here refers. Compare Cicero de officiis, lib. 1. cap. iii. p. 34.

and conversation, [then] have we that confidence and freedom of speech before God, in our addresses to him, which nothing else could give us, and which it is impossible we should have, while we know that we deal deceitfully in any instance, either with him or our fellow-creatures.

22 And we know, that whatever we ask, we shall receive of him, if subservient to our truest good, because we are conscious of a prevailing care to keep his commandments, and to do the things which we have reason to apprehend are pleasing in his sight; which he, as the righteous God, will be pleased with, when proceeding from a sincere principle of faith in Christ, and attended with those humble regards to him, which the imperfection of our own obedience, in its best estate, will require. And this is his great command, That we should believe in the name of his dear Son Jesus Christ, and endeavour to grow more in that blessed principle of faith in him; and that we should unfeignedly and cordially love our another, as he hath so strongly and affectionately charged us to do.

23 And this is the true way to have that communion with God, to which I expressed, in the beginning of my epistle, such a desire to introduce you; for he that keeps his commandments abideth in him, and he, that is, God, abideth in that man; and in this we farther know, that he abideth in us by such an intimate union, even from the spirit which he hath given us, and which is the token and effect of his habitation in us, producing in our souls by his gracious operation, the image of God, and forming us to an intimacy with, and nearness to him.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

He and this is his commandment, That we should believe on the name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

23 And he that keeps his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him; and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. O THAT the Divine Spirit which God hath given to dwell in 11 believers, and by which he himself resides in them, may teach us more effectually this great lesson of love, which is so agreeable to the purposes for which he was conferred! Let us abhor the temper of Cain, as much as we abhor the actions it produced, and 12 dread the doom they incurred. As for that hatred of the world, which in a steady adherence to our duty may probably fall to our lot, let it by no means surprise or discourage us. It is surely enough to support our spirits under the malice and outrage of

of a wicked world, that if we are steady and consistent Christians, ^{SECT. V.}
we may know, that we are passed from death to life. O blessed transition! O the adorable riches of Divine grace to which it is ^{Ver.}
 owing! May the ardour of our *love to our brethren* render this 14
 happy change more and more apparent; and may this *Christian*
 benevolence be so ardent in our hearts, as to make us willing when
 certain duty requires it, *even to lay down our lives for them*; hav- 16
 ing been ourselves distinguished with the like token of the love of
 our Divine Master, *who spared not his own life for us*; and O, what
 are even *thousands* of our lives in comparison of *his*! And shall we
 then, while our brethren in the Lord are in necessity, be tenacious 17
of our substance? When we are surrounded with plenty, shall we
 be unwilling to impart a little of our abundance for their relief, or
 content ourselves with the charity of *words*, which cost us nothing, 18
 while we with-hold the things *that are needful for them*? How will
 such shameful, destable *hypocrisy* disgrace all our pretensions to
 the *love of God*: but let us treat all *hypocrisy* either towards God
 or man, with detestation and abhorrence. *Let us love, not only in*
word and in profession, but in deed and in truth, and rather chuse
 that our actions should exceed our engagements, than disappoint in
 any instance the expectations we have raised.

Of what infinite importance is it to *have confidence towards God* 19
 in all our addresses to his heavenly Majesty! And if we desire this
 to be the case, let us *reverence our consciences*; avoiding every
 thing which would cause *our hearts to condemn us*, in the presence
 of him who is *greater than our hearts, and knoweth all things*. And 20, 21
 while we rejoice in this, that they do not *condemn us*, let us be
 very careful that we examine them *thoroughly*, that we be not im-
 posed on by a false answer, as it is to be feared many, through a
 superficial inquiry are, whose expectations are the most sanguine,
 and whose pretensions are the loudest. Let us remember this great 23
 summary of Christian duty, *that we believe in the name of the Lord* 22
Jesus Christ, and that we keep his commandments and do the things
that are pleasing in the sight. An obedience, springing from such
 a faith, a faith verified by such an obedience, will give us a com-
 fortable hope, that our prayers shall be accepted of God now, and
 our persons accepted hereafter to eternal life. *Amen.*

SECT. VI.

The Apostle cautions the Christian converts against being deceived by seducing spirits; and directs them how they may distinguish between the spirit of truth and the spirit of error. 1 John IV. 1—12.

1 JOHN IV. 1.

SECT.
VI.
1 John
IV. 1.

IT is necessary, my *Beloved*, that in the circumstances in which we are placed, I should caution you against credulously submitting to every one who pretends a Divine inspiration for what he says: *believe not therefore every pretended spirit^a; but make trial of the spirits, whether they be indeed of God or not: for it is certain, that many false prophets are gone forth into the world,* boasting a Divine mission, and thereby laying snares for the souls of men, with such artifice, that might, as our Lord expresses it, Mat. xxiv. 24, deceive the very elect if it were possible.

2 Now *in this we know* and may distinguish *the Spirit of God*, which is the Spirit of truth, from that of error; *every spirit that confesseth Jesus Christ who is come in the flesh^b, that pays a becoming deference to his authority, and the Divine discoveries which he hath made, as of God; there cannot, in the general, be any better attestation of any spirit than this, that it tends, in its agency and operations, to promote the honour of the great Redeemer. And you may, on the other hand, be sure of this, that every pretended spirit of revelation, that doth not confess and do homage to Jesus Christ, as he is come in the flesh, is not of God: and indeed this is on the contrary the very [spirit of antichrist^c],*

and

^a *Believe not every spirit.* Many pretended to the character of the Messiah, and others, in an extraordinary manner to be sent and inspired of God; and thus they did with a view of turning away Christians from their truth and hope. The apostle here, by a short turn of argument demonstrates that they were indeed impostors from the very attempt.

^b *That confesseth Jesus Christ, who is come in the flesh.* In the words *confesseth* you know *Jesus* is implied; *acknowledg* may very well be rendered; and indeed they

1 JOHN IV. 1.

BELOVED, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

² Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God.

³ And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof

must be so in this connection, for the bare confession of Christ's incarnation would not have been sufficient to have cleared them from the suspicion of being impostors. To confess *Jesus Christ*, seems to mean, not barely professing some kind of regard to him, but yielding a regular *constant* homage, and, as it were, *harmonizing* and falling in with his doctrine.

^c *This is the spirit of antichrist.* From hence some have argued, that the Pope cannot be antichrist, because he *confesses* Christ; and that it must necessarily be some

whereof ye have heard that it should come, and even now already it is in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them; because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us. Hereby know we the

of whom you have heard in the Divine oracles and predictions which our blessed Lord delivered concerning this last time *that he is coming, and is now in some measure already in the world.* But, my dear children, *ye are of God, and have⁴ overcome them* in all their snares and delusions *d*, because greater and more powerful by far is he that is in you, than he that is in the world: the Son of God, who stands at the head of that interest in which you are embarked, and who aids you by the mighty communications of his Spirit, is infinitely too strong for Satan, the great head of the apostacy, and for all his confederates. *They of whom I have now been speaking, are of⁵ the world*, and they know how to manage their affairs in a manner which will be pleasing to it: *therefore they speak as of the world*, as taking their instructions from it, they give their followers worldly hopes and expectations, and *the world greedily hears them*, and drinks in their fallacious maxims, to the unspeakable detriment of the interests of true religion. Where-⁶as on the contrary, *we are of God*, and have approved ourselves to be so, by such irresistible evidence, that I may now venture to say, that *he who knoweth God*, and experiences the governing influence of Divine fear and love, *heareth* and regardeth us^c; but *he who is not of God*, doth not attentively and obediently hear us; and by rejecting our testimony, attended with such evidence, proves himself destitute of all true religion.

SECRET.
vi.

1 John
IV. 3.

some entirely *opposing* person or sect, and which does not bear the Christian name: but the interpretation above obviates this objection; for it is certain popery is an usurpation entirely inconsistent with a due *homage* to Christ, and founded upon principles most opposite to those of his government and religion. It is said to have been *already in the world*, as the ambitious, imposing, persecuting spirit, which is the very essence of antichristianism, did then greatly prevail.

d Ye—*have overcome them.*] That is, your doctrines have prevailed against some who deserve the name of antichrist, as undoubtedly all who opposed the Christian interest in some measure did; and as you have the true *miraculous* gifts of the spirit, to which they falsely pretend, it is soon seen, that the advantage is clearly on your side.

e *He who knoweth God, heareth us.*]

Bishop Bull thinks, the meaning of this is, "Regard our temper and conduct, and compare it with that of those who oppose us, and you will find a *caral* principle continually prevailing in them, and a *spiritual* principle governing us: in consequence of which you may know assuredly that we are of God, and they of the world." Compare Bull's *Serm.* i p. 11. I rather think, as Archbishop Tillotson has stated it, (Vol. III. p. 501.) He considers the Christian religion as now so abundantly demonstrated, that it might be made a *test* by which other doctrines and pretences might be tried; and to those who have received it upon full evidence, it must be so. Thus the Jews were directed to judge, and obliged to condemn, a *pretended* prophet, as *ipso facto*, proved an *impostor*, if he attempted to turn them aside from the revelation which God had given by Moses. Deut. xiii. 1—3.

f *Let*

SECT.
VI.1 John
IV, 6.

ligion. After such a series of miracles, as have been wrought in confirmation of the gospel, and other proofs attending it in their days, it may be laid down as a test: so that *by this we may sufficiently know*, and discern between *the spirit of truth and the spirit of error*, as the one receives, and the other rejects, this Divine system.

the spirit of truth, and
the spirit of error.

7 But think it not enough speculatively to admit its authority. Let it be your great care particularly to acknowledge; and especially to the purposes of mutual benevolence. Yes, my *beloved*, let us love one another; for love is as really *from God*, as truth itself; and every one *who loveth*, every one in whose heart this Divine principle reigns and triumphs over the selfish and contrary passions, shews by it that he is *born of God*, by his regenerating and transforming grace, and that he truly *knoweth God*. he makes it appear, that he judges rightly of God's nature and will; and that his acquaintance with him has made deep and powerful impressions on

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God, and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 his heart. Whereas *he who loveth not*, whatever he may pretend, *hath not truly known God*; for *God is love*, its great fountain and exemplar: he recommends it by his law, and produces and cherishes it by his influences; and the due contemplation of him will naturally inflame our hearts with love to his Divine Majesty, and to our fellow-creatures for his sake, whose creatures they are. And in this great instance is *the love of God*, of which I now speak, when I say that God is himself love, in the most illustrious manner *manifested*, and displayed in and towards us, that *God sent Jesus his only-begotten and well beloved Son into the world*, that we, condemned and miserable sinners, *might live through him*, that the sentence of death to which we were obnoxious, might be reversed, that we might be quickened to a principle of spiritual life, and so conducted to the possession

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God: for God is love.

9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and

10 of life everlasting. Yes, *Sirs*, I must repeat it again, that your hearts, and my own, may be the more deeply affected with it, *herein is love*, not indeed that we loved God, for we were, on the contrary, in a state of enmity to him, in which,

[*Let us love one another.*] It is reported, that when the apostle John was grown old, and near parting, he used to be led to the *sketch* at Ephesus, and only say

those words to the people, *Little children love one another.* And the importance of the argument by which he enforced this, justifies the repetition of it so frequently.

and sent his Son *to be*
the propitiation for
our sins.

11 Beloved, if God
so loved us, we ought
also to love one ano-
ther.

12 No man hath
seen God at any time.
If we love one another,
God dwelleth in us,
and his love is perfect-
ed in us.

which, unsolicited and untouched by his love and grace, we should have persisted and perished; *but that he loved us, and in boundless compassion to our necessities and our miseries, sent his Son [to be] a propitiation for our sins; to make atonement to his injured justice for our offences, and so to introduce us on honourable terms to his favour.* And let me make this im-
portant inference from it, *my beloved, if God so loved us, how ought we to love one another,* in imitation of his Divine example, from a sense of the happy state into which we are brought, and in gratitude to him for so inestimable a favour? And the inference has the greater weight,
as *no man hath ever seen God*, or can see him, since he is in his own nature invisible, and possessed of such essential perfections, that it is impossible that any expressions of love and duty from any of his creatures should in the least degree increase his happiness. But as he is the great fountain of benevolence, *if we love one another, it appears that God dwelleth in us, and that his love is perfected in us;* for this is the best proof we can give of our love to him, and of the prevalence of his grace in our hearts, transforming us into his image.

SECT.
vi.
1 John
IV. 10.

IMPROVEMENT.

THE spirit of error has been working, in some measure, in all ages of the church; nor are we to wonder, if having infested that
of the apostles, it be transmitted to our own. It is necessary there-
fore to *try the spirits, whether they be of God*; and we may safely
try them by the *homage* they pay to *Christ*; and this not merely
to his name, but to the *genius* of his religion, and to the great
standard of it, which he had left upon record in his word, that it
might not be that *uncertain* thing which the fancies or traditions of
fallible men might have rendered it. *Antichristian* principles and
powers have arisen, but God has enabled, and he will enable the
remnant of his people to *conquer them*, for the spirit in them is
greater than that which is in the world. That may hearken to se-
ducers as they accommodate their doctrine to its prevailing lusts
and passions; but let us remember that the gospel is now estab-
lished as a *test*, and may we admit, or reject, all human teachings,
as they agree, or disagree with it.

If we read and hear it to any valuable purpose, it will teach us
to love one another: that great lesson of our Divine Master, with
relation

relation to which we have *line upon line, and precept upon precept.*

If we value ourselves in any degree upon *knowing God*, let us give

Ver. this proof of it, without which all our most subtle speculations or debates concerning his nature and perfections will be utterly vain.

2 And that we may attain to this, let us frequently contemplate that incomparable display of *his love* towards us, in sending his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him. Let us

daily consider our lives as derived from that great act of mercy and grace; and that it is through Christ alone, as thus given us of God, that we can obtain and secure life eternal, since in him we

10 receive the only appointed propitiation for those sins, which would otherwise have obstructed the passage of all good to us, even from the great eternal fountain of felicity. He hath presented us with the blessings of his goodness: we did not love him, but he first loved us.

10 O that this love on his part, may produce the warmest return on ours! and let us testify the sincerity of this affection, by remembering how it ought to influence our hearts to *benignity*

11 as well as *devotion*. And as we cannot see God at any time, nor

12 extend any act of beneficence to him, let us see his image with due regard in every Christian, and in some degree in every human creature, that we may express our love to him, by doing good to them for his sake.

SECT. VII.

The Apostle further urges the excellence of love, as a substantial proof of our knowing God, and dwelling in him: and as bringing the greatest honour to God, and affording the truest composure and confidence to the soul. 1 John IV. 13, to the end.

1 JOHN IV. 13.

I HAVE been mentioning love as an argument of our union to God; and I must now add, that we also *love him, that we abide in him, and that he dwelleth in us, because he hath given to us the communication of his Spirit*, which operating in us by its gracious influences, sets as it were, the mark of God upon us, and thereby assures us that he owns us as his, and is become our God. And animated and sealed by this Spirit, as we have seen and known by undoubted evidence ourselves, so we courageously testify to others, how hazardous soever the bearing that testimony may be, that the great almighty Father of all hath sent Jesus the Son,

1 JOHN IV. 13.

BUT know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

13 And we have seen and do testify that

under

the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world.

18 There is no fear in love: but perfect love casteth out fear; because

under the high character of *the Saviour of the world*, and that it is in, and by him alone, how proudly soever the infidel world may reject and disdain him, that eternal salvation can be obtained. *Whosoever*, in a steady and uniform manner, *shall confess, that Jesus is the Son of God*^a, maintaining this profession of faith with resolution and zeal, and acting in conformity to it, gives the happiest proof that *God dwelleth in him, and that he dwelleth in God*: there is a blessed union between God and his soul; so that it is in the language of scripture, (Isa. lvii. 15.) the habitation of God, and he may be said to be as to his affections and hopes, with God in heaven, and shall ere long, in his complete person reside there. *And we have known, and firmly* 16 *believed the love which God hath unto us*: for as we have again and again taught you, and know not how to cease inculcating it, *God is himself love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him*^b; this is the bond of union, and the pledge of its perpetuity. (Compare ver. 8, and 12.) *And herein is love perfected in us, that* 17 notwithstanding all our acknowledged and lamented imperfections, *we may have boldness and confidence in the great day of universal judgment*^c, in that as he our Father and our God is, so are we in some prevailing degree, even while we reside in this world, so far as the imperfections of that mortal life, to which we are here confined, will admit.

And happy are they, who are arrived to such 18 a temper and character as this; for *there is no servile and abject fear in love, but perfect love casteth out such fear* from the soul, in which it resides.

a *Whosoever shall confess, &c.*] Bishop Hopkins, accounts for this, and such passages, by observing, that in the primitive times there were no temporal inducements to embrace Christianity; and consequently most of the professors of it acted upon conscience, and it might be charitably hoped they were indeed regenerate. See his *Works*, p. 520.

b *Dwelleth in God, and God in him*] Perhaps when John wrote this epistle, he might refer to that excellent prayer of our blessed Lord, which he has recorded in his gospel, and to such passages of it as John xvii. 22, 23.

c *In the day of judgment.*] Some by this phrase understand the day in which

Christians were judged: as if it had been said, The perfection of love is, when it induces us to maintain the cause of Christ before judges and persecutors, that we may be conformed to him, whose life was in a manner a continued series of sufferings; whereas the violent fear of death, which where it prevails, is a tormenting passion, is inconsistent with the perfect love of Christ. This is the sense which Dr. Bates gives to this passage. *Bates's Works*, p. 524. But the day of judgment has generally a different signification from what this explanation gives it; and therefore I chuse to paraphrase the words after the manner in which they are usually understood.

1800.
vii.

I John
IV 18.

resides. And this is a very desirable effect; *because fear hath torment*, it throws the mind into a most uneasy situation; but *he that feareth, is not made perfect in love*. Study therefore to increase more and more in that noble affection of love to God, and you will find your self-enjoyment rising in proportion to it. And reflect upon this with all humility, that if we do indeed experience any thing of that Divine principle in our hearts, we must freely acknowledge, that *we love him, because he first loved us*. He hath not only given us natures capable of these sublime actings, and poured in upon us, from their first original, numberless providential bounties, but hath also appointed his Son, to lay a foundation for our happiness in his own blood, and his spirit, to diffuse that grace in our hearts, by which they are formed to every sentiment of pious gratitude.

- 20 And let this also be remembered, as of the last importance, that *if any one say, I love God, and hateth his brother*, how high soever his pretences to devotion may be, and to whatever favour he may carry his zeal, *he is a liar*; for it is impossible, that the love of God should be sincere in the soul, which is destitute of this brotherly affection: as will appear, if you consider what peculiar advantages we have for engaging our hearts towards those with whom we are conversant; *for how can he, who loveth not his brother, whom he hath seen, love God whom he hath not seen*? The invisible nature of the Divine Being, is in this respect, an obstacle, which our weak and carnal minds cannot be expected easily to conquer. And it is certain, that the neglect of this benevolent disposition would be an high instance of disobedience to him, since *we have this express commandment from him, that he who loveth God, and professeth himself religious, should also love his brother*. And God hath hereby in effect declared, that he

because fear hath torment. He that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him, because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother, whom he hath seen, how can he love God, whom he hath not seen?

21 And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God, love his brother also.

d *How can he, who loveth not his brother, whom he hath seen, love God, &c.*] Mr. Howe observes, that the apostle seems to take it for granted, that we are more disposed to the love of our fellow-creatures than to the love of God. Mr. Sted has charmingly illustrated this text, (Ser. Vol. I. p. 390,) and observes, that we rise to

the love of God from the love of our fellow-creatures; as to the knowledge of God, by the knowledge of the creatures. Hardly any text was ever more fully illustrated than this, in those *pathematic terms* of the great Mr. Howe, which were published by Mr. Fletcher.

he will treat those as his enemies, who pretend to devout zeal, while they are destitute of brotherly love.

SECT.
vii.

IMPROVEMENT.

THAT all these repeated exhortations may not be entirely in vain, let us now call our hearts to a deep and affectionate contemplation of the astonishing love of God, that he hath sent even his Son to be the Saviour of the world, according to the testimony¹⁴ of this Divine herald, who beheld his glory, and witnessed it to be such a glory, as became the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth. (John i. 14.)

Let us think of the world as lost, of the whole race of rational creatures in it as perishing, as going down to eternal perdition. But a Saviour is provided: And O, what a Saviour? The Son of God, that almighty Deliverer, to whom our salvation was dearer than his own life. So dear, that he was willing to be invested with mortal flesh, in order that he might be capable of enduring pain and death for our redemption. Have we not herein seen and known the love of God to us? That love, wherewith he has so graciously prevented us; for surely nothing can be more apparent¹⁶ than this, that if we do indeed love him sincerely and faithfully,¹⁹ it is because he hath first loved us. And therefore, instead of boasting of our love to him, as if we could make him our debtor, let us humbly acknowledge that he is the great Original and support of that beautifying affection of the human mind; and that our obligations to him are great, in proportion to the degree in which we feel it working in us. Let us be encouraged boldly to confess Christ as the Son of God. Let us seek after more perfect love to¹⁵ him, and to the Father, as that which tends to make the mind happy by casting out every tormenting passion, and to establish it in an humble boldness amidst the most awful prospects. It is matter of deep lamentation, that our spirits should be so degenerate,¹⁷ as that while we are strongly impressed by sensible objects, we should be the less inclined to love the blessed God, because he is²⁰ an invisible being.

Let us adore his goodness, that in condescension to our weakness, he hath made himself visible in the person of his Son; and as Christ has constituted our brethren, in some degree his representatives, to receive as in his name, the tokens of our kindness and affection, let us be studious, by our love to them, and particularly to the poor among them, who have peculiarly this honour; let us I say, be studious to approve the sincerity of that love to him,

him, which we so universally profess, and the absence of which were so inexcusably criminal.

SECT. VIII.

The Apostle farther discourses of the character of those who are born of God, particularly describing them as lovers of Christ, as conquerors of the world, and as courageously maintaining the gospel, on the witnesses to which, both in heaven and on earth, he more especially enlarges. 1 John V. 1—12.

1 JOHN V. 8.

ACT.
VII.

1 John
V. 1.

HAVING been discoursing of the privileges of the children of God, let me a little farther illustrate, and remind you of the great essentials of their character, that you may judge the better of your own concern in what is said. And here nothing is of more importance than to observe, that *every one who truly believeth that Jesus is the Christ, so as to have his heart duly affected with the belief, without which faith does not deserve its name, is born of God*: he is brought to that Divine temper by the influences of the Spirit of God upon his heart, and in consequence of this he may be assured of his adoption. *And every one who loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten by him*: we naturally love the children of our common friends, and much more will the children of our heavenly Father be dear to us, if we bear a becoming affection to him. And we may take the same truth likewise the other way, and say, that *in this we know that we love the children of God, if we love God, and keep his commandments*. b.

2

For

1 JOHN V. 1.

WHosoever loveth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God, and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

It is this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

a *Is born of God?* It is possible that people may have taken to this word, when the Jews made of Jesus the subject of that, while they are Christ of darkness, and passed the greatest influence on his name and name. Mr. Locke quotes this place to prove that this was the only fundamental of the gospel; but it is evident, two propositions may be constructed in very different senses, and consequently there is no room to lay all the stress that he supposes may be laid on such an expression.

b *It is this we know that we love the children of God, &c.* Dr. Clarke supposes that phrase to be transparent, and that it should be said, "By this we know that we love God, and keep his commandments, &c."

could we have his children? *Proof* See 1 John II. p. 116. The same reasoning it was used to prove, that the testimony is more certain, than the thing to be proved from it. Dr. Clarke answers, that the apostle speaks concerning our knowing that we love the Father, and that the true Christian saint, not a sitting internal possession of God in God may be more self-evident in the mind, as he is danger of being confounded with a merely human affection, or benevolent interest. *Heck's Hints*, p. 102. But he then queries, whether it might not be concluded, *How*, and it had we love the children of God, as we love God, and keep his commandments.

SECT.
viii.

1 John
V. 2.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments : and his commandments are not grievous

4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world : and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God ?

For certainly if our love to the children of God arise from truly religious motives, it will be an uniform thing, and all the other precepts of God will have a suitable influence upon our hearts and lives ; whereas any pretended benevolence of temper, which leaves us rebels to the authority of the common Father of the family, is a mere natural impulse, and deserves not the noble name of brotherly love. Wonder not, that I insist so much on the influence of religious principles on the life and conversation. For *this is the love of God*, this is the great evidence we are to give of it, *that we impartially keep all his commandments*, without allowing ourselves in the violation of any one of them. And to a mind influenced by true love, *his commandments are not grievous* ; as they are all most equitable, reasonable, and gracious in themselves, all adapted to promote the true happiness of our lives, so we shall find, that fervent love will make them all pleasant and delightful to us. *Because*, whereas the great obstruction to keeping God's commandments is the influence of worldly motives and considerations on the mind, *whatever is born of God*, every son and daughter of his, not excepting even the feeblest, *conquers the world*, and would despise and trample upon all the glories of universal empire, if opposed to the favour of his heavenly Father. And *this is the great victory that conquers the world*, the grand triumphant principle which accomplishes things which appear so incredible, [*even our firm faith* in the great articles of the Christian religion ; particularly, that Christ is the Son of God, that he came into the world to redeem us from its lusts and vanities, and that he will assuredly conduct all his people to seats of infinitely greater and nobler felicity. And indeed, as this is the happiness of true Christians, so only of them ; for *who is he that conquers the world*, except it be *he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God* ? The great principles peculiar to our Divine religion, a sense of redeeming love, and the prospect of such a sublime and perpetual happiness as the gospel opens upon us, can alone be sufficient to teach us to triumph over these transitory vanities, and to establish an uniform character, superior to the variety

Book.
VIII.

Chapter
VIII.

variety of temptations with which we can be assailed; while the boasted triumphs of others, upon meaner principles, have been very partial and imperfect, and they have evidently been subdued by one vanity, while they have gloried in despising another.

6 *This* Jesus, of whom we have now been speaking, *is he who came by water, and by blood*, even *Jesus the Christ*, whose great design it was both to cleanse and purify his people, and to make an atonement to God, for their sins. He came *not by water only*, did not only instruct men in the purest morals, or set them the most perfect and complete example; *but by water and blood*. He shed his most precious blood to expiate our offences, and God gave as it were, a sensible intimation of these united purposes, when there came out of his wounded side, a stream of blood and water, which descended in such a manner, as that each might evidently be distinguished from the other. *And the Spirit is that which witnesseth*, the extraordinary communication of the Spirit to his servants is the most glorious attestation of all; for we well know, that *the Spirit is truth*; and when we consider the wonderful manner of its interposition, we can no longer doubt of the truth of whatever shall be attested by such an authority.

7 And indeed, when I consider this, I may say, that whereas the law admitted the concurrent testimony of two witnesses as valid, we have, as it were, a double triunity of witnesses, one in heaven, and the other on earth, to support this most momentous truth. *For there are three, who bear witness to us, in heaven, the Father, by whom the scheme of our salvation was originally projected, and who revealed it so early to the church by the prophets; the Divine Word, whose great business it was, by such humiliations, labours and sufferings, to bring it*

into

c This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

d There are three that bear witness in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost; and these three are one.

e Came by water and blood? I think it a great mistake of Mr. Trenchard and some others, to insist that this relating to external washing and Jewish purification.

f There are three who bear witness, &c. As it would contradict the right to introduce into such short notes as these are intended to be, a small dissertation upon the authority of this venerable party, I shall content myself with referring to what so many

learned persons are here engaged in the controversy, have written on each side; but I thought myself obliged to intimate such a reasoning from as best, concerning its authenticity, as I have done by inserting it in criticism. I am persuaded the words contain an important truth; but whether they have been added by some, or omitted by others, contrary to the original copy, I will not pretend to determine.

g The

SECT.
viii.

1 John
V. 7.

8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son,

10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the

into execution; and the Holy Spirit ^e, who seals and applies it to believers; and these three are one, as in the agreement of their testimony, so likewise in the perfections of their nature, and each worthy of those Divine honours, which cannot be communicated to any creature. And ⁸ there are three on earth who bear witness,] the Spirit, sent down from heaven in its sanctifying and miraculous operations, which still continue to produce the noblest effect; and the water of baptism, and the representation made of Christ's blood, in the sacramental wine ^f, which are intended, throughout all ages, to keep up the remembrance of these wonderful facts, and to bear, as it were, their testimony to this mysterious Person, who united in himself humanity and deity, and came by water, and by blood; and these three agree in one; they join to advance the same end, by establishing the gospel in the world. And if we receive the testimony of men, ⁹ which in many cases we cannot, without the most palpable absurdity reject, surely the testimony of God is worthy of infinitely greater credit; for this is the testimony of God, which he hath witnessed concerning his Son, recommending him thereby to our most dutiful and obedient regard; that by a firm faith in him, and adherence to him, we may conquer the world, and all the enemies of our salvation. He, who ¹⁰ upon this testimony believeth in the Son of God, hath not only an external evidence to produce, which may suffice for the conviction and condemnation of the unbelieving world, but from the time in which he experiences the efficacy of his faith, hath also the witness within himself^g: the happy change it makes in the whole

^e The Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit.] The Father, Mat. iii. 16, 17, xvii. 5; John xii. 28. The Word himself, Acts vii. 55, 56; ix. 3, 4; Rev. 1. 10, &c. The Holy Ghost, John i. 32, 33.

^f The water and the blood.] By the water, Mr. Jeffries understands the baptism of Christ, and the miracles which were wrought on that occasion, as the descent of the Spirit, and the voice from heaven; and by the blood, the death of Christ, which he willingly suffered, and demonstrated thereby that he was no impostor, especially as he predicted so many extraordinary circumstances attending it. See his Review of the Controversy with Collins. Others

interpret the blood here spoken of, the blood of the martyrs shed in confirmation of Christianity, and the water, of the purity of the lives of Christians. I confess it is a difficult text; but on the whole, prefer the sense given in the paraphrase.

^g Hath the witness within himself.] Some have considered and explained this, as if the meaning were, that every Christian did in those days receive some miraculous proofs of his religion, by some communication of the extraordinary gifts of the Spirit; in consequence of which he might by looking within himself, know the certainty of the gospel. But I think this assertion

SECT.
VIII.1 John
V. 10.

whole state of his soul, manifests the excellence and reality of its object. But *he that believeth not God*, offers him the grossest and most insufferable affront, for he in effect *makes him a liar*; charges him with attesting the most notorious falsehood in the most solemn manner; *because he hath not believed in the testimony which God hath testified concerning his Son*, by so many prophecies, and other miraculous interpositions, to demonstrate the truth of his mission. So that if this may be rejected, it cannot be conceived how he should ever be able to give any convincing proof, that he testifies any thing at all.

the record that God gave of his Son.

- 11 *And this is*, in one word, *the substance* and abridgement of this *testimony*, *that the blessed God hath*, in his infinite condescension and bounty, *given unto us the promises of eternal life*, and *this life is in his Son*, purchased by him, and laid up in him, to be bestowed according to his pleasure; and therefore only to be
- 12 obtained through him. So that *he who hath an interest in the Son* by a lively and operative faith *hath this eternal life*, in the sure pledges and beginnings of it in his own heart, and shall shortly enter on the complete enjoyment, though in himself acknowledged to be ever so unworthy of it; and *he who hath not an interest in the Son of God*, *hath not life*, whatever proud conceit he may entertain of his own merits and excellencies; but on the contrary, remains exposed to the righteous displeasure of God, and under a sentence of eternal death.

11 And this is the record that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

IMPROVEMENT.

- LET us regard the grand question, on which our life, our eternal life, is suspended! *I mean, whether we have, or have not, the Son of God?* Let us then examine into this important matter with
- Ver. the greatest attention. Let us hearken to, and receive the
- 11 *testimony of God*, as comprehended in this one word, *that God hath given even to us*, dying, perishing men, *eternal life*; and *this life is in his Son*. Let us receive this transcendent gift with all humility and thankfulness; and so much the rather, as it is given

us

section, incapable of being proved, either from the passage or any other; and can prefer no sense of this celebrated text to that which Dr. Watts has so largely estab-

lished and illustrated in his *sermons* upon it; to which therefore I refer my readers with the utmost satisfaction *Watts's Sermons*, Vol. 1. Ser. i.—iii.

us in him. By firmly believing this, we shall conquer the world, and gain a victory of an infinitely different and more exalted nature, than they who are strangers to Christ, or who reject him, ever have done, or can possibly do. SECT. VIII. Ver. 4

May our stedfast faith in him furnish us with a substantial attestation that we are *born of God*; and may we prove it to be sincere, by *loving the children of God, and by keeping all his commandments*. We must surely acknowledge, that his commandments are reasonable; and if we have a genuine love to God existing in our hearts, it will render the observance of them pleasant and delightful. And if we are not possessed of that evidence of love, which arises from a disposition to obedience, let us remember, he hath fairly and frequently warned us, that *no other expressions of love*, how fervent and pathetic soever, will be accepted or allowed by him. That our faith may be confirmed, and our love awakened, let us often look to Christ, as coming *by water, and by blood*. Let us meditate on that *mysterious stream of blood and water*, which came forth from his wounded side. Let us solemnly remind ourselves of the *baptismal water*, in which we were washed, and of the *sacred cup, the communion of the blood of Christ*, referring to this great important event. And while we are contemplating the memorial of his humility, let us also consider him as *one with the Father and the Holy Spirit*; and as each of the *sacred three* join their testimony to the truth of the gospel, and join their kind offices for supplying to us the invaluable blessings of it, let us joyfully ascribe glory to each, world without end. Amen.

SECT. IX.

The Apostle concludes his epistle; declaring its general design to be the confirmation of their faith; and reminding them of the encouragement they had to hope, that their prayers should be heard, for themselves, and for others, who had not sinned unpardonably. And he then adds a reflection on the happy difference which the knowledge of God in Christ made between them, and an ignorant and wicked world. 1 John V. 13, to the end.

1 JOHN V. 13.

THESE things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal

1 JOHN V. 13.

AND now, to draw towards a conclusion; these things have I written to you, who believe in the name of the Son of God, to confirm your faith, and establish your joy, that ye may know, that, if your attachment to him is of the right kind, you have, in consequence of it, an interest in eternal life; and that, this hope operating

SECT. IX.

1 John V. 13.

REPT.
18.1 John
V. 13.

rating to produce the substantial fruits of genuine and universal obedience, *ye may yet more fully and stedfastly believe on the mighty and Divine name of the Son of God*^a. Then you may be assured of the certain truth of his religion, in proportion to the degree in which you inwardly experience its noble effects; and may in consequence of this, keep your hearts continually fixed upon him, in the many important

- 14 *ways in which faith exhibits him. And this is the confidence which we have towards him, as our prevalent Intervessor and mighty Saviour at God's right hand: that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us*^b graciously; that he observes and takes notice of all our petitions. And we are sure his is not an ineffectual notice; for *if we know that he heareth us, whatsoever we ask, we know as a farther consequence since he is ever able to carry all his gracious purposes into immediate execution, that we shall certainly have an accomplishment of those petitions which we have asked of him*^c; supposing, as I said before, they are agreeable to his will; and it is always his will, that his people should be truly happy, and be supplied with every necessary good.

- 15 And let me now add one precaution, with regard to the cases, in which it may be proper to remember offenders in our prayers: *if any one see his brother commit a sin, (which is) not unto death, that is, any sin, but that which is marked*

OUT

^a *That ye may believe on the name of the Son of God*. It is manifest, the apostle does not in this clause, to establish their faith, ground, or evidence of Christianity, building upon them. But the good confession, which his whole discourse has a tendency to promote, would certainly have a strong influence to confirm their faith; as every disposition would appear to be the effect of the good; and as an effect and so the testimony of the apostle to persuade them, was a strong confirmation of their being sound believers. As the great facts which had before been recorded upon their credit. I look upon this as a strong tie to persevere, or appeal on to what Dr. Whiston has advanced, that Christians are argued to the New Testament, to believe in Jesus Christ.

^b *That if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us*. As believing Tribulation compass this refers particularly to the apostle. (Compare Mat. xxiv. 18.

eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

15 And if we know that he heareth us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother in a sin which is not unto death,

he

16; 1 John x. 13, 14, xxi. 25, 24.) But as few of the apostles could be concerned in this address of St. John, and there are no many promises of the *grants of power* scattered up and down in the *Old and New Testaments*, (see Dr. Crock, on the *Prophet*, cap. iii. 5, vi.) that I would by no means find fault with the interpretation.

^c *If we know that he heareth us—we shall have the petitions*. If ye pray, ground, in the preceding verse, *ask ye merely knowing what we say*, for then there would be no reason to limit the attention to our asking any thing according to his will; and it may seem, that if we take it for *answering our petitions*, it is a *misreading*; it is *unnecessary* to interpret the former clause of *taking notice of us*, the other of *answering in consequence of that notice*. The *intercession* of God to fulfil all his gracious purposes in favour of his people, seems to be the medium on which the confidence is grounded.

he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it,

out in the awful words of our Lord Jesus Christ as unpardonable; *he shall ask, and may hope that, through the Divine goodness, he shall give him life*: he may cheerfully expect that God will return in mercy to *those who sin, not unto death*. There is indeed a sin, [that is,] unto death, I mean such an apostacy from Christianity, as is attended with blaspheming the operations of the Spirit of God, and ascribing them to Satan; and *I say not, that he, whose aid may be requested on such a sad occasion, should pray concerning that*; for Christ has told us it shall never to be forgiven in this world, or the next. And as nothing but a miracle of Divine grace, never to be expected, can recover a person in such circumstances, it is better to wave the petition, how much soever we may be disposed to lament the misery of the unhappy creature who is fallen into it. Every instance of *unrighteousness is indeed sin*, and every breach of his law must be displeasing to God, and be esteemed matter of just censure and lamentation; *but there is a sin, not unto death*, in the sense just assigned. There are indeed many, from which it evidently appears, that persons may be recovered; and in all such cases, Christian charity will require you to pray for your brethren. And from this dreadful evil Divine grace will preserve every good man; for *we know that whoever is born of God, does not sin*, in this terrible and ruinous manner; *but he who is born of God, diligently keepeth himself from it, and Satan the wicked one, who is the great abettor of all evil, doth not touch, or come near him, but is immediately repelled in his first assaults*.

SECT.
IX.
1 John
V. 16.

17 All unrighteousness is sin; and there is a sin not unto death.

18 We know that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

[*d I say not that he should pray concerning that.*] It seems to be intended as a brand set on a person who had been guilty of the sin here specified, that he was not to be prayed for by his converted fellow-Christians. Some indeed would interpret this sin of the more heinous kind of offences punishable with death by human laws: but I can see no sort of reason for refusing the charity of our prayers to persons in such circumstances. Others think it refers to the case of illness; but there is no express mention of it here; and it seems to have been taken for granted without reason, that *this text* is parallel to James v. 14, 15. It is certain, that illness in case of

a capital crime, would not delay the execution. The popish distinction between mortal and venial sins will however appear to have no foundation in this text upon the interpretation we have given, or indeed upon any we have mentioned. The chief difficulty remaining is, how it could be known, that the apostacy in question was attended with such circumstances as made it the unpardonable sin? Where it was most difficult to distinguish, the gift of discerning spirits, might infallibly decide; where it was dubious, charity would incline to the milder extreme; and conditional prayer might however be offered.

SECT.
XI.1 John
V. 19.

20

saults. *We Christians do indeed know, that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness*: it is in subjection to the wicked one, and lies wounded and slain under him. *But we know, that when the whole human race was in this helpless and miserable condition, the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in the Father, and in his Son Jesus Christ: he is the true God and eternal life*¹; he partakes with the Father in proper deity; and our immortal life is supported by union with him.

- 21 See to it, therefore, my dear little children, that you adhere to the worship of this true God alone, and *keep yourselves from idols* of every kind; whom the jealous God will not suffer to share with him, either in the offices of religious worship, or in the supreme affection of the mind. *Amen*, may you be so kept and preserved to eternal life!

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true: (not in his Son Jesus Christ.) This is the true God, and eternal life.

21 Little children, keep yourselves from idols. Amen.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us thankfully own the Divine goodness, in giving us so many helps for the confirmation of our *faith*; and learn the importance of its being thus confirmed, from that variety of provision made

¹ *The world lieth in wickedness*; a saying, say, in the *Septuagint*.] The *Hebrew* world here, as the *Latin* creation, *Gen.* viii. 12, signifies that part of the world in which Christianity was not conveyed. — Some have gone, that by the *world's lying in wickedness*, or *in sin*, among the *apostles* refers to the abandoned wickedness of the *Roman* emperors, by whose means the most enormous impiety and immorality was promulgated through the whole empire by *persecution, officers*, and *edicts*. *Comp.* *Evangelium*, p. 174. Mr. *Beggs*, who supposes that hell is situated in the air, observes, that the *earth*, on that hypothesis, lies, as it were, in the *midst* and *fringes* of it. See his *Lectures* concerning the *Heavenly world*, p. 191. But I rather think the word *world* alludes to the circumstance of a body which *lies dead*; in which sense it is often used by *Homer*; and on this interpretation it gives us a most compassionate idea of the great misery and helpless state of mankind, *fallen* by the stroke of this formidable enemy, the *wicked one*, (*ὁ πονηρὸς*;) and insulted over by him as his prey.

² *This is the true God*.] To paraphrase this of the *true religion*, as a very celebrated *divine* does, is quite enervating the force of *scripture*, and taking a liberty with plain words by no means to be allowed. It is an argument of the *Deity of Christ*, which almost all those who have wrote in its defence have urged; and which, I think, none who have opposed it, have so much as appeared to answer.

³ *Keep yourselves from idols*.] Archbishop *Talbot*, (Vol. II. p. 488,) who interprets the *idols* *idolatry*, as signifying total apostasy from the Christian religion to the heathen idolatry, urges this clause, the connection of which with the context he thinks not able to be accounted for, as proof of it. But a man might count the *new death* by falling back into *Judaism*, though guilty of no idolatry; and the caution here suggested, may be very well accounted for, from the general circumstances of the church near that time, even though there should be no very immediate connection between *this clause* and the preceding context, as the Archbishop supposes.

made for its establishment. The declared end of *the apostle* in writing this epistle was, *that they who believed in the name of the Son of God, might more firmly believe in it.* Lord, increase our faith, and with it our zeal for him, in whose name we believe, and our love to each other, for his sake: then shall we have *eternal life the gift of God, in Christ Jesus our Lord*; and in the mean time may address the throne with cheerfulness, and present *our petitions* in a pleading and confident hope, *that asking what is agreeable to his will*; and all that he knows to be subservient to our truest interest is so, *he will hear us, and we shall receive the things that we ask.* Encouraged by this promise, with what boldness may we come to the throne of grace, *that we may receive mercy and grace to help in every time of need!* (Heb iv. 16) Let his compassion to us teach us to have compassion on *our brethren*, on our afflicted brethren; yea on those, whose miscarriages have evidently brought their afflictions upon them. Let us not too soon pronounce the case of a sinner *hopeless*; but rather subject ourselves to the trouble of some fruitless attempts to reclaim him, than omit any thing where there may be a possibility of succeeding. May Divine grace awaken all to stand at the remotest distance, not only from the unpardonable sin, but from whatever might dishonour God, and endanger our own souls: for every sin is deadly and malignant, though every one be not the sin unto death. May we keep ourselves, and be kept by Divine grace, in such a manner, that the wicked one may not touch us; but all his attempts be turned into his own shame and confusion!

And O, may God excite our pity to a world which lies in wickedness; and animate us to use our utmost endeavours, to recover those out of the snare of the devil, who are led captive by him at his pleasure. (2 Tim. ii. 26.) May we be made sensible of the rich and distinguishing grace of God, if we can say that we are, not only by an external profession, but an inward union, in him that is true in the Lord Jesus Christ. Him let us adore, as with the Father, and the Holy Spirit, the true God. Him let us seek, as eternal life; and let us keep ourselves from all those idols, which would alienate our regard from God, and by the pursuit of which our eternal life might in any degree be endangered.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF

ST. JOHN.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

SECOND AND THIRD EPISTLES OF ST. JOHN.

THESE epistles have been both very improperly ranked under the denomination, *general* or *catholic*; since each is inscribed to a single person; one to a woman of distinction, styled here the *elect lady*; and the other to Gaius; probably the same person with Gaius of Corinth, who is styled by St. Paul his *host*, and is celebrated for his hospitality to the brethren; a character very agreeable to that which is here given of Gaius by the apostle John.

There is no fixing the *date* of these two epistles with any certainty. It in a great measure depends on the date of the *first* epistle: soon after which, it is generally agreed, both these were written. And this indeed appears exceeding probable, from that coincidence both of sentiment and expression, which occurs in all these *epistles*; and from hence it is inferred, that the state of things in the Christian church, referred to in these *smaller epistles*, was very much the same as it was at the time of writing the *first* epistle, and that the apostle having *lately* written it, had it now particularly in his view, and the sentiments and expressions of it present to his mind. And possibly about the same time that he sent his *first* epistle to Christians in *general*, he might send his *second* to this honoured lady, and his *third* to his friend Gaius in particular, as a mark of peculiar regard. I shall not here enter into the debate concerning the *authenticity* of these two epistles, especially as I have already suggested on some former occasions, such general sentiments as are very applicable on this.

The brevity of these *epistles* renders it needless to give any other analysis of them than I have done in the *contents* prefixed to each respectively; to which I refer the reader.

A
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES
ON
THE SECOND EPISTLE
OF
St. JOHN.

SECTION I.

The Apostle John, addressing himself to a worthy Christian lady, expresses his joy in her good character, and that of her children; exhorts to continued love, and to guard against deceivers, whom it would be dangerous to countenance and encourage; referring what he had farther to say till he should make her a visit.— 2 John throughout.

2 JOHN I.
THE elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in

2 JOHN I.
THIS letter is addressed by John, well known in these parts by the name of *the Elder*^a called under that character, to preside in the churches,

SECT.
i.

2 John
1.

^a *The Elder.*] The concealment of the name of the author can be no objection against ascribing it to St. John; since his name is also concealed in the *first epistle*, which is universally allowed to be his. Nor was it customary with this apostle, in any of his writings, to be free in mentioning his own name. His styling himself the *elder* in this and the following epistle, is probably the reason why they were ascribed by some of the *ancients* not to the apostle John, universally acknowledged to be the author of the *first* epis-

tle, but to John, an *elder* or *presbyter* of Ephesus. He who would see the testimonies of the *fathers*, that the apostle John was the author of these two epistles, may consult the second part of Dr. Lardner's *Credibility of the Gospel History*. There can hardly be stronger internal arguments, that the three epistles, now commonly ascribed to St. John, were the production of the same author, than may be derived from that very remarkable similarity of sentiment and *phraseology* which appears in them all, on the slightest attention.

^b *The*

SECT.
C.
of John
L. 3.

churches, *to the elect lady*, whom I need not name, as her excellent christian graces render her so gloriously distinguished; *and to her children whom I love in the truth*, on those principles which the gospel, the great system of truth, requires with respect to those who so remarkably support and adorn it. *Nor* indeed do I only love her and them, *but* they are beloved *also* by all those who know the truth, and who have had any opportunity of forming any intimate acquaintance with them. These amiable persons are justly dear to us all, *because of the truth which dwelleth in us, and I doubt not shall be in us for ever*. And particularly so deeply is it grounded in your mind and heart, that I am persuaded the relish of it will never be lost, be the remaining years of life ever so many, or the events of them ever so trying. May a rich assemblage of every desirable blessing, *grace, mercy, [and] peace, be with you all from God the Father of all, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father*, and may it animate you to walk in truth, and in universal love, according to the tenor of that glorious gospel with which he hath favoured you.

I rejoined greatly, *when*, in some of those excursions which I made for the service of the gospel, I found some of thy children walking in a manner agreeable to the system of Divine truth, and according to the commandment which we have received from God the Father. And now I beseech thee, my dear and honoured lady, not as writing to thee a new and unknown commandment, but that which we had from the beginning of our acquaintance with our Divine Master, and the religion he came to introduce, *that we may all love one another*. And this is that love which alone can prove acceptable to him, *that we should constantly walk according to his commandment*; and this is the commandment, *as ye have heard from the beginning, that ye should walk in it*; this was the great end of the gospel, to give us proper directions for our conduct

in the truth, and now I only, but also all they that have known the truth;

2 For the truth's sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 Grace be with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoined greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that ye walk after the commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

[The elect lady.] Lord Berington is of opinion, the lady here spoken of is the church at Jerusalem, sent to that at Ephesus. *Brit. Mus. Ser. p. 51*, and the notion seems to have been taken from Dr. Whately. Compare Isaiah lii. 1; Gal. iv. 25, &c. But the arguments are

by no means convincing: and verse 10, seems a strong objection against it. It is probable that this lady (called here *elect*) copy, from whence some have famed her proper name was *Electa*, and others, *Cyra*, was a person of considerable distinction.

duct, and motives to engage us to act accordingly. And these rules and principles have been so plainly and faithfully delivered to you, that I need not now say any thing more in relation to them.

SECT.

1.

2 John

6.

7 For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to yourselves that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God; he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that bid-
deth him God speed,
is partaker of his evil
deeds.

I refer you to those sacred lessons into which 7
at your first conversion to Christianity, you
were initiated; *because many deceivers are gone
out into the world, who confess not that Jesus
Christ is come in the flesh.* And this is a most
certain mark of a deceiver and an antichrist;
and if any would go about to refine upon the
doctrine of the incarnation and passion of our
blessed Redeemer, as if they were allegorical,
and expressed mere appearances, and not reali-
ties, whatever sublime notions he may pretend,
he is to be rejected with abhorrence. Let me 8
therefore beseech you, and all my Christian
friends, to whom this letter may come, that ye
look to yourselves, and let us all attend to the
caution, *that we may not lose the things we have
already wrought in the service of Christ, but
persevering and abounding in it, may receive the
ample reward* which I trust through Divine grace 9
is laid up for us. For it is certain, that *every one
who in this respect transgresseth and remaineth
not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not an interest
in God; but he that remaineth in the doctrine
of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son,*
whose cause and whose favour are inseparable.
*And if any one come unto you, under the cha- 10
racter of a religious teacher, and bring not this
doctrine, receive him not into [your] house, to
give him countenance and support, neither wish
him good success.* For he that thus supports 11
and maintains him, and *wisheth him good success,*
in a case like this, though he does not actually
engage

c *Come in the flesh.*] The Apostle here alludes to the rise of those heretics who affirmed that Christ only came in appearance.

d *Wish him good success.*] Thus the Jews, as Dr. Lightfoot and Dr. Whitby observe, were forbid to say *אשר*, or *God-speed*, to an excommunicated person, or to come within four cubits of an heretic. But the apostle must not be here understood, as excluding the common offices of humanity to such persons: for that is contrary to all the general precepts of benevolence

to be found in the gospel. But to have received a seducing teacher into their houses, and have given him suitable accommodations, would have been showing him such regard, and affording him such support, as indeed, in some measure would have made them answerable for the mischief he might do in the church; such favours being not merely offices of common humanity, but of patronage and friendship; and in the general, at least a testimony of their approbation, as well as kindness.

engage himself to labour in it, *is partaker of his evil deeds*, and in the sight of God and man, accessory to the damage, which such a seducer may, in consequence of such encouragement, bring upon the church.

- 12 *Having many other things to write unto you, which might have employed my pen in a much longer epistle, I would not [do it] with paper and ink; but break off here, as I hope ere long to open my mind much more largely when I come to you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be fulfilled; and we may have mutual reason to acknowledge, that we have received much greater satisfaction than this imperfect method of converse can afford. In the mean time, I shall only add, that the children of thine elect sister salute thee, and I join with them in the kindest wishes which the sincerest friendship can form. And may God accomplish them. Amen.*

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

IMPROVEMENT

Ver. 1 LET us observe this delineation of a *love truly Christian*; the love, which the *apostle*, and all who knew the truth, are said to have had towards *this elect and excellent lady, for the truth's sake* which dwelt in her. Adored be that grace, which preserved her in so high a rank of life, from temptations which could not fail to surround her! that grace, which rendered her an example of wisdom and piety, great and eminent in proportion to her exalted situation!

- Not can we forbear reflecting, *how happy*, in consequence of this, she herself was, possessed of *grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord, in truth and love*! What were all the secular honours by which she was distinguished! What the possession of *riches*, which in their own nature, and unimproved to the pious and charitable purposes to which she improved them, are ever empty and unsatisfactory: what are *these*, when compared with such important blessings! We cannot but rejoice, at this distance of time, and ignorant as we are of the name, situation, and history, of *this worthy lady, that her children walked in the truth*. It was a singular joy to John, and may be so in a degree to all; and may teach us to lift up our hearts to God in prayer, that all Christian parents, especially pious mothers, and more particularly those whose character in life is so eminently distinguished, may enjoy this happiness, and see the seed they are with such commendable industry sowing

sowing in the minds of their tender offspring, growing up, and bringing forth much fruit. SECT.
i.

We have, in the beloved apostle, an excellent pattern of a becoming care, to make a correspondence with our Christian friends Ver. 5, 6
useful: which we shall do, if like him, we are exhorting them to the cultivation of mutual love, and to a constant uniform care in keeping the commandments of God; if we continue warning them against the prevailing sins and errors of the day, and urging them to a holy solicitude, that they may not lose what they have already attained, but may receive full reward for every work of faith, and labour of love in consequence of a course of resolute and persevering piety. 8

Persons of the most distinguished goodness have need to be cautioned against that excess of generosity and hospitality, which might sometimes make them partakers with seducers in their evil deeds, by giving them their audience, and wishing them good success, while by their fair speeches, they impose upon the simplicity of open and upright hearts, who, because themselves are void of fraud, are often void of suspicion too. 10, 11 But there is a prudent caution to be observed upon this head; and it is the part of faithful friendship to suggest it; for many deceivers are come out into the world. For our security against them, let us be always upon our guard, and take care to continue in the doctrine of Christ: that so we may have the Father, and the Son; and if we are interested in their favour, we shall stand in need of nothing, and shall have nothing of which to be afraid. 9 Amen.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE SECOND
EPISTLE OF ST. JOHN.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF
ST. JOHN.

WITH

CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE THIRD EPISTLE

OF

St. JOHN.

SECTION I.

The Apostle John, in this short epistle to Gaius, expresses his concern for his prosperity, and his joy in the honourable character he maintained for Christian candour, hospitality, and zeal; cautions him against the ambitious and turbulent practices of Diotrephes; and recommending Demetrius to his friendship, refers what he had further to say, to a personal interview. 3 John, throughout.

3 JOHN 1.

THE Elder unto the well-beloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth.

3 JOHN 1.

THE elder addresses this epistle to the beloved and hospitable Gaius^a, whom I love in the truth, and hold as dear in the bowels of Christ, from a regard to the advancement and honour of his gospel.

SECT.
i.

3 JOHN
I.

2 Beloved, I wish above

Beloved, I pray, that in every respect^b, thou mayest

a Gaius.] We read of one Gaius, of Corinth, Rom. xvi. 23. who hospitably received the apostle Paul, when he went out to preach the gospel gratis; and if this were, as he seems to have been, the same, he was St. Paul's convert: nor is St. John's calling him *his child* an argument to the contrary; since in the general he addresses all Christians in the same tender and affectionate stile, agreeably to the sweetness of his temper, and

suitably to his advanced years. Compare Dr. Whitby in loc.

b In every respect: *ὑπερ πάντων*.] Our English translation is, *above all things*. Mr. Hallet would render it, *above all persons*; as if he had said, you are the person, for whose temporal and spiritual advantage I am concerned more than any other. Hallet's Notes and Discourses, Vol. I. p. 61, 62. But the words may so justly bear the translation I have given them, by which all

SECT.
I.
St. John
2.

most prosper; and particularly that thou mayest be in health; or I have reason to believe, that *thy soul prospereth*, for I doubt not but that religion flourisheth in thy heart, and abundantly justifies my wishing thee as healthful and prosperous as thou art good. For I rejoiced greatly when the Christian brethren came from that part of the world in your neighbourhood, and testified concerning thy truth, as thou walkest in the truth, and adornest the gospel by an exemplary behaviour. For indeed I have no greater joy, than this thing gives me, that I may hear my Christian friends, whether converted by me, or others, whom I look upon as my dear children, are walking in the truth, and according to those directions which our Lord Jesus Christ himself, who is the Way, the Truth, and the Life, has given us. And, beloved, I must declare my entire approbation of thy conduct, and can openly bear my testimony to it, that thou dost faithfully, *whosoever thou performest towards the brethren, and towards strangers*. thy behaviour to thy fellow-Christians known to thee, and to those with whom thou hast little acquaintance, yea, to all who have occasion to cast themselves upon thy hospitality, is much to the credit of the gospel, and I doubt not but it proceeds from a principle of true faith, and overflowing love to our common Redeemer. And indeed many of the Christian strangers, who have been thus generously entertained by thee, have testified very honourably concerning thy love before the church, *whom thou dost well in bringing forward in their journey, in a manner worthy of God*, proceeding from a principle of

above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy than to hear that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost to the brethren and to strangers.

6 Which have borne witness of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward in their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well.

all manner of delicacy is ensured, that I think it more preferable to either of the former. And in both the mention of so good an authority as Erasmus's Sentences, who translates it *de caritate*.

b. *Testified concerning thy truth, as thou walkest*. Some have supposed the apostle here means, that they bore witness to Gaius's sincerity, and that too by the idea we should add to *walk* in this place, in order to avoid that tautology which there would be in the next clause, if we understood him here to speak of his faith in the gospel. But though it is allowed that sincerity may signify sincerity, yet if ye suppose that to be the case here, it will be necessary to understand it in two different

senses in the same sentence; and I think the latter clause, *walking in the truth*, may have a further idea than merely his faith, which I have expressed in the paraphrase.

c. *That I may hear*. Dr. Waley takes notice of this, as an observation which many have made, that the use of the participle *as* for *and* and *for* is a peculiarity in St. John's style.

d. *Bringing them forward in their journey*. This may possibly be understood in a spiritual sense, of assisting them in their travels through this wilderness to the heavenly world. Or it may have a literal signification, and then *our kind of hospitality and charity is put for the rest*. But I rather prefer the former sense.

f. *They*

7 Because that for his name's sake they went forth taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church: but Diotrophes, who loveth to have the pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doeth, prating against us

of Divine love, and correspondent to the relation in which you and they stand to him. And whatever thou dost for them, our great Lord will take as done to himself; for it was on his account, and out of zeal for his honour and interest, that they went out, abandoned their habitations, possessions, and callings, that they might spread his gospel; receiving nothing of the Gentiles^f, among whom they laboured; that they might take off all suspicion of those mercenary views, above which divine grace had so far raised them. We ought therefore, all of us, who have any habitation of our own, hospitably and respectfully to receive such; that, if Divine Providence do not give us an opportunity of laying ourselves out, as they do, in the ministerial office, we may become, as it were, fellow-labourers with them in the service of the truth, and through Divine grace, may be entitled to a part in their reward.

I have lately written to the church, about 9 which I know you are so much concerned; but I sometimes fear, lest it should not be with so good success as I could wish; for Diotrophes^g, who affects the pre-eminence among them, even above the apostles of Christ themselves, hath not received us with becoming regard; and his interest with some of the members is much greater than it ought to be. Therefore if I come, as I hope I quickly shall, I will be mindful of the works which he does; many of which are very irregular, while he is continually prating^h against us with idle, petulant, and malicious words; and

SECT.
i.

3 John
7.

^f They went out, receiving nothing of the Gentiles; Εξήλθον, μηδεν λαμβανοντες απο των εθνων.] Beza refers απο των εθνων to εξηλθον, and understands it, that the persons here spoken of, went out from their respective countries and native places, (απο των εθνων,) leaving all their worldly possessions, (μηδεν λαμβανοντες,) to go and preach the gospel. And in support of this construction, he observes, that παρα should have been used after λαμβανοντες, and not απο. But Mat. xvii. 25, 26, and 1 John ii. 27, are evident confutations of this remark. And whereas he thinks it absurd to imagine, the unbelieving Gentiles would contribute to the support of the preachers of the gospel, it is an obvious reply, that των εθνων may mean the believing Gentiles, as it is certain the word frequently does, Wolfius, who agrees with Beza, in referring

απο των εθνων to εξηλθον, understands it of their being driven and forced out by the Gentiles, having been stript of their possessions; which would render them the more proper objects of kindness and hospitality. But there is nothing of this in the idea suggested by the word εξηλθον, and the more common signification of it is to go out voluntarily. See Wolfii Curæ Philolog. Vol. V. p. 334.

^g Diotrophes.] It is uncertain who he was. Grotius thinks he was a Gentile convert, who would not admit the Jews; but it seems rather more probable that he was a Jew, who opposed the admission of the Gentiles, and set himself up as the head of a party, in opposition to the apostles.

^h Prating: φλυαζων.] Compare 1 Tim. v. 13, note l.

and not content with this, goes yet further in his opposition; for he receives not the brethren himself, though he knows they come from us, and hinders those who would receive them, from doing it; and casts [them] out of the church, forbidding them either to officiate, or communicate where his influence extends; than which nothing can be more tyrannical or intolerable.

us with malicious words; and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 As for thee, my beloved brother, *unlike art that which is evil, but that which is good*, behold such a conduct as his with a just abhorrence; and act according to that model of humility and condescension which you have seen in others, who may justly claim an authority much superior to his. *He that doeth good is of God*: he knows him, and he imitates his most amiable and spotless pattern; but *he that does evil*, that harbours such malignant passions, and behaves in so injurious a manner, whatever high notions he may pretend to, *has not seen God*, but is plainly ignorant of his perfections and of his will.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doeth good, is of God; but he that doeth evil, hath not seen God.

12 *Demetrius*, on the contrary, is a most excellent person, who *has a good testimony from all men, and even from the truth itself*; and we have also, upon all occasions, borne and do bear [the same] testimony; and ye know that *this our testimony is true*.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth itself; you, and we, also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 *I have many other things*, which I should be glad to write to you; but *I will not write them to you by ink and pen*, as it would take up too much time, and I should not be able, after all,

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee.

14 fully to express myself. *But I hope quickly to see thee, and to speak face to face*, with all the freedom we could desire; till that time therefore, I refer what I might now further say; and

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face.

15 only add, *Peace [be] to thee*, and every desirable blessing from God our Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord. *The Christian friends*, who are here with me, *salute thee*; and I desire, that thou wouldst *salute the friends* that are with thee by name, and assure them of my most cordial and entire respect.

15 Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. 1 How happy was *Gaius* in the friendship of that apostle, whom *Jesus* had honoured with such a distinguishing degree of his friendship

ship. How much happier still was he, in a *soul* so thriving and *prosperous*, that even such a friend, who could not but hold flattery in detestation, should be able to make the good state of his soul, a *standard* by which to adjust his wishes in relation to his *temporal* 2 affairs. O what a *curse* would this be upon many, that they might *prosper even as their souls prospered*! And yet what is *all other* prosperity without this, but like that of *fools, which destroys them*, (Prov. i. 32.) How agreeable is it to a true *Christian*, to hear well of the behaviour of those who are dear to him in the bonds of peculiar friendship; to hear of their *walking in the truth*; and 3, 4 especially when these are *our own children*, or those whom God has made us the means of *converting*, or those whom we have been concerned in *training up* for him. O that those especially, to whom the education of *many* has been committed, may have this great happiness. "Visit each of our children, and young friends, O Lord, with thy mercy; animate them to *walk in thy truth*; and entail thy blessing upon them, when nothing remains, of all the offices of love we have betowed, but the *memory* of our exhortations and examples."

May sentiments of true *generosity* fill and expand our hearts 5 more and more. May we act toward strangers, and especially our brethren, in all the instances in which they need our assistance, in a manner *worthy of God*, worthy of the relation in which we and they, have the honour to stand to our *heavenly Father*; and especially, let our love abound to those who have a desire to 6 *spread the gospel*. And O, that it were more universal! O, that Divine grace would excite more to quit the indulgence of their *homes*, or their *countries*, if there be no bond of duty to detain them there, that they may go and *preach to the Gentiles*? And 7 though there be no prospect of any requital from *them*, God will open to them the inexhaustible stores of his celestial treasure, and *they shall be recompensed in the resurrection of the just*. Let them but see to it, that their intentions are *pure*, that they do it *for his sake*: and *their labour shall not be in vain in the Lord*.

But alas! how much more *common* even to this day, and that 9 among the ministers of the gospel, is the character of *Diotrephes*, who loved to have the *pre-eminence*! How has the spirit of *opposition* and *ambition* prevailed in the *church*, as well as in the 10 *world*! How does it *still* prevail! and in this view, how many *malicious words* have been uttered against those who have with the greatest simplicity desired to *follow the apostles*! With what contempt have they often been *cast out of the church*! Yea, in a thousand instances, with what savage cruelty hunted *out of the world*! 11 How long, O Lord, *holy and true*! Let us not however be impatient, but glorify God, in the most humble or painful station he shall

shall allot, by doing, or suffering all his will : still *imitating that*
 Ver. *which is good*, as becomes those *who are of God*, who hope to see
 him, and enjoy him for ever.

12 Let us endeavour, like *Demetrius*, to secure to ourselves a *good report of all men* ; but especially, let us see to it that we reverence *our own consciences*, and that we secure *their testimony*, which will be agreeable to that of *the truth itself*. So will our honour, and our happiness be secured ; and if any vapour should now rise to obscure it, the day is near, when *the Sun of righteousness* shall undoubtedly chase it away.

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR ON THE THIRD EPISTLE
 OF ST. JOHN.

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A

PARAPHRASE

ON

THE CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF

ST. JUDE.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.

A
GENERAL INTRODUCTION
TO THE
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES
ON THE
CATHOLIC EPISTLE OF ST. JUDE.

JUDE, or Judas, the author of this epistle, is often mentioned as one of the *apostles* of our Lord, and the brother of James the Less. The *canonical* authority of this epistle hath been disputed; but it is not the business of these commentaries to enter largely into such questions. Probably its authenticity would never have been doubted, had it not been for an imagination, ill-grounded indeed, that the author had quoted a *spurious* book, called the *prophecy of Enoch*. The reader may consult what learned men have written upon this argument, particularly Dr *Lardner*, in his *Credibility of the Gospel History*; Dr *Whitby* and Dr *Twells*, in the second part of his *critical examination of the new text and version of the New Testament*. The latter hath collected the principal materials with accuracy, and set them in a clear and convincing light.

There is a remarkable similarity between *this epistle* and part of the *second epistle of St. Peter*, which, as we observed in the *Introduction* to that epistle, was probably owing to this, that both the *apostles* drew their character of the false teachers, against whom they cautioned their readers, from the character given of the false prophets in some ancient *Jewish author*; and it is very possible too, (as Bishop *Sherlock* observes,) that St. Jude might have the *second epistle of St. Peter* before him.

Dr. *Mill* fixes the *date* of this epistle about the year 90, (see his *Prolegomena*, p. 17, sect. 145, edit. *Kuster*,) and his principal argument is, that the false teachers, which St. Peter describes as *yet to come*, St. Jude mentions as *already come*. But, on a comparison, there does not appear that *remarkable difference* in their phraseology, which will be sufficient to prove that St. Jude wrote his epistle *so long* after St. Peter's second epistle as is here supposed, though I acknowledge, it will prove that it was written *after it*.

The

The *design* of the apostle is plainly, "by describing the 'character of the false teachers, and pointing out the Divine judgments which persons of such a character had reason to expect, to caution Christians against listening to their suggestions, and being thereby perverted from the faith and purity of the gospel.'"

For the *analysis* of the epistle, I refer my reader to the *contents* prefixed to the *two sections*, into which I have divided it.

A
PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON
THE CATHOLIC EPISTLE
OF
St. JUDE.

SECTION I.

The Apostle Jude after a general salutation, exhorts the Christians to whom he wrote, strenuously to assert the purity of their common faith; reminding them of the destruction which came on God's professing people, yea, on the apostate angels for their sins; as well as on the inhabitants of Sodom and Gomorrah; and then he begins the description of some seditious and abandoned persons, from whom he imagined them in peculiar danger. Jude, ver. 1—11.

JUDE 1.
JUDE the servant of
 Jesus Christ, and
 brother of James, to
 them that are sancti-
 fied by God the Father
 and preserved in Jesus
 Christ, and called:

JUDE 1.

YOU receive this epistle from *Jude*, who like his brethren the other apostles, cannot but rejoice and glory in the title of a servant of *Jesus Christ*, and who is the brother of *James*, so well known by his distinguished services and sufferings in the cause of our Divine Master; and he inscribes it to those who are sanctified in *God the Father*, devoted to his service through the influence of his grace; who are also the called and preserved in *Jesus Christ*, brought into the fellowship of his religion, and guarded by his grace, in the midst of a thousand snares, which

SECT.
i.
—
Jude
1.

ASSET.

1.

Jude 2.

which might have tempted them to have made shipwreck of their faith. *May mercy, and peace and love, from our heavenly Father, and our compassionate Saviour, be multiplied to you :* and may you increase in all the happy fruits of Divine favour and mercy ; and especially, in that spirit of candour and charity which is to be num-

- 3 bered among the most precious of them. My *beloved, giving all diligence to write to you concerning the common salvation*^a, to the hope of which we are brought by the profession of the gospel, *I judged it necessary to direct my pen, particularly with respect to those unhappy attempts that have been made, to adulterate Christianity, by some who continue to profess a regard to it. I now therefore write to you, exhorting and beseeching [you] to strive earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints, for the instruction of every future age ;* and not to suffer any by violence or by fraud to rob you of so inestimable a treasure. *For some crafty and pernicious men have, as it were, with a serpentine art, glided in among us, who were of old, as it were, described and registered to this condemnation*^b, by God's righteous sentence denounced against crimes like theirs, long before they appeared in the world. *Impious and ungrateful men, who presume to turn even the grace of our God itself, which ought to be an everlasting*

2 Mercy unto you, and peace and love, be multiplied,

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me to write unto you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God

a *Giving all diligence to write to you concerning the common salvation, No.]* Some have explained the meaning in, That whereas he intended to write them a personal letter, he was compelled to go into some common subjects. I rather think he intends to declare by this expression, that the exhortation he now gives them, to contend earnestly for the faith, was indeed subsequent to promise that common salvation, he designed to lead them to the pursuit of. Bishop Sherlock thinks the faith delivered to the saints, is the same with the true commandment delivered, 2 Pet. ii. 21, that is, with the doctrine and instructions which the council of the apostles had sent them, with regard to those particular teachers. *Sherlock on 1 Pet.* p. 209, 215, Edit.

b *If they were registered to this condemnation.]* The word *επισημασμενοι* may well signify described and put upon record ; that is, whose character and condemnation may be considered as described in the

punishment of other notorious sinners who were a kind of representatives of them. Which interpretation I prefer to any other, as it tends to clear God of that heavy imputation which it must bring upon his moral character, to suppose that he opposed men to go against him, and then condemns them for doing what they could not but do, and what they were, independent on their own freedom of choice, fated to. A doctrine so pregnant with gloomy, and as I should fear, with fatal consequences, that I think it a part of the duty I owe to the word of God, to rescue it from the imputation of containing such a tenet. Bishop Sherlock thinks, the word refers to the description given of such kind of persons by an ancient writer of the Jewish nation, cited as he supposes in this epistle, and in the second chapter of the second epistle of Peter. *Sherk. on 1 Pet.* p. 181 5th Edit. Compare ver. 14, 5, 7, 6.

e God

God and our Lord
Jesus Christ.

SECT.
ii.

Jude 4

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves

everlasting source of love, and engagement to sanctity and obedience, *into an occasion of lasciviousness*; as if they thought they might with impunity go on to sin, that grace might abound; and denying God the only original Saviour^c and our Lord Jesus Christ, whom he has invested with universal dominion, to be acknowledged by all who would not be found rebels against himself! *But I would remind you, as you once knew this*, that having been taught it, you may never forget it, even *that the Lord, having saved the people of Israel from out of the land of Egypt, and rescued them by so glorious an interposition of his almighty power, afterward destroyed those that did not believe*, though they had once experienced so wonderful a deliverance. And thus should we have reason to fear, that notwithstanding our Christian profession, he would destroy us, if we adulterate and pervert his religion, after a manner contrary to its original design. *The angels also who kept not their first state^d, but suffering their minds to be transported with ambitious and irregular passions, were discontented in that high rank of being which Providence assigned them, and left their proper abode in the region of glory, instead of permitting them to advance themselves by their rebellion, he has by his righteous vengeance precipitated into the pit of destruction, and reserved in perpetual bonds, under darkness, in the infernal prison, to be brought forth at the judgment of the great day, and then to receive their final sentence.* And earth has produced 7 many awful scenes, in which the Divine vengeance has had its triumph over sinful mortals; as particularly *Sodom and Gomorrah^e, and the cities*

^c God the Sovereign, and our Lord, &c.] Some would render it, *our only Master, God and Lord.* See Dr. Watts on the Trin. p. 113. But it seems most agreeable to the general doctrine and phraseology of scripture, to retain our translation. Compare John xvii. 3.

^d Their first state: *την αγγελν ταυτων.*] Some translate these words, *the government of themselves.* But Dr. Scott interprets it of that place in heaven which was assigned them, and which they were not content with; and their leaving this first habitation he takes to have been a voluntary thing, and that they chose to come down

to the neighbourhood of this earth, that they might seduce mankind to join with them in their revolt. But this does not seem to suit the phrase of their being cast out, 2 Pet. ii. 4. Mr. Boyse would translate it, *their own head*, that is, Christ. Boyse's Sermon. Vol. III. p. 406. Compare Hos. i. 11, in the Seventy.

^e Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them in like manner with them: *τοις αμαρτωλοις περὶ αὐτας πόσιν.*] Some have pleaded, that this seems to imply, that the sin of the angels was fornication; and consequently that this epistle is not authentic. But there seems no necessity for interpreting the

cities about them, in like manner with them committing fornication, and by yet grosser and more unnatural licentiousness, going after strange and detestable gratifications of their pampered and indulged flesh, are set forth for an example to other presumptuous sinners; suffering that, which really appears a most lively emblem of the vengeance of eternal fire¹, having their lovely and fruitful country turned into a kind of hell upon earth. So these dreamers also, in their luxurious indulgences, suffer their thoughts to be amused with vain and polluted imaginations, whereby they defile the flesh, which ought to be sacred, together with the spirit, to the service of God. They seek light of domination, and authority derived from the Supreme Sovereign, and speak well of dignities, of persons in the most commendable stations. However we have heard in tradition, that Michael the archangel, when contending in dispute with the devil, concerning the body of Moses², which the angel was to bury privately, and he would have revealed, did not presume to bring against him a railing accusation but

themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

¹ Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

² Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but

the expression with such various signification, as it at least intimes that there was some of the same kind; it is sufficient that the common holds in this, that they were both guilty of very great wickedness.—There are some who refer our common tale, spoken, in this manner said there, to the same other story, who existed in the same manner with Sodom and Gomorrah; now is it any objection to this, as some have supposed it is, that such cannot agree with Daniel's vision; but in reality, those towns are of the same gender, see Luke xvi. 29. Mark vi. 11. Gen. xxi. 31. in the Society. And if they were not, tradition is more common than an evidence of power, in such a case as this, where only must refer to the men who inhabited these cities.

[*Vengeance of eternal life.*] Dr. Whitty has brought many arguments to prove, that the vengeance here spoken of must be the last of their lives, rather than their souls and produce immortality to show, that *eternal* is used in a sense consistent with this interpretation.

[*Incantations of dreamers.*] Our translations render this, *filthy dreamers*. The context shows they deserve the epithet; but as the Greek does not express it, I judged it most faithful to the original to omit it.

[*Body of Moses.*] Archbishop Tillotson, see his Works, Vol. II. p. 136, and

many other good writers, think this all intimated by Deut. xxxiv. 6. He supposes that had the devil been able to discover to the Jews the place where Moses was interred, they would afterwards have paid an honourable honour to his remains; and it would have gratified his malice exceedingly, to have made him an occasion of oblation after his death, who had been so great an enemy to it in his life. To prevent this, he thinks that Michael buried the body secretly. This proves by the way, that *and angels* are sometimes concerned in leading the power of *devils*, which must no doubt be a great vexation to those malignant spirits. But Mr. Baxter supposes it is a doubt, whether it were about the body of Moses, or Moses exposed on the altar, that there was this contention. Baxter's Works, Vol. II. p. 241.

[*A railing accusation.*] Archbishop Tillotson suggests, that the *archangel* was afraid the devil would have been too hard for him at railing. The words seem to me to intimate, that the angel thought it a part of the necessary duty to God, not to mention his name and judgment, in a *flaming* passionate manner, but mildly and gently. *Whitty* thinks the devil blasphemed, and that the angel did not accuse him but referred the matter to the judgment of the great day. *Warr's Manual* Vol. II. IV. 6, § 23. See also the Commentary of this learned

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not; but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core,

but had so much reverence for the Divine presence, as to speak with moderation and gentleness, even to that great enemy of God and men; and said, *the Lord rebuke thee* for this outrage, and teach thee to restrain such shocking expressions. (Compare Zech. iii. 2.) *But these daring and impious men blaspheme what indeed they know not; and what they naturally, as the irrational animals, know, the things which tend to the gratification of their inferior part, the low circle to which their knowledge and care is confined, in these they are corrupted,* by the gross and scandalous abuse of them, to the dishonour of God, and to their own infamy and destruction. *Woe be unto them, and woe will attend them; for they have gone in the way of Cain, that persecutor and murderer, while like him, they have despised the appointed method of God's mercy; and they have run on with prodigious eagerness in the description of Balaam's reward; enslaved like him, to mean secular views, they have abandoned themselves to sin and ruin, till at length they have perished in the contradiction of Korah; like him they have opposed God's appointed messengers, and his Son, to whom he has devolved the conduct of his church; and methinks, like him and his company, I see them already struck by the lightning of God's wrath, and overwhelmed with remediless destruction.*

IMPROVE-

Learned author in *loc.* whose remarks on all the verses are framed with great erudition and accuracy. Perhaps *ἐν ἑσθμῶσιν* *χρῆσιν ἐπιτελεῖν βλασφημίας* may signify, that he did not pass judgment upon his blasphemy, but referred him to God.

k *The Lord rebuke thee.*] It is highly probable the apostle refers to some ancient book, in which this fact was thus mentioned, and speaks upon the supposition of its truth, which the persons he reasoned against, did not dispute. And the argument does not lie in any regard shewn to the devil as a dignitary, and one who exercises dominion over subordinate evil spirits; for to be a leader of a band of such inexcusable rebels could entitle him to no respect; but it seems to arise from

the detestable character of the devil; as if he had said, If the angel did not rail even against the devil, how much less ought we against men in authority, even supposing them in some things to behave amiss: To do it therefore when they behave well must be a wickedness yet much more aggravated.

l *Naturally know.*] Compare the notes on the parallel texts in 2 Pet. ii. for the illustration of this and other passages which occur here.

m *Have perished.*] This is a genuine trace of a prophetic spirit, which speaks of things certainly future, as if they were past. And as such I thought proper to illustrate it in the *paraphrase*.

IMPROVEMENT.

SERMON.

Ver.

- How happy are the people of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, who in law are called, sanctified, and kept by the Divine omnipotence, through faith unto salvation ! For mercy and peace shall be multiplied upon them, till mercy hath, as it were, finished his commission, and conducted them to eternal peace. We learn from this example of the apostle before us, of how great necessity it is, in some circumstances, if ministers would promote the common salvation of their hearers, to guard them against the prevailing errors of the day, and to excite them earnestly to strive for the faith once delivered to the saints, as for a prize of the highest importance. May we rightly discern its nature, and be very careful, that while we are attempting to exert a *Christian zeal*, we do not mingle with it our own mistakes, and our own irregular passions, in such a manner as to tear in pieces what we are so eager to preserve. In short, let us learn from scripture, what that faith is, and what the importance of its respective articles are ; and let us always be endeavouring to maintain it in the spirit of love.
- May all who would disturb the church by pernicious doctrines, or scandalous practices ; and especially, they who would ungratefully turn the grace of God into lasciviousness, and thereby deny the only true God, and our Saviour, reflect upon the awful judgment of God on the rebel angels, and on sinful men, not on the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah only, but even on his own people, whom he had delivered from Egypt, when they proved obstinate and unbelieving ; and as we dread an exclusion from the heavenly Canaan, even, as we dread the chains of darkness, and the vengeance of eternal fire, let us avoid and abhor the character described in the following verses. The dream of lewdness, the brutal indulgence of sensuality, the contradiction of Korah, the covetousness of Balan, and the malignity of Cain. God has written down their condemnation and destruction in the eternal records of his word ; that they might be for a sign, and that others may hear and fear, and take heed that they do not so wickedly.

SECT. II.

The Apostle pursues the character of the scandalous professors he had mentioned before; and concludes with exhorting the Christians to whom he wrote, to endeavour to secure their own edification in faith and love, and to do their utmost for the preservation and recovery of others. Jude, ver. 12, to the end.

JUDE 12.

THESE are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds: trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

JUDE 12.

I MUST further proceed to caution you, my brethren, against those wicked and seducing men, who are so desirous of insinuating themselves into the Christian church; and whose attempts to corrupt it are so unwearied, and in many instances, so fatal. *These are spots in your love-feasts^a*, which tend to expose them to the reproach of the adversary; [*who*] *when they banquet with you, feed themselves without fear*, and will run into excesses, which if they be not resolutely suppressed, will be imputed to the whole body. They make indeed a great profession of their designs of usefulness in the church, but they are *clouds without water*, from which no refreshment or fruitfulness is to be expected; *borne about by the winds* of temptation, hither and thither, without any command of themselves; and if when they first took upon them the Christian profession, they gave some better hopes, as many of them perhaps did, they are like *trees, whose early buddings are withered^b*, and so now remain *without fruit*; yea, not only so, but are *twice dead^c*: successive summers and winters have passed over them, and they have been continually growing more fit for fuel, and so are now good for nothing but *to be utterly rooted up*, to be taken away from the plantation, which they only cumber, dishonour, and deform,

SECT.
ii.

Jude 12.

^a Love-feasts.] So I chose to render *αἰσχρογαστήριον*, as it is well known the *primitive Christians* had such feasts, though it seems that from the *abuse* of them by persons of a character like those here described, they were soon laid aside. See Mr. Hallet on the subject, *Notes on Disc.* Vol. III. Disc. 6. Dr. Lightfoot, and Dr. Whitby, who follows him, are not for referring the *αἰσχρογαστήριον* here mentioned to the Christian's feasts of charity; in opposition to whom, the learned reader may consult *Witsius' Commentary* on the place.

^b Whose early buddings are withered.] We render this, *whose fruit withereth*; but it seems to me, that *αἰσχρογαστήριον* is much more exactly rendered, as in this version, and the appearance of a *tautology* avoided.

^c Twice dead.] Some explain this of *natural corruption and apostacy*; but the gloss in the *paraphrase* seems much more easy and genuine. There is an admirable strength and spirit in the description given in the following verses.

d Wan-

deform, and cast into the fire. Their passions are violent and impetuous, like so many *fierce waves of the sea*, furiously *foaming out* the irregular tumults of their hearts; and in them, *their own shame*; *wandering stars*, which though for a while they may glitter, will soon have ended their course, will be found, notwithstanding all their blaze, destitute of any real and permanent light of their own, and in the number of those *to whom blackness of darkness is reserved for ever*; and will soon be driven to an eternal distance from the great Original of light and happiness, to which they shall never return.

14 And indeed, when I consider their characters and their actions, I may say, that according to the ancient tradition, *Enoch, also the mouth* in literal descent *from Adam, prophesied against them*; and described their crimes and their condemnation, *when he said, Behold, the Lord comes with myriads of his holy ones*, attended with legions of angels in his descent for this

15 important purpose: For he comes *to execute judgment upon all* according to their respective works; and by witnesses that cannot be confronted, particularly *to convict all the ungodly among them, of all their impious works which they have ungodly committed*; and he will then be mindful, not only of their cruel and oppressive acts, but *of all the hard and irreligious things which impious sinners have spoken against him and his people*—and certain it is, that these words are as suitable to their case as if it had been

16 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame, wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of his saints.

15 To execute judgment upon all, and to convict every man ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

d. *Wandering stars*]. The Jews are said to have called these teachers *stars*; and they are represented under that emblem, Eccl. 5. 16; et c. And as the promise is to have a very unusual meaning, having numerous allusions, and various other significations, there are perfect conformity of promise as contained in their promises, and as prophecies in their behaviour, so there were words.

14 *Enoch, also the mouth*]. A promise from mouth of darkness and deep is here promised to us, as it seems by the special prediction of God, and things that apostle Jude to describe how much what was promised and appeared in the tradition. It was by no means for proved, that this is a tradition from that tradition, called *Jude's prophecy*, or *Enoch's prophecy*, as *Enoch's prophecy* is called in the book from whence it was taken but only the truth of the promise passage.

Shedden's Prop. p. 122, 123, 5th Edit. Cambridge: 1790, 10, and the note there.

[*Enoch's prophecy*]. Mr. Shedden, (See. Ch. 1. p. 164) has given his opinion, and observes, that *Enoch's prophecy* may be referred, perhaps, to explain what was said before, of their being regarded as *stars* in the tradition, ver. 16. Some have thought the coming of the Lord here mentioned, was a vision attended with angels, to bring on the change. If it refer to the coming of the eternal judgment, it is a most remarkable testimony to a future state, not found in the New Testament, but present in it. And perhaps there is some thing, as I think it almost certain, to be proved, as to be revealed into the tradition under which he wrote, according to the principles which the learned Dr. Huet has so largely stated in his *Deve. Legum, &c.*

13 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts; and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men's persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But, beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ.

18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves, having not the Spirit.

20 But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith,

particularly intended. *These are murmurers*, that can never be contented with the allotment of Providence, or with the conduct of any about them; *that find fault continually with their lot, walking according to their own unbridled lusts; and their mouth speaks extravagant things*; some, by way of exclamation against those they disapprove, and others in the height of encomiums and panegyrics, on those who are their favourites, and the leaders of their party; *having [such] persons in admiration*, not so much for the sake of their real excellencies, as of some present gain which they meanly propose to themselves as the reward of their servile flattery.

But you, my beloved, instead of following these wandering guides, *remember the words which were formerly spoken by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ*^h, who have preached his gospel to you in all its purity and energy. *For they have told you, that in the last time*, profane mockers shall come, *walking according to their own ungodly and wanton lusts*ⁱ, and making a jest of those who do not run with them to the same excesses of riot. *These are they, who in many places separate themselves* from the church, as of a purer stamp, and more refined attainments than others; *sensual*, and entirely addicted to the low gratification of their animal life; by which they make it too apparent, *that they have not the Spirit*, whatever high pretences they may make to its extraordinary communications. *But I have the pleasing persuasion*, *that you, my beloved brethren*, will not only guard against being seduced by them, but, according to the exhortations so often given you, will still be *edifying yourselves* and one another, *in your most holy faith*; that understand-

ing

[*g Extravagant things.*] So I think *εὐπορία* may very probably be rendered; and if we may judge of extravagant things, by those which Irenæus in particular has recorded in his account of some early heresies, the expression was applied with the utmost propriety. See the same phrase Dan. xi. 36. in the Seventy. *Witsius in loc.*

^h *Apostles of our Lord, &c.*] The resemblance between this text and 2 Pet. iii. 2. is very remarkable. Bishop Sherlock observes it to be such as would incline one

to think, that St. Jude had the text in Peter before him, and omitted what hath a peculiar reference to the former part of St. Peter's epistle, and to which there was nothing in his own to answer. See his *Discourses on Proph.* p. 193. 5th Edit.

ⁱ *Ungodly lusts.*] For *ἀσεβῶν*, ungodly, some would read *αἰσχροῦς*, lascivious or wanton. See *Phil. Lips. against Collins*, p. 73. But as this reading is not absolutely necessary to the sense, I cannot persuade myself to alter the word merely on conjecture.

k *Garment*

SECT.
II.

Jude 16.

SECT.
II.

Jude 20.

ing its articles more clearly, and feeling their happy efficacy to promote the work of holiness in your souls, you may be more and more established against the attacks of these deceivers: especially, *praying in the Holy Spirit*, and under his influence, vouchsafed in answer to your prayers, making swifter advances in the Divine life. And be careful thus to *keep yourselves in the exercise of that sacred affection, the love of God*, which ought always to rule in your hearts: *looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life*, to which this compassionate Saviour will assuredly conduct all those who confide in him.

22 *And while you are yourselves animated with this cheerful hope, do your utmost for the preservation of others; and in this respect, on some have tender compassion*, and apply to them with the softest and most endearing offices of Christian friendship; *making a great difference between them, and the case of others, who have drank deeper of the poison, and are become*

23 *active in the mischief. It may seem to have an unkind appearance, but it is most certain, there are some, whom if you would save at all, you must attempt it with fear and trembling, by severe methods; as alarmed yourselves, and terrifying them, with the apprehensions of God's judgments; as if you were snatching [them] with eagerness out of the fire, into which they are fallen, or just ready to fall. And if you desire, that your efforts, in either of these cases, should be successful, you must take great care to preserve your own purity, hating even the garment that is spotted with the flesh*, lest by the touch of it you yourselves

24 *be polluted. I am sensible this will require strenuous vigilance and resolution; but I hope the grace of God will animate you to it. To this therefore now I solemnly commit you; even to him who is able to keep you from falling: rugged and dangerous as the ways of life are, and feeble as you know yourselves to be, he is able at length to present [you] blameless,*
and

faith, praying in the Holy Ghost.

21 Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire, hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultless before the presence of his

[*Garment spotted with the flesh.*] Mr. Crookshank interprets this of the caution, with which a man would avoid a garment, which had been worn by one who had a plague sore; but perhaps there may be a reference to such passages in the Mosaic

law, as Lev. xv. 4, 10, 17. See Wittsius on the place, who well defends this sense against Erasmus; whose opinion it was, that the apostle alludes to the white garment, which those who were newly baptized, put on in token of innocence.

his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the only wise God our Saviour be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever, Amen.

and in the full perfection of holiness, before the presence of his glory, in his final appearance; with exceeding great and unutterable joy. To him, as the only wise God, who is now become our Saviour, our Guardian, our Friend, and our Father, [be] glory and majesty, dominion and power, ascribed; and obedience, reverence, and love rendered, through Christ Jesus, both now and through all ages, world without end. Amen.

SECT.
II.

Jude 24.

25

IMPROVEMENT.

Let those, who have the honour of being numbered among the disciples of Christ, stand at the remotest distance from the evil with which these unhappy creatures are branded by the apostle in this epistle. And may Divine grace preserve all his churches from such spots in their feasts of charity! May our horizon be secured from those dark and gloomy clouds without water; the plantations of God among us be free from the incumbrance and disgrace of those withered and fruitless trees, twice dead, and plucked up by the roots! How illustrious was the prophecy, with which Enoch, the seventh from Adam, was inspired; and how precious is that fragment of antediluvian history, which is here preserved, and which shall surely be accomplished in its season! The day is now much nearer, when the Lord will come with ten thousands of his saints: may the ungodly remember it, and suppress in time the speeches which will then assuredly be reprov'd, and repent of the deeds, which if unrepented of, however forgotten now, will be brought into open view, and draw down upon their heads the destruction which at present seems to linger. That we may have confidence before him at his coming, let us remember the words of the apostle, and implore the influences of the Divine Spirit, which sensualists who walk after their own lusts, quench and stifle, and which they mock and deride. Let us, however, be concerned to edify ourselves in our most holy faith, and to pray in the Holy Ghost, under his influence, direction, and assistance. The security of the heart amidst so many temptations, and its richest cordial in all its afflictions, is the love of God; but how soon does the celestial flame languish and die, if it be not constantly fed with new fuel! Let it then be our care in humble dependence upon Divine grace, to keep ourselves in the love of God: which will be cherished in proportion to that degree of faith and hope, with which we look for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ

Ver. 12, 13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

Christ unto eternal life: for what can so powerfully excite our love to God as such a consideration?

Ver. If we do expect it, let us express our regard to the *salvation of*
 22 *others*, as well as to our own; and apply ourselves to those who seem to be in danger, with such *different* addresses of *awe* or *tenderness*, as their different circumstances and tempers may require.
 23 But some way or another, let us exert ourselves to *pluck them out of the fire*, who are in danger of falling into it, and perishing for ever.

A care to preserve our own characters and conscience *unspotted*, will be necessary to our courage, and hope of success, in such
 24 efforts as these. Let us therefore be more frequently looking up to him, who *is able to keep us from falling*, and to improve as well as maintain the work he has wrought in us, till we shall be *presented blameless before the presence of his glory*. Then shall our hearts know a joy beyond what earth can afford, beyond what heaven itself shall have given us in the separate state; then shall God also *rejoice* over us, and the joy of our compassionate Saviour be completed, in the seeing the full accomplishment of the *travail of his soul*. To him who has so wisely formed the scheme, and will faithfully and perfectly accomplish it, *be glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and for ever. Amen.*

THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR:

OR, A
PARAPHRASE
ON
THE REVELATION OF
ST. JOHN.

WITH
CRITICAL NOTES, AND A PRACTICAL IMPROVEMENT OF EACH
SECTION.



A

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

TO THE

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON THE

REVELATION OF ST. JOHN.

THOUGH the authority of this book was called in question in the beginning of the *third century*, yet this is no reasonable objection against receiving it into the sacred canon ; for perhaps no part of the New Testament, though of unquestionable authenticity and credit, was more universally acknowledged, or mentioned with higher respect, during the *two preceding centuries*. Dr. Mill observes, that in a few years after it was written, it was numbered among the *apostolical* writings, by the churches of Asia, the neighbouring churches of Syria and Samaria, the more distant ones of Africa, Egypt and Rome, and the other churches of Europe. Accordingly Mr. Loman, citing this remark of Dr. Mill, makes the following additional observation, "that hardly any one book hath received more early, more authentic, or more satisfactory attestations.

Its *canonical authority* being debated so late as the *third century*, when it had been universally admitted before, appears to have arisen, from the opposition made to those absurd opinions, which it is well known were entertained by several *fathers* concerning the *millennium*. These being entirely grounded upon an injudicious and mistaken interpretation of some *prophecies*, contained in this sacred book. Caius, with some others, to end the controversy as speedily and effectually as possible, weakly and indiscreetly ventured to deny the *authority* of the book, which had given occasion to it. If the reader would see this argument handled at large, and the sentiments of the *ancients* represented fully and distinctly, he may consult Dr. Mill's *Prolegomena*, Sir Isaac Newton's *Observations on the Apocalypse*, Dr. Twell's *third part of his Critical examination of the new text and version*, and Dr. Lardner's *second part of the Credibility of the Gospel-History*, *passim*.

This

This prophetic book is entitled, *The Revelation of Jesus Christ which he sent and signified by his angel to his servant John*. There is, in my opinion, very little reason to doubt, that the John here mentioned was the *evangelist* of that name, and the *author of the three epistles*. For concerning this John antiquity agrees, that he was banished to Patmos in the reign of Domitian, for his adherence to the Christian faith. And the author of this book informs the churches of Asia, (chap. i. ver. 9.) that *he, their brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, received these revelations, when he was in the isle called Patmos, for the word of God, and the testimony of Jesus Christ*. And if, with some learned men, we apprehend, that the tradition of the evangelist John being banished to the isle Patmos, was occasioned by this passage of the revelation, it shows at least, that it was the most early, as well as most generally received opinion of the ancients, that the *author of this book* was the same with *St. John the evangelist*. This book is commonly called, *The Revelation of St. John the Divine*. But this appellation of its author is not of canonical authority; it was first given to St. John by Eusebius, not to distinguish him from any other person of the same name, but on account of those mysterious and sublime points of divinity, with the knowledge of which he seems to have been favoured above his fellow apostles.

If the account of Eusebius is to be credited, that St. John was banished into Patmos, and there received his revelation, in the last year of the reign of Domitian, we may fix the date of this book, with great probability, about the year 96. I am aware, that some authors of very distinguished character, and particularly the great Sir Isaac Newton, place it earlier, and even before the destruction of Jerusalem. The learned Wolfius, (in his *Prolegomena* to the Revelation, in the fifth volume of his *Critica Philologica*) hath examined and related his opinion; I shall here only observe, that perhaps the seven churches of Asia were not founded so early as this opinion supposes, or at least they were not then become so considerable, much less had undergone such changes and revolutions, as the respective *epistles* to them recorded in this book represent them to have done.

At the close of the magnificent description of our blessed Lord's appearance to St. John, contained in the *first chapter*, he is ordered to *write the things which he saw*, (that is, the glorious vision he then beheld,) and *the things which are*, or the state of the churches at that time, and *the things which shall be hereafter*, or the future state and condition of the church, to the end of the world. Accordingly this book may properly be divided into *three parts*.

The *first* containing the *introduction*, or a preface and dedication to the seven churches in Asia, and an account of the glorious vision of our Lord, with which St. John was favoured during his banishment into Patmos, where he also received a Divine revelation, concerning the state of the church. (Chap. i. throughout.)

The *second part*, containing the *epistles* which Christ command-
ed

ed him to write to the seven churches of Asia, relating to their present circumstances, and to the duties resulting from them. (Chap. ii. and iii.)

The *third part*, which describes the condition of the church in after-times, from the *third chapter* to the end of the book, begins with a sublime description of the Deity enthroned in glory, surrounded with angels, and with the heavenly church; and then proceeds to represent a *sealed book*, or the volume of God's decrees, given to the *Lamb*, who only was worthy to open it, and who, on that account, receives the acclamation of the whole choir of saints and angels. (chap. iv. v.) After this sublime apparatus, the *Lamb* is represented as opening the *seals* of the book, one after another: and with this the scene of *prophecy* begins; which may very properly be divided, (as it is by the learned Mr. Lowman, who is undoubtedly the best commentator extant, on this part of the New Testament,) into *seven periods*.

The **FIRST PERIOD** is that of the *seals*.

The *first seal* represents a white horse, his rider having a bow in his hand, and a crown of gold on his head, going forth to conquer.

The *second* represents a red horse; and to his rider is given a great sword, and power to take peace from the earth.

The *third* represents a black horse, whose rider hath a pair of scales in his hand, to weigh corn and provision.

The *fourth* represents a pale horse, whose name is Death, to whom is given power to slay the fourth part of the earth with the sword, and with famine, and with pestilence, and with wild beasts of the field.

The *fifth* represents, under the altar, the souls of those who were slaughtered on account of the word of God; and the final reward of their constancy.

The *sixth* represents an earthquake, the darkening of the sun, the moon becoming as blood, and the stars falling from heaven.

After the description of the opening of these *six seals*, and of the consequent visions, an *angel* is represented as sealing *one hundred forty and four thousand* with the seal of the living God; after which is introduced the choir of the *heavenly church* blessing the Almighty; and one of the *elders* shews St. John, the happiness of those who had patiently endured tribulation. (Chap. vii. *throughout*.)

The *Lamb* is then represented as opening the *seventh seal*, which is succeeded by silence in heaven for the space of half an hour; introductory to the

SECOND PERIOD, which is that of the *trumpets*, given to the seven angels, already mentioned. And upon the sounding the

First trumpet, there is hail and fire mingled with blood cast down upon

upon the earth, representing bloody and destructive wars. On the sounding of the

Second trumpet, a great mountain, as it were burning with fire, is cast into the sea; by which a third part of it becomes blood, and a third part of the creatures in the sea die, and a third part of the ships are destroyed. On the sounding of the

Third trumpet, a great burning star falls from heaven upon a third part of the rivers, and of the fountains of waters, and a third part of the waters become bitter. On the sounding of the

Fourth trumpet, a third part of the sun, and of the moon, and of the stars, is darkened. And a war is denounced by one of the angels against them that dwell on the earth, for the trumpets of the three angels who are yet to sound. On the sounding of the

Fifth trumpet, the bottomless pit is opened, and from thence issue forth *locusts* in great multitudes, not to destroy the fruits of the earth, but to torment its inhabitants. These locusts are described like horses prepared for battle, with crowns on their heads like gold, and their faces like the faces of men, their hair like the hair of women, their teeth like lions, their breast-plates like iron, the noise of their wings like that of chariots and horses, their tails like scorpions, and armed with stings; having the angel of the bottomless pit for their leader. On the sounding of the

Sixth trumpet, the four angels which were bound by the great river Euphrates are loosed, and lead up mighty armies of horsemen for the destruction of mankind. (Chap. viii. ix.)

After the *sixth trumpet* had sounded, St. John relates the marvellous vision of an angel who appeared to him in great glory, and brought him a little book, which he is commanded to eat; and then he is ordered, again, to prophesy to many people, and nations, and tongues, and kings. (chap. x. *throughout*.) And thus the

THIRD PERIOD is introduced, which is pointed out by various representations:

1. By the measuring of the Temple, part of which is given to, and lost by the Gentiles; and two witnesses are represented as prophesying in sackcloth 1260 days, and then, having been put to death, are raised again from the dead; and upon the sounding of the trumpet of the *seventh* angel, their triumphs over their enemies are celebrated by the heavenly hosts! (chap. xi. 1—13.) And the temple of God being opened in heaven, and the ark of the covenant displayed, the state of the church in *this period*, is described.

2. As a woman clothed with the sun, with the moon under her feet, and on her head a crown of twelve stars; and while she was in travail, assaulted by a fiery dragon, with seven heads, and ten horns, and on his heads seven crowns; and when she is delivered, her child is caught up to God; and she flies into the wilderness to avoid the dragon, where she is supported 1260 days; and the dragon

gon is vanquished by the angels; chap. ii. 19.—xii. *throughout*.) The deplorable condition of the church in *this period* is described further,

3. By the faithful being exposed to the ravages of wild beasts, whom St. John saw in a vision rising out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, that is, ten diadems, and on his heads names of blasphemy, to whom the dragon gave his power and authority; so that the inhabitants of the earth worshipped the beast, as well as the dragon; and the beast had power to make war with the saints 42 months, or 1260 days; (which is the same space of time, during which the woman, in the *preceding vision*, is said to have been supported in the wilderness, and during which, in the *first vision*, the two witnesses are said to prophecy in sackcloth: a circumstance which plainly demonstrates these visions to be descriptive of the state of things in the *same period*, and not in *successive periods*.) And the power and authority of this beast is supported by another beast, which arose after it, and which is also particularly described. And the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name, which is also said to be the number of a man, is *six hundred and sixty six*.—After which follows a sublime description of the *Lamb* standing on mount Zion, surrounded with the *one hundred and forty four thousand*, who have the name of his Father written in their foreheads, while the heavenly church celebrates the happiness of those who had continued faithful, and persevered to the end.—The next vision is of an angel flying through the midst of heaven, with the everlasting gospel in his hand, denouncing the judgment of God to be approaching on the beast, and on them who worship him: which is likewise set forth by some succeeding representations:—And particularly,

By an order given to the *seven angels* to pour out their vials, full of the *seven last plagues*, in which the wrath of God is completed on the beast and his votaries.

'The *first vial* is poured out upon the earth, and produces a grievous ulcer on them who had the mark of the beast.

The *second vial* is poured out upon the sea, which becomes blood, and every living thing in the sea dies.

The *third vial* is poured out on the rivers, and on the fountains of water, which also become blood.

The *fourth vial* is poured forth on the sun, which hath power given to it to scorch men with fire.

'The *fifth vial* is poured out on the throne of the beast, and his kingdom is darkened, and his votaries gnaw their tongues, and blaspheme the God of heaven for their pains and their ulcers.

The *sixth vial* is poured out on the river Euphrates, and the water of it is dried up, so that a way is prepared for the kings of the east; against whom the worshippers of the beast are drawn up in order of battle. And then upon the pouring out of

The *seventh vial*, a voice is heard from heaven, accompanied with thunder and lightning, saying, "It is completed;" that is, Babylon

Babylon the great hath drank of the cup of the wine of God's fiercest indignation.

After the pointing out of these *vials* one of the angels, who had executed that commission, further explains what had been represented, by describing the character of the great *harlot* who sitteth on many waters, and with whom the kings of the earth committed fornication. And then follows an account of another angel descending from heaven, declaring with a loud voice, that Babylon the great is fallen, and pointing out the lamentation of her friends and merchants over her. Upon which is described the triumph of the heavenly host on account of the fall of Babylon; which is further illustrated by the representation of an attack made by Christ and his army on the beast, ending in an entire victory over him. (chap. xiii.—xix.)

The FOURTH PERIOD represents an angel descending from heaven, to confine the great *dragon*, or *Satan*, in the bottomless pit for the space of a *thousand years*; during which the church is in a very peaceful and flourishing condition. (chap. xix. 1—6.)

The FIFTH PERIOD represents Satan loosed again for a little season, and making a fresh attempt for the establishment of his kingdom, which shall issue in its utter destruction. [ver. 7—10.]

The SIXTH PERIOD represents the general resurrection, the last judgment, and the utter destruction of the wicked. [ver. 11, *to the end*.]

The SEVENTH PERIOD represents the vision of new heavens, and a new earth, or the happiness of the Jerusalem above, described by the sublimest figures which can enter into the human imagination. (chap. xxi. xxi. 1—5.)

In the conclusion of this truly marvellous series of *prophecy*, with which the canon of scripture closes, our blessed Lord in the most awful manner charges his faithful servant and apostle John, to reveal to the *churches* what had thus been revealed to him, and declares his own speedy approach to the final judgment; denouncing a very dreadful sentence of condemnation on those who should *add to* or *diminish* the words of the prophecy of this book. And then the sacred writer concludes the whole with a solemn benediction; (chap. xxii. 6, *to the end*.)

After all the labour and pains, which learned men have been at to explain and illustrate this book, so many articles are contained in it, which are dark and mysterious, that I remained some time undetermined, whether I should publish any commentary upon it at all. But on a more devout and attentive review, I resolved to offer to the reader what assistance I could, to enable him to comprehend its *general design*, and lead him to those practical and important

important *instructions*, which it suggests with great plainness and energy; without entering very deeply into critical inquiries concerning those particular events to which the several *prophecies* may be supposed to refer. It is an excellent observation of *Monsieur Saurin*, that *this is a very mortifying book to a mind greedy of knowledge and science, but a very satisfying and agreeable one to a heart solicitous about maxims and precepts*, for regulating our tempers and lives; or, in his own expressive and elegant words, *L'Apocalypse, qui est un des plus mortificans Ouvrages, pour un Esprit avide de Connoissance & de Lumiere, est un des plus satisfaisans pour un Cœur avide de Maximes et de Precepts.* Saurin's Sermon. Vol. XII. p. 234.

PARAPHRASE AND NOTES

ON

THE REVELATION OF ST. JOHN.

SECTION I.

The preface, and dedication to the seven churches in Asia ; including an affecting display of the Divine glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, and sublime songs of praise to him for redeeming love.
Rev. I. 1—8

REV. I. 1.

THE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass ; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John :

REVELATION I. 1.

THIS is the book of the revelation of Jesus Christ ; even that revelation, which God his Father gave to him for wise and holy purposes, to shew to his servants the things which must shortly be ; many of which are to be very quickly accomplished, and the rest within a period of time, which, when compared with his reign in the heaven of heavens with all his saints and people, is only a short and very inconsiderable duration. And sending the discovery of these things by his angel, whose office it was to raise extraordinary signs and representations in his imagination, he signified them to his servant John, who had indeed been distinguished by his Master's affection in the days of his flesh ; inso-much that he even lay in his bosom, and was styled, by way of eminence, the disciple whom Jesus

SECT.
I.Rev.
I. 1.

Jesus loved : And *who*, being honoured with so important a message, failed not faithfully to declare it : but *testified the word of God*, which in those prophetic visions came unto him, *and the testimony of Jesus Christ*, (whose messenger the angel was,) exactly reporting *whatsoever he saw*.

2 Who have regard of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 *Happy [is] he that attentively readeth, and they that obediently hear the words of this prophecy, and who keep the things that are written in it*, fixing their mind upon them, and duly regarding them, *for the time of their accomplishment [is] at hand*.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein : for the time is at hand.

4 And considering the particular manner in which they were addressed by our blessed Lord, in some of the first of these revelations, *JOHN* dedicates and inscribes this account of the whole, *to the seven churches, which are in the province of Asia*, at Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodicea ; wishing that *grace* in the richest abundance, *and peace* in all the variety of its blessings, may [be] *with you* all from the Great God, the fountain of all blessings, *even from him, who is, and who was, and who is to come*, possessed of invariable Divine attributes and perfections : *and from the seven spirits, which are before his throne*, and appear as emblems of the various operations and endowments of that one blessed Spirit by whom they are actuated. *And from Jesus Christ, the true and faithful Witness*, whose testimony is ever to be received with the most religious regard, as being *the First-born from the dead*, the first who rose to die no more, and who as the eldest Son of the family of God, is gone to take possession of the inheritance for himself, *and in the name of his brethren*, even from him, who is the supreme *Ruler of all the kings of the earth*, and who knows how to humble them

4 John to the seven churches which are in Asia : Grace be unto you, and peace, from him which is, and which was, and which is to come : and from the seven spirits which are before his throne :

5 And from Jesus Christ, and from the faithful witness, and the first-born of the dead, and the ruler of the kings of the earth.

* *From him which is, and which was, and which is to come*. The Sacred Trinity is of course, that the essential nature not being shared into what the grammarians call a person, as the common rules of grammar require, is designed to represent the everlasting veracity and immutability of God, and the unchangeable majesty of Christ in the testimony of the gospel, and the glory of his kingdom.

b *The seven spirits before his throne*.] Some have explained this of the seven angels, and urged it as an instance of communion to them ; but we may rather suppose

the Spirit of God to be symbolically represented by the seven spirits before the throne, as it is a more agreeable to the genius of this emblematical book. Thus, as Bishop Jewel observes, in support of this opinion, *San. Tract on the saints*, p. 107) is most consistent with the prohibition of prayer to the angels. And if we do not suppose this to be the case, it will be a great difficulty to account for the omission of the Spirit, whose dignity must, at least every supposition, be allowed far superior to that of the highest created angels. See Mr. Linnæus in loc.

of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

7 Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him: and they also which pierced him; and all kindreds of the earth shall

them in their proudest career, and defeat their mightiest opposition to his kingdom, by deposing one, or exalting another, at his sovereign pleasure; and even removing them by a single act of his will, not only from the thrones they fill, but from the world they inhabit. This glorious Person let us all adore, conscious of our infinite obligations to him; and say to him who hath loved us, with the most unparalleled affection, and hath condescended so low, that he hath washed us from the otherwise indelible stains of our sins in his own most precious blood, having shed it to make satisfaction and atonement for them; And in consequence of this, hath made 6 us kings and priests to his God and Father, that we should reign with him in eternal life, and enjoy the perpetual pleasure of worshipping before him in his heavenly temple, and in the mean time be trained up for it by offering spiritual sacrifices; to him [be] glory and dominion for ever and ever, throughout the endless ages of eternity: amen: so let it be, for the honour of our Lord, as well as the comfort of his people, to whom he is more dear, than it is possible any separate interest of their own can be: And so it shall be; for behold and observe with 7 suitable regard, he is, as it were, even now coming in that pomp and majesty in which he himself described his appearance, with the clouds of heaven, in power and great glory; the day is so near at hand, that it may be said to be already come; and however men may affect to overlook and neglect him, and his interest now, every eye shall then see him, and every other object which at present invites their regard, shall utterly vanish; even all they who have pierced him shall behold him, and they that condemned him shall be arraigned at his tribunal; and all the tribes of the earth, who have rejected his government, and opposed his interest, shall mourn because of him, shall lament

c He is coming in the clouds, and every eye shall see him.) It is surprising, that Dr. Whitby should interpret these words as relating to the temporal calamities to befall the Jews when the destruction of Jerusalem was long since past. And whatever slaughter was made of the Jews in Lybia, Smyrna, Alexandria, and other places afterwards, it could by no means be

called, the coming of Christ in the clouds by way of eminence: even though that phrase might be allowed applicable to remarkable temporal vengeance, inflicted by the providence, and in the cause of Christ.

d All the tribes of the earth shall mourn because of him.} In this verse is prefixed the great moral, which the whole book is designed to illustrate; namely, that though there

lament that fatal opposition, by which, instead of prevailing in the least against him, they have only effected their own destruction. " *I am, Lord, we repeat our joyful accent: amen; come, Lord Jesus, in the clouds of heaven; take to thyself thy great power and reign; thy people shall lift up their heads with joy and triumph, being infallibly assured, that their complete redemption is approaching.*" And to confirm their faith and hope, let them hear him speaking as it were, by his own majestic voice from heaven, and saying, *I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end.* I was before all worlds, and shall continue the same, when the revolutions of this world are over, and the final scenes relating to it shall be concluded. I am the First and the Last; I am he *said the Lord Jehovah, who is, and who was, and who is to come*, the eternal, the unchangeable, the Almighty Author, Supporter, and Disposer of all things.

shall wait because of him; even so, Amen.

I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

IMPROVEMENT.

With what sublimity doth this *wonderful book* open¹ which, though pregnant with inexplicable *mysteries*, is at the same time pregnant with *instruction*; which the weakest of *Christ's* humble disciples may peruse with sacred complacency and delight. For surely we are not to imagine that *Divine book* to be unfit for our perusal, and undeserving our regard, concerning which its *Divine Author* expressly declares, *Blessed is he that read-*
eth

there should be great opposition made against the *King* and Kingdom of *Christ*, yet it should be utterly in vain; and his Kingdom should triumph in the most illustrious manner; so that all who had opposed it, should see the greatest reason to repent. And as this series of *Divine prophecies* begins, so it ends with this sentiment, and with the joyful announcement of his faithful servants to this glorious truth, which should all the enemies of *Christ* with their sword and destiny. Compare chap. xxi. 3.

[*I am the Alpha, &c.*] This has been interpreted by some as spoken by the Father; and it will be very difficult to give another or proof of it. Most of the *Manuscripts* have been most consistent in this glorious Person, and afterwards look consistently as *Lord Jesus Christ*; and infallibly, though in continued praise of himself—

out ages, generally, so far as I can find appropriated to the Father, may according to the *Spoken* reason, be rendered, *He who is*, that is, superintends, supports, and governs all, and descent is applied to *Christ*, chap. i. 17; *He is, &c.* But if, after all, the words should be understood as spoken by the Father, our Lord's applying so many of those titles afterwards to himself, plainly proves his partaking with the Father in the glory *proffered* to the *Divine nature*, and the unreasonable to any creature. See Bishop *Pearson* on the *Gospel*, p. 173.—Dr. *Clarke* contends that the word *beginning* is peculiar to the Father, (*manuscript* *Notes on the Trinity*, Book 414, and *Tract. Sermon*, Vol. I. p. 78.) yet he admits, that *Christ* may have the title of *Alpha and Omega*, as *Author and Founder of our faith*, *Reformer and Completer of our salvation*.—*Held*, Vol. 2.

eth, and they that hear the words of the prophecy! Thanks be to our heavenly Father, that he gave it to his son *Jesus Christ*. Thanks to the Son of God, that he gave it to his servant *John*, to be transmitted down to future generations. SECT.
i.

Let us attentively view the *Divine glory* of the Father, and of his only begotten Son, who is the brightness of that glory, and the express image of his Person, and of the *Holy Ghost*, who is here represented by the *seven spirits before the throne*. From us, and from all created nature, let there be glory to him *that is, and that was, and that is to come*, and to the *First-born from the dead*, who is superior to all the kings of the earth, and to all the angels of heaven, who is so intimately united with the Father in Divine perfections and glories, that he also is the *Alpha and Omega*, the Beginning and the End: that he also is *almighty*: able by his mighty power to subdue all things to himself; and is the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever. Never let us be unmindful of the condescension of the *Son of God*, in becoming for our redemption and salvation the *Son of man*. Let the great things he has done for us, the great things he has taught us to expect from him, be ever familiar to our minds. How astonishing was that love, which engaged him to wash us from our sins in his own blood! How glorious is that exaltation to which he is raising us! rendering us, even in the present world, *kings and priests to God*, and inspiring us with the ardent hope of an immutable kingdom, and an everlasting priesthood in the temple of our God above. This is the sublime and transcendent happiness of all who with lively faith look for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearance of the great God, and our Saviour *Jesus Christ*. This illustrious Personage is coming in the clouds, and our eyes shall see him: too often already have we pierced him; let us now look up to him with an humble and lively faith; let us mourn over our sins at present, that we may not pour forth floods of unprofitable tears in that awful day; as all the tribes of the earth shall do, who have dared to set themselves against the kingdom of Christ; a kingdom which shall then be triumphant over all opposition, the last of its enemies being vanquished and destroyed. Ver.
1

SECT. II.

St. John gives an account of the circumstances and manner of our Lord's appearance to him, when he received the Revelation in Patmos. Rev. I. 2—16.

REVELATION I. 9.

I JOHN, who was formerly distinguished by the name of the disciple whom Jesus loved, *who am also your brother, O ye Christians, and who have the honour to be a partaker with you all in the tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ: with all I say, who are called to the hope of his kingdom, and in the patient expectation of that, endure with cheerfulness the afflictions which his infinite wisdom is pleased to appoint us. I was in the desert and desolate island of the Aegean Sea, called Patmos, to which I was banished by Domitian the emperor, for the sake of the word of God, manifested in the gospel, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ, which I had endeavoured faithfully to maintain. I was on a sudden in the Spirit, under his miraculous energy, on that blessed day which we Christians are accustomed to call the Lord's day, the first day of the week, which our dear Redeemer has rendered sacred and venerable, by his resurrection from the dead on the morning of it; and though I was then incapable of joining in any worshipping assembly, the want of that privilege was amply made up, by that manifestation with which the Lord of the day was pleased to favour me; for I heard*

10

Ezek. I. 9.

I JOHN, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day: and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet.

a

a I John, the disciple whom Jesus loved; so I boldly transcribe those words, trusting to the general tradition of the church upon this head, of which I have taken notice in the introduction; and I think, there is some evidence in the phraseology here, and in the gospel of St. John, though I am conscious, at the same time, there is a greater elevation of style in some parts of this book, than is to be found in the other writings of this apostle, which is not to be wondered at, considering the extraordinary nature of the vision he records; which had a very natural tendency to raise the style, and perhaps might have elevated it in any Jewish writings, in consequence of the wonderful and sublime things which now passed through his mind.

b Island called Patmos.] *Encyclopædia*

æviæ tells us, that St. John was here employed in digging on a new-forged banished himself by Domitian the emperor, after he had come out of a condition of banishment. But the statement is entirely disproved by this great event, it is very uncertain.

c In the Spirit on the Lord's day. It is no very unnatural, and contrary to the use of the word in all other authors, to interpret this of the Jewish sabbath, as Mr. Leamer justly argues at large, (see his Works Vol. III. p. 708.) that I cannot but conclude with him, and the generality of Christian writers on this subject, that this text strongly infers the extraordinary regard paid to the first day of the week in the apostle's time, as a day solemnly consecrated to Christ, in memory of his resurrection from the dead.

d I

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last: and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto these seven churches which are in Asia: unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks;

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

[I am Alpha and Omega.] That these titles should be repeated so soon, in a connection which demonstrates they are given to Christ, will appear very remarkable, whatever sense be given to the eighth verse. The argument drawn, in the preceding note upon it, would have been strong, wherever such a passage as this had been found; but its immediate connection with this, greatly strengthens it. And I cannot forbear recording it, that this text has done more than any other in the Bible, toward preventing me from giving into that scheme, which would make our Lord Jesus Christ no more than a deified creature.

e Seven churches in Asia.] I presume

a great voice behind me, as loud as the sound of a trumpet, Which said in distinct and articulate accents, I, who am going to appear to thee, O John, am the Alpha and the Omega^d, the First and the Last; I boast divine perfections and glories, and assume without robbery and usurpation, the peculiar titles and prerogatives of the one eternal, infinite and unchangeable Jehovah; and I am now descended from heaven, to give thee a revelation of the most astonishing and important events. And, as even the remotest ages are concerned in what thou seest, write an exact account of it in a book, and send copies of [it] to the seven churches in Asia^e, to Ephesus, and to Smyrna, and to Pergamos, and to Thyatira, and to Sardis, and to Philadelphia, and to Laodicea, that each may receive its own lesson, and at the same time, enjoy the benefit of those which are intended for all the rest. And I turned to see the Person who uttered that 12 wonderful voice which spake unto me: and being thus turned, I saw an astonishing scene, the particulars of which I shall now relate: There were seven golden lamps on their stands, which gave a bright and beautiful flame; And in the midst of the seven golden lamps, there was [one] in a human form, a glorious and majestic Person, 13 like him who appeared to Daniel under the title of the Son of Man, and in whom I traced the lineaments of that blessed Redeemer, whom I had so long known under that endearing name and character; he appeared clothed in a long robe, not unlike the priestly vestment, and like persons of that holy order, girded, not about the middle, but something higher, about the breasts with

not to enquire, Whether these were the only Asiatic churches. To be sure they were the principle. Nor will I enquire, why the epistles were appropriated to the churches of that province. It is certain they contain many things of universal concern; and as there is plainly an intention to represent the regard of Christ to ministers, and churches, by his walking among golden candlesticks, and holding stars in his right hand, the number seven may be mentioned, as it seems best to harmonize with some other parts of this book, namely, with the seven seals, seven trumpets, seven vials, seven thunders, and seven spirits before the throne.

with a golden girdle, which being properly fastened there, hung down to his feet. And his head, even [his] hairs which adorned it, and flowed round his shoulders, [were] white as wool, or to speak more properly, as white as snow, (Dan. vii. 9.) and his eyes [were] vivid and piercing as a flame of fire. And his feet were resplendent like fine brass, when purified in a furnace from all its dross, and polished by the hands of some skilful artificer; and his voice was loud as the voice of many waters, so that I imagined it might have been heard as far as the sounding noise of the billows of the sea, when they beat against the rocky shores; And he he had in his right hand, seven luminous and very beautiful stars, the motions of which he seemed to direct and govern, at the same time that he supported them, and out of his mouth there went a sharp two-edged sword, or dagger, capable of piercing and wounding every way; and his countenance [was] radiant and glorious as the sun, [when he] shineth in all his meridian power and lustre, and beams forth his rays, vigorous and unclouded.

14 His head, and his hairs, were white like wool, as white as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire;

15 And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun, shining in his strength.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. WHAT unspeakable happiness can our blessed Redeemer confer on his faithful servants, while suffering in his cause! How wretched was *Cæsar* on his imperial throne, compared with this despised and persecuted disciple of *Christ*, in his old age banished to the desolate island of *Patmos*? There his Lord condescended to visit him, opened his eyes to prophetic visions, and diffused around him celestial glories. May we in no case be ashamed of the word of God, and the testimony of Jesus Christ, a zeal for which was so graciously acknowledged, so gloriously rewarded.

10 It was on the Lord's day that the apostle was in the Spirit: how often has the Spirit of God visited his people at that sacred season, visited them as well in their secret retirements as in the public assembly;

[A golden girdle.] The girdles were a kind of sash, which first went over the trunk like a sash, were crossed on the back, and then went round the lower part of the breast, two or three times, like a modern corset, and then they fell down almost to the feet. And as they were sometimes embroidered, and sometimes fringed with gold, they must make a

very ornamental part of dress. The power was required, for chastity and decency, to wear such garments, and gird themselves higher than others. Compare Ezek. xlv. 17, 18. And this is one of the many allusions to the temple and its furnishings and customs, with which we shall find they had so greatly to abound. Compare Exod. xxxix. 3.

assembly; when the hand of *Providence*, as in the instance before us, and not their own *negligence*, and *indifference* to Divine ordinances, occasioned their absence from them: otherwise we might fear that those raptures of mind, which in the contempt of ordinances some make their boast and glory, arise from the *artifices* of the great enemy of souls, and are to be numbered among the most dangerous engines by which he attempts our ruin.

Let our souls again bend, in humble veneration, to him who is *the First and the Last, the Alpha and Omega*. As if we heard his awful voice proclaiming himself by these illustrious and marvellous visions in which he manifested himself to *St. John*, let us endeavour to form some imperfect ideas of our blessed Lord, and the magnificence and glory with which he appears to the inhabitants of the heavenly regions. Every circumstance, not excepting the minutest and most inconsiderable, attending this appearance of *Christ* to his *beloved apostle*, seems designed to convey some Divine truth, some important lesson, for the contemplation and instruction of future ages. It was, in *general*, beyond all question, intended to impress us with the lowliest *reverence* of our glorified Redeemer, that we may pay him our humble and devout adoration, and thus in some degree anticipate the pleasure with which we hope to appear in his *immediate presence* above.

SECT. III.

Our Lord Jesus Christ addresses himself to the Apostle John, and charges him with an epistle to each of the seven Asiatic churches already mentioned: and in the first place, with the epistle to the church of Ephesus. Rev. I. 17.—II. 7.

REV. I. 17.

AND when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead; and he laid his right-hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear

REVELATION I. 17.

I HAVE just been describing the appearance of Jesus Christ to me, with which I was favoured on the Lord's day, in the island of Patmos, while I was engaged in such devout sentiments as were suitable to the time and occasion: and I now add, that when I saw him in this awful, this glorious and resplendent form, I was perfectly overwhelmed with the majesty of his appearance, so that I fell down at his feet as dead: and he immediately condescended to raise me up, with great indulgence; for he laid his right hand upon me, [and] said to me, Fear not John, for

ecc.
s iii.

Rev.
I. 17.

for I appear to thee for purposes of mercy; *I am*, indeed, as I have proclaimed myself, *the First and the Last*, possessed of Divine perfections and glories. And yet I still wear the human form, which I assumed for the redemption of human and fallen creatures like thyself; *I [am] he who lives*, and have life immortal, and glory immutable in myself, though I was once *dead*, as thou knowest; and now *behold* it both with joy and wonder, *I am living for ever and ever*! (Amos². he it is then, O Lord, mayest thou for ever live and reign!) And he added, *I have the keys of the unseen world, and of death*; I have a supreme dominion over it, and remove the souls of men from world to world, calling them out of the body, and fixing them in the invisible state, according to my pleasure, till at length I shall exert my power of raising the dead.

1. *Write therefore the things which thou now seest, and those which will be opened to thy view, in which there will be, in part, a reference to the things which already are, and a further reference to the things which shall hereafter be.*

20 And, as a general key to what I am now going to dictate, observe, that *as to the mystery of the seven stars, which thou here seest as in my right hand, and of the seven lamps which are of gold: the seven stars are an emblematical representation of the angels, or presiding ministers, of the seven churches; and the seven lamps which thou seest, are a representation of the seven churches themselves*, to which I have directed thee to inscribe and transmit the important episodes I am now about to dictate, according to what I ob-

serve; note I am the First and the Last.

18 I am he that liveth, and was dead; and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be: blessed is he that doeth the commandments of this book.

20 The mystery of the seven stars, which thou seest as in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. These stars are the angels of the seven churches; and the seven candlesticks which thou seest, are the seven churches.

serve

[*cf. Iren.*] As this word appears to have a substantial sense, it is interpreted as expressing the joyful aspect of light to what was otherwise, I think, intended to and the present aspect is in a pure vision.

[*cf. Iren.* again.] It must be allowed, that this sometimes signifies the grace, when the body only is spoken of. But, as Mr. Hume has lately proved in his excellent discourse on dreams, the interpretation I have here given, is more reasonable. That which would refer it to hell as the seat of the damned, turns the sense in a manner very derogatory from the honour of our blessed Redeemer, as he there shows manifestly. *Hume's Works*, Vol. II. p. 51, &c. According to Grimm [see

his note on Mat. xvi. 11,] the word *body* always signifies either *dark*, or *the state of blindness*, and they who are of opinion, that Luke xvi. 19, is an exception, may consult the learned author's judicious annotations there. Our English, as rather broken word, *hell*, is its original signification, though it is now understood in a more limited sense; I exactly answer to the Greek word, *hades*, and denotes a realm of, or near a place; and this sense of the word is still retained in the notion, and especially, in the modern notion of England, to *hell* over a thing, is to curse it. See Lord King's *History of the Greek*, chap. iv.

CHAP. II. 1. Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus, write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right-hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks;

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil; and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not: and hast found them liars:

3 And hast borne and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast

serve of their respective circumstances and necessities.

And in the first place, address *to the angel*, or presiding officer^d, of the church of Ephesus and write thus, *These things saith he who holdeth the seven stars in his right-hand*, to signify that he is the great Support of his ministering servants, and directs their several situations and motions in the churches; and *who walks in the midst of the seven golden lamps*, to intimate thereby his presence among Christian societies, and his particular inspection over them. My ² eyes have been carefully fixed upon thee, and I have observed many things in thy conduct with pleasure. *I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience*, with which thou hast endured the trials and sufferings to which thou hast been called out; and I know thou hast such a zeal for the honour of my gospel, and the establishment of my kingdom, *that thou canst not bear those who are evil*. And, as false pretensions to a Divine mission and inspiration are so common, I know *thou hast tried those, who say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them [to be] liars*, and rejected their pretensions with a becoming disdain. And I know *thou hast sus- 3 tained*, with exemplary fortitude, the trouble they

c Respective circumstances and necessities.] How exactly the address in each *epistle*, suits the state of the church to which it was sent, and what *condescension* is implied in our Saviour's giving them these distinct notices and admonitions, is in some measure, though very imperfectly illustrated in my *Ten Sermons on the Power and Grace of Christ*. See *Serm. vii.*

d To the angel, or presiding officer.] That there was *one pastor*, who presided in each of these churches, is indeed evident from the expression here used; but that he was a *diocesan bishop*, or had several congregations of Christians under his care, can by no means be proved. Nor is there the least hint of it, that I know of, in any of these *epistles*. Many have shewn from ancient Jewish writings, that there was an officer of the synagogue who had the name of angel. See *Vitring. de Synag. Vet. lib. 3. p. ii. c. 3.* And Dr Lightfoot adds, that from his office of overlooking the reader of the law, he was called אֵל or *episcopus*. Compare *Mal. ii. 7.*

e Canst not bear those who are evil.] This has been pleaded by Lord Barrington

as an argument that the church of Ephesus, in the early days of Christianity, recovered itself from those corruptions which some endeavoured to bring into it, (2 *Tim. i. 15*; *ii. 17—26*; *iii. 6—10*;) and which St. Paul, in his *first epistle to Timothy*, endeavoured, it seems, with some happy success, to prevent. *Misc. Sac. Vol. I. p. 42.* Limborch has sufficiently shewn, (see his *Theol. lib. v. cap. 37. § 19*) the absurdity of opposing such a text as this to the great Christian doctrine of *toleration*, which some have madly endeavoured to prejudice by trifling inferences from such detached and perverted clauses in opposition to the tenor of the whole New Testament. But the pretending to enforce such *ecclesiastical* censures as the laws of Christ do indeed in some cases require, with those *secular* terrors which the *magistrate*, by virtue of his office, is to inflict on immoralities prejudicial to society, has been the destruction of *Christian discipline* in *popish* countries universally, and generally in all *protestant* establishments too.

f Lost

Rev.
H. J.

they have given thee; and *hast* exercised invincible *patience* under all thy sufferings and trials in my cause; and *thou hast laboured* constantly and tenaciously *for my name's sake*, and to establish the faith of my people: and *hast not* 4 *retired* under thy toils or tribulations. Nevertheless, I have [something] to allege against a *ee*, exemplary as thou art in many respects; and it is this. *That thou hast lost* the zeal and fervour of thy *first love* to me and my cause, and this cannot but be very displeasing to me.

5 *Remember therefore from what thou art fallen*, recall those better days to thy memory, and in the view of them set thyself seriously to *repent* of the decay which hath so much prevailed; and *do the first works*, or rather endeavour to exceed them. Otherwise thou must expect, that I will *come unto thee quickly*, in some awful dispensations of Providence, and *take away thy lamp out of its place*, unless thou *repent*, no longer shalt thou continue to be a church. If thou dost not endeavour to recover thy lost ground, and to shine at least with thy former lustre.

6 Nevertheless, thou hast this honour and praise remaining, that thou *hast the impure works of the lewd Nicolaitans*, which I also hate, as having brought so great a reproach upon the Christian name. To conclude: *Let him that hath an ear*,

last laboured, and must not forget.

4 Nevertheless, I have something to allege against thee, because thou must thy first love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But thou hast that which I also hate, the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an ear

[*Let the first love.*] It is very plain, that those epistles, though ascribed to the apostle or penman of the churches, are ascribed to the churches themselves, as represented by them. Just as the Jewish church was represented by Joshua, their high priest, Josh. iii. 1. But it is not surprising, that where some of the churches are blamed, there might be in their members some faults or responsibility to them charged some the apostle: and particularly, that the most of this manner of epistles might be declining. There is, I think, no reason to be anxious with regard to Timothy's character on this account, for it can never be proved that he was a church pastor of the church of Ephesus, though some excellent things have been well ascribing it on very distant foundations.

8 *Let the first love.*] As this threatening is addressed to the church of Ephesus, though much better than some other churches, it is reasonable to believe that it, like other churches, was intended to awaken the people. It intimates how terrible a punishment it would be to have the *populations* going from them. And

indeed it has been exercised upon them all in a very awful manner. But though there be a little congregation, if I remember right, at Smyrna, yet most of those churches are quite ruined, and with them the cities in which they stood, though they were once very celebrated. And it is hardly possible, even for one who is not a Christian, to view the account which Sir Paul Emory, and the learned and ingenious Mr. Smith, have given of them, without being tenderly affected with ex lamentable a catastrophe.

[*Nicolaitans.*] Some have thought these heretics derived their name from Nicodemus, one of the chief doctors; and some suppose from the name of the Jews that built Jerusalem was be drawn from them. See *Evangel. Joh. iii. c. 18.* The substance of what ancient writers say concerning them is, that they taught the *denial of freedom and immortality*, submitting them things indifferent in their own nature; and their *practices* were suitable to such principles. Compare ver. 14, 15.

ear let him ear what the spirit saith unto the churches: To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

ear, hear what the Spirit saith to all the churches for their encouragement; to that of Ephesus in particular: *To him who conquers* the enemies, which lie in the way of his duty and happiness, and manfully breaks through all oppositions, *I will give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God*; the fruit of which gives immortality, and it is situated in the paradise above; so that he who resides within its reach, is possessed of such felicities and delights as are far superior to those which Adam enjoyed in an earthly paradise, though in a state of uncorrupted and perfect innocence.

SECT.
iii.

Rev.
II. 7.

IMPROVEMENT.

WITH whatever humble and holy reverence this awful representation of our *blessed Redeemer* may strike us, let us be encouraged to look up to him by a lively faith, and to hear with joy, and with purposes of the most grateful obedience, the gracious declaration he makes of that amazing *contrast* of Divine perfections and characters, and of human weakness and infirmities, which met in him. *The Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last*, is he who *lives and yet was dead*, but is now *alive for evermore*: for us he became liable to death, but is now risen to a Divine and immortal life; in which consideration let us continually rejoice on his account, and on our own. It is exceedingly reviving to the heart of a sincere *Christian*, that *Jesus* has the *keys of the unseen world, and of death*; so that whenever we are removed by the stroke of this our last enemy, it is only to be considered as his turning the *key*, which will turn us out of this world into another, of happiness and glory everlasting. How delightful to reflect that *heaven* is under the command of our Redeemer, and *hell* is under his controul! What have his faithful servants to fear from *the one*? what have they not to hope from the *other*? How does this cheering sentiment disarm both *life* and *death*, of their respective terrors.

Chap. i.
17, 18

Let us attend to each of these excellent *epistles*, which *Christ* condescended himself to dictate, and to address by the hand of his servant *John*, to these *Asiatic churches*. Let us attend to his *titles*, his *admonitions*, his *promises*, that we may be awed with holy reverence, that we may be animated to humble hope, and steady courage, in every encounter with the enemies of our salvation.

Let the *ministers of Christ* rejoice, that they are as *stars in the right*

Chap. ii. 1.

sect.
iii. *right-hand, of thy Redeemer. "Support them, O Lord, by thy
Ver. almighty power, and guide all their motions by thine infinite wis-
dom."* Let all the *churches of Christ* remember, that he *walks in
the midst of the golden candle sticks*; may they be *pure gold*: may
their lamps *shine* with unsullied lustre, that their Father may be
glorified, and their Saviour delighted with the survey.

2, 3 He *sees our labour, our patience, our fidelity, and our zeal*. May
he see that we *cannot bear* those who would corrupt our religion,
without exerting ourselves to silence their false pretensions, and to
guard the *churches*, to which we are related especially, from the
6 *venom* they might diffuse over them? In all these respects, may
we daily approve ourselves to him in a more perfect manner. But,
alas! does he not perceive in many of us, what he complained so
early of, in the church of *Ephesus*: that we have *lost our first love*,
4 and that much of that zeal with which we set out in religion is de-
clined? If so, let us take the alarm: for dreadful indeed would it be,
to have our *candlestick removed out of its place*; to have the gospel
and all its privileges taken away from us. To prevent this awful
judgment, let us *recollect from whence we are fallen*, if we are indeed
in a backsliding and declining state; and humbly and heartily *repent*,
and vigorously exert ourselves against the enemies of our salvation:
that *overcoming* the difficulties of this howling wilderness, we may
be received to the enjoyments of the heavenly country: and when
7 we can no longer share in the bounties of providence in this inferior
state, be feasted with the fruit of the *tree of life, which is in the midst
of the paradise of God*.

SECT. IV.

*The epistles which Christ orders St. John to write to the churches of
Smyrna and Pergamos. Rev. II. 8.—17.*

REVELATION II. 8.

sect.
iv. *AND to the angel, or minister, of the church
of Smyrna, write, These things saith the
First and the Last; that glorious and Divine
Person, who having assumed the human nature
into a union with Deity, is able to say, he was
dead and is alive; who therefore demands by all
considerations of reverence, gratitude and love,
thy most attentive audience, and most obedient
regard: I know thy works to have been in
many respects very extraordinary; and I am well
acquainted*

REV. II. 8.

AND unto the angel
of the church in
Smyrna, write, These
things saith the First
and the Last which
was dead, and is alive;

9 I know thy works,
and tribulation and po-
verty,

poverty, (but thou art rich,) and *I know* the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful

acquainted with thy *tribulation and poverty*^a, with the humble opinion thou hast of thyself; but I know also that *thou art rich* in faith, and in all its genuine effects, and art daily laying up for thyself an increasing treasure in heaven. And [*I also know*] the blasphemy of those who say they are Jews, and are not^b, but while they boast their relation to the synagogue of Moses, [are] indeed the synagogue of Satan, whose temper they breathe in their opposition to my gospel, and to my people, while they blasphemously pretend a zeal for my name, even in their impieties. But let all my faithful servants be 10 encouraged boldly to face their opposition; and I say to each of them, in addressing to thee, *Fear none of the things which thou shalt suffer*; for, behold, I inform you, that the devil, acting in and by these instruments, the men of his synagogue, will indeed have a permission to cast some of you into prison^c; that you may be tried, and by these trials more remarkably approved; and ye shall have tribulation ten days^d; for a certain limited time, he shall be permitted to afflict you; but bear up courageously against his assaults, as becomes my valiant soldiers: be thou faithful unto death^e, persevere in thy attachment to me, and thy zeal for my interest, even to the last, though death in its most terrible form should assault

SECT.
IV.
Rev.
II. 9.

a And poverty.] Archbishop Wake supposes this refers to the extraordinary character of Polycarp, Bishop of Smyrna; who had, as ecclesiastical history tells us, reduced himself to a voluntary poverty, as many of the primitive bishops did, by selling his estate, and distributing it to the poor. But I much question, whether the personal character of the bishop, or pastor of these churches, be referred to in this address: and the very next verse seems to demonstrate it is not. Compare also ver. 5.

b Say they are Jews, and are not.] There were great numbers of Jews in the provincial Asia; and their inveteracy against the gospel there and elsewhere, is well known. This is an instance, in which the word Jew signifies one of God's peculiar people; and it is not improbable, that many prophetic phrases, in which Jewish rites are mentioned, are to be interpreted with as great a latitude; that is, for those rites of worship which God's peculiar people should use.

c Cast some of you into prison.] Whe-

ther the power of the synagogue extended so far as to imprison, I do not certainly know; to scourging it undoubtedly extended.

d Tribulation ten days.] Mr. Fleming, (of the Resurrection, p. 129,) with many others, thinks this refers to the persecution under Domitian, which continued about ten years, and was begun when John was banished into Patmos, and saw these revelations. But it may only signify a short and limited time. Compare Gen. xxxi. 7: 1 Sam. i. 8; Eccl. vii. 19; Dan. i. 12; Zech. viii. 23.

e Be thou faithful unto death, &c.] I have endeavoured at large to illustrate the great force of this noble text in my funeral sermon for that illustrious Christian hero, Colonel Gardiner, whose name I could not forbear recording here, and the memoirs of whose life, which from the most intimate knowledge of him I have written, will, I hope, promote the admiration, love, and imitation of all who peruse them.

f Antipas

SECT.
IV.
Ecc.
11. 10.

assault thee; for thou fightest under a General, who, though thou fall by the stroke of this last enemy, can raise thee again; and instead of losing by thy fidelity to me, thou shalt be richly rewarded; for *I will give thee a crown of eternal life*, and advance thee to such glory and felicity, as shall be infinitely more than an equivalent for the utmost thou canst possibly suffer

11 in my cause. *He that hath an ear to hear, let him be all attention to hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.* The valiant conqueror shall be secured from evils, which are beyond all comparison greater than any he can endure on earth. In this world he may indeed encounter the first death for my sake; but he shall not be injured hereafter by the second; he shall rest in everlasting security and peace, while those who desert and renounce their duty for the preservation of this transitory life, shall be consigned to that state of misery, where they shall seek death, but it shall for ever flee from them.

12 And to the angel, or minister, of the church which [is] in Pergamos, write, *These things saith he, who in token of the penetrating and efficacious nature of his word, is represented as one who has the sharp two-edged sword coming out of his mouth: even that word, which is quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged*

13 sword: *I know thy works, and thy circumstances, in every respect; and particularly, where thou dwellest. [even] where the throne of Satan [is] fixed, in the midst of superstition, and in the midst of persecution, by the union of which the kingdom of darkness is supported, and thou holdest fast the honour of my name, and hast not denied and renounced my faith, even in those days of extreme difficulty and danger in which Antipas was my faithful martyr, and sealed his fidelity to me with his blood; even that dear and resolute Corymbus, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth, and seems to take up his residence, as might be inferred from the*

ful unto death and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write, These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges;

13 I know thy works and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is; and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

[Antipas my faithful martyr.] *These* words imply that he suffered for the faith. Antipas was perhaps not a same zealous man as, who died for the faith he had preached, as some private conversation of ancient faith, truth, and righteousness, could be and ever maintain in the Christian nation. But he may be sure

that such a commendation will be taken of him by his Divine Master, who mentions his name with admiration and reward, would be, instead of a theoretical arguments, to animate the courage and fidelity of other Christians, who might be called out to the post extremities.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate,

16 Repent: or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh I will give to eat of the hidden manna, and will

the enormities which are continually practising there. *Nevertheless, I have a few things to alledge against thee, that thou hast there them who remain uncensured in your societies, who hold what is, in effect, the detestable doctrine of that infamous Balaam, who taught Balak, king of Moab, to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, by which they fell into sin and ruin; encouraging and seducing them to eat things sacrificed to idols, and to commit fornication.* These practices are tolerated by some 15 among you; whom therefore it becomes you to search out, and to treat with due severity; for *thou in like manner hast those that hold the doctrine of the accursed Balaamites, or wicked Nicolaitans, which I hate.* Repent therefore of 16 these irregularities: *or otherwise thou mayest depend upon it, that I will come unto thee quickly in a way of chastisement, and I will fight against them with the sharp sword [that cometh out] of my mouth; I will pronounce terrible calamities against you, and execute upon you what I have threatened in my word.* *He that hath 17 an ear at all, capable of hearing, let him hear with the greatest attention, what the Spirit saith to the churches: To the conqueror, I will give the privilege of being, as it were, admitted into the most holy place; and there he shall have liberty to eat of the hidden manna; and shall be entertained with those sacred pleasures, which*

g Balaamites, or Nicolaitans.] As Balaam has the same signification in Hebrew which Nicolaus has in Greek, and both signify *conquerors of the people*. (which name might probably be given to the celebrated Balaam, on account of the great influence which he had in the place where he lived;) it seems not improbable, that the doctrine of Balaam, and of the Nicolaitans, might be the same; (or the latter might be more strenuous in justifying and propagating their doctrine, and acting upon it.) As if he had said, Balaam taught Balak to lay a stumbling-block before the children of Israel; and thou hast also them that hold the doctrine of the Balaamites. Probably this doctrine might be like that of some modern seducers, that it was lawful to dissemble the Christian faith, and to conform to established superstition, to prevent persecution; a fatal error, which tends most effectually to overthrow Christianity; the existence of

which, in these later ages, is owing to the contrary doctrine and practice. And I greatly fear, that millions of souls are continually sacrificed to it, especially in France, and other countries, in which protestant churches were once planted, but are now overthrown. Nor can it be hoped, that the reformed interest will ever revive, till a few of its professors at least have the courage to die for the truth, and scatter their blood as the seed of the church. An anonymous writer, (in the *Memoirs of Liter.* Vol. V. p. 258,) thinks, that by Balaamites, or Nicolaitans, which he also supposes the same,) we are, in general, to understand lewd and profligate persons, who aim at nothing but their own secular advantage, and pleads in favour of his opinion, ver. 23; iii. 9; viii. 11; ix. 11; xi. 8, in all which places proper names are used in such a figurative manner, to express characters resembling theirs whose names are thus used.

which God's sanctuary above affords, and of which the manna that fell in the wilderness, and was laid up in a golden vessel before the Lord, was only an imperfect type. *And I will give him a white stone*, in token of full absolution from all his crimes; *and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, except he who receiveth it*. I will admit him to that intimacy of sacred friendship, from whence results a joy which the stranger intermeddles not with, and which can be only conceived by those who happily experience it.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. 11. AGAIN let us direct our eyes to that glorious Person, who is *the First and the Last*, and who, though it may appear incompatible with that Divine title, was once dead, *and is alive again*; and since he is here awfully represented as with a *sharp sword* going out of his mouth, let us be greatly concerned, that we do not incur his displeasure by our irregular conduct, lest he smite, or even destroy us. Let us observe and imitate what he commends in the churches whom he here addresses; their *humility* in being sensible of their *poverty*, when enriched by his *grace*; their *patience*, their *diligence*, and the resolution with which they *retained the honour of his name*, notwithstanding the *throne of Satan* was in the midst of them, and the rage of persecution had destroyed *An-ti-pa* before their eyes; that blessed, that triumphant hero, whose

fidelity

[*See white stone*]. It is well known, that among the Jews, a white stone was a token of absolution, as a white stone was of condemnation; but the meaning is more more than that alone is not, says I know it, illustrated by an ancient practice. And the connection between the two ideas seems to justify, that in the great day, on which the absolution of Church people was to be declared publicly, they were to be admitted into that sublime assembly, and high state of glory, which is ascribed by the new song. With the same intention plainly alludes to the concept of *poverty*, since give themselves to those whom they have raised to every extraordinary dignity; of which we have many instances in the tale of the apostles; particularly, Chas. xii. 65, 1 Sam. xiv. 29; Dan. i. 7. Mr. Goodman thinks this an allusion to the token, or token, given to the conqueror in the Olympic games, expressing his name, and signifying that reward he was to receive by his victorious merits. See the *Fest. of the East*, p. 107.

[*No man knoweth, except he who receiveth it*]. I have sometimes thought, a *whisper*, may signify, one that has received it, as it seems a name given to any person, must be known to others, or it would be given in vain; and then it intimates, that him or shall be conferred on such an one, which shall only be known to the inhabitants of that world to which he shall be admitted, and who have already received it. Otherwise, it must refer to a custom which has sometimes prevailed among *poets*, of giving particular names, expressing *familiarity* and *delight*, to distinguished favourites, by which to call them in the greatest familiarity of converse, whether by *diminutive*, or by *letter*, and which have not been communicated to others, or used by them at other times. I have hinted at both in the *passages*, not being able in my own mind certainly to determine, which is the peculiar and more exact sense.

fidelity and constancy his Divine Saviour commemorates with approbation, and even with satisfaction and pleasure. Who would not be ambitious of dying in the same manner, were it ever so severe and terrible, to be thus honoured and celebrated by our Lord *Jesus Christ*, or any of his faithful *apostles*? Let us not be terrified at the apprehension of what we may suffer from the malice of *Satan*, and by his instruments, even though not merely *imprisonment*, but *death* itself were to await us. It is only for a *limited* time that he can occasion *tribulation* to any of the people of God; and our blessed Lord will never be unmindful of that gracious promise, *Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life*. O! let us by faith survey that innumerable company, who, though they have fallen by the stroke of the *first death*, have been, and shall for ever be, *unhurt by the second*: that blessed society who are encircled with immortal crowns, which their triumphant *Leader*, whom they followed with such undaunted fortitude, hath bestowed upon them; who, though they partake no longer of the bread that perisheth, nor are feasted with earthly viands, are yet *eating of the hidden manna*; who have received the *white stone*, in token of their *absolution*; and while the *names* and memory of many of them have sunk into oblivion, and the honours attending others are of little consequence, they are known in the heavenly regions by a *new name*, conferred as a mark of favour and distinction by the *King of Kings*, and *Lord of Lords*. We are drawing on, if we are true Christians, to the completion of that blessed hope. And that we may not be disappointed, may we by Divine grace, be preserved from the artifices of those who call themselves the *people of God*, while they are indeed of the *synagogue of Satan*, and from whatever, like the *doctrine of Balaam*, would ensnare our consciences, and defile our souls.

SECT.
iv.

Ver.
10

11

14, 25
19

SECT. V.

The epistles which Christ charges St. John to write to the churches of Thyatira and Sardis. Rev. II. 18, to the end. Rev. III. 1—6.

Rev. II. 18.

AND unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass;

19 I know thy works and charity, and service,

REVELATION II. 18.

AND to the angel, or Christian minister, of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes bright, and penetrating, as a flame of fire, and his feet shining like fine brass: I know and approve thy works of piety, which are many, and which, I am well apprised, are the effects of ardent love to me; and I am acquainted with the service

SECT.
v.

Rev.
II. 18.

19

18. *wise* thou art performing for my cause and interest, and with thy *faith and thy patience*; and that, with respect to *thy works, the last [are] more, greater, and better, than the first*. Very far art thou from that declining state of religion, of which I have had reason elsewhere to complain. *Nevertheless, I have a few things against thee*; and particularly, *that thou permittest that woman Jezebel*, (for she deserves no better name, than of that infamous and idolatrous harlot,) *who and wickedly and falsely says, that she is a prophetess, to teach and to seduce many servants, in order to avoid persecution, to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols*.²⁰ *And she is the more wicked, because, as I have given her sufficient time to repent of her fornication, and she repented not*; but continued her continuities with increasing aggravation.
- 22 But *behold*, at length *I will execute judgment upon her*. And let the process of my righteous vengeance be observed: *I am just preparing to cast her into a tub; and will bring those who commit fornication with her, who suffer their consciences to be debauched by such licentious and detestable principles, into great tribulation, unless they speedily repent of their wicked works*.
- 24 *And I will slay her children*, those that presume to follow her in her wickedness, *with sudden and inevitable death*; and *all the churches shall know*, that though I am very long suffering with respect to many sinners, and am unwilling immediately to come to extremities; yet I am not to be mocked and trifled with; that my eyes are indeed as observant as they are bright and piercing, and *that I am he who searcheth the*

void, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more than the first.

²⁰ Thus standing I have a few things against thee, because thou tellest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

²¹ And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

²² Behold, I will cast her into a tub, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

²⁴ And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he, which searcheth the reins and hearts;

²⁰ *That woman Jezebel*. What can be a stronger illustration of Jezebel's activity, as compared with what was before known in the Christian Church, (Gen. 14, 15,) the resurrection appears as great, that I am inclined to suppose that she was formerly known to be a prophetess, and that those things, namely, the promise of death who thought was looked for, and the resurrection, and the resurrection, and the resurrection, in order to avoid persecution. And as Jezebel was so infamous an idolater, and so great a persecutor of the church, that she was an extraordinary prophetess in such a representation, I thought it well to have some such thing, that was some thing's better. The

Scripture it is, says John Helton, the mother of Thomas Merton, the great Englishman of the golden age of the Christian Church, (see his *Christian Life*, Vol. I, p. 101.) Whom thou dost see to be sister to my mother, who was in the past, as only known to describe a person of nature living and of the most possible, I am, therefore, through I rather incline to the latter. Compare verse 15, too.

He searcheth the reins and hearts, and he thought to do so. Perhaps both of these might be true, as it is well known that in an inner place in the Old Testament, and in several passages in this book, represented as being, and as being.

hearts; and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, As many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even

the reigns and the hearts^c; and I will at length approve the justice of my proceedings with respect to this society, as well as all others, and will give to every one of you according to your works, and according to those principles from which I know they have proceeded. But I 24 say to you who are faithful, even to the rest of those that are in Thyatira, as many as do not hold this pernicious doctrine, and who have not known the depths of Satan, as they proverbially speak, nor make themselves the instruments of accomplishing the designs of this infernal policy. I will lay upon you no other burden^d will not severely reprove you for that mixture of human infirmity, which is to be discerned every where. Nevertheless, what you have received, as of Divine revelation and command, hold fast till I 25 come, and let nothing prevail upon you to make a sacrifice of your regard for me and my cause, for neither my ability, nor inclination, to reward those who are faithful, will ever be diminished. And as for him that conquers, and 26 keeps my works unto the end, notwithstanding the vigorous efforts of the enemies of my gospel, to wrest it from him, or induce him to deny it, though he should be ever so much exposed and overborne now, I will, at length, give him complete power and victory over all the nations that have combined against my people^e. And 27 I will raise him to the dignity and glory of sharing with me in my final triumph; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, and they shall be at once dashed in pieces with it, like a potter's vessels: in like manner, as I have also received the

SECT.
V.
Rev.
II. 23.

c I am he who searcheth—the hearts.] This manner of speaking is much more remarkable, than if it had only been said, that I search the heart: which remark answers the train of Mr. Emlyn's reasoning against the argument brought from this text, to prove Christ's proper Deity.

d No other burden.] Lord Herrington imagines this refers to the gospel-doctrine addressed to Gentle proselytes, now abolished with the Jewish polity. As it it had been said, Though things strangled, and blood, were formerly forbidden, as well as idolatry and fornication, yet I will not subject you to this injunction. Bar. Ess. iv. p. 26.

e Power over the nations.] This power over the nations, of breaking them to pieces

like a potter's vessels, &c. cannot, I think, be understood, of temporal dominion: for as the promise is made to every conqueror, and many Christians fell by the oppressive power of the enemy, and would, considering their present circumstances, be degraded rather than exalted, if raised to the possession of any earthly dominion and triumph, it appears to be much more properly explained of that final triumph of Christ over his enemies in the last day, when he shall crush them all to utter and irrecoverable ruin, and all his saints raised from the dead, and clothed with robes of glory, shall sit down with him on his throne, and constitute that illustrious body, which in, and with their exalted head, shall subdue every opposing power.

Ecc. V.

Ecc. II. 27.

Rev. II. 1.

the promise of my Father in that ancient oracle, (Psalm li. 9,) the accomplishment of which all my faithful subjects shall see; for they shall behold all their enemies, however numerous and mighty, laid prostrate at their feet in the dust, and covered with everlasting confusion.

25 *And I will give him*, even every one who approve his fidelity to me, such lustre and glory, that he shall shine in my presence like *the morning star*, when its sprightly and cheerful beams break through the shades of night, and proclaim the approaching sun. *He*, therefore, *that hath an ear*, let him attentively hear *what the Spirit saith unto the churches*; for all the churches are concerned in the message I send to each; and the importance of the contents make them worthy of universal regard.

And to the angel, or minister, of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he, that hath the seven Spirits of God, he who presides over, and orders the dispensations of the Spirit, with respect to his various gifts and graces, and produces thereby such wonderful events as shall astonish all future ages; *and that hath in his hand the seven stars*, which represent the ministers of the churches, all whose motions he continues to govern and direct, according to his all-wise and gracious pleasure. *I know thy works*; that thou dost not answer that character which thou generally maintainest in neighbouring churches, for religion and piety. I know, *that thou hast a name that thou livest*, thou makest a splendid profession, and many of thy brethren are deceived by thy apparent zeal *but thou art indeed dead*; there is little real religion lying at thy heart, nor do the uniform fruits of it prevail in thy life and conversation. *Be watchful*, therefore, that the whole may not be lost; *and strengthen the things which remain, and which are ready to die*; for I have not found *thy works filled up in the sight of God*, with that care and fidelity with which they ought to have been discharged; and he, therefore, cannot behold thee with the same approbation and delight, as he does more active, more diligent, and more resolute Christians. And this thy declension in religion is the more aggravated, as thou hast had so many advantages for improvement. *Remember therefore, how thou hast received, and heard*; for though thou mayest forget these advantages,

even as I received of my Father.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III. I. And unto the angel of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars: I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works filled up before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold

hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me in white; for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before

advantages, they are all distinctly in my view; and let it therefore be thy care to *hold fast* what yet remains; and to *repent* of that negligence by which thou hast lost so many opportunities: *therefore, unless thou art watchful*, I do now solemnly warn thee, that *I will come upon thee* by some alarming and awful interposition of my Providence, on a sudden, *as a thief*, on those that are buried in sleep; and *thou shalt not know at what hour I will come upon thee*; and the surprise will throw thee into the greatest consternation and distress. But I will do thee ⁴ the honour, and the justice, to say, that *thou hast a few names*, and people, *even in Sardis*, corrupt and indolent as the general state of it is, *who have not polluted their garments* with the abominations by which so many have contracted gross defilements. And, as they have been distinguished by their fidelity and their zeal, I will distinguish them by my special favour, and raise them, ere long, to those seats of complete purity and glory, where *they shall walk with me in white^f robes*, and attend my joyful and triumphant train; for *they are worthy* of such distinguished honour, as they have been especially careful to keep themselves from those evils which have been generally prevailing around them. *As for the conqueror, he shall be clothed⁵ in white raiment*; every victor shall wear the habit of festivity and triumph; and *I will not blot out his name from the book of life^g, but, as he is inrolled among my faithful people, he shall ever continue in their number; and when the*

SECT.
V.
Rev.
III. 3.

^f *Walk with me in white.*] It is well known, that *white robes* were worn on occasions of great joy, and sometimes in triumphant processions; to both which here is, probably, a reference, as indeed it seems that *triumph* and *feasting* would naturally go together. Priests also were clothed in *white*, and the addition of that dignity may also be implied, as certainly coming within the scheme of Christ with regard to his people. (Compare Rev. i. 6.) Some think here is an allusion to the custom of the *Sanhedrim*, when they examined the candidates for the high-priesthood; if they judged him worthy, they gave him a *white garment*; if unqualified, he was sent out from among them in mourning. L'Enfant Introd. p. 86. See Ainsworth's Pref. to Gen.

^g *I will not blot out his name, &c.*] I think this plainly implies, that *some names*

shall be *blotted out from the book of life*; and consequently, as nothing can occasion an alteration in the decrees of God, I think it proves, that *the book of life* does not signify the catalogue of those whom God has *absolutely proposed to save*; but rather the catalogue of those who were to be considered as *heirs of the kingdom of heaven* in consequence of their Christian profession, till by apostacy from it they throw themselves out of that society to which they before belonged; and it seems to intimate, that though the imperfection even of these conquerors might, in strict justice have deserved it, yet Christ would spare them, and suffer them to continue in the number of those who should finally be found registered, as *free* of the heavenly city; and who, in the great day, should be called up to possess it.

- SECT. V. the register shall be read over in the presence of God in the great day. *I will confess his name before my Father, and before the full assembly of his glorious angels*, and not be ashamed to acknowledge him as my friend and my favourite.
- Rev. 111. 5. 6 *He that hath an ear to hear, let him hear what the Spirit saith to all the churches*; and let every one that hears, be animated by so glorious a hope, to exert his utmost efforts in this holy and honourable warfare.
- 6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. LET the disciples of Christ always remember, that *his eye pene-*
 18 *trates the most hidden recesses*; that he *searcheth the hearts and*
 23 *trieth the reins* of the children of men: accordingly, let them take heed to cherish nothing, even in *their hearts*, which their great Master will behold with displeasure. There may *faith, and*
 19 *patience and charity*, erect their throne; and may their dominion so prevail, that our *last works*, like those of the church of Thyatira, may be *more than the first*. And surely it is most reasonable, as we approach the end of our course, as we experience more of the vanity of life, and the substantial and solid pleasures of religion, that they should be so. But, alas! how much more common is the character of the church of Sardis, and of those who have only a name to live, while they are dead? Censorious and uncharitable as too great a part of the world is, are there not some who are ashamed and humbled in the view of the esteem which they are held in by their brethren, while conscious of so many inward, though unallowed, infirmities, of so much deadness and coldness in religion, even where they would be most zealous and lively? Alas! how far are our works from being *filled up before God*? Let us often lament these our imperfections and declensions; let us deeply humble ourselves before God on account of them; and let us be as vigilant as possible, that we may strengthen those things, which if they do indeed remain, seem ready to die. The more general the prevalence of such an indolent temper is, the more let us emulate the distinguished honour of those few names in Sardis, which had not defiled their garments, that we may walk with them; and with
 4 Christ, in white raiment: that we may arrive at that happy state of everlasting purity, of everlasting festivity, of everlasting triumph, which our Divine Master has encouraged us to expect. We know not how unexpectedly he may come upon us: let us be
 3 always ready, always strenuous in maintaining a holy war against the enemies of our salvation; and then we shall conquer, we shall triumph;

triumph; our name shall remain in the book of life; it shall be confessed by Christ before his Father and his holy angels: we shall share with him in his triumph over all the rebellious nations, in that day, when he shall dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel: we shall for ever wear the lustre of the morning star; yea, we shall shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of our Father. Amen.

SECT.

v.

Chap.

II. 26.

27

28

SECT. VI.

The epistles, which Christ orders to be written to the two remaining churches, the Philadelphian and Laodicean. Rev. III. 7—22.

REV. III. 7.

AND to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth: and shutteth, and no man openeth;

REVELATION III. 7.

AND now to the angel, or minister, of the church in Philadelphia, write, *These things saith the Holy One, and the true One^a, he who claims perfect holiness, and invariable truth, as necessary and essential to his nature, in a manner which no creature can pretend to; he whose authority in the church of God is so uncontrollable, that it may truly be said, he has the key of the house of David; he, who openeth, and no man shutteth^b, and shutteth, and no man openeth; insomuch that Eliakim, who is spoken of in such terms of honour, (Isa. xxii. 22,) was only a type of him: I well know thy works, how exemplary they are; and behold, I have used the power of the key which is in my hand, in such a manner, that I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: I give thee a power and opportunity of spreading my gospel, which none shall take from thee; because thou hast, at least, a little strength; and thou hast used it well, and hast courageously kept my word, and hast not denied my name, though many attempts have been made to drive thee to do it. Behold, I will give, as it were, into thy power, those hypocritical wretches, [who are] indeed of the synagogue of Satan, and under all the*

SECT.

vi.

Rev.

III. 7.

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of

a *The holy One, the true One.* This is so peculiarly the prerogative of God, that I have sometimes wondered, no greater stress should have been laid upon it in proof of the Deity of our blessed Redeemer, by many writers who have pressed other texts, of a much more dubious na-

ture, to serve in the cause. (Compare chap. vi. 10.)

b *Who openeth, and no man shutteth.* The office of lord steward of the household, who hath the power of opening and shutting what apartments in the palace he pleaseth, is described by these terms.

c *Worship*

SECT.
VI.REV.
III. 9.

- the solemn guise of religious worship, are carrying on his cause and interest; *they say they are Jews*, and pretend to be my people, *and are not; but lie.* Behold, I say, I will give them into thy power; and *I will make them to come and worship before thy feet*; and *they shall know that I have loved thee*, finding I have evidently supported thy cause and interest against all that have opposed it. *Because thou hast kept the word of my patience*, that gospel, which I have myself, by such patient suffering in my human nature, established in the world, and by which I at once exercise and support the faith and patience of my people; *I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation*, which shall come upon all the world, to try all the inhabitants of these parts of the earth: my hand shall remarkably appear, in sheltering thee from the dangers, by which others fall, and in strengthening thee in proportion to the trial. *Behold, I come quickly*, to put an end to those exercises which are for the present so painful; *keep that which thou hast with resolute fidelity*; that no man take thy crown from thee, even that crown of everlasting glory, which will be the gracious reward of thy continued fidelity. *As for the conqueror*, I will make him a pillar of distinguished ornament and beauty; and I will not only fix him near, but *in the temple of my God above*, and he shall stand there upon an unshaken and everlasting basis, so that *he shall go out no more*, and he shall bear the marks of immortal honour: for *I will inscribe upon him the name of my God*, under whose auspicious influence the grand victory has been gained, and under whose protection this sacred monument

of Satan. (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie;) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out; and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the

« *Waste before my feet* » When we more particularly acquainted with the history of those who sheltered, in the utmost immobility surrounding the door of these epistles, we might perhaps find many remarkable illustrations of several passages in them, but of this among the rest, supposing, for instance, persons of considerable rank and dignity in Philadelphia, were converted to Christianity, and the interest of the synagogue here spoken of, was so weak and, or the heathen populace of the place so prejudiced against them, as that the chief members of the synagogue should find it necessary to court the protection of the Christians for the security of their persons or effects; it will throw

considerable light upon the place. The like observation may be applied to the following clause: *I will keep thee from the hour of temptation*, &c. Dr. Smith has observed, (in his learned and accurate account of those parts, p. 134--141,) that the city of Philadelphia was the *last* of the ones, here spoken of, which fell into the hands of the Turks; for whereas the rest were subdued by Urgan and Amurat; Philadelphia held out till the time of Mehmet. So that the remains of this society were preserved, when those of the rest were ruined. But how far that event might immediately be referred to in the words before us, I cannot certainly say.

the name of the city of my God, *which is New Jerusalem*, which cometh down out of heaven from my God; and *I will write upon him my new name.*

monument of it shall for ever remain. *And I will also inscribe the name of the city of my God, even the New Jerusalem*, as it is that to which he belongs, and of which he is free; even that New Jerusalem, *which is come down from heaven from my God*, and shall soon be represented to thee, O John, in a most glorious vision; and he shall bear *my new name*, the name which I have acquired by that great expedition, which brought me into the world, and carried me through so many labours and sufferings; even that of the Redeemer of sinners; under which character I will own him for one of my redeemed, who fought under my banner, and overcame his enemies by my influence, and my blood^d. *He that hath an ear, let him attentively hear what the Spirit saith to the churches*; for addresses of this kind are made not to a particular person, or to one Christian society alone, but are indeed of more extensive, and even universal concern.

SECT.
vi.
Rev.
III. 12.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true Witness, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot; I would

And to the angel of the church, which is in Laodicea, write, These things saith he, who is the AMEN, the faithful and true Witness; attesting those truths, which are of the utmost importance, on the most perfect knowledge of them, and with most unerring exactness; yea, he who is *the beginning of the creation of God^e*, by whom it was produced, and who is the Head and Governor of all that he has made: *I know thy works*, and all the particulars of thy conduct; *that thou art neither cold nor hot*, that thou art growing very indifferent in religion, though thou canst not allow thyself entirely to cast

^d *I will make him a pillar, &c.*] Few texts, in the whole New Testament are more illustrated by antiquity than this. Great numbers of inscriptions are yet remaining, brought from the Grecian cities of Europe and Asia, and some from islands in the neighbourhood of Patmos, in which the victories of eminent persons are commemorated. And as some of these were placed near the temples of their deities, others were in those temples, to signify their being put under the particular protection of those deities; whose names therefore were inscribed upon them, and the names of the conquerors and of the cities to which they belonged; as also the names of the generals, by whose conduct

the victory was gained. As all these circumstances suit such kind of martial victories, much more than those obtained in the Olympic games, so celebrated in antiquity, and so largely and elegantly described by Mr. West in his late dissertation on that subject, I think this text seems to justify the turn I have generally given in my paraphrase to those weighty passages, on which so much of our strength and comfort as Christians depend.

^e *The beginning of the creation of God.*] Mr. Fleming would render it, *the efficient cause of God's creation*. But as it is certain, that *αρχη* has not always that signification, I judge it safe to give what is more commonly the sense of it.

f 30

- cast it off; now is this so disagreeable to me, that *I wish* thou wouldst determine one way or another; and that it might be said, *thou wert either cold or hot*; if thou really thinkest it not worthily regard, reject it entirely; but if indeed thou art convinced of its truth and importance, act with a steady conformity to that conviction.
- 16 *Therefore, because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot*, this indifference of thine is as disagreeable to me, as liquor, in this condition, is to the stomach; and therefore to pursue the similitude, odious as it may seem, I must tell thee, that if thou persistest in such a disposition, *I will cast thee out of my mouth* with loathing.
- 17 *Because thou sayest I am wealthy, and have enriched myself by my own wisdom and virtue, and have need of nothing*: imagining thy state in religion to be so very prosperous and happy; and in this spiritual lunacy into which thou art fallen, like a miserable beggar who fancies himself a prince, *knowest not that thou art wretched, and pitiable, and poor, and blind, and naked*, in a most deplorable condition, destitute of every desirable blessing; *I counsel thee*, that with an humble sense of thy condition, so extremely unhappy, thou apply to him who alone is capable of helping thee. And as I require no price, or equivalent for my treasures, but only a conviction of such an incapacity to make an adequate return for them, I advise thee, in that way, *to buy of me* a full supply for all thy necessities; blessings, as desirable as *gold tried in the fire*, that *thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness may not appear*. Apply to me for an interest in my righteousness and sanctifying grace; that thou mayest be absolved before God, and adorned with every virtue which can render thee lovely in his sight.
- And

would thou wert cold or hot.

16. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.

17. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing, and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked.

18. I counsel thee to buy of me gold, tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and when thou art rich, thou shalt not be ashamed, and thou shalt not lack the shame of thy nakedness: do not appear, and amaze

thine

f So disagreeable to me, that I wish thou wouldst determine one way or another.) Mr. Lewman observes, that the phrase, *I could wish thou wert cold or hot*, may be understood as expressing great dislike, not as a proper wish, or expression of what men really desire.

g *Wretched and pitiable, &c.*] The sad picture which is here given of the London church, when compared with what is and of the glorious state of Christianity in the best ages of the

world, may, I think, convince any attentive reader, that these epistles are not to be understood in a prophetic sense, as expressive of the state and character of the Christian church in different periods of time; it may also be observed, that at that early and middle ages of the church, when were in fact most corrupt, most have answered to Paganism and Judaism, which are described in those epistles, as in the most flourishing and happy state.

thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and be with me.

21 To him that overcometh, will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

And whereas thou art blinded with such unhappy self-conceit, come, and anoint thy eyes with my sovereign eye-salve, that thou mayest see; for I can bring thee to right sentiments of thyself, and of thy state; and can teach thee to judge of objects according to their real worth. In the

mean time, imagine not, that what may seem severe in this address, proceeds from any unkindness to thee: for *whomsoever I love, I reprove and correct.* Instead, therefore, of ungratefully quarrelling at so kind an admonition, set thyself immediately and diligently to improve it: *be more zealous* for the future, than thou hast ever been in time past, *and deeply repent* of thy prevailing indolence and degeneracy. *Behold, I have stood for a long time, and I still stand at the door and knock;* waiting for admittance into your hearts. *If any man hear my voice, with a due regard, and open the door;* if he welcome me with affection due to such a friend, and such a Saviour, how mean soever his circumstances in life may be, and how faulty soever his character may formerly have been, *I will enter into his house,* and like some princely guest, will bring my own rich and delightful entertainment along with me; *I will sup with him, and he shall sup with me;* I will treat him with the most endearing and familiar friendship, accept the tokens of his affection, and give him the most solid evidences of mine. Let this variety of motives then engage you, O ye Laodiceans, to shake off that dull lethargic temper which has so long given me cause of complaint; and for your further encouragement, hear the last promise which I make, to all who exert themselves in that holy warfare, to which I am calling you, with becoming vigour and resolution: *as for the valiant conqueror, I will give him to sit down with me upon my glorious and exalted throne* in the heavenly world; *as I also myself have conquered* the enemies which violently assaulted me in the days of my flesh, *and am set down with my Father upon his throne;* my faithful servants shall partake with me of this honour in the great day of my appearing, and shall live and reign with me for ever. *He therefore, that hath an ear to hear, let him be all attention* on this occasion, and *hear what the Spirit saith to the churches;* regarding what has been

SECT.
vi.

Rev.
III. 18.

19

20

21

22

been addressed to each, as intended to afford
 matter of general instruction.

IMPROVEMENT.

- Is what age, or in what place, will the *church* be entirely free from this *Laodicean* temper, which is so justly complained of by our *Lord*, and represented as so *loathsome* to him; I mean, an *indolence* in religion, often joined with arrogance and spiritual pride too, as if great attainments were made, where it is almost matter of doubt, whether the very *essentials* be remaining! Let us not indulge to a vain *conceit* of our own *wisdom*, and *riches*, and *sufficiency*; but let us thankfully hearken to that kind invitation, which he here gives us, to come and *purchase* that of him, *without money, and without price*, by which we may be *truly* and *substantially* enriched; that by which we may attain to real knowledge and true discernment; and may be *clothed* with ornaments and glories, which shall render us amiable in the eyes of God. How long has our *compassionate Saviour* been waiting upon us! How long has he *stood knocking at the door*! And O, for what guests hath he been excluded! who have filled our hearts and taken the throne in them, while the entrance has been denied to the *Lord of glory and grace*! Let us humble ourselves in the dust before him, and entreat that he would *now enter* as into his own habitation; that he would do us the honour *to sup with us*; that he would cause us to *sup with him*; opening to us the stores of his love and bounty, and causing our souls to rejoice in his salvation. "Awaken us, *O blessed Jesus*, to give thee a most cheerful admittance; and rather show thy love to us by *chastisements* and *rebuke*, than suffer us entirely to forfeit it, by continued insensibility and negligence. *Holy and true, who hast the key of David*, exert thy power, irresistible in heaven and on earth, in *opening* our hearts: and O, *set before us* an *open door* of service; and give us to use it to the utmost, for thy glory. Strengthen us to *keep the word of thy patience*, and make us *unshaken* in our attachment to thee, in every *hour of temptation, which may come upon the earth, that none may take away our crown*."
- Whatever our trials may be, let us rejoice in this, that they will be only for a short duration; for our *Lord* is *coming quickly*: whatever our combat may be, let us arm ourselves with *faith* in those glorious promises, which our *Lord* makes to them that persevere and overcome.
- Have we not experienced the pleasure of filling a place in the *house of God* on earth? But this sacred satisfaction, and the holy season

season which affords it, is quickly over : let us long for the blessed time, when we shall be fixed as *immoveable pillars* in the temple of God above. And O, may we now wear, engraven on our hearts, *Ver. the name of our God and of his heavenly city*, and the new name of ²¹ our triumphant *Redeemer*, as a token for good, that we shall bear the inscription in *bright* and *everlasting* characters above. But even this most expressive promise was not equal to all the purposes of a Saviour's *love* : that nothing therefore, might be wanting to enkindle the most generous ambition, he has been pleased to speak of *our sitting down with him upon his throne, as he is sat down on his Father's throne*. And who then will ever scruple to suffer with him, when thus assured of *reigning* with him in everlasting glory ! O, who would grudge to resign, not merely the accommodations of life, *but even an earthly throne*, in the hope of one so much more radiant, exalted, and permanent ! *Fear not, little flock ! it is your Father's and your Saviour's good pleasure to give you the kingdom*, (Luke xii. 32,) and he animates you to pursue it with such compassionate earnestness, as if he could hardly enjoy it *himself*, unless it were communicated to *you*.

SECT.
vi.

SECT. VII.

Another scene now opens on the apostle John : in which God is represented as enthroned in celestial glory, surrounded with the hieroglyphical representation of angels, and the glorified church.
Rev. IV. 1, to the end.

REV. IV. 1.

AFTER this, I looked and behold a door was opened in heaven ; and the first voice which I heard was as it were of a trumpet talking with me : which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit : and

REVELATION IV. 1.

AFTER these things, and after Jesus had dictated to me these seven epistles, *I saw, and behold*, it seemed as if a door were opened in heaven, near to which I was brought ; so that I was able to look in, and see what passed, and was transacted there. *And the first voice which I heard before*, [was] as loud as the sound of a trumpet , and while speaking to me, it seemed to issue out from thence ; and it said, *Come up hither ; and having given thee this charge relating to present things, I will shew thee what shall be afterwards.* And immediately I was ² in the Spirit^a and an extraordinary vision presented

SECT.
vii.

Rev.
IV. 1.

a *I was in the spirit.*] This phrase signifies, to be under a strong and supernatural impulse, caused by the miraculous operation of the spirit of God acting on the imagination in such a manner as to open extraordinary scenes, which had

not any exact external archetype. And it is much illustrated by the view presented to Ezekiel, when he sate in his house among the elders of the people, (Ezek. viii. 1,) who probably saw nothing but the prophet himself, as one in a trance, or extacy, or whose

SECT.
VII.
Rev.
IV. 2.

sented itself to my intellectual view; for by *by* *id* and unreservedly a circumstance of so great importance; *a throne was set in heaven*, to represent that of the blessed God; and there was *one sitting upon it*, of a majestic form and appearance, and arrayed in robes of glory, suited to the situation in which he was.

3 *And he who sat [on it] was, in the form and lustre of his appearance, like a jasper and sardine stone, and a rainbow, in which the bright green, in appearance like the vivid, though soft and agreeable colour of an emerald [see] especially prevalent, appeared round about the throne; expressive of that propitiousness and kindness, and of that covenant-relation to his people, which the blessed God is pleased to acknowledge in the midst of his transcendent glory.* (Compare

4 *Isa. ix. 10.) And, in an extensive circle, round about the throne of God [there were] twenty four other thrones; and on the thrones I saw twenty four elders sitting as an emblem of the Old Testament church, and also of the New; and they were clothed in a habit somewhat resembling that of the Levites, or Priests, with white raiment; and in token of their royal dignity, they had upon their heads golden crowns.*

5 *And out of the throne there came flashes of vivid lightnings and thunders, and sometimes articulate voices; and seven lamps of fire [were] burning continually before the throne; which are the*

seven

and behold, a throne was set in heaven; and one sat on the throne.

2 And he that sat was looked upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone, and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were four and twenty seats; and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thunders, and voices, and there were seven lamps

whose thoughts were so attentively fixed, as to be insensible of what passed around him. We are not therefore to imagine, that the persons were in that state, or the time spent, at the time and conversation, were real things existing in reality, though they immorally were known to be things that did really exist. But think it is possible, that several things, by which we suppose we have been formed, I think it would be profitable, that all the persons were present to the presence of St. John. This will keep us, in our comprehension, clear of a thousand difficulties, and be a great advantage, which would follow from a contrary supposition; namely, that there is indeed, you are one; by the force of which, there passed a word; and that there are others, who are one; and how denoting; and that God himself appears and lives here. &c. And this observation I make more for all, desiring that it may be considered, and applied as occasion present.

b. *Like Jasper, &c.* I do not suppose this refers so much to the colour of these stones, as to their lustre, and the radiance of the light, as reflected from them, when perfectly polished. The continued appearance, in which, to represent a constant glowing of which the picture was, with itself, an apparent truth. And that being, and showing, seems to be here, when particularly concerned; that to imply there were no other, but that the proportion of grace was greater than ordinary. Compare Ezekiel vi.

c. *Seven lamps of fire, &c.* The number seven is a symbol of the perfection and eternity; and here are called *lamps*, as the radiance of light was common to all the seven. And thus might be considered as representatives of the seven persons dwelling at the throne in the unity of the God.

d. *Seven lamps of fire, &c.* I think that there are seven lamps of God; that is, as the symbol of eternally, comp. v. 6.

but

lamps of fire, burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

6 And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal : and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne were four beasts full of eyes, before and behind.

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast

seven spirits of God ; that is, they represent a great variety of the Spirit's operations, and those of good angels who act in subserviency to him.

And before the throne [there was] correspondent to the brazen sea in Solomon's temple, ⁶ (1 Kings vii. 23.) a great laver, or sea, which was made all of pure pellucid glass, which was clear like crystal itself. And in the middle of the space between the throne and the circle about the throne [there were] four living creatures ; and to signify their intelligence, and quickness of observance, they appeared full of eyes, both before and behind : These four animals, of a ⁷ very extraordinary form, seem to have been intended as hieroglyphical representations of the angelic nature : and the head of the first animal, in this marvellous composition, [was] like a lion, to signify the courage and vigour with which these celestial beings execute the commands

SECT.
vii.

Rev.
IV. 5.

but I at present doubt, whether they may not be distinguished, *Lamps of fire*, or lambent flames, like those that fell upon the apostles on the day of pentecost, (Acts ii. 3.) might perhaps be emblems of the blessed Spirit of God in its various and powerful operations ; especially those by which the minds of intelligent created beings are illuminated and purified. And the Spirits standing before the throne, might be distinct appearances of angelic forms ; as it is certain some of them were, from the actions they afterwards performed : *sounding the seven trumpets*, &c.

[*e Four living creatures.*] It was a most unhappy mistake in our translators, to render the word *ζωα*, *beasts* ; it certainly signifies any other kind of animals, that is of creatures which have animal life, as well as *beasts*. The word *beast* not only degrades the signification, but the animals here mentioned, have parts and appearances, which beasts have not, and are represented as in the highest sense rational.

[*f Hieroglyphical representations, &c.*] It is well known, the ancients (borrowing them I suppose from the Egyptians,) dealt much in *hieroglyphics*, by which natural and moral truths were expressed. Dr. Middleton, in his curious collection of *antiquities*, presents us with one so remarkable, that I cannot forbear mentioning it here. It is a copy of a gem, in which a man's face, an elephant's head, a peacock, and a sceptre, are joined together. He thinks it was intended as an *hieroglyphic*, or emblematical representation of Socrates : as the face bears a strong resemblance to the

pictures usually given of him. He supposes the human face to represent that of Socrates, and the other figures, those beautiful and Divine images which were in his mind. The peacock, being the most beautiful bird, may denote the beauty of his virtues ; the sceptre, his majesty and authority ; the elephant, the strength and fortitude of his mind. And for the same reason he observes, it might be used to express the character of a philosopher in general ; but especially, the *stoic's wise man*, who was furnished with all kinds of virtues and perfections, being the only beautiful and valiant man, and a king, whatever his circumstances might happen to be. Middleton's *Antiq. T. i. c. xi. § 10*, p. 243—245. There can, I think, be no doubt, but these are the *cherubim* described by Ezekiel, chap. 1. which therefore should be carefully compared with this representation. To consider this appearance as an emblem of *deity*, which is the scheme of Mr. Hutchinson and his followers, appears to me a very great absurdity. Nor can I think, with Mr. Jackson, that they are merely intended to signify the homage paid to God by all *terrestrial* creatures. Another peculiar and extraordinary hypothesis, with regard to them, has been proposed to me, and may perhaps be laid before the world ; and therefore I think it most respectful to the *reverend and ingenious author*, not to anticipate his own design. Some have thought these animals represent spirits of an order superior to angels, taken up wholly in contemplation. See Reynolds of angels, p. 6.

Rev.
VII.

Rev.
IV. 7.

mands of God, and the irresistible strength with which they encounter and vanquish all opposition. *And the head of the second animal [was] like a calf*, or young bullock, to signify the firmness, patience, and perseverance with which they go through the labours which God has appointed them. *And the third animal had a face like a man*, to express, by the image of the only rational creature on this earth, the clearness of intelligence, and the strength of reason, with which, in a vastly superior degree, they are endowed. *And the fourth animal was like a swift flying eagle*, with its wings displayed, and with quickness in its eye and motion, to signify the sprightliness and activity, and incomparable velocity, with which these celestial spirits fly from world to world, to execute the commands they receive from the Sovereign. *And though the heads of these four wonderful living creatures were different, yet they had in the rest of their body, one form; and they had each of them six wings round about*, so that their body seemed covered with the rich plumage of them. *And within [they were] all full of eyes*, to signify their quick discernment of every object around them. *And they rest not day nor night*; but they stand in the Divine presence, saying with united voices, (as the seraphim, represented in the vision which Isaiah saw, Isa. vi. 2, 3,) “*Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who wast, and art, and art to come*,” thus giving to God, in continual acts of adoration, the glory of his natural and moral perfections, and acknowledging their immutability from everlasting and to everlasting. *And while the living creatures are thus giving glory and honour, and thanks to him that sits upon the throne*, and addressing the sublime and harmonious anthems of praise to him, *who liveth for ever and ever*, with unwearied vigour and activity of mind, *The four and twenty elders*, whom I described before as themselves sitting on majestic thrones, *fall down in the Divine presence, even before him that sitteth upon the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever; and they cast down their crowns before the throne*, in token of their homage to that transcendently glorious being, from whose sovereign

beast was like a flying eagle.

8 And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes, within; and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beasts gave glory and honour, and thanks, to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,

[*Holy, holy, holy, &c.*] This anthem is that which Isaiah tells us he heard the seraphim sing, and it is observable, that

many other hymns recorded in this book, are borrowed from the Old Testament.

11 Thou art worthy
O Lord, to receive
glory, and honour, and
power: for thou hast
created all things, and
for thy pleasure they
are, and were created.

reign grace and unparalleled munificence they received them; *saying*, at the same time, *Worthy art thou, O Lord, to receive the ascription of glory, and honour, and power; for thou hast, by thine almighty energy, created all things, and for thy sovereign will, they are and were created; their first production, and continued existence, is owing to the riches of thy free goodness; and therefore, they are all under the strictest obligations, according to their respective natures, to subserve the purposes of thy glory.*

SECT.
vii.

Rev.
IV. 11.

IMPROVEMENT.

AND should not *we* likewise fall down with the angels and glorified spirits, and pay some homage to the Sovereign Majesty of heaven, though it be impossible for us to equal theirs? For ever adored be the Divine grace, that a door is opened in heaven; in consequence of which, even before we enter, we are allowed to look in; and thus to confirm our faith, and to animate our devotion; which, alas! after all, is too ready to decline and languish. That it may be greatly invigorated, let us look up to the throne, and to him that sitteth thereupon; and rejoice to see that peaceful emblem with which the seat of his glory is surrounded, the rainbow of vivid and pleasant green: signifying, that the majestic Being who fills it, is the covenant-God of all his believing and obedient people, and that mercy and love reign triumphant, in the whole constitution of that perpetual covenant.

Ver.

1

2, 3

Let us contemplate with veneration the blessed angels, the ministers of God, who do his pleasure, represented here under hieroglyphical characters, as possessed of amazing strength and courage, resolution and patience, of the sublimest reason, and the most deep and penetrating sagacity, active and pure as flames of fire; and with these lofty ideas in our minds, let us ardently pray that the will of God may be so done on earth, as it is done in heaven. Let us also remember the elders here mentioned, the representatives of the church of the Redeemed, seated on glorious thrones, clothed in that white raiment, which is the righteousness of the saints, and adorned with crowns of glory. And let us especially consider, how the angels and the saints are employed: they rest not day nor night from breathing out the most ardent devotions; they feel nothing of that weariness and languor with which we are too frequently invaded in this state of mortality, even in our best moments, and divinest frames; but they cry continually, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art

6, 7

4

3

act to come; they give glory, and honour, and thanksgiving to him that sitteth on the throne. And infinitely worthy he is to receive it: He who is the *Almighty* Creator, He who is the ever-present, and ever-gracious *Supporter* of all! *Thou art worthy, O Lord, thou alone art worthy:* and though thou withholdest from us the face of thy throne, while we dwell in these *tabernacles of clay*, yet as we are thy *creatures*, thy *rational creatures*, we partake of thy protection and bounty, and feeble as our faculties are, and dark as the world is in which we dwell, we are able to discover thee as our *Almighty Creator* our constant *Preserver*, our never-failing *Benefactor*. And as such, may we *daily* worship and adore thee, with our feeble voices in this state of mortality; that when we are duly prepared, we may begin a nobler song, and join in the sublimer anthems and hallelujahs above. Amen.

SECT. VIII.

The vision of the sealed Book, and of the Lamb that was slain, who was found worthy to open it, and on that account received the acclamation of the whole choir of angels and saints. Rev. V. 1—14.

REVELATION V. 1.

SECT.
VIII.
Rev.
V. 1.

AND, having observed the particulars mentioned above, *I saw in the right hand of him who sat on the glorious throne* already described, the volume of a *book*, or *scrole*, written on both sides, *within and without*, for though I saw only the outside, perceiving it inscribed with characters, I naturally concluded the inside was full; and, as it was rolled up, it was *sealed with seven strong seals*, each of which belonged to a distinct leaf. *And I saw a mighty angel*, who wase, in his appearance, the evident marks of dignity and power, *proclaiming with a great voice*, and saying, *Who is worthy to open the mysterious book which is in the hand of God, and to loose its seals*, and so to disclose

Rev. V. 1.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the back side, sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

118

a Written on both sides, *within and without*]. Mr. Lowman, after Grotius, has observed, that there seems to be a stop after the word, *within*, and that it should be repeated, *within within*, and so on, on the back side. But the learned Dr. Hammond both verse well annotated this scene given to the paragon, observing, that it appears in the process, that the

opening of every single seal brings forth some new representation, which could not be the case, if all the seals were on the back side; for then they must all be opened, before any part of the book could be discovered, &c. And therefore it must be concluded, that each seal belonged to a distinct leaf.

SECT.
viii.

Rev.
V. 3.

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb as it had been slain,

its wonderful contents? *And upon this I saw an universal blank confusion upon every countenance; so that it plainly appeared, that no one, among all the creatures of God, in heaven, or upon earth, or under the earth, was able to open the book, or to look into it:* And, as I had an earnest desire to know the contents, and had pleased myself with a secret expectation that some extraordinary discovery was to be made to me, and to the church, from thence, it grieved me exceedingly, inasmuch that *I wept abundantly, because no one was found worthy to open and read the book; nor indeed, so much as to look into it.* And as the grand act of adoration, in which the elders had joined with the living creatures, to him that sat on the throne, was over, *one of the elders said to me, Weep not, behold, the Lion, who is of the tribe of Judah,* (that excellent Person to whom that oracle relating to Judah, in which he was described under the token of a lion, to represent his invincible strength, by which he shall triumph over all the enemies, (Gen. xlix. 9, 10, principally referred;) he hath conquered this great difficulty: He, who is the Root, that was to spring from the stock of David, when it seemed to be withered in the earth, *hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose its seven seals; so that thou shalt soon hear its contents; for he is appointed by God to penetrate and discover those secret decrees, which are concealed from every creature in heaven, and on earth, and under the earth.* And I beheld, and lo, to my great astonishment, *in the middle space between the throne and the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, who made a kind of semicircle about them, there stood this illustrious Person, whose title I had just been hearing; and, though he was spoken of by the name of the Lion of the tribe of Judah, to express the terrors of his wrath against his implacable enemies, the symbol of his Person, in this mysterious vision, was very different; for he appeared as a Lamb, who had been slain for sacrifice, and wore the recent marks of slaughter, in the blood on his throat and breast; and this Lamb was of a very uncommon form, having seven horns and seven eyes, instead of two of each; and this I understood as a mysterious representation of extraordinary power and knowledge, and of the wonderful degree in which the Spirit of God*

was

Rev.
V. 6.

was poured out upon the Person whom this visionary Lamb represented; for *these are the seven Spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth*, they represent that Divine energy, which operates every where; and of exerting which, the most illustrious angels have often the honour to be the ministers. *And he came near to the seat of Majesty, and took the book out of the right-hand of him who sat upon the throne*, which I understood as a symbol, to intimate that the Lord Jesus Christ, whom I knew to be represented by this slaughtered Lamb, was appointed to reveal the secret decrees of God, and to give me those discoveries which I so much desired to receive.

8 *And when he received the Book in the manner I have described, the four living creatures, and the twenty-four elders, fell down before the Lamb*, in token of humble reverence and adoration, and these elders appeared as a choir of humble worshippers in the temple of God, *having every one harps of gold, with which they played in sweet harmony, to add the music of their voices; and they had also golden vials, or censers, full of perfumes, which are the prayers of the saints*; for, as I understood these elders to be the representatives of the church, I apprehended that, in allusion to the incense offered in the temple while the people were praying, this circumstance had a reference to prayer, and was intended to shew how acceptable it is to God, when it proceeds from an holy and an upright heart.

9 *And they sang a new song, excellent in its kind, and composed on a much greater occasion, and in much sublimer strains of Divine harmony, than those which the priests and Levites sang in the temple of Jerusalem; saying, Worthy art thou*

slain, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took the book out of the right-hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four beasts, and four and twenty elders, fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book,

to

b *Seven Spirits of God.*] Comparing this text with chap. viii. 2. I must acknowledge, that this is indeed to be understood of seven angels. Mr. Mede infers from hence, that these are, in fact, seven angels, who preside over all the rest. But I cannot allow the consequence to be certain. We sometimes read of *four spirits*, sent forth as these are said to be. (Zech. vi. 5.) and, I think, the whole it amounts to, is, that there are many ministerial spirits, who are the instruments of that providence which Christ exercises over the earth, who bring to him an account of secret passes, and receive and execute his commands. And by the way, this will no more prove, that

he is under a necessity of receiving intelligence from them, or of using their assistance, than the *paschal passage* of Zeebariah will prove it of God the Father, Zech. iv. 2, 10. But Dr. Scott very justly argues, that as they are called *the seven eyes of the Lord* in that text, and hence of the Lamb, it is an argument for the exaltation of the *Man Christ Jesus*, above the highest angel in heaven.

c *Harps, or censers.*] These, (as Mr. Lewin observes,) were not small bottles, such as are now called *trills*; but cups on a plate, like a tea-cup and saucer, in allusion to the *censers* of gold in which the priests offered incense in the temple.

d *Of*

book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou was slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people and nation;

to take the book from the hand of God, and to open the seals thereof; for thou, O blessed Lamb of God, who takest away the sins of the world, thou wast slain to expiate our guilt, and thou hast redeemed us to God by thy precious blood, from the dominion of sin, the tyranny of Satan, the curse of the law, and the wrath of a justly incensed Deity; whose servants and favourites we are now become, in consequence of thy kind and gracious interposition. And we are now assembled round his throne, out of every tribe, and language, and people, and nation, near and afar off, sacred and profane, learned and barbarous; wherever we were dispersed, thou hast found us, and into whatever bondage and misery we were sunk, thy power and thy mercy have rescued us; And thou hast made us to our 10 God, kings and priests; we are robed in purity and majesty, we are crowned with gold; and here we appear in these priestly offices, which we perform with the splendour of princes; and we shall reign on earth: the Christian cause shall prevail through all ages; while the happy souls who have passed courageously through their trials upon earth, come hither in their appointed seasons, and share the honours of thy triumphant kingdom. And I beheld this glorious scene 11 with inexpressible pleasure; and while my soul was all attention, I also heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and of the living creatures^d, which betokened in general the angelic nature, and of the elders which represented the church. And a multitude appeared joining the choir, so exceeding great, that the number of them was myriads of myriads and thousands of thousands; I was ready to apprehend that neither thousands nor millions were sufficient to express them. And there was not so 12 much as a jarring voice, or a cold and languid heart in the whole assembly; but with united ardour and harmony, they were saying, with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slaughtered, to receive power over universal nature, and all the riches it can boast. Worthy is he, to whom we should ascribe consummate and

SECT.
viii.

Rev.
V.9.

10 And hast made us unto our God kings and priests; and we shall reign on the earth,

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands;

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain,

^d Of many angels, and of the living creatures.] This plainly shews that there was an appearance of angels, as well as of

these animals which represented their natures; a circumstance which I do not remember in the vision of Ezekiel.

EAST.
VII.
Rev.
V. 12.

and unsearchable wisdom, and restless might, and peerless honour, and resplendant glory, and immortal blessing; even he, who once appeared under a cloud of weakness and poverty, and under the imputation of folly, loaded with dishonour and infamy, with reproaches and curses: worthy is he, of all the dignity and glory, the benediction and homage of the heavenly world, throughout the endless ages of

- 13 eternity! And while the multitude of the heavenly hosts were singing this sublime anthem, every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, even all things that are in them, in every various form of nature, seemed to echo back the voice; and I heard them saying, To him who sits upon the throne, and to his Son the Lamb, the worthy Partaker of his throne and kingdom, [be] perpetual blessing, and the profoundest honour, and consummate glory, and almighty strength, ascribed for ever and ever. And the four living creatures said, Amen, to this hymn, to testify their hearty concurrence; and at the same time, the twenty-four elders fell down before the throne, and worshipped him who liveth for ever and ever, acknowledging him to be infinitely superior to all those services which the most exalted powers of created nature are capable of rendering.

slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

12 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

13 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down, and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. It should fill us with unutterable joy, when we lift up our eyes to the throne of God, that we there discern the Lamb wearing the marks of slaughter. We should then gratefully remember his dying love; for it is his precious blood which cleanses us from all iniquity, and emboldens our addresses to God, conscious as we are, that our guilt is attended with great aggravations. Surely, had it been queried, with respect to the great atonement to be made for our transgressions, as it was with respect to the opening these seals,

c In the sea.] As the inhabitants of the watery elements are necessarily dead, I suppose we are not to understand by this that they seemed to give praise in the praises of Christ upon this occasion; but to show, that heaven, earth and sea, is made to signify, that an anthem, in its different ways,

concurrent in the praise; that is, that the whole distribution of it constituted in fitness not matter of praise; just as instruments, as well as rational creatures, are called upon to praise God in several of the psalms especially, Psal. clixvi.

seals, *Who is worthy* to complete this gracious undertaking? we should have seen with unspeakable anguish, that *none in heaven or on earth*, would have been found equal to the task. But here ^{3, 4} likewise, *the Lion of the tribe of Judah has prevailed*. How divinely is he furnished for the high station he sustains, and for all the glorious services assigned to him! What amazing *power*, what adorable *wisdom* is implied in the *seven horns*, and *seven eyes*, with ⁶ which he is here delineated? and O! what love, in submitting to be slain, that *he might redeem us to God by his blood*! With the *prayers of the saints*, which come up before God as *incense*, may they ever mingle their most ardent *praises* for this Divine condescension. And out of gratitude to their Redeemer, let them rejoice to see the glorious change in his condition, from his humiliation and sufferings on earth, to his exaltation and reward in heaven: and let them ardently long for the happy season, when the *full choir* of the redeemed, *from every nation, and people, and tongue*, shall unite in this joyful acclamation, *Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing*.—In this world the disciples of *Christ* are only a *little flock*, but when they stand together upon the heavenly mountain, they shall appear *ten thousand* ¹¹ *times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands*; and all the harmony of their voices, and all the ardour of their souls, inconceivably improved as all their powers will be, shall be united on this happy occasion. Form us, *O Lord*, we intreat thee, for this Divine employment, and teach us, in some measure, to anticipate its pleasure, in these regions below. Even now, in spirit and intention, we prostrate ourselves before thee, and lay down the *crowns*, which *faith*, as it were, hath already received, at *thy feet*; giving *glory* to him *who sitteth upon the throne*, and celebrating the victories and honours of the *Lamb*.

SECT.
viii.

SECT. IX.

An account of the opening of the six first seals, and of the awful events which accompanied the opening of each. Rev. VI. throughout.

REV. VI. 1.

AND I saw, when the Lamb opened one

REVELATION VI. 1.

I COULD not but be all attention to this wonderful scene; and I saw when the Lamb opened one

SECT.
ix.Rev.
VI. 1.

a The vision of the seals.] I am vastly more obliged to that ingenious and excellent commentator, Mr. Lowman, for

what I understand of this book, than to any other writer whatsoever. And as I think his celebrated and valuable scheme of

SECT.
IX.

Rev.
VI. 1.

one of the seven seals of the book, which he had taken out of the right-hand of him that sat upon the throne ; and I heard one of the four living creatures, which said, as with a voice of thunder, Come, and see the wonders which are now presenting themselves. And I saw, and behold a white horse appeared ; and he who sat thereon had a bow in his hand, and a quiver of arrows hanging at his back ; and to express his royal dignity as the King both of the church and of the world, there was given to him a crown of gold, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer : I understood that he was to gain signal victories, and that the series of them was immediately to begin. (Compare Psal. xlv. 3 ; Rev. xvii. 14 ; xix. 11^b.)

3 And when he opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature, saying, as the former had done when the first was opened, Come

4 and see. And another horse came out, [which] seemed

one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come, and see.

2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse ; and he that sat on him had a bow : and a crown was given unto him : and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, come, and see,

4 And there went out

of interpretation the most satisfactory, and which indeed throws considerable light upon the series of prophecy, I shall present my readers with a short view of his plan, under the several visions, referring the more curious to the commentary itself. But I would first observe, with regard to this celebrated performance, that there is, in many particulars, a beautiful resemblance between the prophetic representations, and the events supposed to be correspondent to them, and that the historical facts are represented with great learning and judgment, yet the correspondence between the prophecies and the events is not in all respects, so clear and evident, as might have been expected, nor can we always say, why the events in question are represented by one of the *emblems* used, rather than by another. However, he has fairly illustrated many passages, especially by similar phrases from the prophetic books of the Old Testament, in which he is quite unequalled ; and hath made out so much, particularly with respect to the *first*, and beginning of the *third period*, as evidently proves this book to be a glorious confirmation of Christianity, and worthy our most attentive and diligent examination. — This learned and accurate writer, then, divides the prophetic parts of this book into seven periods. The *first* represented by the *first*, shows the state of the church under the *heavenly Roman Emperor*, from A. D. 66, to A. D. 325. II. *Period*, of the *trumpets*, in its state from Constantine, A. D. 325,

to A. D. 730. III. *Period*, of the *evils*, its state in the times of the last head of Roman government, represented by the *angel*, for 1460 years, from about the year 730, to A. D. 2016. IV. *Period*, the *millennium*, from A. D. 2016, to A. D. 3000. V. *Period*, Satan loosed for a little season, and then destroyed. VI. *Period*, the resurrection and final judgment. VII. *Period*, the heavenly state.

b *First seal, &c.* This refers to the triumph of Christianity over Jewish and heathen opposition by the labours of its first preachers.

c *The second living creature.* An *angel* of those living creatures represented as speaking messages, I think it contains what was advanced in sect. vi. note f. relating to the scheme of Mr. Holmman, who supposes the *four living creatures*, taken *altogether*, to be an emblem of the Trinity.

d *Another horse came out.* Mr. Lowman thinks, that the leaves of the book were so adjusted, that on opening the *first seal*, the first leaf unfolded ; and on it there was drawn, in a vivid and beautiful picture, a man mounted on a *white horse* ; and that what is described on opening those that follow, is an account of the *various pictures* which John saw delineated on the several leaves. But as we have an account, not only of the appearance of these things, but of their motion, and their tone ; and especially, of a change in the state of several at term, particularly of the *rudder under the altar*, (ver. 9.) I

COE

SECT.

ix.

Rev.

VI. 4.

out another horse that was red; and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another; and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see, And I beheld, and lo, a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see that thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

seemed to betoken some great slaughter and desolation to be made by approaching wars; for he [was] red; and it was given to him who sat upon it, to take peace from the earth; and that they should slay each other. And, as a further token of this, there was given to him a great sword or faulchion, in his hand, by which he might make terrible devastation.

And when he opened the third seal, I heard⁵ the third living creature saying, as the two former had done, Come and see. And I saw, and behold, there appeared a black horse, which might betoken an approaching famine, by the emblematical and memorable circumstances which attended his entrance on the scene; for he that sat upon him, had a pair of scales in his hand, to imply that men should eat their bread by weight, and drink their water by⁶ measure. And I heard a great voice in the midst of the four living creatures, saying, A measure of wheat, which shall only be daily food for one man, shall now be sold for a denarius, or Roman penny which is the price of his daily labour; and three measures of barley only shall be sold for a denarius, or Roman penny. And yet, that there may not be a total scarcity, see that thou who appearest as the executioner of this judgment, injure not the oil, nor the wine, let

conclude, that the scene did not lie in the leaf of the book, but arose in vision as the rest; and that the events described, seemed successively to pass before the eyes of John. And indeed, I think it apparent that the state of the vision he at first saw, was somewhat altered, upon the opening of some of the seals, especially the seventh. —The ingenious author above mentioned, interprets this seal, of the judgments of God upon the Jewish persecutors, under Trajan and Hadrian; A. D. 100, to A. D. 138, when the Jews had 1000 cities and fortress-taken and destroyed, and 580,000 men slain.

[A measure of wheat for a penny.] This may seem, to an English reader, a description of great plenty; but, it certainly intends the contrary, as I have intimated in the paraphrase. The penny was about seven-pence halfpenny of our money; and it appears from Tacitus, as well as from Mat. xx. 2, (See Fam. Expos. in loc.) to have been the daily wages of a labourer,

It also appears from other ancient writers, particularly Herodotus, (see Raphelius in loc.) and from Hippocrates. Diogenes, Laertius, and Athanasius, (see Grotius in loc.) that this measure or chænix, was no more than was allowed to a slave for his daily food. What would become of families when a man could gain by his labour no more, and that only of bread, than might suffice for his own subsistence? — Mr. Lowman interprets this third seal of the scarcity, in the time of the Antonines, from A. D. 158, to A. D. 193. and produces passages from Tertullian, and the Roman historians, concerning the calamity the empire endured by scarcity in this period.

[See that thou injure not, &c.] The introduction of so many allegorical persons, as famine and death, and the state of separate spirits in this vision, confirms what was said above, in note d, as to the nature of the things that appeared.

g Fourth

MAIT.
18.
Fay.
VI 7.

let the olive-trees, and the vines, remain un-
blasted, to shew, that God in judgment remem-
bers mercy.

8 And when he opened the fourth seal, I heard
the voice of the fourth living creature saying to
me, Come, and see a further discovery of the Di-
vine will. And I saw and beheld a pale horse
appeared; and as for him that sat on him, his
name was called Death. He appeared like a per-
son entirely emaciated, and well furnished him;
he seemed to be attended with a person, who
was a proper emblematical representation of the
state of separate spirits; and there was given
unto him power to slay a great number, as it
were, the fourth part of the earth, with the
sword, and with famine, and with pestilence,
that most dreadful kind of death, and with the
wild beasts of the field.

9 And when he opened the fifth seal, a very me-
morable scene represented itself to me; for then
I saw under the altar, which made a part of the
view before me, a visible representation of the
souls of those who were slaughtered on account of
the word of God, and the testimony to the truth
of the gospel which they courageously retained,
in the midst of all opposition. And they cried
with a loud voice, as making an appeal to the
injured justice of the Divine Being, and said,
How long, O thou supreme and sovereign Lord
of the universe, who art ever armed with al-
mighty power and terror against all thine im-
placable enemies: how long, O thou holy and
true God, shall it be, ere thou dost judge and
avenge our blood upon those who dwell upon the
earth? who have, without remorse, poured it
out as water. And, upon this, they appeared
to be called up from the place where they lay
as so many bleeding victims; and there were
given unto each of them white robes, in token of
the

7 And when he had
opened the fourth seal,
I heard the voice of
the fourth living crea-
ture, and said,

8 And I looked, and
beheld, a pale horse,
and he that sat on
him was Death, and
his name that sat on
him was Death, and
he followed with him.
And power was
given unto them, over
the fourth part of the
earth, to kill with
sword, and with hun-
ger, and with death,
and with the beasts of
the earth.

9 And when he had
opened the fifth seal,
I saw under the altar,
the souls of them that
were slain for the word
of God, and for the tes-
timony which they
held.

10 And they cried,
with a loud voice, say-
ing, How long, O
Lord, holy and true,
dost thou not judge and
avenge our blood on
them that dwell on the
earth?

11 And white robes
were given unto every
one of them; and it
was said unto them,
that

[Fourth seal.] Mr. Lowmyer interprets
this of the seal of the pestilence, and
other calamities, in the regions of Maximian
and Valerian, from A. D. 285, to A. D.
310. This he supports by proper autho-
rities from several Christian and heathen
writers in that period, who particularly
mention one pestilence that lasted fifteen
years.

[Ere thou dost avenge our blood.] We
are not to understand this as the language
of personal revenge, but of zeal for the
honour of God, which was so intimately

concerned in the punishment to be
inflicted upon those hard-hearted per-
secutors.

[White robes.] Mr. Thompson understands
this, as an intimation of their preference
to some new part of honour and service.
But, I suppose, this was only a represen-
tation, that though their blood did cry for
vengeance in the ears of God, yet that
vengeance should be delayed; neverthe-
less, that, in the mean time, they should be
enabled to a glorious state. The argument
he draws from this passage, in proof of

that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

the triumph they had gained over death, and all its terrors; and it was said to them, that they should rest yet a little while, though their blood remained unavenged, till the number of their fellow servants, and brethren, who should be killed, as they [had been] for the testimony of a good conscience, and the defence of the gosgel, should be fulfilled, according to the intention of Divine Providence, in letting their persecutors go on a while, till they had filled up the measure of their iniquity.

SECT.

ix.

Rev.

V l. 11.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood.

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty wind:

14 And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places:

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bond-man, and every free man, hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains;

And I saw when he opened the sixth seal, and behold there was immediately a great earthquake: and not earth alone, but heaven, was affected with great consternation; for the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became red as blood: And it seemed as if the stars fell from heaven upon the earth; numbers of them at once, as fast as when a fig-tree drop-
peth its untimely figs, being shaken by the force
of a mighty wind. And the heavens passed away,
the clouds rolling one upon another, like a volume of a book when it is rolled up; and every
mountain on earth, and every island in the sea,
were moved out of their places; so great and general was the shock, to represent the calamities
approaching in those terrible wars, which were
to precede the revolutions to which this seal referred.
And all the inhabitants of the
world were thrown into an universal terror; so
that the kings of the earth, and the grandees
about their courts, and the rich men and the
chief officers of armies, who commanded their
thousands, and the powerful men, who bore the
greatest sway in the public counsels, or were
armed with the most warlike prowess; and every
slave, and every free-man, fled as in surprise,
and hid themselves as fast as they could, even in
the

12

13

14

15

a first resurrection, seems too precarious to be repeated. *Flem. First. Res.* p. 46, 47.

k The number of their brethren who should be killed. &c.] Nothing could tend more to encourage Christians to endure their sufferings with steady patience, than this that it was appointed of God, that a certain number of martyrs should be put to death, and that the season of their triumph was to succeed.

l Fifth seal.] Mr. Lowman interprets this seal, of the severe persecution under Dioclesian, from A. D. 270, to A. D.

304; which was the most extensive and furious of all; and so many Christians suffered death, that the heathens boasted, in an ancient inscription that they had effaced the name and superstition of the Christians.

m Earthquake, — sun becoming black, — stars falling, &c.] Awful judgments and calamities are often described by such commotions and alterations in the natural world. Compare Isa. xiii. 10; xxxiv. 4. Ezek. xxxii. 7; Joel ii. 10; and the like.

n Day

ARCT. IX. the most gloomy caves, and among the rocks of
 Rev. the mountains, horrid as this retreat appeared.
 VL. 16. And not thinking themselves sufficiently secure
 there, they said, in wild astonishment and af-
 fright, to the mountains and to the rocks, Fall
 upon us, and hide us from the face of him who
 sitteth upon the throne, the almighty and terri-
 17 ble God, and from the wrath of the Lamb. For
 the great day of his wrath is come; and mild
 and gentle as he once appeared, we find it in-
 supportably dreadful; and who can be able to
 stand against it? Thus it appeared that they
 would have thought the crush of a mountain less
 terrible, than the vengeance they expected;
 and had more hope of moving inanimate nature
 by their outcries, than of prevailing upon their
 righteous and inexorable Judges.

16. And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb.

17. For the great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to stand.

IMPROVEMENT.

To whatever event these *seals* may refer, it is certain, that the representations here made, are very awful, and very instructive.

Let us consider ourselves as invited to *come up and see*, and let us observe the memorable spectacle with attention. Let the

1 view of the *white horse*, and his rider who went forth conquering
 2 and to conquer, lead us to reflect on the peaceful purposes of our
 blessed Saviour's appearance, and the rapidity of his conquests;
 and engage us frequently to pray for the further prosperity of his
 kingdom, that kingdom of righteousness, love and happiness.

3, 4, 5 When we think of the terrible effects of *war*, of *famine*, and of
pestilence, represented by the *three following horses*, and their riders
 here mentioned, let it excite our thankfulness, that not one
 of this dreadful *triumvirate* is sent forth against us, though our
 national crimes have indeed deserved, that they should invade us
 with

[The *Day of his wrath* is come.] As it ap-
 pears, by comparing one part of this
 book with another, and the last *part* made
 very far, and introduced the *trumpets*;
 and the last trumpet, the *seals*: it is justly
 argued, that there is a reference to a
 series of events, successively following
 each other, and consequently, this passage
 cannot refer to the *final judgment*, but
 to some great and spreading calamity, in
 which the hand of Christ should appear.
 And this interpretation is illustrated and
 confirmed, by the manner in which the
 destruction of Jerusalem is foretold. Mat.
 xxiv. Compare Isa. ii. 19; xiii. 6. Hos.

x. 34. Zeph. i. 14. Luke xxi. 20. Mr.
 Lowman interprets the *6th seal*, of the
 great commotion in the empire, from
 Maximian to Constantine the Great,
 who put an end to the persecution of him,
 then Rome, from A. D. 304, to A. D.
 312, during which time, there were many
 bloody battles between the contending
 emperors, till Constantine abolished paga-
 nism, and established the christian religion.
 This interpretation he confirms by ap-
 posite passages from Lactantius, and the
 heathen historians, and it appears the
 most probable.

with united terrors; that peace should be taken from our land, that our *bread* and *water* should be received by *weight* and *measure*, and that the dead should lie unburied in our streets, the food of the fowls of heaven, and the beasts of the earth: nor can any thing more justly excite our gratitude and thankfulness, than that the terrors and the guilt of *sanguinary persecution*, are not to be found in the midst of us. The history of its horrors and ravages in other nations and ages, may sometimes be an exercise of our *faith*; and we may be ready to cry out with *the souls under the altar*, *How long, O Lord, holy and true, wilt thou not avenge the blood of thy saints upon the earth?* But let us wait with patience; let us not form a hasty and inconsiderate judgment. The dead, who *die in the Lord*, and those who had been persecuted to death for his sake, and in his cause, are incomparably more *happy* than those who are the happiest among the living. The *white robes*, and golden crowns, with which they are adorned, are an abundant compensation, not only for every *lighter* suffering, but even for the *slow fire*, and the *rack*, those most dreadful instruments of torture. And though their malicious and implacable enemies may bitterly insult over them *for a while*, yet *the triumphing of the wicked is for a short time*, their guilty spirits will soon be summoned before the great *Avenger of blood*; and the day is coming when they shall be publicly brought forth, to suffer the utmost demands of his justice; even that day, when all the *figurative* descriptions here used shall be fully answered, in their *literal* meaning; *when the sun shall indeed be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood; when the volume of heaven shall be rolled up as a scroll, and its stars shall fall from their orbs.* It is no wonder, that ungodly sinners fly from this alarming and tremendous scene, with wild consternation and confusion: no wonder, that they read the very heavens with their cries, and *call upon the mountains to fall upon them, and the rocks to cover them:* for O! what were the sudden and irresistible crush of a *rock*, or a *mountain*, when compared with the weight of the *wrath of the Lamb*, and with the *fire and brimstone of the second death*. O! that by the expectation of this awful day, men of *all ranks and conditions*, may be influenced to make their application to him, while he yet appears in the displays of his grace and mercy; to *kiss the Son lest he be angry*, and they perish from the way, even *when his wrath is only beginning to be kindled.* (Psalm. ii. 12.)

SECT.
IX.

Ver.

9

11

26

13, 14

15

17

SECT. X.

The increase of the Christian church, which was to succeed the opening of the seals, is represented by the vision of twelve thousand sealed out of each tribe of Israel; and then follows a view of the glory and happiness of those who should courageously endure persecution while it continued. Rev. VII. throughout.

REVELATION VII. 1.

TEXT.
X.REV.
VII. 1.

AND after these things, it pleased God to give me a representation of the increase which his church should receive, after the commotions which had been shadowed out by those visions which were introduced by the opening the seals. Accordingly, *I saw four angels standing at the four corners of the earth; that is, the north, the south, the east, and the west; and they appeared as holding the four cardinal winds of the earth in their hands, that the winds might not blow upon the earth, nor upon the sea, nor upon any tree; but that there might be the most entire and complete calm, to represent the peaceful state of things, which should succeed the tumultuous and distressing revolutions which had been intimated to me above.* [Comp. Jer. xlix. 35, 37.] *And I saw another angel ascending from the rising of the sun, to intimate the progress the gospel should make from the east to the west; having in his hand, the seal of the living God, in order to impress a mark upon those whom he was graciously determined to distinguish as his own property, and who should be inclined to dedicate themselves to his service. And he cried with a great voice to the four angels, to whom power was given over the winds, at present to restrain them, but afterwards to loose them with great violence, and by them to inflict, in a terrible manner, the earth, and the sea; saying, Infuse not, by the massive vengeance committed to you, the earth, nor the sea, nor the trees, until we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads; that distinguishing them by that seal, you may know how to moderate the force of the storm, where their safety and comfort is concerned. And I then heard the number of those that were sealed, in all, one hundred*

REV. VII. 1.

AND after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea;

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were

more

were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Judah were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Asher were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Naphtalim were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the

hundred and forty-four thousand, who were sealed in an equal number, out of every tribe of the children of Israel. And I heard them mentioned in the following order; of the tribe of Judah, as the most noble and glorious, distinguished by its regal dignity, and its peculiar relation to Christ according to the flesh, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And of the tribe of Reuben, though that were so much degraded by Jacob, and comparatively so small, when the people were numbered in the wilderness, [were] sealed twelve thousand too. Of the tribe of Gad, whose territories in Canaan lay contiguous to those of Reuben on the other side Jordan, [were] also sealed twelve thousand. And, from thence, the angel appeared to pass over to the north-west boundary of the land, and to the shore of the Mediterranean sea, which was the lot of the tribe of Asher, of which there [were] also sealed twelve thousand. And of the neighbouring tribe of Naphtali, whose inheritance lay east of the former, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And of the tribe of Manasseh, whose land lay next to the east of Naphtali [were] sealed the same number, that is, twelve thousand. And of the tribe of Simeon, though it had its inheritance taken out of that of Judah, and so might seem less considerable, there [were] sealed as many as of the former, even twelve thousand. And of the tribe of his brother Levi, though his posterity were scattered among the other tribes, and had no land that was properly their inheritance, [were] sealed twelve thousand likewise. And of the tribe of Issachar, to which the angel then passed, [were] sealed twelve thousand. And of the tribe of Zebulun, which lay contiguous to that of Issachar to the north, [were] also sealed twelve thousand. And of the tribe of Ephraim, the other son of Joseph, and by far

SECT.
X.
Rev.
VII. 5.

a Of the tribe of Judah, &c.] I freely acknowledge, that it is very difficult to me to assign the reason of that order in which the tribes are placed, or the reason, why one of the tribes is omitted; the latter of which appears much more important than the former. However this is plain, that when Levi was mentioned for one tribe, it was necessary, that since twelve only were to be mentioned, one should be omitted. Some indeed have imagined, that Dan was omitted, to ex-

press how detestable idolatry is in the sight of God; as the tribe of Dan was the first that fell into idolatry after their settlement in Canaan. Compare Judges xviii. 30, 31. Dr. Hammond assigns another reason, namely, that long before that time, the tribe of Dan was destroyed, or brought very low, say the Jews; and indeed it is not numbered among the rest of the tribes, 1 Chron. ii. and following chapters. See Ham. in loc.

- far the most considerable of his descendants, [were] sealed twelve thousand too, he not being in that respect at all distinguished from Manassah his brother. And to conclude, *of the tribe of Benjamin, Jacob's youngest son, [were] sealed twelve thousand.* And thus upon the whole, the number of one hundred and forty-four thousand was completed. Nor did I presume to inquire who Dan was not introduced among his brethren, on this occasion. Thus did God represent to me, the extraordinary growth of the Christian Church, which seemed to be matter of inexpressible joy to the inhabitants of the heavenly world. *For after this, I saw, and behold a great multitude, who made a thronged assembly, which no one could number; and appeared to have come out of every nation, and tribe, and people, and language, the blessed fruit of preaching the gospel over all the world; and they then appeared to me, as standing before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed in long white robes, and having branches of palms in their hands, to signify the victory they should gain over all their enemies, and the state of holiness and joy to which they should be finally conducted, notwithstanding all the formidable opposition through which they should be called to pass.* And I heard them crying with a loud voice, in token of the intensity of their desires, and saying, Let all the glory of this great salvation which we have obtained, be ascribed to our God who sits upon the throne, and from thence has graciously regarded us, and exalted us to such dignity and happiness, mean and miserable as we once were; and let it be also ascribed to the grace and blood of the Lamb, who gave himself to be slain for our redemption. And all the angels stood round about the throne, and encompassed also, at the same time, the twenty-four elders, and the four living creatures, and, in token of the humblest reverence,

the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

8 After this, I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no one could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stand before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands.

10 And stood with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which is upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders, and the four beasts, and fell before the

b *Manasse* whom no one could number. See J. Some have supposed, that the hundred and forty-four thousand were Jews, and that these were the Gentile church. But it appears to me, that the saying *these thousand*, expresses the progress of the gospel under Constantine, and that the remarkable numbers were spoken of, were the *spots of gold* now deposited out of this world, and now with God in glory; and especially those who had weathered the

difficulties and persecutions, during the first maturity of Christianity, when the civil power was generally active against it; and when, I think it highly probable, that many persecutions might have reigned in various parts of the world, whose histories are not come down to us. And perhaps the *white robes* and *palms*, which is mentioned ver. 1, may denote the peace in Constantine's time.

the throne on their faces, and worshipped God.

12 Saying, Amen : Blessing and glory and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes ; and whence came they ?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple : and he that sitteth

reverence, they fell down on their faces before the throne, and worshipped God. Saying,

Amen : thus let it be, let the blessing, and the glory, and the wisdom, and the thanksgiving, and the honour, and the power, and the strength, [be] ascribed to our God for ever and ever, amen : may all creatures for ever bless, and give thanks to him, as originally and essentially possessed of supreme glory, complete wisdom, of irresistible and almighty power, and therefore worthy of all honour, though exalted above all praise. We acknowledge him to be so, we rejoice that he is so, and wish that universal nature may join with us in so reasonable, and so delightful an homage, and pronounce the solemn amen.

And one of the elders answered, 13 saying to me, As for those who are clothed with white raiment, and make such a splendid appearance, who are they, and whence do they come ? And I, supposing by his question that 14

he asked in order to quicken my attention to what he had to tell me concerning them, said to him, Sir, I conclude thou knowest, though I do not.

And he said to me, It is true ; and I would have thee observe, for thine own encouragement, and that of thy brethren, and those who may arise after thee, that these are they who are come out of much tribulation which they have endured in the cause of true religion ; and they have washed their robes, and made them so white as you see them, in the blood of the Lamb ; they owe all their exaltation and glory, not to the blood they have themselves offered, but to that most precious blood of his, which he permitted to be shed for their sakes.

Therefore, being thus redeemed to God by him, 15 and having been enabled to approve their fidelity to their Divine Master, in the midst of the greatest extremities, they now receive a rich equivalent for all they have suffered ; for they are before the throne of God, and they perform Divine service

SECT.
X.

Rev.
VII. 12

c *Made them white in the blood of the Lamb.*] It looks too much like an obstinate resolution by no means to acknowledge the efficacy of Christ's blood to our salvation, for any to maintain, that the blood of the Lamb here signifies blood shed for his sake, when it is said in words so much resembling these, chap. i. 5, who

loved us, and washed us from our sins, in his own blood. And chap. v. 9. thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood. The texts produced to palliate the other forced and unnatural interpretation, when consulted, will appear little to the purpose. They are chiefly Col. i. 24, and Heb. xi. 26.

service to him day and night in his temple; and he who sitteth upon the throne, pitcheth his tabernacle, as it were, upon them, and displays the tokens of his presence all around them. *They shall hunger no more, neither shall they thirst any more, for ever; nor shall the scorching rays of the sun fall upon them, nor any other inconvenient and disagreeable heat. For the Lamb, who is in the midst of the throne, shall himself, as it were, own the relation of a Shepherd to them, and take care to feed them, and he shall lead them to fountains of living water; and that God, whom they have faithfully served, and whose interest has been so dear to them, shall act, as it were, the part of an indulgent father, and tenderly wipe away every tear from their eyes; comforting them with the most reviving consolations, after all the calamities and distresses he has permitted them to endure below.*

sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto fountains of living water; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. 4—5. How inexpressibly happy are the thousands of those who are sealed, those whom God has marked out for his own, and in that character, has taken them under his special protection. Whatever storms and tempests may arise, they are in no danger of being forsaken; they shall be preserved inviolably safe, and their happiness is secure. They shall be brought at length to join with the *innumerable multitude, who surround the throne*, and ascribe, as all Israel must do, *salvation to God who sitteth on the throne, and to the Lamb*. And O that the salvation of Israel were come out of Zion, that their praises might sound sweeter here on earth, and that myriads of new voices might unite in the harmonious concert.

12 Those songs of heaven let us begin below, and say, *Amen: blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be to our God for ever and ever: amen*. If

10 through his grace, we can call him our God, how cordially should we join in this sublime ascription?

14, 13 In the mean time, we may see the church in affliction: we may feel a large share of personal, or public tribulation; but, when it presses hardest upon us, let us lift up our eyes to that glorious scene which the apostle beheld, and which was so excellent and sublime, that it might well transport him, even under the tribulations through which he was then making his way to it. Let us persevere, steadily and faithfully, as they did; and the day will

come,

come, when our robes shall be as *white*, and our crowns as *radiant*, and our palms as *verdant* as theirs. Let us then bear with patience, hunger and thirst, heat and weariness. while we travel 16 through this vale of tears ; rejoicing in hope of the everlasting refreshment and pleasure to which the Lamb will lead us ; even those 17 fountains of living water, of which he will give us to drink, when God has wiped away all tears from our eyes, and placed us before his throne, where we shall serve him day and night in his temple, 15 and see his face, and dwell with him, and have him for ever dwell with us, and in us. Amen.

SECT. XI.

On the opening the seventh seal, the seven angels appear with their trumpets, and the four first of them sound. Rev. VIII. throughout.

REV. VIII. 1.

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

REVELATION VIII. 1.

THUS I have given an account of the manner in which the Lamb proceeded in opening six of the seals, and of the effects produced by them : and I am now to add, that when he had opened the seventh seal, there was a profound silence in heaven for about the space of half an hour ; to awaken by that means, a more earnest attention to the extraordinary things that were to appear in consequence of the opening that seal. And I saw the seven angels^b which I have before mentioned, and which then stood before the throne of God, and seven trumpets were given to them, that they might each of them successively sound an alarm ; which I understood to be the symbol of some very important and awakening events, which were in order of time, to succeed those which had been expressed by the

SECT.
xi.Rev.
VIII. 1.

² And I saw the seven angels which stood before God ; and to them were given seven trumpets.

^a Silence in heaven.] Some are of opinion, here is an allusion to the silence which used sometimes to be kept in the worship of God in the temple, while the people were praying, Luke i. 10.—I think, with Mr. Lowman, that the seventh seal was only introductory to the trumpets, and the seventh trumpet to the vials.

^b The seven angels which stood, &c.] The manner in which this is expressed in the Greek, *οὗτοι ἑπτὰ ἄγγελοι*, is

very emphatical. It seems to signify the seven angels, who had before been mentioned as standing before the throne ; and this form of speaking so plainly refers to what had been said before, that it does a great deal towards proving, that the seven Spirits of God, mentioned chap. v. 6, as the eyes and horns of the Lamb, are the same with these angels mentioned in the note on Rev. iv. 5, though, as I have there intimated, it is not absolutely certain.

c With

the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees were burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain

fire of the altar and threw it upon the earth; and as soon as ever this action was performed, there were long and terrible voices and thunders and lightnings, which seemed to break out from the Shechinah, the glorious token of the Divine presence; and there was also the sudden and violent shock of an earthquake, which seemed to shake the foundation of the world; And the seven angels, who had the seven trumpets, stood out in order, and prepared themselves, that they might sound, as every one should receive the appointed signal; which hereupon was given to each in his order.

And the first angel sounded his trumpet; and there was a violent storm of hail and fire, and the shower was also mingled with blood, and it was cast down upon the earth, greatly to the detriment of its productions; and particularly, it seemed to me, that a third part of the trees were burnt up, and all the green grass of the field was also burnt and scorched up. (Compare Exod. ix. 23.)

And the second angel sounded: and it was as if a great mountain burning with fire, was cast into the sea; and it produced so great an alteration

d *With fire of the altar.*] There was no fire upon the golden altar, but that which was in the censer, in which the incense was burnt; so that we must necessarily, by this fire of the altar, understand that of the brazen altar, though it is not expressly declared to be so; and this may intimate, that in some other places the same words may, by comparing different circumstances, have different ideas annexed to them.

e *Voices and thunders.*] If the latter word be intended to explain the former it might be rendered, voices, even thunders. But if different ideas are to be annexed to the words, I must confess, that I know not what they are. Yet we may imagine some distinct articulate sounds different from thunder, to be mixed with it, like that which some of those present heard, John xii. 29. (Compare Isa. xxix. 6.) This representation may be intended to intimate, in general, the confusion and calamities, with which the period, expressed by the successive trumpets, should be filled, and the regard God would shew to his praying people during its continuance.

f *Hail and fire mingled with blood.*]

Grotius explains this, of the hardness of heart, and bloody rage of the Jews; Mr. Mede, of the invasion of the northern nations upon the Romans; and Mr. Clark, of the Arian heresy and persecution, whereby many professors of Christianity were infected, and many destroyed. See his *Annotations in loc.* But Mr. Lowman, more probably, interprets it of the bloody wars in Constantine's family, which with the invasion of the neighbouring nations, almost ruined the whole strength of the Roman empire, fell heavy on its great men and particularly the family of Constantine, which during this period, was extinguished; from A. D. 337, to A. D. 379.

g *Mountain burning.*] Grotius explains this, of the soldiers rapine upon the people of Jerusalem, and firing the towers; Mr. Mede, of the firing of Rome; Mr. Clark, of the spirit of ambition and pride among the clergy; Mr. Lowman, of the invasion of Italy by the northern nations and the taking of Rome by Alaric, general of the Goths, who plundered it and set it on fire, and this calamity was followed by the spoil of the greatest part of Italy, from A. D. 379, to A. D. 412.

tion in the colour of the waters, that it seemed as if a third part of the sea became blood, which I easily apprehended to signify the slaughter which should come upon many people by means of some victorious Prince, and those who fought under his banner. And, as a further token of it, a third part of the creatures which had animal life in the sea died, and a third part of the ships were destroyed thereby, and the persons sailing in them all perished. (Compare Jer. li. 25.)

10 And the third angel sounded; and to represent some great destroyer that was to appear, and become very conspicuous, both for the mischief he should occasion, and the ruin in which he should be involved, there fell from heaven a great star, burning like a torch, and it fell upon a third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters, to signify the influence which the Person represented by it should have upon human affairs, and upon those things that were the springs of comfort and support to mankind. And, in reference to the effect it was to produce, the name of the star is called Wormwood, and a third part of the waters became impregnated with wormwood, but with this additional circumstance, that it was poisonous as well as distasteful; and many men died in consequence of drinking the waters, because they were become bitter. (Compare Exod. vii. 20, 21.)

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars, so that the third part of them, even of their light, was darkened; and the day did not appear,

with

tain burning with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp; and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters.

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became wormwood: and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the

[A Fire fell from heaven a great star.] Compare Mat. xiii. 33. *Græcus* interprets it of the *Ægyptian empire*, A.D. xxi. 26. Mr. Mede, of the fall of the western empire under Augustulus; and Mr. Clark, [see his *Annals*, &c.] of the corruption of antichristians by an heretical Christianity, of great parts and considerable figure, whom he supposes to be Pologrus. Some explain it of Mahomet, whose name signifies darkness. *Mean of Israel* Vol. V. p. 122. But Mr. Lowman, with greater probability, interprets it of the succeeding ravages in Italy, founding the Gothic kingdom there, and putting an end to

the Roman empire, from A. D. 417, to A. D. 455. Agreeable to this, historians inform us, that several provinces of the empire were dismembered, the city of Rome again taken, and plundered, and Italy became a prey to the barbarous nations.

[Darkened.] Compare Ezek. xxxii. 7, 8. *Græcus* interprets this of taking the name *Græcia* towns; Mr. Mede of the destruction of the light of Rome, when deprived of regal and consular majesty. And Mr. Clark, see his *Annals*, in his of eclipsing the light of our church, by tradition and human inventions. Mr. Low-

man

the stars; so as the third part of them was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

with respect to a third part of its lustre, and the night also; but there was as great a deficiency in the usual light of both, as when either the sun by day, or the moon by night, is so eclipsed, that a third part of the body of each is shaded; which I understood to imply, that God would, in the course of his Providence, draw a veil over the whole face of things, and obscure the glory of the state to which this vision referred. And I beheld and heard one of the angels flying in the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, The things which have already happened, are terrible; but what is yet to come is much more so; woe, woe, woe to those that dwell upon the earth, for the remaining sounds of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound! Prepare therefore for the manifestation of these awful scenes.

SPECT.
xi.

Rev.
VIII. 12.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo, to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound!

IMPROVEMENT.

WHILE we prepare ourselves, with silent admiration, to attend the discoveries here opened upon us, let us rejoice in the symbolical representation of the *intercession of Jesus*, our great High Priest, shadowed forth, in so beautiful and expressive a manner, by the angel standing at the altar with the golden censer, and much incense, Behold, how the prayers of all the saints^{3, 4} ascend before God with acceptance! See the method we are to take, if we desire that ours should be acceptable to him; and, encouraged by such a view, let us offer them up, not only with humility, but with cheerful confidence, though we are conscious of their great unworthiness.

To what wretchedness are they exposed, who oppress and injure those, that through their great *Representative*, have such an interest in the court of heaven. The hail and the fire, shall, at the Divine command, powerfully plead their cause; the mountains shall be torn from their basis, and cast into the midst of the sea; the sun, the moon, and the stars shall be darkened in their¹² orbs, and all nature be thrown into convulsive agonies, ere God will suffer them finally to be over-born, or fail to punish, with becoming

man interprets it of the wars in Italy, between the Goths and Justinian's generals, whereby the exarchate of Ravenna was erected, all remaining power and authority at Rome suppressed, and the im-

perial city became subject to Ravenna, where the exarch or lieutenant of the eastern empire resided; from A. D. 493, to A. D. 568,

SECT. XI. becoming seventy, those who continue to persecute, or evil intreat them

Let such awful representations as these remind us of the sovereign almighty power of God, whom all the hosts of heaven worship with reverence; and at whose awful word, when he gives forth his voice, *hailstones and coals of fire descend*; (Psal. xviii. 13,) *at whose rebuke the pillars of heaven tremble, and the foundations of the earth are shaken; who speaks to the sun, and it shineth not, who darkeneth the moon, and scaleth up the stars. Who would not fear thee, O thou King of nations*, so terrible in the judgments which thou executest on the earth? Deliver us, we intreat thee, from the multiplied and accumulated miseries of those who continue obstinately to oppose thee; and conduct us at length to thy heavenly presence, though it should be through days of darkness, and waters of bitterness, and seas of blood. Amen.

SECT. XII.

The effect of the fifth and sixth angels sounding their trumpets, Rev. IX. throughout.

REVELATION IX. 1.

SECT.
XII.
Rev.
IX. 1.

- AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw an angel of distinguished lustre, descending with such amazing velocity, that he seemed like a flaming star, compare Job xxxviii. 7. and when he was fallen, as it were, from heaven to the earth, and appeared standing upon it, there was given to him the key of the bottomless pit;
- 2 And he went to the door of that infernal dungeon, and he opened the bottomless pit, and a thick smoke ascended from the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and it diffused itself all abroad; so that the sun and the whole body of the air, were darkened by the smoke and gloomy exhalations of the pit which I understood as intimating some terrible calamity approaching.
- 3 And I saw a very shocking appearance; for out of the smoke there came locusts upon the earth,
- and

Rev. IX. 1.

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth; and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

2 And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit; as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts,

a locusts upon the earth.] Many pious writers imagine these locusts to signify the religious orders of monks and friars, &c. The learned Grotius understands by them, the sect of the zealots, which appeared among the Jews during the siege, and at the time of the destruction of Jerusalem. Mr. Mede, the inun-

dation of the Saracens, and indeed, with considerable circumstances of resemblance. The ingenious Mr. Jackson confirms this interpretation; and shows, that the rise and progress of the Mahometan religion and empire, till checked by internal divisions, is a remarkable accomplishment of this part of the prophecy; which is further

custs upon the earth ; and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months ; and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion when he striketh a man.

6 And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it ; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

and a destructive power was given to them, as the scorpions of the earth have power, that they should be as pernicious to the inhabitants of the earth, as those terrible animals, and should injure men by their stings as well as by their teeth.

And there was this farther remarkable circumstance, that whereas locusts bring along with them such general destruction to all vegetables, *it was said to them, whom I saw on this occasion, that they should not injure the grass of the earth, nor any green thing, nor any tree, but only^b some human creatures ;* and this, under a particular limitation to *the men who had not the seal of God in their foreheads ;* from whence I inferred that this destructive visitation should especially affect those, who whatever they might profess, were destitute of true vital religion. And to signify the lingering vexation which these destroyers should occasion to the inhabitants of the country they were to ravage, I was further informed, that *it was given to them, that they should not kill them outright, but that they should be tormented five months ;* which might be intended to express a calamity, that should endure about an hundred and fifty years. And their torment, that is, that which they occasioned by their attack, [was] extremely violent, like that of a scorpion when it strikes a man. And in these dreadful days, to which this vision refers, *men shall seek death, in a wild kind of despair, and shall not find it ; and they shall desire to die, and death shall flee away from them,* and leave them to mourn over a life of wretchedness, all the comforts and enjoyments of which shall be utterly swallowed up in their sufferings.

And

ther illustrated, by the ignorance and error the Mahometans every where spread, their great number and hardness, their habits, customs, and manner ; namely, twisting their hair, wearing beards, their care of their horses, invading their neighbours in summer, like locusts, sparing the trees and fruits of the country they invaded, &c. The captivity of the men, and the miserable condition of the women, exposed to persons who gave an almost unbounded liberty to their lusts, which was enough to make them even to desire death, verse 6. All these circumstances are suitable to the character of the Arabians, the history of this period, and to the par-

ticulars of the prophecy.—The period extends from A. D. 568, to A. D. 675.

b *Only the men who had not*] The use of the particles *α μν*, here, is very remarkable ; and it is apparently necessary it should be rendered *only*, rather than *except*.

c *Shall seek death, &c.*] As such great numbers were, in fact, slain by these locusts, (if they signify, as is generally supposed, the Saracens,) this expression must only be understood of many survivors, who, by the calamities they inflicted, should be made weary of their lives. See note a.

SECT.
xii.

Rev.
IX. 3.

Gen. I.
xii.

Rev.
ix. 7.

And these creatures were not exactly of the form of locusts; but though they bore some resemblance to them in many instances, they differed from them in others, and were to be considered as a kind of hieroglyphical representation of creatures which are very mischievous and terrible; and I particularly observed, that *the likeness of the locusts [was] like horses prepared for war*. (Compare Joel ii. 4,) especially the form of their heads; and whereas common locusts have some brilliant ornaments on their heads, and various parts of their bodies, I observed, with regard to these, that *on their heads [were] as it were, crowns like gold, and their faces were like the faces of men*; which two circumstances gave me to understand, that they were intended as an emblem of mighty and powerful men, who were to reign over various provinces and kingdoms. And they had on their heads long tresses of hair, like the tresses of women, whereas common locusts have only a down upon their breasts. And whereas other animals of that name have large strong teeth, *their teeth were like the [teeth of] Lions*, sharp and pointed, as well as large and strong. And instead of the fine down on the breasts of common locusts, *they had breast-plates like breast-plates of iron*; and whereas common locusts make a terrible noise with their wings, *the noise which these strange and symbolical locusts made, by the motion of their wings, [was] like the noise of chariots, [and] many horses rushing to war*; so that they seemed to tear the ground with their rage and fury, and to shake the air with their neighings. And instead of being formed at the lower end of their bodies, as other locusts are, which have no stings, but are quite inoffensive and innocent animals, *these creatures had tails like scorpions, and their stings were in their tails; and their power, as I observed above, [was] given them to hurt the earth, and men its inhabitants, for about five months, or about an hundred and fifty years*. And they had a king over them, wherein they further differed from the locust kind, (Prov. xxx. 27,) who is the angel

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battle; and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

9 And they had breast-plates as it were breast-plates of iron; and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails; and their power was to hurt men five months.

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomless

d A kind of hieroglyphical representation.] As there are no animals in nature answerable to those which are here described, I take it for granted, that as the

four animals mentioned above are hieroglyphical of angels, so are these of mischievous creatures. Compare chap. iv. 7, note f.

e Abaddon.]

tomless pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

12 One woe is past ; and behold, there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth angel sounded and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God :

14 Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared, for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for

gel of the bottomless pit, and the great head of those apostate spirits who dwell there ; whose name is in the Hebrew language, Abaddon ; and in the Greek, he has the name of Apollyon : both the one, and the other, expressing his destructive nature, and the dreadful havoc he makes, wherever his attempts are successful. And thus, one woe is gone ; [and] behold yet other two woes besides it, coming, threatening yet more terrible calamities than these.

And upon this the sixth angel sounded ; and I did not see any immediate appearance in consequence of it ; but I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which was before God, (which seemed therefore to come from the most holy place which was directly behind it,) Saying to the sixth angel, who still had the trumpet which he had sounded in his hand, Loosen now the four angels, which are bound in the great river Euphrates ; who were intended to represent some potentates arising from that part of the world, who, in the period referred to, should become very famous throughout the earth, for their exploits and achievements. And the four angels were loosed, who were prepared for a certain period of time, signified, according to the prophetic reckoning, by an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year ; that they might

sect.
xii.

Rev.
IX. 11.

e Abaddon.] When the etymology is so evident, and so particularly explained by the author, I cannot but wonder at Dr. Moore's endeavour to explain it another way, as referring to the profession which the Mahometans should in ake of maintaining the doctrine of the Unity. See Moore's Theol. Works, p. 130.

[The four angels which are bound.] Grotius refers this to the Roman army under four commanders, which came from the borders of this river. Mr. Mede, to the four beglerbegs of the Turks ; and he interprets, ver. 17, of guns invented about that time, and used by them in their successful war upon the Europeans. See the passage at large in More's Theol. Works, p. 130, 131. They who refer this passage to the rise of the Turkish Ottoman empire, suppose that the four angels mean either four provinces, or four cities near Euphrates, from whence considerable leaders arose, who pushed on, and advanced the Turkish conquests ; and Mr. Pyle, and others, have endeavoured to confirm this interpretation. But, as the Turkish

empire did not commence till the 13th century, this event seems to be too late in the successive order of periods, and correspondent events. Mr. Lowman's interpretation seems to me much more probable, which refers it to the re-union of the divided Saracen power, their invading and ravaging Europe, till they were defeated by Charles Martel ; and agreeable to ver. 20, 21, the sufferers were so far from repenting, that image-worship was confirmed by order of the Pope, and the authority of councils in the east and west. This period reaches from A. D. 675, to A. D. 750.

g Of an hour, and a day, &c.] Dr. Lloyd, bishop of Worcester, in his interpretation of this passage, foretold, many years before it happened, that peace would be concluded with the Turks in the year 1698, which accordingly came to pass ; and that they should no more renew their wars against the popish Christians. His argument was, that the angels loosed were the commanders of the many Turkish squadrons

SACR.
xli.
Rev.
IX. 13.

might make a great slaughter among the inhabitants of the earth; or, as it was expressed to me in the vision, according to the language used before, might *kill a third part of the men*, who after the preceding plagues continued upon it.

- 16 They accordingly appeared, as leading on a mighty army; and the number of the horsemen they led on, was immensely great, represented to me by *two myriads of myriads*, that is, no less than two hundred millions. *And I heard the number of them* thus mentioned to me, as it was impossible for me to count them. *And I saw the horses, and those that sat upon them thus, in [their] appearance: that is, having breast-plates of fire, and hyacinth, and brimstone*, which seemed to send forth blue, burning flames, which went devouring before them; and the heads of the horses [were] like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths went fire and smoke, and brimstone, to represent the courage and fierceness of their armies, and the irresistible destruction they should make, wherever they marched. And with the united force of these three things, that is, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, that went out of their mouths, they slew a third part of men, as was declared above. And as the destroyers, represented by the locusts, appeared as having devouring teeth, and stings like scorpions in their tails, these had likewise a double provision of mischievous furniture: for their powers are partly in their mouth, from whence, as I have already said, the fire appeared to issue, and in their tails; and their tails also [are] like serpents, having heads, and with them, as well as with their mouths, they injure men. Thus they were represented as bringing a most fearful destruction on the human species. Yet it was not productive of such a reformation as might have
- 17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and those that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of hyacinth, and of brimstone; and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.
- 18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.
- 19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.
- 20 And the rest of the

to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen, were two hundred thousand thousand; and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and those that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of hyacinth, and of brimstone; and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions; and out of their mouths issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the

squillions who had been before subject to the Sultan of Babylon. And as for the time here mentioned, he continues to make it to be, in the prophetic style, only, partly, and computing from their conquest at Persus, in 1762, by which act, the manner will be 1768. See Bishop Hurd's *History of the Times*, Vol. 4, p. 104. But that ladies know the manner was, it does not concern me, that it is the true interpretation; and so far as the loss, as it seems evident to me, the year spoken of in

this book, consists only of ten days. Besides, the Turks have removed their war on the papal Christians, particularly on the Emperor and the republic of Venice, in 1768, and since. As for the previous, an hour, a day, &c. I do not understand them; they may, perhaps only signify a determined, limited time, in such expressions in scripture frequently do, though they should seem most naturally, and agreeable to the prophetic reformation, to denote about 251 years.

the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood; which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

have been expected; *the remainder of men who did not by these plagues, did not repent of the wicked works of their hands, nor reform those abominations which had brought down destruction on their brethren: and particularly, did not forsake those detestable superstitions which had been so offensive to God, that they might not worship demons^h, and senseless idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and wood; which instead of having any Divine properties, are destitute of the senses common to men, and even to brutes, as they can neither see, nor hear,* 21 *nor walk. And they repented not of other crimes more immediately affecting their fellow-creatures, such for instance as their murders, and their sorceriesⁱ; nor their fornication, nor their thefts and robberies, by which they had so notoriously injured all about them, and bid defiance to every law, but that of their own unruly appetites and passions, to which they were held in the basest subjection.*

SECT.
xii.

Rev.
IX. 20.

IMPROVEMENT.

It is exceeding natural to reflect, while reading this representation, how exactly the mightiest princes, and most savage destroyers of mankind, execute the *plan* of Divine Providence, and fulfil the decrees of God; even while they are intending nothing, but the gratification of their own ambition, and avarice, and 1 cruelty. *The angel of God holds the keys of the bottomless pit; 3 and it is by his Divine permission, that these voracious locusts issue forth and infest the earth. The ministers of God's pleasure, bind 15 the messengers of destruction, and loosen them at the Divine command. And the season, wherein they shall ravage the world, is 5, 11 here limited to a year, to a day, to an hour: ABADDON, APOL-15 LYON, the great and mighty destroyer, cannot effect the least of his mischievous and ruinous purposes. without the permission of the Preserver and Redeemer of mankind; and cannot go beyond his limits. And even the mischief which he does, is intended and*

^h Not worship demons.] This demon-worship Mr. Mede has taken great pains to prove, to be the worship of dead men, which is so common in the church of Rome. As for their worshipping idols of gold, silver, brass, wood, and stone, the fact is as evident, as that the heathens themselves ever practised such idolatrous worship.

ⁱ Sorceries.] By *σαμαρειων*, Dr. Clarke understands all the superstitious methods of making men fancy themselves to be religious, by what others can do for, or to them, or what they can do for themselves, without the practice of true righteousness and virtue. *Clarke's xviii Sermon. p. 168.* But others understand by it the arts of poisoning.

^a Angel

and over ruled to subserve the wisest and kindest designs. But
 O, how grievous is it to think of that degree of obstinacy and
 Ver perverseness which so generally prevails in the world, and which
 20, 21 renders men so *incorrigible*, under the most painful chastisements
Satan is permitted to inflict. Send forth, O Lord, the gentle
 influences of thy Spirit, and melt those hearts, which will not
 be broken by the weightiest strokes of thy vengeance; and de-
 liver us from a tempter, so much resembling that of *hell*, and
 so evidently leading down to those dreadful abodes; the temper
 of those who are hardened by correction, and in *the time of their*
affliction and misery, *increase and multiply* their transgression
 against thee.

SECT. XIII.

*The vision of a mighty angel appearing in great glory, who had in
 his hand a little book, which St. John was commanded to eat,
 Rev. X. 1. throughout.*

SECT.

XIII.

REV.

X. 1.

REVELATION X. 1.

A MOST beautiful and wonderful scene now
 opened itself to my view; for *I saw another mighty angel*, who carried, in his appear-
 ance, the marks of unusual strength and vigour,
descending from heaven, clothed with a cloud,
 so that I could not discern the full lustre of his
 whole body; though variegated with the rays
 it either reflected or transmitted, it appeared
 very glorious, and the complete circle of a rain-
 bow [was] about his head, and his face [was]
 bright as the meridian sun; so that I could not
 bear to gaze directly upon it. And I had reason
 to think there was an extraordinary lustre emit-
 2 ted from all the other parts of his body; for
even his feet were like pillars of lucid fire. And
he had in his hand a little book open, which I af-
 terwards understood to be the volume of the Di-
 vine decrees, to be communicated to me. And
he put his right foot upon the sea, and the left
foot upon the earth, to signify the Divine domi-
 3 nion over both, and the concern of both, in what
 was further to be transacted. And he cried
with a loud, solemn, and awful voice, as a lion
roars;

REV. X. 1.

AND I saw another
 mighty angel come
 down from heaven,
 clothed with a cloud,
 and a rainbow was up-
 on his head, and his
 face was as it were the
 sun, and his feet as
 pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his
 hand a little book
 open, and he set his
 right foot upon the
 sea, and his left foot
 on the earth.

3 And cried with a
 loud voice, as when a
 lion roareth, and when
 he

a *Angel clothed with a cloud.* The
 beauties of this noble description are
 nicely illustrated by that most elegant

and pious writer, the Rev. Mr. James
 Hervey, in his *Meditations*, Vol. II. page
 21, 22.

he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write; and I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer.

b *Lion roars.*] The original word, *ρυπαλαί*, rather signifies *bellows*; but that English word as an idea annexed to it, which appeared to me not to suit the dignity of this description.

c *That time should be no longer.*] The word *χρονος* sometimes signifies *delay*, as well as *time*. And, according to the former version, the meaning is, that there should be no *delay* of the destruction of the church's enemies, and of its prosperous and glorious condition. In the latter view, it signifies that the end of time, and the consummation of all things, should soon come. Though the former sense seems to be principally intended, yet I own myself not to be so certain as absolutely to determine it. I think it is evident, that some of the *concluding prophecies* of this book refer to the *eternal state*, and therefore I have taken that sentiment into the paraphrase, though not to the exclusion of the former sense:

roars; and when he had cried, the seven thunders, which I had heard before, uttered their voices again, responsive to his, and to increase the terror of so tremendous a scene. And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to have written the contents of what they had uttered; for loud as their voices were, there was something articulate and intelligible in the sound; and just in that instant, I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Seal up in secrecy what the seven thunders have spoken, and write them not; for they are indeed intended for thy information, but not for that of the public. And the angel which I saw with so many 5 ensigns of distinction, standing with one foot on the sea, and the other on the earth, lifted up his hand towards heaven, with a gesture of solemnity and reverence, as appealing to the great Sovereign of the universe, And swore by the 6 eternal Jehovah, even by him who liveth for ever and ever, who created the heaven, and those things which are in it, and the sea, and the things which are in it, that time should be no longer: that the time of the judgments, to be signified by the pouring out of the seven vials, should not be much longer delayed; and that, when it came, the whole economy of the world should soon draw to a conclusion, and all the periods of time be consummated, that the more important

Sect.

xiii.

Rev.

X. 4.

which, as I said, seems to be principally intended, considering the connection, and that the interval between the *pouring out of the seventh vial*, and the consummation of all things, must, at least, be more than a thousand years; and, perhaps, a much more considerable period. Dr. More is of opinion, that the only meaning of this clause is, that the time was elapsed which had been marked out by the period of *three years and a half*. See his *Theolog. Works*, p. 122.—Grotius refers the accomplishment of it to the vengeance to be taken upon the Jews, by Adrian and his successors. Compare *Saurin's Serm.* Vol. I. p. 1, 2. Mr. Lowman renders the clause, *the time shall not be yet*: that is, the time of the glorious state of the church shall not be yet; but it shall not be long to it; for in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, as it follows, the mystery of God shall be fulfilled, &c.

d *Mystery*

Rev.
xiii.

Rev.
x. 7.

ant scenes of eternity might open : He sware, I say, that the delay should not be much longer, *but* that it should hasten to its end, *in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, who was about quickly to sound*, and was to introduce the period of the seven vials : and that, consequent on the pouring out the last vial, *the mystery of God, as he had revealed its glad things to his servants, the prophets, should be fulfilled*, in the utter ruin and destruction of all the enemies of the church, and in its happy and glorious exaltation.

8 *And the voice which I before heard from heaven, now spake to me again, and said, Give, and take the little book, which, as thou perceivest, is open, out of the hand of the angel, which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth ; for it is intended for thy use and information.* (Compare

9 Jer. xv. 16.) *And accordingly I went to the angel, and awful as his appearance was, I said to him boldly, in consequence of the Divine command, Give me the little book which thou hastest in thine hand ; and he said unto me, Take [it], as Ezekiel did that which was shewn to him, [Ezek. iii. 1, 2.] And eat it up, to signify thy receiving it into thy mind, and digesting there the events to which it relates ; and it shall irritate thy belly but in thy mouth it shall be sweet as honey ; to signify, that how pleasant soever it may be to be honoured with such revelations, the contents of these, in thine after-reflections, shall be very bitter and grievous.*

10 *And, accordingly, I took the little book out of the hand of the angel, and seemed to myself, to eat it up : and the event exactly answered what he had said to me ; for, in my mouth it was sweet as honey, and when I had eaten it, my belly was*

11 *bitter.* And he said to me, *Thou hast now dispatched the whole of thy work, in what thou hast already registered, of these visions of the Lord ; but thou must again prophesy to many people*

7 But in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God shall be fulfilled, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8 And this voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Give, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up ; and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be sweet in thy mouth, as it is honey.

10 And I took the little book out of the angel's hand, and ate it up ; and it was in my mouth as honey, and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesy again to many

4 [Margin to text.] Thy belly, the last earthly blessing of Heaven, understood by thee, the great sign of Power, denoting, as it were, that thou hadst received the whole of the world. See *Baruch* chap. p.

5 [Margin to text.] As it is here said, that the prophecy of God should be consumed, it seems plainly to intimate, that the things yet to be revealed should ex-

ceed to the end of time ; and, when it is considered, that this cannot be intended in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, who, as it is said, is intended, that the remainder of time, even to the end of the world, should be comprehended in that small of prophecy, to which the small book, introductory to the vials, relates.

6 [Margin to text.] Mr. Mede refers from

ny peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

people, and nations, and tongues, and kings. The oracles thou hast yet to deliver, shall be propagated through many countries, translated into a variety of languages, and perused by persons of various ranks and conditions, and some of them the most eminent and conspicuous; but fear not to deliver them, being assured that He, by whom they are inspired, will take care they shall be punctually fulfilled.

SECT.
xiii.

Rev.
X. 11.

IMPROVEMENT.

IF other parts of this chapter should seem to be less pregnant with important practical instructions, perhaps the design was, that we might be engaged to fix our entire and undivided attention on the awful words of this illustrious angel; whose appearance is described in colours so exceeding beautiful and striking; with the radiance of the sun streaming from his countenance; the variegated colours of the rainbow encircling his head; of a stature so vast and majestic, that he at once bestrode the earth and the sea; with his hand solemnly lifted up to heaven; with a voice awful as thunder, appealing to the venerable name of God the Creator of the heavens, of the earth, of the sea, and of all their various inhabitants, in order to add the sanction of an inviolable oath, to a declaration, which in itself from such a Divine messenger, was worthy of absolute and entire credit; a declaration, that time should be no longer; which is a certain truth, in the most sublime and interesting sense of which the words are capable. Time, as distinguished into days, and weeks, and months, and years, by the revolution of the heavenly luminaries, when the most resplendent of these are extinguished in their orbs, as they quickly will; when the sun shall be turned into darkness and the moon into blood; time shall then I say be absorbed in an immeasurable eternity. And O, what an eternity! An eternity, either of perfect and inconceivable felicity, or hopeless and remediless misery.—But besides this general construction, there is an important sense in which the proclamation of this celestial herald shall be fulfilled, with regard to individuals; that time shall be

from hence, that the apostle is about to go over the same period of time he had before been discoursing of, giving an account of the state of the church, as he had just done of the state of the empire. But the new description, and new events to which they

refer, which are introduced here, and constitute the following chapter, may be sufficient, without any peculiarity of interpretation, to justify the expression. See the preceding note.

be no longer ; the time of Divine patience in waiting upon us ; the time in which we shall be continued under the sound of the gospel, and the offers of mercy, and the means of salvation ; the time in which we shall be conversant with these scenes of mortality, and with the persons who are here most familiar to us, at least in the present circumstances of their being. *The period*, during which we are to inhabit this earth, and enjoy our spiritual advantages, or our worldly possessions and pleasures, is confined within very narrow limits. The *oath* of this mighty angel is, perhaps, just ready to be accomplished, and *Time is closing*, and eternity is opening upon us. O that we may consider time and all its concerns, as very shortly to vanish, that our thoughts and our cares may be directed more and more to our own eternal interest, and to that of our fellow creatures. The *Judge is even at the door* ; let us endeavour therefore to be ready, let us improve every transient moment to the purposes for which it was given us ; and in these views of the brevity of time, and the importance of preparing for eternity, let us detest all the pleasures and allurements of sin ; for they will soon appear like the *mysterious morsel of the apostle*, bitter as wormwood in the belly though with decentful and fatal indulgence, we may, for a few moments, have rolled them, like a sweet morsel, *under our tongues* . vainly desiring to prolong those pleasures, which can serve only to add more keen and exquisite sensibility to our future pain.

SECT. XIV.

The vision of the angel commanding St. John to measure the temple : and declaring that the Gentiles should tread down the outer-court ; and that the two witnesses should be slain, and raised from the dead, and received into heaven ; after which, the triumphs of Divine vengeance over their enemies are celebrated.
Rev. XI. 1—18.

REVELATION XI. 1.

SCOT.

REV.

REV.

XL 1.

AND when I had eaten the book according to the Divine command, *there was given to me*, as there was shewn to Ezekel, whose vision bore so great a resemblance to mine, Ezek. xl. xlii. *a reed, like a [measuring] rod ; and the angel, which had spoken to me before, stood by me, saying, Arise and measure the temple of God^a, and the altar, and the space filled by those*

REV. XI. 1.

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel stood, saying, *Rise and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.*

^a Measure the temple of God } From the proportion between the area of the

temple and the outer court, supposed to be as one to 3 and 1-half, Mr. Mede, understanding

SECT.
xiv.

Rev.
X 1. 2.

2 But the court which is without the temple leave out and measure it not ; for it is given unto the Gentiles ; and the holycity shall they tread under foot forty and two months.

3 And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophecy a thousand two hundred and threescore days clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth,

those who worship at it in the inner-court ; And the outer-court of the temple, throw out of the account, and measure it not ; for there shall be such great disorders introduced, that it shall be given to the Gentiles, and they shall trample, not only upon that, but upon the holy city, for the space of forty-two months ; such corruptions shall prevail in the Christian church, though by profession the holy city, and the temple of God, that they who pretend to be its inhabitants, and to worship in it, shall be no better in the Divine account, than Gentiles. And in the 3 mean time, I will raise up some to bear an united testimony against these growing corruptions ; and I will give to my two witnesses ^b an authoritative [commission] and they shall prophecy all this while, that is, during the forty-two months, or a thousand two hundred [and] sixty days, clothed in sackcloth^c ; to denote their afflicted condition. These are dear and precious to 4 me, as Joshua and Zerubbabel among the Jews of old ; and in reference to the emblems under which I represented those my faithful servants, (Zech. iv. 3, 11, 14.) I may call these, the two olive-trees, and the two burning and shining lamps, who stand before the God of the whole earth ; high in his esteem, and continually in his presence, planted like olive-trees in his house, or kindled like the sacred lamps in the candlestick of the sanctuary. And if any one 5 will obstinately injure them, encouraged by the gentleness of their appearance, and the seeming

derstanding by the temple the pure uncorrupted state of the church ; and, by the outer-court, its corrupted state, endeavours to prove, that the latter did not entirely commence till the beginning of the fifth century ; inferring also from hence the authority of the four first general councils. The argument may be seen at large in his Works, p. 588, 589. But it does not seem to require a particular examination, especially in the face of so many notorious errors, and absurd superstitions, as were evidently introduced into the church long before the time in question. How Grotius should imagine it to signify, that the temple should not be re-built by Adrian, though Jerusalem should, is to me very surprising : I doubt not but it signifies the profanation of the church by growing idolatry and superstition, though some few should preserve their purity.

^b Two witnesses.] Some have strangely supposed these are Enoch and Elijah,

who are to come to fight against antichrist. See Limb. Theol. 7. xi. 51. Dr. More understands it of unpolluted priests and faithful magistrates, appearing for reformation. Others, of the Old and New Testament. But the learned Bishop Lloyd, of the Waldenses and Albigenses. Perhaps it may signify any witnesses for reformation, who should be raised up during this period ; illustrated by two, as that concurring number was necessary, according to the law, to make the testimony valid ; or to intimate, that their number should be but small. See Mr. Lowman in loc. who proves, there has been a succession of faithful witnesses.

^c Clothed in sackcloth.] This was the habit of mourners, and suited to their prophetic character, Isa. xx. 2. This period is the same with that after described as the time of the woman's abode in the wilderness, chap. xii. 6 : Dan. vii. 25. xii. 7. d Fire

RECT.
XIV.REV.
XI. 5.

ing weakness of their present state, he shall find to his cost, that they are under an almighty protection. Their cries to God shall be heard, and such sudden and irresistible vengeance shall follow, that *fire shall seem to come out of their mouth^d, and devour their enemies at once*; it shall not merely scorch and terrify, but utterly destroy them: and I pronounce it again, *If any one will injure them, so must he be put to death.*

- 6 *These, despised as they are, have power with God, like my servant Elijah of old, (1 Kings xvii, 1,) by their prayers to shut heaven^e, so that no rain shall be shewed down in the days of their prophecy, and like Moses and Aaron, (Exod. vii. 20,) they have power over the waters, to turn them into blood, and to smite the earth as often as they will, with every plague; such is the prevalence of their prayers with God that they may be said, as it were, to be armed*
- 7 *with his omnipotence. And when they shall have finished their testimony, according to the plan of Divine Providence, the fierce and savage beast which ascends out of the abyss^f, and is afterwards to be described, shall make war against them, and shall conquer, and triumph over them for a while, and carry his success so far*
- 8 *as to kill them. And their dead corpses shall lie unburied in the open street of the great city which is spiritually called, on account of its lawlessness and persecutions, SUDOM and EGYPT^g, where also our Lord was crucified;*

mouth, and devoureth their enemies; and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy, and have power over the waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast which ascendeth out of the abyss, shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt,

that

d *Fire shall come out of their mouth.* I think it is very probable this expression may be figurative and intended to express the awful vengeance which Christ will take on their enemies in that day when he is revealed as coming fire, and when the injury suffered by any of his servants, and especially his faithful witnesses, shall be remembered, and their wrongs fully avenged.

e *Shut heaven, &c.* Lord Christ Jesus the Holy Ghost by whom it is intimated here, that the spirit of Moses and Elias shewed him in vision, *Heaven being called down fire from heaven*, and rendered the same; and Moses having *turned water into blood.* See *Hale's Con. exp.* Vol. II. page 176.—It indeed seems to intimate, that God would interpose for their defence, as he pleaded the cause of his persecuted witnesses of old, in the awful manner here described.

f *Out of the abyss.* By the *abyss* Dr.

Moss understands the sea, and thinks this passage can be explained by what follows, chap. xii. 1.—I am rather of opinion, it alludes to what had been said before, chap. ix. 17, where a *king of the air* is mentioned as a most destructive creature, called also the *angel of the abyss*; and it is curious, the word *abyss* is used with this latitude. Compare Acts xviii. 4, 5.

g *The great city.* Mr. Fleming understands this of the Roman, that is, the Roman empire; of which Babylon was a part. Indeed it is probable the whole Roman empire may be here represented, as one *city* and a *great city*; as elsewhere, the church of Christ is represented, by one *city*, *holy*, and *glorious city*. It may intimate the extreme persecution many of God's witnesses should suffer; and that their enemies should triumph over them so much, that his cause should seem to be quite ruined.

h *Sodom and Egypt.* The lawlessness of Sodom

Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another: because these two prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth:

11 And after three days and a half, the Spirit of life from God entered into them: and they stood upon their feet,

that is, in the place, where he has suffered so much in his spiritual members, that he may be said to have been crucified over again. *And [persons] of [various] people, and tribes, and tongues, and nations, shall look on their dead bodies three days and an half, and maliciously insult over them; and they shall not permit their corpses to be laid in their graves which should be prepared for them. And they who dwell upon the earth, shall rejoice over them, and be glad, and with mutual congratulation, shall send gifts to each other, to testify their great exultation, because these two prophets, who tormented those who dwelt upon the earth, by their plain and faithful remonstrances, shall be entirely silenced; and as they suppose, forever removed out of any capacity of molesting them. All these things I distinctly saw, just as the angel had represented them to me in his description; and while I was looking, with the greatest concern, upon the venerable remains of these two excellent persons, denied the common rites of burial, and exposed to all the insults of their enemies, I saw, that after three days and an half, the Spirit of life communicated from God, who quickeneth all things, entered into them, and they stood upon their feet again, to re-*
new

SECT.
xiv.

REV.
XI. 9.

Sodom, and the cruelty of Egypt are so celebrated in scripture, as to make them proper emblems of these evils in general. And the abominable wickedness of the church of Rome, in both these respects, (I suppose not to be equalled in any other society of men, calling themselves a church,) is most justly, as well as severely, expressed by these applications. When one sees their places of worship every where adorned with images of a crucified Saviour, one would think, (as our Lord says with respect to the garniture which the persecuting Pharisees bestowed upon the sepulchres of the ancient prophets; that they meant to perpetuate the memory of the dead with honour,) that these persecutors intended to crucify Jesus in effigy: a sentiment, perhaps, not disagreeable to the original design.

[Three days and an half.] Very different interpretations have been given of this period of time. Mr. Fleming thinks it to his purpose to observe, that from the death of Andrew Pallicka, the last Bohemian martyr, to the appearance of Carolstadius and Zuinglius, at the beginning of the reformation was just three years and an

half. See *Flem. of the Resur.* p. 144.—The above-mentioned Bishop Lloyd imagined it was fulfilled in the slaughter of the Albigenes and Waldenses, in the year 1686; and they arose in 1690. He supposes Archbishop Usher's celebrated prophecy a mistake of this place; he thought the treading down the court was the affliction of external professors; (whereas it was, indeed, the general prevalence of idolatry in the church;) and that the witnesses were slain by the king of France, not by the pope; and that the earthquake, (ver. 13,) signified the destruction of the kingdom of France. Some think here is an allusion to the time of our Saviour's lying in the grave; and that it intimates, that the time of the witnesses suffering, will be in proportion to the time of their prophecy, which is described as a time of persecution; and so it comports with three times and an half, 1260 days, or 42 months. It may, in general, signify a certain limited time; and, perhaps, three days and an half, may be mentioned, in reference to the state of a dead body, which will seldom keep longer without corruption. See Mr. Lowman in loc.

k Ascended

DEUT.
XIV.
REV.
XI. 12.

- new their testimony; and great fear immediately fell upon those who looked upon him, when they saw so wonderful a resurrection. And they, that is, the witnesses, heard a great voice saying unto them from heaven, in loud accents, which I likewise distinctly heard. Come ye up hither; and they accordingly ascended up to heaven in a cloud, as our Lord had done in the sight of his apostles; and their enemies, with infinite surprise, and fruitless rage, looked on them, without being able to hinder or oppose the marvellous event. And in that hour, as an earthquake attended the resurrection of our Lord, so likewise, at the ascension of these witnesses, there was a great earthquake, and a tenth part of the buildings of the city fell down to the ground, magnificent and sumptuous as they were; and seven thousand men, some of them of great name and figure, were killed by the earthquake; and the rest were terrified, and their alarm wrought more kindly upon them, than judgments had done upon some others; for they gave glory to the God of heaven, as the author of these awful events. The second war is past [and] a terrible one it is; but let none imagine all ground of alarm is over, for behold the third war cometh quickly, to succeed it.
- 15 And the seventh angel sounded; and immediately there were great voices of thunder in heaven saying, At length the happy, the triumphant period is approaching, and seems to be even already come! when it may be said, that the kingdoms of the world are become [the kingdoms] of our Lord, and of his Christ, his anointed

feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

17 And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same hour there was a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14 The second war is past; and to hold, the third war cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall

[*Ascended up to heaven.*] This was no doubt, to signify, that the cause of true and genuine Christianity should not only be revised, but praised; and that it should have so illustrious a triumph over all opposition, as no earthly elevation was sufficient adequately to represent it.

[*Seven thousand men were killed.*] This seems to represent some great calamity, which were to befall the enemies of the reformation during the following period, and which would be a great means of promoting it.

[*The kingdoms of the world, &c.*] The learned Grotius, then whom no great commentator was ever more mistaken in his explanation of this book, strangely seeks the importance of the event here referred to, by expounding it of the liberty

given to the Christians to profess their religion in Judea, when the Jews were banished. Mr. Mede, and Mr. Clarke, refer it to the reformation. Dr. Samuel Clarke says, *Whether this, and the like passage, shall have a literal accomplishment by an universal prevalence of the gospel of peace upon earth, or only in the next heaven, wherein there is a righteous, and secret in the heart of Providence, which we ought not to be over-scrupulous in explaining.* See his *Præle. Sermon* Vol. III. p. 70. But it seems probable, that this may be designed to intimate, that in the period of time signified by the seventh trumpet, and the voice, following it, there should be a triumph of the Christian cause in its power and purity, notwithstanding all the attempts made to pervert and corrupt it; which has been,

shall reign for ever and ever.

16 And the four and twenty elders which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, we give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

anointed Son; and he shall reign for ever and ever. And the twenty-four elders, that sat before the throne of God on their splendid thrones, as already described, fell prostrate upon their faces, and worshipped God with profound reverence, on hearing these glad tidings; Say-
17 ing, We give thanks unto thee, O Lord God Almighty, who art, and who wast, and who art to come; we adore the triumphs of thine omnipotence, and of thy wisdom; because, though for a while thou didst suffer the interests of thy kingdom to be in part over-borne, as if the adversary were stronger than thou art, thou hast at length taken to thyself thy great power, and hast reigned with an uncontrolled dominion. And the nations were wroth, and were transport-
18 ed with rage and pride, that their vain schemes were thus powerfully opposed: and having suffered them, for a season, to exert their impotent efforts, thy wrath came in its awful turn; thou didst display the terrors of thy superior vengeance; and the time of the dead came, when they should be judged, and the blood of thy people avenged, and when a reward should be given to thy faithful servants^a, the inspired prophets, and to the saints, and on the whole, to them that fear thy name, both small and great: for such is thy goodness, that thou wilt not forget any one of them; and the period is at length come, [when thou] shouldest interpose in an awful and irresistible manner, to destroy those that destroy and corrupt the earth by their many vices; and particularly, by their cruel ravages, in persecuting those, who were, with the greatest integrity of heart, solicitous to have reformed it.

SECT.
xiv.
Rev.
XI. 16.

IMPROVEMENT.

LONG hath the court of God's temple been trodden under foot by Ver. the Gentiles, and a party of very corrupt and degenerate Christians, (if they at all deserve the name, though they proudly arrogate to themselves the title of the Catholic church,) been introducing and countenancing all the fopperies and absurdities of pagan superstition, as well as more than the horrors of pagan cruelty,

SO

in fact, the case. Compare chap. vi. ver. 17, note n.

[n A reward shall be given to thy servants.]
The reward to be given to all that fear

God, both small and great, seems to be the final reward at the judgment-day. This therefore represents that judgment-day as now nearly approaching.

SECT.
XIV.

so as indeed to have disgraced not the gospel alone, but *human nature itself*. A wise and gracious Providence hath raised up *Ver, witnesses* for the truth in all ages; and it is a signal honour to bear a faithful and courageous testimony against these enormous corruptions, though it were unto bonds and imprisonment, and even at the expence of *life*. Those noble and heroic confessors God hath remarkably supported; and even when they had been in a state of *mourning and oppression*, they have borne their *testimony and prophesied*; their *prayers* have been remembered before God, and many have been *smitten*, who *injured* and oppressed them. But, notwithstanding this, *the beast* hath continued his war upon the saints, and their oppressions have increased, until in many places, they have been cast down, and trodden in the dust, and *their blood hath been poured out like water on the earth*. Thus hath that *great city*, the metropolis of the world, once *faithful and celebrated*, become even as *Sodom and Egypt*, or even as *Jerusalem, where Christ himself, our Divine Master, was crucified*. Thus have the enemies of the truth triumphed over the servants of the Lord, and have erected *trophies* of their victory. But, thanks be to God, their triumph shall not be perpetual; Christ our Redeemer will revive the expiring cause, in a manner as glorious and wonderful as a *resurrection from the dead*; he will glorify the *remnant* of his people; he will cause the *earth to tremble*, and *shake down the towers* of the enemy; and when the *first and second woe is past*, will bring upon them a *third and more terrible woe*. In the faith of this triumphant event let us rejoice; and though in our day we see not this glorious scene, let us consider it as approaching, when the *seventh angel shall sound*, and when all the *kingdoms of the earth shall become the kingdoms of the Lord, and of his Christ*. Let our *prayers* do all that the most earnest prayers can do, towards promoting this great event. *O Lord God Almighty, who art, and wast, and art to come*, we beseech thee to take to thyself thy great power and reign; for the proudest of the enemies who oppose thy kingdom, reign, and even live, only by thy permission. Overhear, by thy superior rebuke, the *rage* of the angry nations; and give *patience* to thy afflicted servants, that if they should wait even till the *dead be judged*, they may never resign the hope of the *reward* which thou wilt at length confer upon them: not only on the *prophets*, and most eminent and distinguished of the saints, but on all them that *fear thy glorious and tremendous name*; on the *small*, as well as on the *great*: when the *destroyers* of the church, and of the earth, shall be *destroyed together*. Amen.

SECT.

SECT. XV.

On a view of the temple of God, as opened in consequence of the seventh trumpet, a vision appears, representing the multiplication of the church, and the attempt to be made by the devil upon it, under the emblem of a woman bringing forth a son, attacked and persecuted by a great dragon. Rev. XI. 19, XII. throughout.

Rev. XI. 19.

AND the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

REVELATION XI. 19

SECT.
XV.

Rev.
XI. 19.

AND when these acts of adoration passed, upon the sounding of the seventh angel, *the temple of God was opened in heaven; and the veil, which seemed to separate the most holy place, being drawn aside, the ark of his covenant appeared in his temple; to signify further manifestations of the Divine presence, which were now to be made. And as, when the law was given from mount Sinai, the whole atmosphere seemed in a violent commotion, which was communicated to the most solid parts of nature, so there were now lightnings, and loud and awful voices, and thunders, and an earthquake, and a great storm of hail, which had been described as a circumstance attending the Divine appearance, under former dispensations. (Compare Psal. cxiv. 4. & sim.) And thus ushered in, there appeared a great sign in heaven, a woman of a beautiful and majestic form, clothed, as it were, with the radiance of the meridian sun, streaming forth on all sides; which I understood as an emblem of the church of Christ, most gloriously arrayed through the comeliness and lustre which he puts upon her: and the moon was under her feet, to signify the conquest which the church should gain over all sublunary enjoyments and terrors: and upon her head there was a crown of twelve stars, to represent the twelve apostles, who had been so illustrious an ornament to that honoured society. And, to signify the increase of the Christian church, this woman, by which she was represented, being apparently pregnant, cried out in travail, and seemed as in violent pangs to be delivered. And while she was in these circumstances of extremity, there appeared another sign in heaven: and behold! for it was a very memorable phenomenon,*

Rev.
XII. 1.

CHAP. XII. 1. And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.

2 And she being with child, cried, travailling in birth, and pained to be delivered

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold, a great

SECT.
XV.

Rev.

2113.

nomenon, there was a great red fiery dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns; and upon his heads seven crowns, on each of them one; which represented Satan, the great enemy of the church, as animating a people, who were to answer, in a remarkable manner, to these mysterious and symbolical characters. And he appeared as having a long tail; and with it he took an horrible sweep over the compass of a considerable part of the heaven, on which he seemed to stand; and as it then appeared as decked with stars, whereby Christian ministers were especially represented, *his tail drew down a third part of the stars of heaven, and cast them to the earth*; which signifies, that many, whose business it was to enlighten and preserve others, should themselves be corrupted, by the attempts of this great and subtle deceiver, whose artifice and rage were so aptly represented, by the seducing nature of this vast and voracious dragon. *And the dragon stood directly before the woman who was about to bring forth, that when she was delivered, he might immediately devour her child, for whose appearance he seemed eagerly to wait.*

5 And, to signify the certain success of the church and the care God would take to preserve it, *she whom I saw in the vision as the representative of it, brought forth a masculine son*, a male-child, who appeared of a vigorous constitution, and likely soon to advance to manhood; *who, as I then learned, was destined by God to a most glorious triumph over all opposition; so as to rule all the nations with a rod of iron, which they*

great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man child: who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her

a Dragon having seven heads, and ten horns.] I suppose most of my readers will know, that a dragon is a vast reptile of enormous bulk; there is one of them about 20 feet long, preserved in the repository of the royal society. And Juba, the celebrated African, assured me, that one of them carried away a live ox in its mouth, before his face. Nothing could be a more proper emblem of the persecuting power, that by the instigation of Satan, attacked Christians; or rather, of Satan, as instigating those persecuting powers, and those especially of Rome, under its different states, as heathen and Christian; for the directing agent was still the same. I apprehend therefore, that the church is here represented, first, as pregnant, to signify its state while the empire was heathen; the more vigorous state it afterwards ar-

rived to, when such large associations were made to the number of Christians, as described by the *flow of the ebb*; and its state, when an almost universal corruption was introduced, by its *abode in the wilderness*. The dragon, in the mean time, in all these various circumstances, labours it possible, to destroy it; at least to prevent the propagation of its interests.

b Masculine son.] As it was impossible, that son of man, should be any other than *spirit, a man*, I conclude, that the conjunction of those two words was intended to express the *vigorous constitution* of the child, and what we properly call a *masculine form*, which may, or may not, be joined with the *sublime*. Such was Noah, who from thence had the name of a *coldly* *fully* *male*. Gen. xix. 22.

her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne,

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there, a thousand two hundred and threescore days.

7 And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought, and his angels.

they should be unable successfully to resist. And as the strength of this dragon seemed vastly superior to that of the woman, or the newborn infant, *her child was*, on a sudden, caught up to God, even to his throne, there to be guarded as the charge and favourite of heaven, in full security from all the rage of his furious and destructive enemies. (Compare 2 Kings xi. 23.)

And the woman, his mother, fled into the wilderness^c, by which circumstance was represented to me, the obscure condition in which true Christianity should long remain, while antichristian principles and practices every where prevailed. There she dwelt, *where she had a place prepared for her by the ever watchful Providence of God, that she might there be nourished, one thousand two hundred [and] sixty days^d*, for God took care that she should be nourished, though in a wilderness, raising up friends and supporters for her, during that desolate and melancholy time. And there was the appearance of a very formidable war in heaven, and several mighty battles seemed to be fought before my sight; *Michael*, the great leader of God's host, and therein an emblem of the great Emmanuel, and his angels, were marshalled on the one side; and they made war against the dragon: and on the other side, the dragon made war with him; and his angels likewise, consisting of many legions of infernal spirits, in confederacy with the great head of the apostacy, made war under

SECT.
XV.
Rev.
XII. 5.

^c Into the wilderness.] I think I never met with a wilder interpretation than that which Grotius gives of this place; referring it to the banishment of Christianity out of Rome, into little neighbouring towns and villages, (which in comparison of that capital city, might seem a wilderness) during the time of the seduction of Simon Magus; an event neither certain in itself, nor if ever so certain, by any means answering to the description here given, and the great and important idea suggested, and so much insisted upon in this prophecy. It is on the same precarious principles that he explains the triumph of heaven on casting out the dragon, of Simon's being vanquished in his contest with St. Peter at Rome.

^d One thousand two hundred and sixty days.] These days are years of Papal usur-

pation. Mr. Fleming, (who hath the honour herein to be followed by Sir Isaac Newton, and Mr. Lowman, though not as I remember named by the former, whom the latter professes to follow, (supposes them to begin in the year 736, when Pepin of France made a grant to the Pope, of the temporal dominion of Rome, on the destruction of the Exarchate of Ravenna, to which that imperial city for a while belonged. Upon this the Pope began the eighth head of Rome; and the period of his continuing so will end, about the year 2016: or if (which seems most reasonable,) prophetic years be used in the computation, consisting of 360 days, about 2000; which he supposes will be the beginning of the millenium. *Flem. of Res.* p. 120.

^e Neither

- under him. *Neither was place found for them any more in heaven*; but being unable to stand their ground, they seemed to be expelled, and fall down to the earth. *And thus the great, furious, and voracious dragon was cast out: (even) the old serpent*, so long experienced in the arts of himself: who, from his falsehood, is called the devil, or the false accuser; and from his malice, Satan, or the general adversary: he, who deceives the whole world by his subtle temptations, was cast out of heaven, and sank down to the earth, and his confederate angels were cast out with him, following him in his ruin, as they had done in his guilt. *And I heard a great voice saying in heaven, Now is come the long-expected salvation, and the peace, and the kingdom of our God is now exerted and established; and the authority of his Christ shall now prevail against all opposition; because the malignant and perfidious accuser of our brethren is now cast out, who carried his malice to such a height, that he accused them before our God day and night: unrestrained by a sense of the Divine presence, he was ready, as in the instance of Job, Job i. 7; ii. 3, continually to charge them with the greatest evils before him, who was indeed the Witness of their integrity. And now they have overcome him, formidable as he appeared, with all his confederate angels; and it is by the blood of the Lamb they have gained this glorious victory: its sacred efficacy has procured them Divine strength and grace; and the remembrance of it has wrought powerfully on their souls. And their victory has been, under this, in a great measure, occasioned by the sword of their testimony; by that word of the gospel to which they had borne their testimony with so much fidelity, and at so great an expence; for they loved not their lives, unto the death: they*
- exposed

8. And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10. And I heard a loud voice, saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

Neither was place found for them any more in heaven. I once thought that referred to a representation made to the apostles, in the vision, of the first expulsion of Satan from heaven; but upon considering that he, who is represented as cast out of the Divine presence, is described as the accuser of the brethren, who had before been assured that they were before God: I was induced to change my mind. On the

whole, I am extremely distressed about this, and refer it to further consideration. I wish that may not signify the conquest of Satan by Christ, by the first publication of the gospel. Mr. Lowman interprets it of the victory over Satan and his power, when Christianity was fully prevailed over heathenism in the empire, and when an effectual step was put in the Mahometan imposture in those western parts.

12 Therefore rejoice ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants, of the earth, and of the sea; for the devil is come down unto you having great wrath because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast into the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-child.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and a half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which

exposed themselves to the greatest dangers, and many of them actually met their death in this glorious conflict; but they fell to rise, and triumph and reign. And therefore, rejoice, ye heavens and ye who inhabit them, and, as it were, pitch your tents there; let all the celestial armies proclaim the victory with joy. But woe to those that inhabit the terraqueous globe, consisting of the earth and the sea: for the devil is come down to you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time; and therefore, is maliciously bent to make the most he can of it, exerting one powerful effort more to establish and confirm his cause. And when the dragon saw that he was cast out on the earth, I perceived him to be greatly enraged; and saw that mindful of the original of the late war, he persecuted the woman who had brought forth a male-child. And, to signify the extraordinary provision that should be made for her deliverance, there were immediately given to the woman two wings, like those of a great and strong eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, unto her place, which, as I observed before, was appointed for her; where as I said she is nourished for one thousand two hundred and sixty days; that is for a time, or one year, and times, or two years, and half a time or year that is, for three years and a half, which is the same period. And thus she was hid from the face of the serpent, and preserved from his destructive efforts. And the serpent threw out of his mouth a flood of water, like a river, after the woman, as she was winging her flight from him, that he might cause her to be carried away by the stream. And the earth assisted the woman; and the earth opened its mouth, and drank up the flood which the dragon threw out of his mouth, so that it sunk as fast as it fell, and could not swell into such a formidable current

[Fly into the wilderness.] This is the same event that was represented, ver. 6

[A flood of water, like a river.] Perhaps this is one of the artifices which these enormous creatures make use of to beat down their prey, when flying from them; though I cannot, at present, remember a y passage that illustrates it.

[The earth assisted the woman, &c.] This may intimate, that notwithstanding all the violent and cruel attempts of Satan,

and of those persecuting powers whom he instigates, God will raise up some persons, (and perhaps, as Mr. Lowman observes, it may mean, some persons of power and authority in the world, to protect his witnesses, and secure many of those who faithfully retain the testimony of Jesus; and to prevent pure religion from being entirely overborne and lost. And this has been, in fact, the case in many nations; and particularly in this.

rent as he seemed to have intended it should. *And the dragon was enraged against the woman, to see all his efforts against her defeated by a superior power; and he went away to excite new troubles, and to make war against the woman, and against the remainder of her seed, even as many as might by any means be brought within his reach; nor did he spare any of those who keep the commandments of God inviolable, and have the courage to retain, at the greatest expence or hazard, the testimony of Jesus Christ in a pure uncorrupted gospel.*

which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

IMPROVEMENT.

WHATEVER concealed and unknown wonders may be intimated in some parts of this grand and awful vision, in others it contains very obvious and important instructions.—While we are beholding this emblematical representation of the Christian Church, let us adore the great original *Sun of Righteousness*, who 1, 2 has decked her with his glorious beams, and will at length cause every faithful member of this blessed society, to *shine forth as the Sun in his Father's Kingdom*. And let us be desirous of treading this changeable and uncertain world *under our feet*. Let us thankfully own the land which has crowned the church with the apostles, as with a *diadem*, and taught by their precepts, and inspired by their example, let us prepare ourselves for that sacred 7 *war*, to which we are called, the war against *the devil*, and his confederate hosts. It is indeed, under a very formidable type, that he is here represented:—His crafty, his subtilty, his experience in all the arts of destruction, are painted out with dreadful propriety, in the *old serpent*, the *great dragon*, but formidable as his violence, or artful and potent as the confederacy of infernal spirits may be, here is a *victory* gained over him, which calls for the congratulation of all the *armies of the Lord*: the dragon and his angels, are cast out: the saints are enabled to triumph 11 *over him*, feeble and impotent as they are. How is what way are they able to overcome him? *It is by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony*. Instructive and edifying admonition! Let this be our confidence, even the *banner of the cross*, the blood of the Saviour, who died upon it; and, in this signal, we shall come off conquerors too; *faith* in him shall be 11 *our shield*, the *word of God* shall be our sword, the sword of the spirit; and Satan, thus resisted shall *fly before us*, (James iv. 7.) In vain are the *floods of temptation*, which he may attempt to

thrive

throw out of his mouth, to debauch our principles, or practices; they shall be entirely *swallowed up*. And though the church be for a while in the *wilderness*, it shall be happily sheltered, and tenderly *nourished*; there its *members* shall be in safety, as-if they were *taken up to God : even unto his throne*, till the time which he has appointed for its triumph. In the mean while, however the sons of *malice*, under the instruction and influence of the great *accuser of the brethren*, may defame them however *persecution* may attack and harrass them; let them be courageous and undaunted, not *loving their lives even to the death!* in the cause of Christ; for, though *they fall, they shall rise again* to certain victory and glory; nor shall death bring down their heads so low, as to render them unworthy of wearing a *crown of eternal life*.

SECT.
xv.

SECT. XVI.

The vision of the two beasts, and the outrages committed by them
Rev. XIII. throughout.

REV. XIII. I.

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

REVELATION XIII. 1.

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, as I apprehended in the vision, and saw a fierce and *savage-beast*^a ascending out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns; to intimate the city of Rome standing upon seven hills, and the ten kingdoms into which its dominions were to be divided: and upon his horns [were] ten diadems; to signify the royal power that was to be found in each; and on his heads [there were] names of blasphemy^b; such names as it was most profane and blasphemous to assume.

SECT.
xvi.

Rev.
XIII. I.

² And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his

And the beast which I saw, was, as to the form of the greater part of its body, like a leopard, and its feet [were] like those of a bear; to signify its exceeding great fierceness; and its mouth

a *Savage beast.*] This I understand of the *papal power*, as exercised by the *bishop of Rome*, supported by his regular clergy and by those secular princes, who have given up their name and power to him. And when the *dragon* is said to give him his power and throne, &c. ver. 2. it intimates, that he should have his seat or residence there, where the *dragon* had reigned even at Rome; which had been the seat of idolatry and persecution during its pagan state.

b *Names of blasphemy.*] They must have very little acquaintance with the arrogant titles, which have been assumed or admitted by the pope, who discern not in them a very remarkable illustration of this circumstance of the prophecy. — Instead of *blasphemy*, the common reading, I think *blasphemy*, names, in the plural, which is supported by the authority of the Alexandrian and other manuscripts, to be preferable.

c Never

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb, slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into

one thousand twelve hundred and sixty prophetic days or years. *And he opened his mouth to utter blasphemy against God, even to blaspheme his holy and venerable name, and his tabernacle pitched among men; and not only did he speak malignant things against the inhabitants of the earth, but even against those that dwell in heaven.* (Compare Dan. xi. 36.)

And it was, by Divine permission, given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them for a time; and so universal was the success of his pernicious undertakings, that it seemed as if there was given to him power over every tribe, and tongue, and nation. And all

the inhabitants of the earth shall be so deluded with his artifices, or intimidated by his terrors, that they shall worship him, that is, all whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb, who was slain. for some were registered in that book even from the foundation of the world: and they shall, by a secret energy, be preserved in the midst of so general and ruinous a defection. *If any one has an ear to hear, let him attentively hear this; for it is a matter of a most important nature, and the most surprising phenomenon which can be imagined, that such an idolatrous and persecuting power should arise in the Christian church, and that God should suffer it so far to prevail.* Nevertheless, God will not forget the injuries his people

SECT.
xvi.
Rev.
XIII. 6.

e Those that dwell in heaven.] It is very injurious to the saints and angels, when they are represented as desirous of attracting to themselves that worship which ought to be appropriated to God; and nothing worse can be imagined of them, than that they should be delighted with such services as are paid them in the Romish ritual.

f The inhabitants of the earth shall worship him.] The extravagant idolatry here mentioned, is very suitable to the temper and practise of those, who in order to avoid persecution, comply with the claims and demands of the papal power, contrary to their conscience; for it is the language of such a compliance, that the wrath of men is more to be dreaded than that of God himself.

g Registered from the foundation of the world.] I am well aware of what has been said to justify the sense which these words must have, if taken in connection

with those which immediately precede them; but, after all, it is very harsh to say, *Christ was slain from the foundation of the world.* He is in another place called simply, *the Lamb slain*, Rev. v. 12, and a kingdom is said to be prepared for good men from the foundation of the world. Mat. xxv. 34. And laying these things together, I think it abundantly sufficient to justify the interpretation I have here given, especially when compared with another passage in this book, chap. xviii. 8. *whose names were not written in the book of life, from the foundation of the world.* Mr. Pierce thinks it is an allusion to the custom of registering the actions of worthy persons, as Mal. iii. 17, undoubtedly is; and, that this book of life is, as it were, the catalogue of good men that have lived in all ages. Pierce on Phil. iv. 3. But I cannot be of opinion, that this exhausts the full meaning of the expression.

h Another

Rev.
XIII. 12.

people sustain; but, *if any one lead [them] into captivity, he shall be led into captivity himself* by a superior power, which he shall not be able to resist; and, *if any one slay others with the sword of injustice and cruelty, he shall himself be slain with the sword of Divine vengeance*, when God comes to make acquisition for blood. In the mean time, while they are waiting for his appearance, *here is a sufficient exercise for the patience and the faith of the saints*. It is the greatest trial to which they were ever brought; let them therefore consider themselves as called out by God to it, and be assured that *he will limit it both as to its duration and degree*, in a manner answerable to the purposes of his infinite wisdom, and of his peculiar love to them.

- 11 *And, to represent a very crafty and insidious power, which should join with the former, and greatly abet its sanguinary persecutions, I saw another beast ascending out of the earth, and it had two horns like a lamb; but, whatever gentleness there might be in that circumstance of its appearance, it spake like a dragon.* And such is the nature of their alliance, that *it exercises all the power of the first beast, in its presence, and it makes the earth, and those that dwell in it, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed*, whose interest, which seemed so much endangered, was greatly revived, being thus powerfully abetted and supported.
- 13 *And he, in order to confirm his subtle pretences, to lord it over the consciences of men, does great miracles, so as even to make fire come down from heaven to earth before men; strange artifices he has, to persuade them of his being endowed with more than natural powers, and that the vengeance of heaven will be armed against all that oppose him! And he deceiveth the inhabitants of the earth by the signs which*

into captivity, shall go into captivity—he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth: and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of those

[*the first beast*]. As I look upon the former to be the papal power, I am ready, with the first vision I have, to interpret this of the religious order of the church of Rome, (particulary that of the Jesuits,) who have many of their temporal estates and jurisdictions added to their spiritual, and thus have greatly supported the papacy.

[*the second beast*]. This beast is said to ascend from the earth, whereas the other descended from the sea, to make the distinction

between them the more remarkable; but what other mystery may be suggested, I cannot conjecture.

[*Great wonders*]. The *artful impostures*, which the *regular clergy*, that is, the several orders of monks, and especially the Jesuits, have used to persuade the people of the truth of their pretended miracles and revelations, seem to be finely delineated by this otherwise amazing description.

those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast: saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right-hand, or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of

which it is given him to do before the beast; commanding the inhabitants of the earth to make an image of the beast, that had the wound of the sword, and yet lived; that is, he teaches men to extol, and almost adore, that which in itself is most contemptible and detestable. And it was given to him, by a Divine permission, to give spirit and breath, as it were, to the image of the beast¹, that the image of the beast might speak with an audible voice. And, so zealous and powerful is he in abetting this cause, that by this its oracle, he should cause as many as will not worship the image of the beast, to be put to death. And he causeth all, of every rank and condition, both small and great, rich and poor, freemen and slaves, to receive the mark of this detestable power, on their right-hand, or their foreheads, in token of becoming its subjects and property. And, so rigorously is this enforced, that no one should be able to buy, or sell, but one who has some such trace of the mark^m, or the name of the beast, or the number, which is equivalent to the numeral letters of his name, and which I thought, in the vision, I saw impressed on the hands and foreheads of many. Herein is a great effort of wisdom; let him, therefore, whoever he be, who hath an enlarged and penetrating understanding, beyond what is common, compute the number of the beast; for it is the number of a manⁿ, or the numeral letters

SECR.
XVI.Rev.
XIII. 14.

18

[Image of the beast.] What the image of the beast is, distinct from the beast itself, I confess I know not; and therefore interpret the expressions, making an image, and giving it breath, &c. of idolizing the power of the Pope, and compelling persons to pay homage to it, and obey the edicts it published. And all the enormous fury of the inquisition, which is managed by one of the regular orders included in this interpretation, namely, the Dominican, is a remarkable verification of the following part of the prophecy, of its causing all that would not worship it to be put to death.

^m Receive the mark.] I have elsewhere observed, (Serm. to Young People, Serm. iv.) that it was customary to mark soldiers and slaves with some impressions, either on their hands or foreheads, by which they might be known to belong to their respective masters or commanders; and idolaters, with the signature of the god they wor-

shipped. Perhaps this may particularly refer to the sacraments which the people are obliged, on the highest penalty, to receive from the Romish priests, and which none can receive without such superstitious and idolatrous rites, as are in effect, worshipping the image of the beast.

ⁿ The number of a man, &c.] Of all the various interpretations given to this text, which it would be endless to enumerate, and much more to canvas, I find none that pleases me so well, as that of Sir Isaac Newton; that the words *καλεινος* and *רומניית*, the man of Latium, or of Rome, whose numeral letters, taken together, make 666, are here referred to. And I suppose this number is mentioned to signify, that the appearance of that power, whose efforts were to continue 1260 years, (compare chap. xii. 6, note ^d.) was to happen about 666 years after the date of the revelations, A. D. 96. And this I take to be the grand key by which the *ara* of

ters in the name of a man, and his number is
 and amounts on the whole, to six hundred and
 sixty six; which I leave to the intelligent reader
 to decypher.

a man; and his num-
 ber is six hundred
 threescore and six.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. WHOEVER is the *beast* intended, and whatever he meant by
 his image, his character, beyond all controversy, is very odious
 6, 7 and detestable; for he is represented as *blaspheming the name*
of God, and his tabernacle, and as making war with the saints.
 These have arisen such impious monsters in the Christian church,
 and none among them have been more openly and enormously
 wicked and profane, than those who have made the loudest pre-
 tensions to be the *representatives of Christ*, and invested with his
 whole authority. Many of the *saints* of God have seemed to have
 10 been *overcome* by this *antichristian* tyranny; many have been *led*
into captivity; many have been *slain with the sword*; but those
 who took them *captives*, continuing impenitent, shall be *taken*,
 8 and the *slayers slain*. O, may our names be written in the Lamb's
book of life! then shall we be secure in the midst of all these ter-
 rible evils, and from every trial of our *faith* and *patience*,
 shall come out as *gold seven times purified*—Let us not be troubled
 and offended, to discern these *usurpations* in the course of Divine
 Providence, prevailing, and the time actually come, in many parts
 17 of the world, in which men can neither *buy nor sell*, nor are per-
 mitted to enjoy any other *natural or civil* privileges, if they will
 not give up their names to the *beast*, receive his mark, and im-
 piously submit to his authority. The *prophecy* justly removes all of-
 fence which might be taken at the event, and discerning its ac-
 complishment, we may embolden our hopes, that the triumphs
 11 of Divine justice over these ministers of the *dragon*, as they are
also foretold, will be fulfilled with the like punctuality. And O,
 may the church of God be secured from their *artifices*, and fortifi-
 cated against their *terrours*; and in his own due time, may he *break*
 13, 14 the *jaw-bone of the wicked*! May he utterly disarm all the power
 and policy of those who take counsel together against the Lord and
 12 his anointed; and through their confederacies may seem to mock
 all

of the *beast* of Revelation to be antichrist, as it bears the two of the names of the great
 5th, or 6th century, when, upon the de-
 struction of the empire of Babylon, the
 Pope assumed a temporal dominion; that is,
 in papal history, when, among
 other usurpations, Innocent IV. Thom. 7.
 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100. 101. 102. 103. 104. 105. 106. 107. 108. 109. 110. 111. 112. 113. 114. 115. 116. 117. 118. 119. 120. 121. 122. 123. 124. 125. 126. 127. 128. 129. 130. 131. 132. 133. 134. 135. 136. 137. 138. 139. 140. 141. 142. 143. 144. 145. 146. 147. 148. 149. 150. 151. 152. 153. 154. 155. 156. 157. 158. 159. 160. 161. 162. 163. 164. 165. 166. 167. 168. 169. 170. 171. 172. 173. 174. 175. 176. 177. 178. 179. 180. 181. 182. 183. 184. 185. 186. 187. 188. 189. 190. 191. 192. 193. 194. 195. 196. 197. 198. 199. 200. 201. 202. 203. 204. 205. 206. 207. 208. 209. 210. 211. 212. 213. 214. 215. 216. 217. 218. 219. 220. 221. 222. 223. 224. 225. 226. 227. 228. 229. 230. 231. 232. 233. 234. 235. 236. 237. 238. 239. 240. 241. 242. 243. 244. 245. 246. 247. 248. 249. 250. 251. 252. 253. 254. 255. 256. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. 263. 264. 265. 266. 267. 268. 269. 270. 271. 272. 273. 274. 275. 276. 277. 278. 279. 280. 281. 282. 283. 284. 285. 286. 287. 288. 289. 290. 291. 292. 293. 294. 295. 296. 297. 298. 299. 300. 301. 302. 303. 304. 305. 306. 307. 308. 309. 310. 311. 312. 313. 314. 315. 316. 317. 318. 319. 320. 321. 322. 323. 324. 325. 326. 327. 328. 329. 330. 331. 332. 333. 334. 335. 336. 337. 338. 339. 340. 341. 342. 343. 344. 345. 346. 347. 348. 349. 350. 351. 352. 353. 354. 355. 356. 357. 358. 359. 360. 361. 362. 363. 364. 365. 366. 367. 368. 369. 370. 371. 372. 373. 374. 375. 376. 377. 378. 379. 380. 381. 382. 383. 384. 385. 386. 387. 388. 389. 390. 391. 392. 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398. 399. 400. 401. 402. 403. 404. 405. 406. 407. 408. 409. 410. 411. 412. 413. 414. 415. 416. 417. 418. 419. 420. 421. 422. 423. 424. 425. 426. 427. 428. 429. 430. 431. 432. 433. 434. 435. 436. 437. 438. 439. 440. 441. 442. 443. 444. 445. 446. 447. 448. 449. 450. 451. 452. 453. 454. 455. 456. 457. 458. 459. 460. 461. 462. 463. 464. 465. 466. 467. 468. 469. 470. 471. 472. 473. 474. 475. 476. 477. 478. 479. 480. 481. 482. 483. 484. 485. 486. 487. 488. 489. 490. 491. 492. 493. 494. 495. 496. 497. 498. 499. 500. 501. 502. 503. 504. 505. 506. 507. 508. 509. 510. 511. 512. 513. 514. 515. 516. 517. 518. 519. 520. 521. 522. 523. 524. 525. 526. 527. 528. 529. 530. 531. 532. 533. 534. 535. 536. 537. 538. 539. 540. 541. 542. 543. 544. 545. 546. 547. 548. 549. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847. 848. 849. 850. 851. 852. 853. 854. 855. 856. 857. 858. 859. 860. 861. 862. 863. 864. 865. 866. 867. 868. 869. 870. 871. 872. 873. 874. 875. 876. 877. 878. 879. 880. 881. 882. 883. 884. 885. 886. 887. 888. 889. 890. 891. 892. 893. 894. 895. 896. 897. 898. 899. 900. 901. 902. 903. 904. 905. 906. 907. 908. 909. 910. 911. 912. 913. 914. 915. 916. 917. 918. 919. 920. 921. 922. 923. 924. 925. 926. 927. 928. 929. 930. 931. 932. 933. 934. 935. 936. 937. 938. 939. 940. 941. 942. 943. 944. 945. 946. 947. 948. 949. 950. 951. 952. 953. 954. 955. 956. 957. 958. 959. 960. 961. 962. 963. 964. 965. 966. 967. 968. 969. 970. 971. 972. 973. 974. 975. 976. 977. 978. 979. 980. 981. 982. 983. 984. 985. 986. 987. 988. 989. 990. 991. 992. 993. 994. 995. 996. 997. 998. 999. 1000.

which is led by Me to the apostrophe
 10, relating to the church of Christ, and
 11, relating to the church of Christ, and
 12, relating to the church of Christ, and
 13, relating to the church of Christ, and
 14, relating to the church of Christ, and
 15, relating to the church of Christ, and
 16, relating to the church of Christ, and
 17, relating to the church of Christ, and
 18, relating to the church of Christ, and
 19, relating to the church of Christ, and
 20, relating to the church of Christ, and
 21, relating to the church of Christ, and
 22, relating to the church of Christ, and
 23, relating to the church of Christ, and
 24, relating to the church of Christ, and
 25, relating to the church of Christ, and
 26, relating to the church of Christ, and
 27, relating to the church of Christ, and
 28, relating to the church of Christ, and
 29, relating to the church of Christ, and
 30, relating to the church of Christ, and
 31, relating to the church of Christ, and
 32, relating to the church of Christ, and
 33, relating to the church of Christ, and
 34, relating to the church of Christ, and
 35, relating to the church of Christ, and
 36, relating to the church of Christ, and
 37, relating to the church of Christ, and
 38, relating to the church of Christ, and
 39, relating to the church of Christ, and
 40, relating to the church of Christ, and
 41, relating to the church of Christ, and
 42, relating to the church of Christ, and
 43, relating to the church of Christ, and
 44, relating to the church of Christ, and
 45, relating to the church of Christ, and
 46, relating to the church of Christ, and
 47, relating to the church of Christ, and
 48, relating to the church of Christ, and
 49, relating to the church of Christ, and
 50, relating to the church of Christ, and
 51, relating to the church of Christ, and
 52, relating to the church of Christ, and
 53, relating to the church of Christ, and
 54, relating to the church of Christ, and
 55, relating to the church of Christ, and
 56, relating to the church of Christ, and
 57, relating to the church of Christ, and
 58, relating to the church of Christ, and
 59, relating to the church of Christ, and
 60, relating to the church of Christ, and
 61, relating to the church of Christ, and
 62, relating to the church of Christ, and
 63, relating to the church of Christ, and
 64, relating to the church of Christ, and
 65, relating to the church of Christ, and
 66, relating to the church of Christ, and
 67, relating to the church of Christ, and
 68, relating to the church of Christ, and
 69, relating to the church of Christ, and
 70, relating to the church of Christ, and
 71, relating to the church of Christ, and
 72, relating to the church of Christ, and
 73, relating to the church of Christ, and
 74, relating to the church of Christ, and
 75, relating to the church of Christ, and
 76, relating to the church of Christ, and
 77, relating to the church of Christ, and
 78, relating to the church of Christ, and
 79, relating to the church of Christ, and
 80, relating to the church of Christ, and
 81, relating to the church of Christ, and
 82, relating to the church of Christ, and
 83, relating to the church of Christ, and
 84, relating to the church of Christ, and
 85, relating to the church of Christ, and
 86, relating to the church of Christ, and
 87, relating to the church of Christ, and
 88, relating to the church of Christ, and
 89, relating to the church of Christ, and
 90, relating to the church of Christ, and
 91, relating to the church of Christ, and
 92, relating to the church of Christ, and
 93, relating to the church of Christ, and
 94, relating to the church of Christ, and
 95, relating to the church of Christ, and
 96, relating to the church of Christ, and
 97, relating to the church of Christ, and
 98, relating to the church of Christ, and
 99, relating to the church of Christ, and
 100, relating to the church of Christ, and

all human opposition, yet at his appearance, they shall melt away as snow before the sun, when the time to remember Sion, yea, the set time is come. (Psal. cii. 13.)

SECT.
XVI.

SECT. XVII.

The vision of the Lamb standing upon mount Sion, surrounded with those whom he had redeemed ; and of several mighty angels, proclaiming his vengeance upon the beast, and upon those that worship him. Rev. XIV. 1, throughout.

REV. XIV. 1.

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

REVELATION XIV. 1.

AND, while these terrible objects were before me, I looked, and beheld another object, which animated my heart under the alarm and distress they gave me : for behold, the Lamb was standing upon mount Sion, which was represented to me also in my vision, as the place on which the temple, that had been opened in heaven stood ; and with him were one hundred forty four thousand, who in opposition to the name of the beast, which was so rigorously imposed, and by many received with so base a submission, had the name of God his Father written on their foreheads, in token of their inviolable submission, and entire dedication to him. And I heard a voice out of heaven, which was loud as the sound of many waters, when tossing themselves in the ocean, and like the sound of great thunder ; and, loud and awful as it was, it was accompanied with a most delightful harmony ; for I heard the voice of harpers playing upon their harps, aiding their instruments with the melody of their voices. And they sung, as it were, a new song, before the throne, and before the four living creatures, and the twenty-four elders, who in this vision still appeared to be present ; and none could learn the song, unless the one hundred and forty-four thousand, who are redeemed from the earth, and are as representatives of the whole body of the redeemed. These are pure and unspotted souls, free from the idolatries and other abominations which have been so prevalent in the age in which they live ; or to speak in the prophetic language, these are they who have not been polluted with women :

SECT.
XVII.

Rev.
XIV. 1.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder ; and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps :

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders : and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women ; for they are virgins : these are they

SEAL.
XXII.Ezek.
XIV. 4

women: for they are chaste virgins^a: these are they who follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: and having humbly traced his footsteps upon earth, shall be led by him to the possession of various and ever-new delights in the celestial world. These are they, who were redeemed from among men, [as] the first-fruits, consecrated to God, and to the Lamb, most excellent in their kind, and separate from every unclean or profane use, to the immediate honour of God, and of the Redeemer^b. And no deceit, or evil of any kind, was found in their mouths, for they are entirely blameless before the throne of God, and exalted to that world, where he reigns in perfect purity, as well as Divine glory, nor can any thing unclean be admitted in his presence.

- 6 And I saw another glorious angel, flying with strength and rapidity, through the midst of heaven, having in his hand the volume of a book, which he displayed, as with an air of complacency and triumph, even the everlasting gospel, to preach to the inhabitants of the earth, even to every nation, and tribe, and tongue, and people, dispersed over the world. And as he passed I heard him making proclamation of its important contents, and saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, with becoming reverence and submission, for the hour of his judgment is come, when he shall execute vengeance on his enemies, and worship him who made heaven and earth, and sea, and the limpid fountains of waters, which are derived from it, and flow back into it. And another great angel followed him, crying out, as with the voice of exultation and triumph, saying, It is fallen, it is fallen, [even] Babylon, the great city, a city famous as Babylon of old, when it was at the height of its power and glory. God in his righteous vengeance hath brought it down, because it made all the nations drink of the wine of its raging

they which follow the Lamb: whithersoever he goeth: these were redeemed from among men, being the first-fruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people.

7 Saying, with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come: and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

a They are virgins.] This probably signifies their freedom from sinning, which is, in a spiritual sense, fornication; nor can it, with any reason, be urged against marriage.

b First-fruits, most excellent in their kind, &c.] That the Jews first-born had this property, will appear from comparing the following text relating to them;

Deut. xviii. 15; Exod. xxi. 22; Num. xviii. 15; Micah vii. 1. Compare James i. 18.

c Angel flying, &c.] The flight of an angel admirably represents the expedition of that progress by which the gospel dispersed itself over the whole world, as Archbishop Tillotson well observes. See his *Harmony*, Vol. II. p. 154.

wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever; and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are

raging fornication, till they were stimulated thereby to the most scandalous and furious excesses. And a third angel followed them both, saying with a loud voice, If any one, how strong soever the temptation may have been, worship the beast, and his image, and receive the mark on his forehead, or on his hand^d; if he subject himself to this wicked and idolatrous form of religion, and obstinately persist in it, notwithstanding the light which God is giving to discover its errors and superstition; He also shall himself drink of the wine of the indignation of God, which is tempered with various ingredients of wrath, without any mixture of mercy, in the cup of his wrath; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the day of God's future vengeance, in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb: whose religion has so shamefully been perverted and dishonoured, even by those who pretend entirely to have engrossed it: And the smoke of their torment ascendeth for ever and ever without any period; and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever, in contempt of the authority and testimony of God, receive the mark of his name^e, as the badge of their devotedness to him. In the mean time, these deceivers shall have their day, when all the terrors of secular power shall enforce their impious and iniquitous decrees. And here is the patience of the saints; here [are] the triumphs of those who keep the commandments

SECT.
XVII.
Rev.
XIV. 9.

d On his hand.] Compare sect. xvi. note m.

e Presence of the holy angels.] From hence Mr. Reynolds conjectures, that possibly the torments of the damned may, at certain seasons, through eternal ages, become a spectacle to the inhabitants of the blessed world above. See his *Queries concerning angels*, p. 305.

f Presence of the Lamb.] This signifies (as Dr. Clarke well observes,) that it shall not only be appointed by the infinite Majesty of God, the righteous Judge of all, but approved moreover by men and angels, and by him also, who loved us unto death, even Christ, that merciful and compassionate High Priest. Clarke's *Posth. Sermon*. Vol. I. p. 341.

g The smoke of their torment—who worship the beast, &c.] When I seriously re-

flect on this text, and how directly the force of it lies against those, who, contrary to the light of their consciences, continue in the communion of the church of Rome, for secular advantage, or to avoid the terror of persecution, it almost makes me tremble; and I heartily wish, that all others, who connive at those things in the discipline and worship of protestant churches, which they, in their conscience, think to be sinful remains of popish superstition and corruption, would seriously attend to this passage, which is one of the most dreadful in the whole book of God, and weigh its awful contents, that they may keep at the greatest possible distance from this horrible curse, which is sufficient to make the ears of every one that hears it, to tingle. Compare Jer. xxv. 15, 16.

h Hence

CHAP.
XIII.
Rev.
XIV. 13.

ments of God, and the faith of Jesus, and are determined to maintain the purity of the gospel amidst these formidable efforts to corrupt it. *And I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, Write this for the instruction of mankind, in the most distant ages: 'henceforth blessed [are] the dead, that die in the Lord'* so numerous, and so various are the calamities which the persecuting powers shall bring upon the saints, that there is abundant reason to congratulate those who are taken out of this vexatious, oppressive, and afflictive world whether by a natural or by a violent death: *yea, saith the Spirit*, by whose inspiration and command I recorded it, they are assuredly blessed; for they are removed *that they may for ever rest from their labours*, and their sorrows; *and their works* of piety and goodness, though so ill requited here, shall not be forgotten, but shall *follow them* into the presence of God, shall be acknowledged there in the most condescending manner, and through the riches of Divine mercy, recompensed with eternal glory. Accordingly, let this remembrance of their faith and patience, in connection with this transcendent reward, encourage and animate their surviving brethren to imitate their examples.

14 *And I saw, and behold*, another remarkable appearance offered itself to my view; *a white cloud*, shining with wonderful lustre and beauty; *and on the cloud one sitting*, who seemed by the majesty of his form, to be *like the Son of man* as represented in Daniel; *having on his head a golden crown*, and in his hand, instead of a sceptre, *a sharp sickle*: so that he seemed to be going forth, as to some wonderful harvest.

15 *And as soon as I had viewed him, another angel came out of the temple of God, crying with a loud voice to him that sat upon the cloud, Put forth thy sickle, and reap, for the season of thy reaping*

are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 *And I heard a voice from heaven*, saying unto me, *Write*, *blessed are the dead which die in the Lord*, *from henceforth*: *yea, saith the spirit*, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.

14 *And I looked*, and behold, *a white cloud*; and upon the cloud *sat* like unto the Son of Man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 *And another angel came out of the temple*, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, *Thrust in*

h. *Henceforth*]. The *henceforth* *hence*, understands this to mean, from the time of their death: as if it had been said, (namely) immediately after their dissolution they are blessed. *Rev. Comm. Vol. 2. xiv. 13.* And Mr. Baxter observes, their works are said to follow with them, not *after*, but to come being thousand years after them.

1. *Die in the Lord*]. Archbishop Tillotson interprets this chiefly of those who die in the name of Christ; who, no

doubt, are included. But I think the phrase more extensive. There are, perhaps, no allusions to the word of Solomon, *Eccl. ix. 5. I perceived the dead already dead, rather than the living, are gone*, in time of extreme degeneracy, and bitter persecution. See his *Works*, Vol. II, page 110.—*Thomas Burnet, (on the Psalms, p. 104.)* and many other protestant writers, have justly urged this text, as *disproving* against the popish doctrine of purgatory.

k. One

in thy sickle, and reap: for the time is come for thee to reap; for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth; and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth; for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle, into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great wine-press of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-press, even unto the horses' bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

reaping is come because the harvest of the earth is now fully ripe. (Compare Joel iii. 13.) Execute therefore this judgment, O thou mighty Messenger of God, which the wickedness of the world hath righteously deserved. And, accordingly, he that sate upon the cloud, put forth his sickle on the earth, with strength and rapidity; and the harvest of the earth was presently reaped; signifying, that the execution of the threatened vengeance should be very speedy. But it seemed that the vintage yet remained to be gathered in. And, in reference to this, another angel came out of the temple, that was in heaven: and he also was armed as the other, like the Son of man, and had a sharp sickle in his hand. And another angel, just at that instant, came from the altar, having, as it seemed, power over the fire of it; and he called out with a great cry to him who had the sharp sickle, saying, Put forth thy sharp sickle, and lop off the clusters of the vine, which grows upon, and extends itself almost over the earth, for its grapes are ripe; and the persons represented by it have so abused the Divine long suffering, that it is proper the season of their destruction should commence. And accordingly the angel, with celerity and vigour, thrust out his sickle upon the earth, and lopped off the grapes from the vine of the earth; and he threw [them] into the great wine-press, of the wrath of God, which seemed to stand ready to receive them. And the wine-press, [which stood] out of the city, was trodden with great violence; and the blood of the grape, which I knew betokened the blood of those who were enemies to God and his people, came out of the wine-press in such abundance, that it made a kind of inundation, like a vast river, or sea, and reached up even to the bridles of the horses, which attempted to pass the channel through which it flowed, at the distance of one thousand six hundred furlongs. In such an amazing

SECT.
xvii.

Rev.
XI. 15.V

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

44

45

46

47

48

49

50

51

52

53

54

55

56

57

58

59

60

61

62

63

64

65

66

67

68

69

70

k One thousand six hundred furlongs.] As a furlong is one eighth of a mile, this would amount to 200 miles. This representation, like the dimensions of that temple, which Ezekiel saw, may seem extravagantly large, and such as the eye, in vision could not possibly judge of. I

look upon it, therefore, as only an hyperbolic expression, to signify its exceeding greatness; unless possibly it may point out the dimension of that country over which the judgment should extend, which is here prophetically referred to. Though perhaps it may only intimate in general that

SECT. amazing extent and quantity was the effusion of
XVII. blood represented to me in vision. (Compare
Isa. lxiii. 3.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. 13-20. Is what awful characters is the righteous vengeance of God here described! How quickly do his haughtiest enemies fall before him, like corn before the sickle, or *clusters of grapes* before the *knave*! *His wine-press shall indeed be trodden, and the blood of his enemies shall overflow*; but *blessed are all they that put their trust in him, and look to him, who trod the wine-press alone, and who distinguishes him self by the title of him, who is mighty to save, and who travels in the greatness of his strength.* (Isa. lxiii. 1-3.) Arrayed in terror, he will vanquish all the enemies of his people; but, to his faithful followers, will appear with the gentleness of the Lamb, of the Lamb their Redeemer, to whose honour *their voices and their harps* shall resound. O, how happy
3, 4 are those souls, who by his special love, *being redeemed from among men*, and having humbly traced the steps of his purity and goodness on earth, shall, in the heavenly world, *follow the Lamb whithersoever he goes*! Let us be accordingly engaged to preserve ourselves unspotted from the world, and to walk worthy of so ex-
5 alted a hope and expectation; to keep our *mouths from every deceit*, that we may be *found blameless* in the presence of God, and
6, 7 of the Lamb. God hath granted us the everlasting gospel, on purpose that we might be taught to *fear him, and to give glory to his*
8-10 *name*; to *worship him*, as the great Creator and righteous Governor of the universe; and while we are under the conduct of his Providence, and devoted to his service, let nothing discourage or dismay us. Though for the present we see that *Babylon is triumphant*, though its patrons are *making themselves drunk with the blood of his saints*, a very *different cup* is prepared for her, and will assuredly be given her to drink, even the *cup of the wrath of God, poured forth without mixture*; while blessings, inconceivable and eternal, are reserved for those that *suffer for righteousness*
11 *sake*. Let the patience, therefore, of those who *keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Christ*, be invincible; for their fiercest, and most formidable enemies, can only kill the body; and having done that, can neither prevent, nor delay, the blessedness of

that after the antichristian powers had long oppressed and persecuted the saints, the power of Christ should trouble and destroy them; and therefore they are re-

presented as a *harvest ripe, and fit for reaping*, &c. the measure of their iniquities being full.

of the dead that die in the Lord. The infallible Spirit has said it, the blessed apostle hath, by Divine command, recorded it, for the instruction and triumph of his people in all ages, that *they* Ver. rest from their labours, and that their works follow them; while 11 those that persecuted and hated them, rest not day nor night; but ⁹ the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And, O, that numbers of those who worship the beast; and who receive its image, may be awakened, while the day of their visitation continues; lest they also, after having dealt damnation, in their arrogant censures, upon men of much purer faith, and holier lives, 10 than themselves, be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb.

SECT.
xvii.

SECT. XVIII.

The appearance of seven angels, with seven vials, full of the seven last plagues; and the pouring out of the three first vials, with their consequent effects. Rev. XV. 1, to the end. XVI. 7.

REV. XV. 1.

AND I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous; seven angels, having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

REVELATION XV. 1.

AND I saw another great and wonderful sign in heaven, which fixed my attention, and will demand that of the reader; Seven angels, who had the seven last plagues; So called, because in them the wrath of God was to be completed; and, because they refer to some of the last judgments, which he shall pour forth on the enemies of the church, before the time of its most illustrious triumph. And I saw, as 2 it were a sea of glass^a a great crystal vessel, like the sea in Solomon's temple; and it was so irradiated with the reflection of that light which fell upon it from the throne of God, that its waves seem mingled with fire. And those who overcame the beast^b, and his image, and stedfastly

SECT:
xviii.

Rev.
XV. 1.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand

a Sea of Glass.] Some explain this in a different manner, as if there were properly a sea, seeming to lie before the ground which appeared in the vision, through which they had passed who now stood upon the shore of it; and they suppose the glass to represent the frail nature of this world; and the fire, the mixture of calamity and misery to which they had been exposed, before they arrived at the state of security and happiness in which they then were. Many other interpreta-

tions have also been given. But the consideration of what I have said elsewhere, of the reference to the scenery of the temple, determined me to the interpretation I have preferred.

b Overcame the beast.] It is, in the original, *ἡ τὴν θηρὴν*, which Dr. Clark would translate, out of the midst of the beast, that, is, adhering stedfastly to the true religion, in the midst of an idolatrous and corrupt nation. See his *Posth. Sermon* Vol. III. p. 85.

SAUC.
XVIII.
Rea.
XV. 2.

steadfastly refused, though at the expence of their possessions and lives, amidst so many who were devoted to him, to receive *his mark*; [and] the number of his name, I saw standing by the sea of glass, having the harps of God in their hands, with which they were celebrating his praises, for that powerful presence and assistance which
3 had rendered them victorious. *And they sung the song of Moses, the faithful and beloved servant of God, and the song of Jesus, the Lamb, who had bought them with his blood.* They celebrated the triumph they had gained over the proud enemy, with a joy, like that with which Israel of old, at the Red Sea, celebrated the destruction of the haughty and cruel Egyptians, by the immediate and glorious interposition of the Divine power, saying, "*Great and wonderful [are] thy works*, both of judgment and of mercy, *O Lord God Almighty*; nor dost thou use thine almighty power to oppress any, the meanest of thy creatures; on the contrary, perfectly *righteous and true [are] all thy ways and administrations*, *O King of saints*, who art thyself supremely holy, as well as power-
4 ful. *Who should not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy great and adorable name? because [thou] only [art] holy*; and in thy presence, the holiness of all other beings disappears, as unworthy to be mentioned or remembered. *Surely all nations shall come and worship before thee*, in token of the humblest adoration, *because thy righteous judgments are already in many instances, made manifest*, and are about to be manifested in a yet more illustrious degree."

5 *And after this I saw, and beheld the temple of the tabernacle, in which was the ark of the testimony, was opened again in heaven*; the most holy place, which since the vision I before described, had been veiled again, being now sub-
6 jected to my view. *And the seven angels, who had the seven plagues already mentioned, came*

stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true are thy ways thou King of saints;

4 Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for thou only art holy; for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest.

5 And after that, I looked and beheld, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened.

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven

a Song of Moses—and of the Lamb.] That is, with Mr. Mede, upon the conversion of all nations from idolatry, they sing a song of congratulation to Moses and Jesus, whose doctrine had so directly opposed it. Mede on Luke xi. 2. But I think this a very *big interpretation*. Whoever diligently observes the contents of the

song of Moses, Exod. xv. will find many expressions finely adapted to the occasion here supposed. And if it were true, as Maimonides tells us, that the song of Moses was sung *daily* in the temple, &c., it may be considered as a beautiful illustration of this circumstance, agreeable to the general plan pursued in these visions.

d And

seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI. 1. And I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the first went and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

d And agreeable to that wonderful event, &c.) Indeed it appears most surprising, and worthy of greater notice than has generally been taken of it, that the blessed God should thus, on the consecration of the temple, possess it alone and drive out, as it were, even the favourable tokens of his majestic presence.

came out of the inner apartment of the temple, as from the immediate presence of God; and like the High Priest on the day of his most sacred ministration, they were clothed with pure and shining linen [garments;] only with this difference, that whereas he had on this day only his linen girdle on, and continued in that dress till the time of the evening sacrifice, they were girded about the breasts with golden girdles. And one of the four living creatures, which I have so often mentioned, gave to the seven angels seven golden vials, or censers, full of the wrath of the great and blessed God, who liveth for ever and ever; and, therefore, is to be regarded as the most formidable enemy, as well as the most desirable friend, to immortal beings. And agreeably to that wonderful event, which happened when God first took possession of the tabernacle, and of the temple, (Exod. xl. 34; 1 Kings viii. 10; 2 Chron. v. 14; Isa. vi. 4;) the temple was full of smoke^d; which came from the glory of God, and from the symbol of his power. And no one could enter into the temple, till the seven plagues, which were signified by the vials of the seven angels, were finished; and, till they had emptied them by the Divine command. And I then heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, whom I have described above, Go, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God, with which you are charged, upon the earth; for his patience will no longer endure the provocations they are intended to punish.

And the first angel, in obedience to this² Divine injunction, went forth, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there was a malignant and grievous ulcer, which broke out in large and dreadful scars, upon the men who had the mark of the beast, and them who worshipped his image, and they were extremely tormented with it, and found it incurable. (Compare Exod. ix. 8—10^e.)

And

^e First vial.] Mr. Lowman supposes, that this third period of the vials, reveals the state of the church and providence in the times of the last head of the Roman government, represented by the beast, for 1260 years, from about A. D. 536, to its final overthrow about A. D. 2016; and he interprets each vial of some signal judgment

SECT. XVIII.

Rev. XV. 6.

Chap. XVI. 1.

MATT.
XXIV.PARK.
XVI. 2.

And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became a mass of blood and putrefaction, like that of a dead man; and every living soul (that was) in the sea died: the fish were immediately destroyed, and the sea appeared a most gloomy and terrible spectacle'. (Compare Exod. vii. 20.)

- 4 And the third angel bore a commission to spread the same terrible calamity over all the fresh waters; and accordingly he poured forth his vial on the rivers, and on the fountains of water, and they also became blood; as the sea had done on pouring out the vial of the former angel. And I heard the angel of the waters', who seemed to be appointed to have the care of them, instead of repining at what was done, adorning the hand of God in it, and saying, Most righteous art thou, O Lord, who art, and who wast, the same immutable and everlasting Jehovah; and (thou art) holy', because thou hast judged them: and he executed such awful vengeance upon them. Justly dost thou make these persecuting and wicked countries the scene of such devastating judgments; because they have poured forth the blood of thy saints, and even of thy prophets, like water; and it hath flowed in a crimson stream, till their rivers have been dyed with it. And, accordingly, thou madest them read their crime in their punishment, and hast given

And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man; and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Bless art thou, O Lord, who art, and wast, and shalt be; because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

judgment upon the proud Gog-magog; sup-
ploring the Lord, almighty, to be poured
out, and the vengeance to be just. But,
I must not dwell yet so minutely ex-
tended, whether this supposition be true.
Although I am rather inclined to think it
is, or rather all the following reasons.
Because he had relied on a more just future,
and desired the supernatural judgment to
be inflicted on the papal kingdom, in its
last days. Mr. Paley interprets the first
vial, of the miraculous destruction of the
papacy; Mr. Latham, with greater
probability, refers it to the great con-
tinuation of the whole empire, under the
family of Charles the Great, by which
the family became extinct, and the em-
pire and the crown of France, were trans-
ferred to other families; A. D. 800, to
A. D. 1000. And he shows by many in-
stances the popes endeavored to weaken
and diminish the imperial power, and
serve their own ambitious designs; which
proved a painful war, and were the cause
of innumerable misdeeds in Europe, and
especially to Italy. During this period,

the Normans invaded and plundered
France; the Saracens ravaged Italy; and the
Hungarians the western parts of German-
y and Italy.

[1 Some say,] Mr. Paley, and Mr. Low-
mish, agree in referring this to the great
effusion of blood in the holy wars, to re-
store Jerusalem from the Saracens. This
common project was set on foot by the
pope, pursued by the emperor, the king of
France, our king Richard, and other
princes, and many prelates, and about
two millions lost their lives in the several
expeditions; from A. D. 1090, to A. D.
1190. And this appears to me a very
probable interpretation.

[2 Angel of the waters.] From this text,
compared with chap. XVI. 13, some have
inferred that these are certain intellectual
beings, which preside over the several ele-
ments of water and fire; and by conse-
quence, of earth and air.

[3 Thou art holy.] I follow those copies,
which read it, *sanctus*, whereas others
have it, *sanctus*, as in other places of
this book.

i Thid

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgments.

given them blood to drink, for they are worthy of it; worthy to find such horrors as these, whenever they look for refreshment and comfort. And I heard another angel, whose voice seemed to come from the altar, saying, Yea, O Lord God Almighty, it is indeed thus; true and righteous [are] all thy judgments. Heaven adores the equity of thy proceeding; and the most impious inhabitants of earth, or hell, shall not be able to find any thing to object against them, even when they have the appearance of the greatest severity.

SECT.
xviii.
Rev.
XVI. 7.

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us now raise our eyes and our hearts above the low and sordid scenes of mortality, to those happy and exalted spirits^{1, 2} who are described as standing before the crystal sea, with golden harps³ in their hands. Let us attentively hearken to those broken and imperfect echoes of the song of Moses, and of the Lamb, which a gracious God causes to descend, as it were, to this world of ours, and which sometimes sweetly mingle themselves with the clamour of strife, with the din of folly, with the groans of misery. Happy and glorious is their condition now, who are freed from all these evils, and who triumph over all their enemies; whom, as it was said to Israel of the Egyptians, having beheld, they shall see them no more for ever: (Exod. xiv. 13.) They are now acknowledging their great Deliverer, singing everlasting praises to his name, and celebrating the wonders of his works, and the righteousness and truth of all his ways. O Lord God Almighty, O thou King of saints, who would not fear thee, and glorify thy holy name? Let the nations come, and worship in thy presence; let them pay thee their humble reverence and homage before

i Third vial.] Some interpret this of the persecution of the church of Bohemia. (See Mr. Pyle in loc.) But this by no means suits the act of adoration, ver. 5, 6. It seems to refer to calamities to be brought on some parts of the papal kingdom. According to the order of time, Mr. Lowman supposes this to refer to the bloody wars between the Guelphs and Gibellines, or the papal and imperial factions whereby the popes were driven out of Italy into France; from A. D. 1200, to A. D. 1371. During this period, both these parties had joined in many persecutions, and a violent one raged against the Albigenses; the inquisition was began about A. D. 1216;

and the council of Lateran established these severe and cruel methods of supporting the papacy. And God gave them also blood to drink, (ver. 6,) for a violent contest arose between the papal and imperial parties, about the right of presenting to ecclesiastical preferments, so that almost all the cities in Italy were engaged in civil wars, and great multitudes destroyed. In A. D. 1282, all the French in Sicily were massacred. Thus were they, who shed the blood of the saints, punished by civil contentious and bloodshed. And, on the whole, this seems to be the most probable and satisfactory interpretation.

a Fourth

SECT. XVIII. before the *vials* of thy wrath are poured out : those *vials*, which terrible as their contents are, the benevolent spirits of heaven, *do* prepare themselves, at thy command, to pour forth with pleasure ; *do* applauding, in their responsive hymns, thy righteous judgments, *do* even when the sorest and most dreadful plagues torment the worshippers of the beast and his image ; even when their seas and their rivers are turned into blood. Whatever be the calamities, whether past or future, to which any of these particulars may refer, surely they are big with terror to those wretches who on any pretence, are pouring forth the blood of thy prophets and thy saints. They are worthy of having blood given them to drink, and accordingly, thou hast a dreadful draught in reserve for them. And, though some of them may have laid down their heavy heads in peace, which we might rather have expected, would have been brought to the grave with blood, the day of thy vengeance will surely come : a vengeance so terrible, that nothing but a zeal for thy violated law, and thine injured gospel, would make the very sight of it, supportable to those whose cause shall then be pleaded, and whose blood shall be visited on their tormentors and murderers.

SECT. XIX.

The pouring forth of the four last vials, and the awful events they produce ; with the incorrigible obstinacy of the sinners on whom this vengeance is executed. Rev. XVI. 8, to the end.

REVELATION XVI. 8.

SECT. XIX.

REV. XVI.

AND the three former angels having thus poured forth their vials on the earth, and sea, and the rivers of water, the fourth angel poured forth his vial on the sun ; and, in consequence of that, an extraordinary power was given

REV. XVI. 8.

AND the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun, and power was given unto him to burn men with fire.

a Fourth angel poured forth his vial on the sun] Some interpretation of the quarrel between the popes and emperor, in the twelfth, thirteenth, and fourteenth centuries. See Mr. Fyfe &c. &c. Mr. Lockman, with greater probability, refers it to the long and bloody wars in Italy, France, Germany, and Spain, occasioned by a schism in the papacy, from A. D. 1378, to A. D. 1504 ; there being three popes, in three lines of succession, at the same time. During this period the Turks took Constantinople, and put an end to the eastern empire. And some suppose there is a further reference to his and burning seasons which should destroy the fruits

of the earth, and occasion pestilential disorders, and disastrous infirmities, &c. that time was the last in the time supposed to be here referred to ; particularly by means of the reformation, which began in England, and spread widely into other countries, particularly Germany, A. D. 1517 ; and again A. D. 1520. But that they retarded, (see P.) is evident from the war commenced against the Bohemians ; the infamous conduct of the council of Constance, in burning John Huss, and Jerome of Prague, in violation of the public faith, and establishing that scandalous doctrine, that faith is not to be kept with heretics, &c.

b Fifth

9 And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues; and they repented not to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness, and they gnawed their tongues for pain.

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven because

given to it to scorch men with an intolerable heat, so that they seemed, as it were, to live in the very fire itself. And men were scorched with sudden calentures, and with great and unsufferable fierceness of heat; and yet instead of giving glory to the great Author of these awful chastisements, which afforded them so lively an idea of everlasting burnings, as if they had already been inhabitants of the world of despair, they blasphemed the name of God, who had power over these plagues. And the continuance of their torments did not subdue their hearts, but they still persisted, as with a diabolical obstinacy, and repented not, to give glory to him, by a confession of their sins, by seeking his mercy, and returning to his obedience. (Compare Isa. xxiv. 6.)

And as these vials had greatly affected the kingdom of the beast, the next came still nearer to him; for, the fifth angel poured forth his vial upon the throne of the beast itself^b; and his kingdom was darkened, so that his unhappy subjects, from whom he had so long veiled the light of God's word, and of his favour, had not the benefit of the solar rays, either to guide or cheer them. (Compare Ezek. xxxii. 8.) And yet at the same time, the secret fire kindled in their veins by the former scorching heat continued; and they gnawed their tongues for the extremity of the pain and anguish which they felt; And they still blasphemed the great God, the tremendous Majesty of heaven, as well as earth

^b Fifth vial.] Mr Pyle interprets this of the perplexity occasioned to the See of Rome by removing the seat of it to Avignon, and the schism between the popes. But this prophecy seems to refer to a later period. Mr. Lowman's interpretation is more probable, who refers it to the protestant reformation, and the confirmation of it by the principal states of Europe, notwithstanding all the attempts of the pope, and in opposition to the papal authority: from A. D. 1560, to A. D. 1650. During this period, several nations renounced subjection to the pope, and have continued free to this day; and, in other nations, his power has been greatly abridged and restrained. This event gave great vexation to the popes, and their adherents; occasioned invasions, assassina-

tions, massacres, and bloody wars; as the civil wars in France, the wars in Germany about the reformation, the war between Spain and the united provinces, the Spanish invasion of England, and the powder plot; the massacre of Paris, &c. Yet all proved unsuccessful to prevent the establishment of the reformed religion. And that they repented not of their deeds, (ver. 11,) is evident from the instances of their rage and cruelty already mentioned, and which they take care to repeat whenever they have power: and especially from the edicts of the council of Trent, (from A. D. 1542, to A. D. 1562,) which instead of diminishing or relaxing, increased and confirmed the corruptions of popery, and condemned all doctrines tending to reformation.

c River

SECT.

XIX.

Rev.

XVI. 9.

earth, for their pains and their ulcers, which the scorching heat had excited; and they repented not of their wicked works, whereby they had weakened his just indignation.

because of their pains and their sores and repented not of their demerits.

12 *And the sixth angel poured forth his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and its water, wide and rapid as the stream had been, was dried up, immediately, that a way might be prepared for the march of the kings from the rising of the sun, who appeared in vision as coming to the borders of it, with all their armies, to pour forth destruction upon the beast and his kingdom.*

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 *And, as I saw the dragon standing in my presence, with the beast and the false prophet near him, as the great abettors of his kingdom, which was threatened by this invasion, I had an intimation given me of the various efforts they should make for the preservation of it: [and] out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet, [there came] evidently three animals, which expressed unclean spirits, being re-*

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 *presented by creatures like frogs. For these are the spirits of demons, whose design it is to impose upon mankind by the most artful stratagems, and pretences of working miracles, by which they attempted to support the kingdom they had raised: and indeed, it seemed they did even enchant whole nations, for they were permitted by God, to go forth to the kings of that part of the earth where the seat of the beast was; and, indeed, his territory was so extensive, that it might be said, they went through the whole world; and they operated so powerfully, as to bring them together, to the battle of that great day of God the Almighty, in which he was secretly determined to pour forth his vengeance*

14 For these are the spirits of devils, working themselves, which go forth into the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

15 *upon them. And, as this last effort of this infernal agent would be a signal trial of the faith and*

15 Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth

[*See Explanations.*] It appears to me, that this involves the triumph of the papal kingdom from the east, that, as I believe the various and yet accomplished, I freely confess, that it is involved in those clouds and darkness which I am not able to penetrate. Mr. Pyle explains it of the conquest of the eastern Christians, by the growing power of the Ottoman house, and the movement of property in some parts of the west. But this part of the prophecy seems to refer to an event much later;

and like the rest, to denote some judgment on the papal kingdom, to happen, probably, between A. D. 1700, and A. D. 1800.

[*4 False prophets.*] As the false prophet is here joined with the beast, and also in chap. xix. 20, and there said to work miracles before the beast, he seems to be the same mentioned chap. xiii. 11, 12, but there described as another beast, and said to do great miracles in the sight of the beast. See lect. xvi. note b, l.

c Keepeth

keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

and constancy of the saints, in order the better to fortify them against it, I heard a voice which I understood to be that of our Lord Jesus Christ, saying, *Behold I come suddenly and unexpectedly, as a thief, that surprises a sleeping family: blessed [is] he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments^e. that they may not suddenly be snatched from him, and he may not be forced to walk naked, so that men should see his shame.* Let my servants, therefore, guard against these sudden surprizes, which during this time of danger and alarm may frequently happen. *And* 16 the army appearing against the saints, as was observed above, *He*, that is, God, by the secret conduct of his Providence, so disposed things, that he gathered them together^f into a certain place, [which is] called in the Hebrew language, *Armageddon*, or the mountain of Megiddo, because it was to be a place more remarkable for slaughter than Megiddo had ever been.

SECT.
xix.
Rev.
XVI. 15.

16 And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities

And when they were there assembled, the seventh angel poured forth his vial into the air; and there came forth a great voice from the temple of heaven, even from the very throne of God himself, saying, "It is now done, the great work is just completing." And there were 18 *voices, and thunders, and lightnings; and there was also together with them a great earthquake, to add new horror to the scene, such as there had not been from the time that men were upon the earth; even such, and so great an earthquake, quite unequalled in history or observation. And the great city was immediately* 19 *divided into three parts, and the cities of the Gentiles fell down. And thus it appeared, that Babylon the great came into remembrance before*

e *Keepeth his garments.*] Dr. Lightfoot thinks here is an allusion to what that Jewish officer called the man of the mountain, that is, of the house of the Lord, used to do, when taking his round in the temple to examine the watch; if he met with any asleep, he had a liberty to set fire to his garments. Perhaps, in this case, the person might be obliged to appear in the fragments of his burnt garments the next day, which would be a great disgrace. See his Works, Vol. I. p. 919. According to Ainsworth, on Numb. xviii. 4, 5,) they were beaten by the provost, and their garments were taken away and burnt.

f *He gathered them.*] This seems a memorable circumstance; they were the dragon's army, yet God assembled them. Such oblique intimations of the interposition of Providence, are wonderfully instructive, and they are scattered up and down in many places of the sacred writings.—That Megiddo had been a place remarkable for slaughter, See Judges v. 19; 2 Kings ix. 27; 2 Chron. xxxv. 22. Compare Zech. xii. 11. To express the certain destruction that should come upon these antichristian powers, they are described to be brought together to this mountain.

SEPT.
NO.
300
NVL. 10.
fore God, to give her the long threatened cup of the wine of the fiercest wrath, in which all the most dreadful ingredients of vengeance were, as it were, mingled together, like poignant poison in the strongest wine, to give it the greater power and efficacy. And the whole face of nature was thrown into such a consternation by means of this grand event, that every island fled away, and the mountains were found
21 *no more. And a great and violent storm of hail, the stones of which were as of the weight of a talent, descended from heaven upon men, so as to dash in pieces the stoutest heroes, how well soever they might be armed and defended. And men, instead of being reformed by it, blasphemed God so much the more for the plague of the hail; for the plague of it was very great, and brought along with it a very extensive ruin and desolation.*

cities of the nation fell; and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent; and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. *WHATEVER* particular events these *vials* might be respectively intended to represent they all agree in giving us most awful views of the *Divine power* and *agency* over the whole universe. He is able to *scorch* and *blast the earth with insufferable heat*, to veil it in midnight *darkness*, to *dry up its rivers*, or even shake its foundations, so as to *throw down*, in a moment, the strongest and the proudest *cities*. From the air he can cause even *reivers of ice* to descend, sufficient, not only to destroy our frail and tender bodies, but those regular fortifications which are deemed impregnable; turning them into the graves of those who seek and expect protection from them. How worthy is this tremendous Being of our *homage and reverence*? And yet men *hear* of his awful judgments, and sometimes *see* and *feel* them too, and continue *unreformed*. Even while they are *gnawing their tongues* through the extremity of pain and anguish, it is possible, that as well as these wounded tongues will give them leave, they may *blaspheme the God of heaven*, and utter their impatient rage and malice against him. The *infernal regions* resound with diabolical language; and O, that so many parts of this world bore no resemblance to them. But let the outrage of the wicked be what it may, God, when he enters into judgment, will

[See ver. 10.] This is introductory to the fall of the papal kingdom; and the expressions, ver. 20, may only signify, that great numbers should fall by these

awful judgments, which were only introductory to the full and complete ruin afterwards described.

will overcome. And, though the rage of his enemies engages them to *gather themselves together*, the event will prove, that it is only as *sheep for the slaughter*. And, while they are acting in this with the utmost freedom, they are indeed assembled by him, 16 their own angry passions subserving the purposes of his righteous Providence.

Let us confide in his word, let us attend to his voice ; and, in spite of all our difficulties and dangers, let us do our endeavour, to secure the *blessedness* of that man, who *watcheth, and keepeth his garments* ; who is always on his guard against every surprize, which might expose him to *shame* in the presence of his Master, though he should come in ever so expected a manner, even *like a thief in the night*.

SECT. XX.

In order to let the author into the meaning of the seven vials, he sees a representation of the great harlot sitting upon a mysterious beast ; and hears her doomed to destruction by the Divine judgments. Rev. XVII. throughout.

REV. XVII. 1.

AND there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither : I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters ;

2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

REVELATION XVII. 1.

AND, when all this was done, one of the seven angels, who had been honoured with bearing the seven vials, the pouring forth of which I have just described, came and spake with me, saying to me, Come, [and] I will shew thee, to what this prophetic scene, which has passed before thy view, principally refers, even the judgment of the great harlot, that sitteth upon many waters, whom thou shalt now see ; and observe the terrible vengeance to which she is reserved, though so many people have been corrupted by her, and though she has tyrannized over them in so insolent and imperious a manner : Even of her *with whom the kings of the earth have so long committed fornication*, (compare Isa. xxiii. 17,) and their subjects have been debauched with them ; so that, in a manner, *all the inhabitants of the earth have been drunk with the wine of her whoredom*, as if they had taken some powerful provocative, to make them doat upon her, and sacrifice every dictate of religion, and reason, and even common sense, to those alluring arts with which she has been tempting

SECT.
XX.Rev.
XVII. 1.

SEPT.
XX.
REV.
XVII.

tempting them. *And he brought me in the spirit into the wilderness; and I saw a woman, of an impudent front, and a most imperious and cruel appearance, sitting upon a scarlet beast, fierce and savage; and the beast had gaudy trappings of embroidery upon it, full of blasphemous names, ascribing to itself, and the harlot upon it, properties and glories which belong to God alone; and having also, like the beast which I saw before, (chap. xiii. 1.) seven heads and ten horns, referring to the hills on which the city, designed by this harlot stood, and the number of kingdoms subject to its government. And the charms of her person, such as they were, were set off with all the gorgenus ornaments of the most splendid dress: for the woman was clothed with purple and scarlet, and adorned with gold, and precious stones, and pearls; having also a golden cup in her hand full of that inflaming mixture, by which those who drank of it, were instigated to all the abominations and pollutions of her dissolute and abandoned whoredom, that is, those idolatrous practices, which the society of men represented by this infamous woman, had carried to so shameful height. (Compare Jer. li. 7.) But, that she might appear in my eyes as a criminal, marked out by God for speedy and dreadful execution, [she had] upon her forehead [her] name, her titles and crimes, written; and the first word was MYSTERY: the great mystery of iniquity, abetted by all the fraud and artifice which can be conceived, is represented by this woman: after which followed these words, **BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH**, the most impudent strumpet that ever appeared upon earth, and the greatest procurer of lewdness that ever polluted the face of it. And I saw the woman drunk; and was informed, that it was with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; of which she had gorged vast quantities, and for which she still thirsted impatiently; and seemed to cast her greedy eyes around, as longing for renewed draughts of it. And I wondered, when I saw her, with great amazement*, as I knew she*

So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness, and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arrayed in purple, and scarlet colour, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration,

* *Amazement*] This seems a plain argument, that the society referred to was Christian; for it had been no great won-

der, that a heathen power should persecute.

b *The*

SECT.

XX.

Rev.

XVII. 6.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world,) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings: five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that

she represented a society that would call itself Christian, and pretend a regard for Jesus and his saints, in the midst of all this cruel persecution of them; and also, for the honour of God amidst all these unequalled idolatries and immoralities. *And the angel said unto me, Why dost thou wonder? Hast thou not thyself had intimation of this antichristian sect, and this great apostacy? I will tell thee the secret of the whole matter; the mystery of the woman, and of the beast which carries her, which hath, as thou seest, the seven heads, and the ten horns. The beast which thou formerly sawest, was, and is, not^b; that is, God will cut short its reign, and he will indeed ascend, as has been represented, out of the bottomless pit, and go suddenly into destruction; and the inhabitants of the earth, (whose names, as I said, are not written in the book of life, from the foundation of the world,) shall wonder, seeing the beast, who for a little while, was, and is not; that is, he shall quickly be overthrown, though he is to appear for a while and perform such great wonders.—Here [is] a proof of the understanding that hath wisdom; for the utmost sagacity may here be put to the trial. But this I will observe, to guide the enquiring mind, and I am commissioned by God to give this key to the mystery, that the seven heads of the beast are seven mountains, on which that celebrated city is built, on which the infamous woman I have been describing, sitteth. And there are seven kings, or forms of government^c, five of them are fallen, and one is, [and] the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must endure for a little time, but will soon be destroyed and swallowed up. And the beast, of whom I said, that he was, and is not, he is the eighth, and he is of the seven^d; he ariseth out of the remainders of this people, but*

^b *The beast—was, and is not*] This seems to intimate, that the persecuting power of Pagan Rome, should for a while revive in Papal Rome, and, ere long, be utterly destroyed.

^c *Seven—Forms of Government.*] Some reckon these to be the Roman kings, consuls, dictators, decemvirs, military tribunes, emperors, and popes. But I much question, whether this be a right solution—Mr. Lowman supposes here is an intimation, that the seventh form of government was not to begin till the imperial power was

destroyed. And this last may, on some account, be called the seventh, and for other reasons, the eighth head of government, as the exarchate of Ravenna was in some sense, a new form of government, and yet hardly so distinct and proper a form, as to be reckoned for a different head. Compare chap. xii. 6. note d.

^d *He is the eighth, &c.*] Mr. Fleming understands this of the government of the Ostrogoths in Rome; who, though they were the seventh head in number, yet were not

- but at length goes into destruction, as the rest, though his reign shall be so much longer than any of his predecessors. *And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, or kingdoms, which shall arise out of the ruin of the former state, and shall all, for a while, be dependent upon, and subject to the beast; they have not, indeed, yet received their kingdom, but they shall receive authority from the beast as kings, though greatly under his limitation and control, to reign for one hour, for a certain limited time.*
- 13 And however these princes may be disunited in their political interests, which may, in some respects, contradict each other, yet, with respect to their unhappy prejudices in religion, and idolatrous inclinations, there shall be a surprising agreement between them; and they *have one mind and sentiment in that respect, and shall consent to deliver over their own power and authority to the beast, to be employed by him for the advancement of his interest; so that they shall act but as his viceroys, even in their own territories. These also shall presume to make war with the Lamb; and the consequence may easily be conjectured, for the Lamb, who bears such magnificent titles, and who hath already triumphed over all the powers of hell, shall undoubtedly overcome them, and triumph over them; for he is indeed, (what some vain mortals have impiously and arrogantly called themselves,) Lord of Lords, and King of Kings, the supreme Ruler of all governors and magistrates upon the face of the earth, to whom dominion over them belongs, by the strictest and most unalienable right; and those that are with him, and have the honour to fight under his banner, [are] not only called to arm themselves in this glorious cause, but chosen to act in the service*

that was, and is not, even he is the eighth and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

11 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet, but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

12 These have one mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast

14 These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them; for he is Lord of Lords, and King of Kings; and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful.

vice

not of the men, that is, such as the *idol*, and the *idol*, because they were *idolaters*, whereas the others were *nations*. *Thus are the First Ten* (p. 106, 107). This exact prophecy, says he, is a great confirmation of the Divine authority of this book. Lombard's commentaries of the German Emperor, who was only titular king of Rome. See the preceding note.

c. *Called and chosen and faithful*. Here may very possibly be, as the ingenious author of the Christian warfare has represented,

in his learned and beautiful remarks on this text, a reference to the military custom of the Greeks, who used to call the people together when any expedition was designed, out of which there were some selected to serve in the action intended, who were *faithful* to their leader. (Compare 2 Pet. i. 10, note i.) But I can by no means suppose that this is the original idea to be annexed to the word *chosen* in scripture, any more than I can suppose the term called, always to signify united to a *few*; which is an idea another ingenious writer has endeavoured

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and shall burn her with fire;

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is

vice, and they are faithful to the engagements into which they enter. All these were the words of that angel who was commissioned to instruct me in the meaning of an appearance which had thrown me into such amazement. And he proceeded, and said further unto me, *The waters which thou sawest, on which the specious, but abandoned harlot sate, are people, and multitudes and nations, and tongues*, a vast multitude of different nations and languages, who shall consent for a long time, to those degenerate forms of religion which she shall introduce. And the ten horns which thou sawest on the savage beast, these are the kingdoms subject to her. But the princes of them shall at length turn against her, so that she shall, as it were, be thrown down, and gored by the creature that has so long tamely and patiently carried her; for they shall hate the harlot, and make her desolate and naked; they shall strip her of all those ornaments which they have profusely lavished away upon her; and they shall be ready, as it were, in the transport of their indignation and zeal, to eat her very flesh, and shall burn her with fire. They shall be bent upon destroying their stupid idolatry, and all the monuments of it, and turn their keenest resentment upon the abettors and instruments of such cruel persecution as they have exercised: For God hath given it into their hearts, by a strong and powerful impression, to execute his counsel and sentence, and they shall agree in it, even to perform one purpose. And he hath left them under a fatal infatuation, in opposition to true policy, as well as virtue and religion, so as to give their kingdoms to the beast, till the words of God be fulfilled; and then their minds shall be turned, and their eyes opened, and they shall ruin this oppressive society more eagerly than they ever established it. And the woman which thou sawest, is the great imperial city,

SFCT.
XX.
Rev.
XVII. 15

endeavoured to lead his readers to affix to it. The truth is, both signify something much more general, though both may be applied, in particular cases, in the limited sense contended for. Compare Isa. xxxiv. 2, 6, 7.

[Execute his sentence.] We render it to fulfil his will. Hence some have inferred, that it is the will of God, that heretics should be cut off. But it is sufficiently

known to what extremities people are driven to find any thing that looks like an argument for persecution in the New Testament, when they are forced to have recourse to a text for this purpose, which only proves that God had, in his wise and holy counsel, determined that the idolatrous and persecuting antichristian power should be destroyed.

SEPT. city, that ruleth over the kings of the earth, and is that great city,
 XX. now disposes of their crowns at her pleasure, which reigneth over
 the kings of the earth.
 EZEK. none daring to make war against her.
 XVII. 18

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. EASILY might we have apprehended, that *Rome* had been here
 3, is designed, though it had not been so particularly described by its
 situation on seven hills, or by the empire it then possessed *over all*
the quarters of the world. The *harlot* might be sufficiently dis-
 1 distinguished by her name of *blasphemy*, by her *cup of enchantment*,
 2 by her title, *MESTERY*, *BABYLON THE GREAT, THE*
 4, *MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF*
THE EARTH. Yea, she might be known by this single charac-
 6 ter, of having made herself drunk with the blood of the saints, and
 with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And is it *heathen Rome*, to
 whom these characters are most remarkably applicable? The
 apostle would not then have wondered with so great admiration, that
 idolatry and persecution should prevail, where the former had rag-
 ed for so many ages, and the latter almost from the very beginning
 of Christianity; and to such a degree. In the days of *Nero*, who,
 as their own *history* tells us, had *thirty years* before this, added
mockeries and insults to torment, that *Christians* were dressed up
 in the skins of wild beasts, and so exposed to be worried on the
theatre: a method which hath, indeed, figuratively speaking, been
 every where practised, and must be practised, if *Christianity* is to
 be made ridiculous, or odious. But the true occasion of the apos-
 17 tic's astonishment was, that *Rome* professing *Christianity*, *Rome*
 setting up for the head of the *Christian world*, should have emulat-
 ed and exceeded any *Pagan city*, and even itself in its *Pagan*
state, in its idolatries, and in its cruelties. And this is a fact in-
 deed wonderful. But these are the secret counsels of God, even
 those counsels which are to us unsearchable. Nevertheless, the
 12 beauty and glory of them shall at length be apparent. The kings
 of the earth, though like *Nebuchadnezzar*. (Isa. x. 7.) they meant
 to nil, are now fulfilling the plan of Divine Providence; a plan
 that shall at length appear wise and harmonious, though the per-
 mission of all those atrocities and horrors make a part of it. And
 when the words of God are fulfilled, they who with one mind have
 19 given their power and strength to the beast, in order to support the
 harlot, shall be unanimous in hating her, and making her de-
 solate and naked, shall be ready to devour her flesh, and consume
 14 her in her own fires. Pierce and savage as the beast may at present
 appear, its war with the Lamb shall be utterly in vain; for the Lamb
 is always victorious, and will assert his grand and imperial titles,
 LORD

LORD OF LORDS, AND KING OF KINGS. May we all list under his banner ; May we not only be called but chosen and faithful, faithful even to death ; since all the rage of men, and Ver. multitudes, and nations, and tongues, if it were united against us, 15 could not prevent his giving us a crown of victory, and a part in his everlasting triumphs.

SECT. XXI.

A sublime description of the fall of Babylon, and an account of the lamentation of her friends and merchants over her. Rev. XVIII. throughout.

Rev. XVIII. 1.

AND after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power ; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice saying, Babylon the great is fallen is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

3 For all nations have drank of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another

REVELATION XVIII. 1.

AND after this, I saw an angel descending from heaven, who had, in his countenance and appearance, the signatures of great power ; and the earth was enlightened with his glory which spread a vivid lustre all around him, reflected from every neighbouring object. **AND** 2

he cried with great might [and] a loud voice of triumphant joy, in the words of Isaiah, (chap. xxi. 9;) saying, *It is fallen, it is fallen, even Babylon the great ; and what was prophesied concerning the celebrated seat of the Chaldean empire, shall presently be verified in this detested city : so that we may already say, it is become the habitation of demons, (as desolate places were reputed to be,) and the hold of every unclean spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird ; (Isa. xiii. 21 ; Jer. i. 39 : li. 37.) Because she hath caused all the nations to drink of the intoxicating and inflaming wine of her raging and insatiable whoredom ; and all the kings of the earth have committed whoredom with her, and the merchants of the earth have traded with her, and been enriched by the abundance of her luxuries^b. And I then heard another voice 4* from heaven, saying to the remainder of faithful souls

SECT.
XXI.

Rev.
XVIII.1.

a *Is fallen.*] This is still the language of prophecy, expressing what shall certainly and speedily come to pass ; for verse the fourth shows ; that in strictness of speech, Babylon was yet to be considered as standing.

^b *Luxuries.*] The word *generous*, seems to signify such luxury of diet as cherishes wantonness, and disposes to acts of un-

chastity, and may well represent the manner in which the Roman clergy have pampered themselves, and the effects it has produced, to the scandal of the Christian profession, in the eyes of all the world, as well as the idolatries which have been established and maintained to support that luxury. Compare 1 Tim. v. 11, and the note there.

- SOULS. XXI.
 FROM
 XVIII. 4.
- souls which were yet in Babylon, *Come ye out from the midst of her, O my people, separate yourselves from this accursed society, that ye may not be partakers with her in her sins*, which are so polluting and ensnaring; and *that ye may not, by a fatal consequence, partake of her plagues too*, which those who share her sins must expect to share, whatever their former profession may have been. *Because her sins have followed up to heaven with their clamours, and her unrighteous actions are come up in remembrance before that God, who will not fail severely to visit her for them.* And now, *O my people, give her, as she also has given to you, and recompence to her double, according to her works*; for God will plead your cause for you: *in the cup of terror, which she has mingled for those whom she was not able to seduce and debauch, mingle her a double quantity of these poisonous ingredients:*
- In full proportion to the degree in which she hath for so many ages, made ostentation of her glory and lived in luxury, inflict upon her torment and grief, and vengeance; because she has audaciously said in her heart, while the Divine threatenings have been sounding in her very ears, I sit as a queen, enthroned above the reach of adversity, and I am not a desolate widow, as it hath been pretended I should be; and I shall not see sorrow.* (Compare Isa. xlvii. 7, 8.) *Therefore in one day shall her plagues come upon her, even upon this impious and abominable city, death and mourning and famine, which shall all unite their efforts against her, and she shall be burnt with fire; for strong is the Lord God who judges her; and all her boasted strength will, in his*
- presence, be weakness and confusion.* And the other *kings of the earth, who shall not be active in the execution before described, but still retain their affection for her, even the remainder of those, who have committed fornication, and lived in luxury with her, shall mourn over her, and lament for her, when they shall see the flames of wrath kindle about her, and the smoke of her burning, like that of Sodom in the day of its conflagration, ascending up to heaven.*
- They shall see it, standing afar off for fear of her torment, saying, Woe, woe, and alas, O thou great city, Babylon, the strong city? well may we lament over thee; for in one hour thy judgment is come, and thy desolation is as sudden*

their voice from heaven saying, Come out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues:

4 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

5 Reward her even as she hath despised you, and as she hath hated her God, according to her works: for she hath mingled wine in the cup which she hath filled, and she shall drink of it.

6 How much she hath glorified herself, and lived delicately, so much torment and sorrow give thou her: for she hath said in her heart, I sit as a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived delicately with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning.

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, they shall say, Woe, woe, and alas, O thou great city, Babylon, that mighty city! for in one hour is thy judgment come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:

12 The merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk and scarlet, and all thyne wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,

13 And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men,

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing.

as it is dreadful and entire. *And the merchants of the earth, those who enriched themselves by her expensive magnificence, shall wail and lament over her,* out of a regard to their own interest, if not to hers; *because no one any longer shall buy their wares,* with which they had loaded so many gallant vessels that carried on a traffic with her: They shall lament, that so noble a vend for all the delicacies of a pompous and luxurious life, is lost: and that they can no longer thus dispose of *the ladings of gold, and silver, and every precious stone, and pearls and of the fine linen of Egypt, and the purple of Sidon, and the silk of the eastern countries, and the scarlet, and every odoriferous wood,* that the plantations of Arabia, or the coast of India, could boast; *and every curiously wrought vessel of ivory, and every vessel of most precious wood,* in value exceeding even that, *and all the utensils of brass, and of iron, and of marble,* with which the houses of the rich, and of the great, have been furnished. No longer shall they there find a market, for rich and fragrant commodities; for *cinnamon, and perfume, and myrrh and incense,* nor for the more necessary and important supplies of *wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and kine, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves:* and their yet more infamous traffic for the lives, and the very souls of men, which they sacrificed to their avarice, and their treachery, shall cease. *And thou, O Babylon, shall join thy cry with theirs; for all the fruits, which thy soul desired, and for which alone thy degenerate nature had any remaining relish, are gone from thee, and all, thy delicious and splendid things are departed from thee; and the loss is final as well as entire; for thou shalt never find them any more. I repeat it again, the merchants of all these [commodities,] who were enriched by her, shall stand afar off, in a mixture of terror and grief, for fear of her torment, weeping, and mourning,* but absolute-

SECT.
XXI.

Rev.
XVIII.

11

12

13

14

15

c Slaves.] The Greek word *παῖδες* has plainly this signification. Compare Tobit x. 9.

d Weeping and mourning.] There is in all this so evident a reference to the lamentation over Tyre, described by Ezekiel, (chap. xxvii.) that I suppose few readers can fail to take notice of it. Comp.

Isa. xliii. 1, 7, 14, & sim. See how interpreted many of these passages referring to the circumstances of Tyre's worship, and the trade of their merchants; verse 11, to the relics, pardons and indulgencies; verse 12, to their images and the furniture of their churches and chapels, and the variety of rich dresses.

ly incapable of giving her any relief, smiting
— — — — — their breasts, *And saying, Alas, alas, for
the great, elegant, and magnificent city, that
was clothed with fine linen, and purple, and
scarlet, and adorned with gold, and precious
stones, and pearls! For, who can sufficiently
lament this sad instance of the uncertainty of all
human things, when he sees, that, in one hour,
all these great riches are laid waste, and made
desolate!* And this sad scene was represented to
me in a lively vision; and every pilot, and every
one of the ship's company, and the mariners, and
all that bestow their labour upon the sea, stood
off from the flames of the burning city,
15 And cried, when they saw the smoke of her burn-
ing ascend in such thick columns to heaven,
*What city is like to the great city, so long un-
equalled in its glory, and now in its ruin?*
17 And they seemed like men in the greatest agony
of distress, and cast dust upon their heads, and
cried, weeping, and mourning, saying, *Alas,
alas, for the great city, by whose magnificent
opulence, arising from her profusion, and ele-
gance, and grandeur, all that had ships in the
sea were enriched, so that she alone was suffi-
cient, as it were, to maintain the merchandise
of the world; for she is made desolate in one
hour, to a degree that we should have imagined
utterly impossible.*

20 But while they were thus lamenting their own
loss and her's, I was affected in another manner,
and could not forbear crying out in my own
heart, *Rejoice over her, O thou just avenging
heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets,* who
look down from your abodes of glory, on so
wonderful and interesting a scene. Take your
part in the sacred triumph; for on your ac-
count, God has pronounced sentence upon her;
he hath adjudged her to righteous destruction,
for her opposition to his kingdom, and for the
injuries done to you, who, with ardent and un-
wearied zeal, endeavoured to establish and
promote it.

And,

16 And saying, A-
las, alas, that great city,
that was clothed in
fine linen, and purple,
and scarlet, and deck-
ed with gold and pre-
cious stones and pearls

17 For in one hour
so great riches are come
to nought. And every
ship-master, and all
the company in ships,
and sailors, and as
many as trade by sea,
stood afar off.

18 And cried when
they saw the smoke of
her burning, saying,
What city is like unto
this great city?

19 And they cast
dust on their heads,
and cried, weeping and
wailing, saying, Alas,
alas, that great city,
wherein were made
rich all that had ships
in the sea, by reason
of her castles! for
in one hour is she
made desolate.

20 Rejoice over her,
thou heaven, and ye
holy apostles, and pro-
phets; for thou hast
avenged you on her.

their images and priests; verse 12, to the
incense used at their altars; verse 14, to
the musical instruments used in their wor-
ship; and verse 15, to the vast numbers
of lamps burning before their idolatrous
altars, and the like—but it seems rather
to centre in one view, the loss of every

thing valuable and desirable, and the utter
ruin of this magnificent city.

[*Spanish*.] Nothing can be more
deceitful than this *temple*: in which the
apostles, though honoured in Rome by so
many *republican* and idolatrous rites,
are nevertheless, called upon to rejoice in
her destruction.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers and musicians and of pipers and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee; and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee;

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee; and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee; for thy merchants were the great men of the earth; for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints and of all that were slain upon the earth.

And, as soon as I had uttered this in correspondence to the scene which had been represented of old, with relation to the great seat of the Chaldean empire, (Jerem. li. 64,) a strong angel took a stone, like a great millstone; and, with a vigorous and rapid motion, hurled it into the sea, saying, Thus shall Babylon the great city, unequal as the production of this event may seem to any human power, be violently hurled away by the almighty arm of an avenging God, and sink into the depths of destruction; so that it shall never be found any more. And the harmonious sound of harpers, and other musicians, and those who sound the flute, and the trumpet, shall no more be heard in thee, and every artificer of every curious trade, employed for the accommodations and ornaments of life, shall no more be found in thee, O Babylon, nor shall the noise of the millstone be heard in thee any more, even to prepare bread for the meanest inhabitant. And the light of a lamp shall no more be seen in thee, to gild thy dark night with its cheerful rays; and the voice of the bridegroom and the bride, rejoicing in their new relation, and celebrating the nuptial feast, shall be heard in thee no more; because thy merchants were grandees of the earth, and maintained so shameful a traffic by every dishonest art, and because all the nations were deceived by thy sorceries, and poisoned by thy pernicious practices. And to complete her guilt, as Babylon of old had grown great by the slaughter of Israel, so in her, who has been here represented, was found the blood of the prophets, and of the saints of God, even of all those who were slain upon the earth; for this wicked city exceeded all the rest of the world in cruelties, and might boast in the multitudes, of the martyrs she had slain, beyond all that had ever gone before her, in such detestable persecutions; and this hath filled up the measure of her iniquities, and plunged her into this recoverable ruin.

IMPROVE-

[Hurled away.] This the original words *ορμησάτω βλήθησθαι* import; as if falling by its own weight, its fall would not have been rapid enough. From hence Dr. Thomas Burnet infers, in his *Theory of the Earth*, that Rome, being first fired,

(compare Dan. vii. 11,) will be swallowed up in a lake of fire and brimstone, as Sodom and Gomorrah were. *Burn. Theo.* Vol. II. p. 125. Compare Rev. xix. 20. g Verse 22, 23.] Compare Jer. xxv. 10; xxxiii. 11; Ezek. xxvi. 13, & sim.

SE T.
XXI
Rev.
XVIII.

IMPROVEMENT.

From the particular detail which is here given us, of the *various commodities* in which *Babylon* traded with its *merchants* we may surely take an incidental occasion to reflect upon the rich bounty of Divine Providence to the children of men, in giving them such a *variety* of good things, which tend not only to their necessary support, but their ornament and delight. To whatever pernicious purposes, vanity and luxury many abuse the *silver and the gold, and the gems and the pearls, the fine linen and silk, the purple and scarlet, the ivory and the marble, the cinnamon and the myrrh*, as well as the more important blessings of *wheat and oil, of kine, and sheep, and horses*, all are the gifts of God; and if wisely and properly used, may justly excite our thankfulness to him; and it is on ourselves, and not on him, that we are to charge it, if what should have been for *our welfare* becomes a *trap*, and our *treasures* be turned into *idols*. Nor is the wise disposition of Providence to be disregarded in causing many of these things to be the peculiar *products* of different countries, denying to some what he has given to the rest, that so *traffic and commerce* may be encouraged, and by it, society and intercourse extended among different nations, and provision made for that spread of *Divine knowledge*, which had in many instances been impossible, if human industry, quickened by necessity, and the prospect of gain, had not invented those *arts of navigation*, to which *Great Britain*, above all other nations, is so much indebted, and without which, indeed, our beautiful and fruitful island had been a desert, inaccessible to men.

But, though this *oblique* reflection may profitably be made, the *great object* to which we are directed by *this chapter*, is the certain and final *ruin of Babylon*, which, how highly soever exalted, how superbly soever adorned, how *luxuriously* soever regaled, shall *fall, shall fall as a millstone cast into the sea*. Strong is the Lord God who judgeth her, and it is impossible she can withstand the force of his omnipotent arm. Long has she, in a metaphorical sense, been the hold of every foul spirit, and the cage of every unclean and hateful bird: and God will make her so in another; even in a literal sense, when he shall appear to remember and punish these iniquities, which have reached unto heaven, among which, various and detestable as they have been, shedding the blood of the prophets and saints, must be reckoned as most enormous. Let no triumph of the *antichristian* powers, for the present, shake our faith in these most certain and undoubted prophecies, and let

let that charge never be forgotten, *Come forth from her, O my people, and be separate.*" Blessed be God, that a separation has been begun, that it has been so long supported, and that so many attempts to bring back God's *Israel* into captivity have been defeated. May the boundaries of the reformation be extended; may the purity of the reformed churches be more and more advanced, and all remainders of superstition, persecution, and imposition be taken away. And to conclude all, let those who are now living deliciously, and glorifying themselves in the forgetfulness of God, abusing the various gifts of his bounty to his dishonour, and saying in their hearts, that they shall see no sorrow, remember how suddenly their state may be changed: how quickly they may sink into the depths of misery, proportionable to the height of their abused prosperity; and experience a torment and sorrow, which will be doubly bitter in the remembrance of their former condition. Let such therefore, in whatever rank of life they are, according to the words of *Daniel* to the most illustrious king of *Babylon*, (*Daniel* iv. 27,) *Break off their sins by righteousness, and their iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor, if it may be a lengthening out of their tranquillity;* and give glory to God, before all their cheerful light be exchanged for darkness, and all the harmony of their music for weeping and wailing, groaning and lamentation for ever.

SECT.
XXI.

Ver.

4

7

6

23

9—15

SECT. XXII.

The triumphs of the heavenly host in the fall of Babylon are described, and further illustrated, by the view of an attack made by Christ and his army, on the beast, which ended in an entire victory over him. Rev. XIX. throughout.

Rev. XIX. 1.

AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying Alleluia; Salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgments;

REVELATION XIX. 1.

AND after these things, this affecting representation of the certain destruction of *Babylon*, as the seat of the antichristian kingdom, I heard the voice as of a great multitude in heaven who seemed to be triumphing on this occasion, saying, *Hallelujah*; let the name of *Jehovah*, the most high God, be ever praised and exalted. Let this great salvation, and all the glory and honour, which can arise from this, and all his other wonderful works and the power so amazingly displayed in them, be ascribed to the Lord our God. For his judgments [are] true and righteous, and we have lately seen a most glorious

SECT.
XXII.

Rev.
XIX. 1.

2

SAV. T. rious illustration of them; *for he hath judged the*
SALE *great harlot, who corrupted the whole earth with*
REV. *the contagion of her fornication, and he has*
MIN. 2 *awfully avenged the blood of his faithful servants*
and martyrs, which hath been [shed] so profuse-
ly by her cruel hand. And a second time, at
the conclusion of the hymn, they said Hallelu-
jah, and looking down upon her ruins, they
added, The smoke of her [torment] ascends for
ever and ever; and God is pursuing the impeni-
tent sinners he has destroyed in her, with far
more terrible vengeance in a future state, than
any they could endure while they continued in
the body. [Isa. XXXIV, 10.] And the twenty-
four elders, and the four animals so often men-
tioned before, who still appeared present, fell
down and worshipped God, who was represented
sitting upon the throne, saying, Amen Hallelu-
jah, so let it be: let universal Hallelujahs, and
everlasting praises, rise to thee, O thou ever-
adorable Jehovah, who art most worthy to re-
ceive them. And a voice came out from the
throne, which said, in my hearing, Now praise
our God in the most exalted strains of rapturous
devotion, all ye his servants, and ye that fear
him, both small and great, in your various ranks
and circumstances of life. Adore his great and
magnificent name, so highly exalted, and in
these scenes of wonder, so gloriously displayed.
6 And I heard [a sound] which was as the voice of
a great multitude, and loud as the voice of many
waters, when the waves of the sea are in a vio-
lent agitation, and like the voice of mighty thun-
derings, saying, Hallelujah, for the Lord God
Almighty, the omnipotent Jehovah, who is the
Author and Support of universal nature, reign-
eth, and is about to exalt his kingdom among
men to more visible splendour than it has ever
yet worn. And we will now, in an especial
manner, rejoice and exult in the greatest trans-
port of holy joy, and we will give glory to him,
because the marriage of the Lamb is come, and
his wife has prepared herself to meet him, being
adorned with all those ornaments, which are
most grateful in themselves, and most agreeable
to him. And he is going to espouse his church
with circumstances of the highest festivity and
solemnity. And it was given to her, that, in
token of her virgin-innocence and sanctity, she
should be clothed in pure linen, pure and resplen-
dent;

ments, for he hath
judged the great whore
which had corrupted the
earth with her fornication,
and hath avenged
the blood of his ser-
vants at her hand.

7 And when they
said, Alleluia. And
the voices rose up for
ever and ever.

8 And the four and
twenty elders, and
the four beasts, fell
down and worshipped
him that sat on the
throne, saying, Amen,
Alleluia.

9 And a voice came
out of the throne, say-
ing, Praise our God,
all ye his servants, and
ye that fear him, both
small and great.

10 And I heard as
it were the voice of a
great multitude, and
as the voice of many
waters, and as the
voice of mighty thun-
derings, saying, Al-
leluia for the Lord
God omnipotent reign-
eth.

11 Let us be glad and
rejoice, and give hon-
our to him: for the
marriage of the Lamb
is come, and his wife
hath made herself
ready.

12 And to her was
given, that she
should be arrayed in
fine

fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

9 And he said unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he said unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him. And he said unto me, See thou do it not; I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.

a *The righteous acts of the saints.*] So *δικαιοπραγία* evidently signifies; and, therefore, though I make no doubt but it is with regard to the obedience and righteousness of the Son of God, that *all our righteous acts* are accepted before God, and have accordingly referred to this doctrine in the paraphrase; yet I cannot suppose that these words have that reference which some have imagined, to the *imputation* of his righteousness to us. And I hope Christian divines will have the courage to speak with the scripture, even though it should be at the expence of their reputation for orthodoxy with some, who profess, ne-

dent; and the fine linen, that I speak of, is intended to signify *the righteous acts of the saints*^a, whereby they are adorned in the sight of God, and an evidence given of the sincerity of that faith which interests them in the merit of what their Lord has performed, to which they ultimately owe their acceptance before him. And⁹ he said to me, Write this down, as an important truth, in which all that read this book in future ages will be greatly concerned. *Happy [are] they who are invited* to be guests at the splendid marriage supper of the Lamb, which is now prepared, and shall accept the invitation, so as to partake of its blessings. And he said unto me, *These are the true words of God*, and are to be regarded by thee, and all that read them, as an oracle which he hath inspired. (Compare 2 Cor. xi. 2.)

And while he was speaking to me in this¹⁰ manner, over-awed by his majestic appearance, I fell before his feet, to pay homage to him. And he immediately interposed to prevent it, and said unto me, See [thou do it] not; for I am not worthy of such regard from thee, being a fellow-servant with thee, and with the rest of thy brethren^b, who resolutely and faithfully keep the testimony of Jesus. Pay thine homage, in such expressions of it, to God alone. I am now sent for the service of that religion to which you and your brethren are making such considerable sacrifices; for the Spirit of prophecy is the testimony of Jesus, and serves in a glorious manner, to confirm his Divine mission to all that know and duly observe the circumstances of it; and that which I now reveal to thee, makes a considerable article of the proof,

And

vertheless, to make scripture their standard.

b *With thy brethren.*] The expression in the Greek obliges me to give the word this turn: *συνδουλός σου και των αδελφών σου*. But Mr. Fleming understands it, *I am one of thy brethren*, which he thinks intimates that this was the departed spirit of an apostle; perhaps of St. Peter or St. Paul, or his own brother James, though not in a form to be known. And, on the same mistaken principle, he thinks the person speaking, chap. xxii. 9. might be the spirit of one of the prophets, perhaps Isaiah, or Ezekiel, or Daniel. *Flem. Christol. Vol. I. p. 81.*

SECT.

xxii.

Rev.

XIX. 8.

- And a glorious vision immediately followed this, for *I saw heaven opened*—and behold, and observe it with due attention, a *white horse* appeared, and he that sat upon it [was] called *Faithful and True*, being indeed no other than the person speaking of him elsewhere, as the Angel, the faithful and true Witness; and he judges, and makes war in righteousness, and not like the unjust conquerors of the earth, who are so ready to use their superior power to oppress and that fall under it. This was the glorious Prince, whose eyes [are] piercing as a flame of fire; and every dash [was] upon his head, having also a mysterious name written upon them, which no man knew but himself; to signify, that there are mysteries in his nature, and in the administration of his kingdom, which it is impossible for men to find out. And to express the irresistible power with which he triumphs over his enemies, and brings destruction upon them according to his pleasure, he [was] clothed in a garment dyed in blood; and his name is called, *The word of God*, the glorious and divine Person, whom I have elsewhere spoken of as in the beginning with God, and himself God, and the great Medium of Divine revelation in all ages.
- And the armies which are in heaven followed him, in token of being most willingly and entirely under his command, and they appeared riding on white horses, and themselves clothed in fine linen, white, and perfectly clean and pure, to denote their perfect innocence and righteousness. And he still retains this circumstance in the vision I at first saw of him, that there went out of his mouth a sharp sword, that with it he might smite the heathen; to signify the power of his word; and he shall govern them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the wine-press of the indignation and wrath of Almighty God, which was signified by the blood staining his garments; to intimate, that he shall subdue the proudest enemies with as much ease as men burst grapes by treading them under their feet.
- (Compare Isa. lxiii. 2, 3.) And he hath upon his garment, and his thigh, that is, upon the sword which hangs upon his thigh, a magnificent and exalted name written, even *KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS*, to signify his universal empire, over all the princes and potestates on earth, and in heaven.

11 And I saw him seated upon a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself.

13 And he was clothed with a vesture dyed in blood; and his name is called, The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth went a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

And

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God;

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together, to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him

And I saw a single angel, but one of great majesty and strength, detaching himself, as it were from the army in heaven, who followed the great leader of the Lord's host on their white horses: and he was seen by me *standing in the sun*; and to intimate the approaching slaughter and desolation which was so soon to come upon the enemies of the church, *he cried with a loud voice, saying to the eagles, and vultures, and all the other birds of prey, which were flying in the midst of heaven, Come and assemble yourselves to the supper of the great God; for he is about to make a splendid entertainment for you; That ye may eat the flesh of* 18 *mighty kings, and the flesh of famous commanders, who have led on their thousands to battle; and the flesh of the mighty soldiers, who have fought so courageously under their banners; and the flesh of warlike horses, that were advancing with so much intrepidity and rage to the battle; and the flesh of those who sate thereon, and were ready to trust to their strength or their speed; and the flesh of all the promiscuous multitude, freemen and slaves, both small and great, who shall fall down together in the dust, and pour out their souls in blood, leaving their mangled carcasses for your prey. (Compare* 19 *Ezek. xxxix. 17, 18.) And, to fulfil this awful decree of the great God, whose influence over all human affairs is supreme, and who knows how to work his own purposes, even by the greatest malice and rage of his enemies, I saw the beast appearing again, as at the head of the antichristian interest; and the kings of the earth, who supported him, and gave their power unto him; and I saw all their armies gathered together, to make war with him who sitteth upon the white horse, and with all his army, even the host of heaven, which I mentioned as with him: insensible of his superior power, and madly borne on to their own destruction, they marched their feeble forces against him, and all his celestial legions. And the issue was such as might be* 20 *expected; for the beast was taken captive, and with*

SECT.
xxii.

Rev.
XIX, 17.

c *Beast was taken*] What Brandt tells us, of the interpretation given by a divine of Heidelberg, to this text, as promising Frederick king of Bohemia, that he should take the emperor prisoner, and

that all the other potentates of Europe should be subjected to his sovereign will, appears too ridiculous to be canvassed; but I mention it, to engage men to be cautious how they apply any of these prophecies

SECT.

XXII.

REV.

XIX. 20.

with him also the false prophet, who had wrought so many fallacious signs before him, by which he had deceived those who received the mark of the beast, and those who worshipped his image; and they were bound fast in chains of Divine vengeance, and both of them were cast alive into the lake of fire which burnt so fiercely, enraged with stores of brimstone, to make the flames more durable, and more tormenting. 21 And the rest, who had so insolently and foolishly followed the banners of these accursed leaders, were slain with the sword that came out of the mouth of the great leader of the heavenly army, even him who sat on the white horse, described before, robed with light, and crowned with glory. And their carcases were left unburied on the field of battle; and all the birds of the air, according to the invitation which the angel had given them, were satiated with their flesh.

him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the towns were filled with their flesh.

IMPROVEMENT.

- LET us learn by what we have here been reading, to adore Ver. the Lord God Omnipotent, who reigneth over all, and who displays
1-3 the truth and righteousness of his judgments, in his vengeance on the enemies of his church, even when he inflicts on them a torment, the smoke of which rises up for ever and ever. In the certain assurance, that in due time he will plead his own cause, and rescue and exalt his people, let all his servants and people praise
5, 6 him, even all that fear him, both small and great, and labour to live that Divine life of gratitude, and joyful thanksgiving on earth, which may anticipate the pleasures and employments of the heavenly world. The time will at length come, when all of such a character shall celebrate the marriage-supper of the Lamb; yea, when the whole society shall appear in his presence as one chaste virgin, whom he has espoused to himself; and whom, with unutterable delight, he places in his more immediate view, not only as arrayed in robes of pure and shining linen, which is the righteousness of the saints, but as perfectly free from spot, or blemish, or any such thing.
7, 8

case to events which may happen to themselves, or those for whom they are immediately concerned. *London's Heat of the Reformation*, Vol. IV. p. 201—Compare chap. xvi. 13; and 17, xvi. note b, and c.

a Cast alive. See the note on chap. xv. 13. Dr. Clarke observes, it is only said of other sinners, they were cast into the lake; and this he supposes intimates a duration of painful men, severe in proportion to the faults of the punished; and

he thinks it illustrated by the words of Moses, concerning Korah and his company, *Numbers* xvi. 33. *For these men do the common death of all men, as if they be cast alive into the bottom of all men, then the Lord hath not and me*, intimating, that there would be as much difference in their punishment, as between being executed in the common way, and swallowed up with an earthquake. *Clarke's Par. Sermon*. Vol. I. p. 406, 407.

thing. He will admit them all to feast in his own presence; yea, to dwell for ever with him; so shall we ever be with the Lord. These are the true sayings of God. And though a consciousness of our own utter unworthiness of such honours might be ready to detract from the credibility of these Divine assurances, or at least prevent us from giving so clear an assent to them, as we might otherwise do, yet let God be true, and every man a liar.

And in the mean time, in the mingled scenes of adversity and prosperity, which attend the Israel of God, let us direct our believing eyes to him, who is faithful and true; to him, who both administers justice, and wages war in righteousness. Let us reverence his penetrating eyes, which are like a flame of fire. Let us rejoice in the diadems placed upon his head, to signify the extent of his dominion; and read with awe the inscription upon his vesture, and his thigh, The word of God, the King of kings and the Lord of lords. As such let us pay our homage to him; and let the favour of lords, and kings, be as nothing to us, where his favour or his honour is concerned. The proudest of earthly potentates oppose his dominion in vain; in vain do they marshal their captains, and their mighty men: vain is the strength of horses, and of them that sit thereon, and the combinations of bond and free, though Satan himself abet their rebellion, and inspire them with subtilty, and arm them with rage: their subtilty shall be defeated, their rage shall be repelled. The sword of the Lord shall devour them. The birds of prey shall at his pleasure be feasted with their carcasses; and the sad catastrophe of their bodies shall be only an imperfect emblem of the anguish and misery of their spirits, when plunged with the evil spirit that deceived them, they sink deep into the lake that burns for ever, and feel the terrors of the second death. Be wise now therefore. O ye kings, and be instructed, ye judges of the earth, serve the Lord with fear; and sensible of his uncontrollable dominion, and your own weakness and imperfection, even while ye rejoice before him, rejoice with trembling. (Psal. ii. 10, 11.)

SECT. XXIII.

The binding of Satan for a thousand years, during which the gospel is greatly to prevail; with a view of the destruction of the enemies of Christ, upon their making their last attempt against his church; and of the universal judgment. Rev. XX. throughout.

Rev. XX. 1.

AND I saw an angel
come down from
heaven

REVELATION XX. 1.

THUS the beast was conquered and taken; but the dragon yet remained at liberty.

And

SECT.
XXIII.

Rev.
XX. 1.

586-587.
2 xiii.
How.
226. 2.

And that I might also be informed as to his doom, *I saw an angel descending from heaven, who had the key of the bottomless pit, and he had also a great chain in his hand: And he advanced with the intrepidity of one who feared no resistance; and laid hold on the dragon, dreadful as he was; even that old serpent who is called the devil, from being the great false accuser; and Satan, as being the great adversary both of God and man; and he bound him for the space of 3 a thousand years. And, having opened the door with the key that he bore, he cast him into the abyss, and shut him down, and set a seal upon him, to signify, that none should break open the door; that he might not deceive the nations any more, for the time above-mentioned, that is, till a thousand years were accomplished, and then he must be loosed again for a little time, and make his last effort against the cause of God, and the 4 kingdom of his Son Jesus Christ. And after this, I saw thrones placed, and they sat upon them, and a power of judgment was given to them, and the souls of them who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the word of God, and who had not worshipped the beast nor his image, when his cause was so triumphant, and who bravely opposed the torrent of prevailing degeneracy, so that they had not received his mark in their foreheads, and upon their hands, when it was so furiously urged upon all, these appeared to rise in triumph, and they*

heaven having the key of the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years.

3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should not deceive the nations any more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither had received his mark, or in their hands, or in their foreheads, and they lived and reigned with

a *I thought good*. I think we must despair of being able to interpret any passage of scripture upon the plausible principle of reasoning, if this does not signify, that there shall be such a period as this, in which Satan shall be remarkably restrained, and the Christian interest shall prevail. But whether the thousand years are here to be taken literally, or in most probable, or whether some, or elsewhere, such day is put for a year, and consequently, the whole period be ten thousand years, I will not pretend to determine. This thought has been very lately suggested by an anonymous and worthy person, who tells, I should not, intended the period of Christianity; though I am very apprehensive, he has failed in some of the reasoning, when he has endeavored to prove this point. See Dr. Whitby's *Lectures on the Millennium*, where he shows at large, that this whole passage is the most applicable to the prophetic style, especially in this

book. And verse 4, may only intimate that the *spirits* of the martyrs seem to live again, in those whom God should raise up. Compare Luke xxvii. 1, 14, Rev. vi. 11, 12, Rom. vi. 9. This interpretation is illustrated and confirmed also by Mr. Freeman. So that the seventh *thousand*, or 7000 years, from the creation of the world, is to be a kind of Sabbath. *Commons of Great Britain*, v. 11, and *Widdowson on Revelation*, p. 11, 216.

5 *The souls of them who had been beheaded*. Dr. Whitby, not exactly, thinks that it denotes expressly, to signify that the resurrection of their bodies. (See Mr. Thompson's *Millennium*, chap. 10.) Mr. Fleming observing, it is not elsewhere, that their souls were actually living before, and hence, he thinks, must be put for *living from the dead*, because it is said, *the rest of the dead shall not rise till a thousand years*. *Thom. Christ. Vo.* 1, 11, p. 57.

with Christ a thousand years.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again, until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.

7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison.

8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the four quarters

they lived and reigned with Christ, whose cause, during this time, was prosperous and flourishing, even for a whole thousand years : But this was peculiar to this holy remnant : for as to the rest of the dead, they revived not till the thousand years were accomplished^a ; so that this [was] the first resurrection. Eminently 6 happy and holy [is] he, who has a part in the first resurrection I have been describing ; it is a singular felicity and high token of the degree, in which God, the supreme Standard and Judge of moral rectitude and holiness, approves his character : on such the second death, we before described with so many dreadful circumstances, as the portion of the wicked, shall have no degree of power^e, nor shall any of its terrible forerunners, in the execution of Divine wrath upon his enemies ; but they shall be the priests of God, and of Christ ; and they shall not only be afterwards admitted to a kingdom of eternal glory, but shall reign with him a thousand years, partaking in the triumph of his kingdom upon earth. And when the thousand years, before 7 described, shall be accomplished, then Satan shall for a certain time, be loosed from his confinement, to give the last proof of his malice against Christ and his saints. And he shall go 8 forth to deceive the nations, who are in the four distant corners of the earth^f, and shall prevail against

SECT.
xxiii.

Rev.
XX. 5.

c They lived and reigned with Christ.] This is the chief text on which Mr. Fleming builds his doctrine of the first resurrection ; when, he supposes, those who have died for the testimony of Jesus, and other most excellent saints, shall be raised from the dead ; not, (he imagines,) to live upon earth, but to live a thousand years with Christ in heaven ; enjoying a blessedness nearly approaching, if not altogether equal, to that which good men are to enjoy after the general resurrection ; while the rest have only the common blessing of the separate state, during this period ; and, even after the resurrection, shall have only inferior degrees of glory, to what these first fruits of the resurrection shall for ever possess. *Flem. Christol.* Vol. II. p. 42.

d The rest of the dead, &c.] This has been urged to prove, that a proper resurrection is here spoken of ; but I much doubt the justness of the conclusion.—Such expressions may, sometimes, be thrown in to promote that obscurity, which

seemed, upon the whole, convenient in such a series of prophecy. Compare chap. xxi. 17.

e On such the second death shall have no power.] Mr. Fleming considers this as an intimation, that the second death will have some power to terrify, though only for a little while, those good men, who shall not have their share in the first resurrection. See his *Christol.* Vol. II. p. 45. But the notion appears to me very absurd, and ill to agree with the representation which scripture gives of the universal judgment, as a day of unmingled joy and triumph to all the righteous.

f The four corners of the earth.] As it is most certainly known from the most convincing arguments, and from repeated experience, that the earth is of a spherical form, it is certain, that by the four corners of the earth, we are to understand the nations which lay at the greatest distance from the city of the saints ; which, I suppose, does here especially signify Jerusalem. And we may suppose, that those who

live

SECT.

XXIII.

Ezek.

XX. 8.

against them, so that they shall engage in a vain and fatal enterprize, for the overthrow of what God has determined for ever to establish—*even Gog and Magog*, as the prophecy of Ezekiel, (chapters xxxvii., xxxix.) stiles the enemies of God's people: and Satan shall succeed in his attempts to *gather them together in war*; even an army, *whose number [is] like the sand of the sea*.

- 9 Accordingly I beheld them in vision, as drawn forth in order of battle, *and saw, that they went up over the breadth of the earth*; so that they seemed to cover the face of it from north to south, *and then surrounded the camp of the saints and Jerusalem, the beloved city*, in which they dwelt; *and it seemed at first in imminent danger*, but it was not long before it was remarkably delivered; *for fire came down from God out of heaven*, at once, *and devoured them*, so that there were no more remainders of them to be seen; but they, and all their dreadful artillery, perished and disappeared, as if they had never existed. [Compare Ezek. xxxviii. 22.] *And then the devil, who had deceived them*, came in for his share of that punishment, which had long before been inflicted upon many of his accomplices, and *was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone*, where, as I before said, *the beast and the false prophet [were]*, and there they shall be tormented together day and night, for ages of ages, for ever and ever, without any hope of release or respite.

- 11 And, after this, *I saw a great white and splendid throne*, which shone with a glory scarce to be supported, *and yet*, mine eye being divinely strengthened for that purpose, I beheld *him who sat thereon, from whose majestic face*, when he came on this solemn and tremendous occasion, *earth and heaven fled away*,
and

quarters of the earth, *Gog and Magog*, to gather them together to battle; the number of warriors as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up over the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

live in that situation, shall be lost instructed in the gospel, and so capable of being most easily engaged to rise up against it. Compare chap. vii. 1. and paraphrase—*By Gog and Magog*, many understand the Scythians, and other northern nations, whom the devil will stir up to assault the people of God.

[*For ages of ages*: *for ever and ever*, &c.] This is the most strong rendering of these words; but it is certain that no argument can be drawn from hence against the eternity of future punishment, for no phrase can more strongly express a proper eternity than this.

[*A great white throne*.] It has been observed, that this judgment-seat has been represented by a throne, to show that there can be no appeal from it; a white throne, to signify the bright glory, the unspotted mercy, and inflexible justice of him who sits upon it.

[*From whose face earth and heaven fled away*, &c.] Mr. Blackwall compares this description with a celebrated passage in Homer, in which Jupiter is described as sitting on his throne, and asserts its great superiority, though its majesty renders the majesty less observable to com-

MOO

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

and there was found no place for them, in which they might continue ^k. And I saw the dead, of all ranks and orders, small and great, rich and poor, princes and people, in one grand assembly, which knew no more of those distinctions, once so much regarded, standing before God, to receive their final doom from him; to intimate, that the last judgment should quickly follow the wonderful events which had been represented to me before. And the books were opened, which contained the records of the Divine omniscience on the one hand, and, on the other, the law and the gospel, which were the rule whereby those who stood before him were to be judged. And another book was opened, distinct from these, which is [the book] of life, in which were registered the names of all those happy persons, who, according to the tenor of the Divine declarations to men, should be the inhabitants of the heavenly Jerusalem, and live with God for ever, in the enjoyment of felicity and glory. And the dead were all impartially judged out of the things written in the books, and in a manner agreeable to the tenor of their according to their works, as they had been agreeable or disagreeable to the discoveries which God had made to them of his will for the rule of their actions. And, that none might be ¹³ exempt from coming into judgment, I perceived that the resurrection extended also to the sea, which gave up the dead that were in it; and death, and the unseen world, and separate state, in all their extensive domains, gave up the dead that were in them, all that death had swallowed up, and Hades received; and they were judged, as I said before, every one according to their works. And I saw, in the vision, ¹⁴ emblematical persons, who seemed to preside over the regions of death and Hades, or the separate state; and, to signify that human souls should be no more separated from the bodies, to

SECT.
xxiii.
Rev.
XX. 12.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake

mon readers. "It is so plain, says he, that it does not need, so majestic and grand that it exceeds, commentary and paraphrase." See his Sacred Class. Vol. I. p. 329.

^k There was found no place for them.] Hence Mr. Whiston infers, that at the consummation of all things, and the final judgment, the earth will desert its present

station, and be no more found among the planetary chorus. Whist. Theor. p. 282. But I cannot think this description intended to teach any astronomical niceties; it seems only to intimate that all nature was thrown into strong commotion, as if it were incapable of sustaining the majestic presence that appeared.

1 Death

ERRATA.
NAMES.
Page.
 XX. 16. to which they were now united, these persons, as
 it appeared, *were cast into the lake of fire*, which
 I have before described, and of which I said, that
this is the second death. And as the register,
 which God, in pursuance of his counsels of
 everlasting love, had kept of those, whom it
 was his glorious purpose, agreeable to the tenor
 of his gospel, to save, was complete, I saw,
 that *if any one were not found written in the
 book of life, he was cast into the lake of fire*; so
 that this was the awful end of the whole human
 race, to be plunged into that flaming and eternal
 ruin, or to be received into those abodes of
 glory, which I am next to describe, under the
 figure of a new heaven and a new earth. (Com-
 pare Rev. XXI. 1. note.)

lake of fire; This is the second death.

15. And, whenever
 was not found written in
 in the book of life, was
 cast into the lake of
 fire.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver. We have here a most affecting view before us, of that *important*
event, in which we are all so intimately concerned. Whatever the
first resurrection may import, or that *glorious reign of a thousand*
years, (which probably intimates a signal revival of the *Christian*
cause in the world, and a display of its influence beyond what hath
 yet been known,) I say, whatever those events may particularly
 intend, *the illustrious day*, in which *heaven and earth is to pass*
 away, demands the attention of all mankind. For the dead, both
 11 *small and great*, whether buried in the earth or the sea, must then
 stand before God. Therefore let all the living, both *small and great*,
 11, 12 seriously weigh the solemnity and importance of that appear-
 ance. Let them often look forward to the awful period, when the
 13 glorious throne shall be set, the important volumes opened, which
 contain the record of our lives and actions, and of God's gracious
 and merciful transactions with us. We must be *judged according*
to our works; that God, before whom all our ways are, and who
 searches all our hearts, will *bring every work into judgment, and*
every secret thing, whether it be good, or whether it be evil. Let us
judge ourselves impartially, that we be not *condemned of the Lord*,
 and

1. Dead and alive were cast into the lake
 of fire.] It is no wonder if some of Mr.
 H. mistook this notion and principle, should
 be ready to exclaim at any opportunity, to
 prove the immortality of the soul. But,
 that would be mistaken from this passage
 (our Sir Isaac Newton, p. 186.) seems to be
 very inconsistent. For, as Archbishop
 James observes, that the Son of G.
 J. could not die, or that being once once a
 passage, is denegated immortality. The

plain meaning is, there shall be no more
 second death. And this, I think, clearly
 overthrows those arguments, which sup-
 poses that all will fall into that ruin,
 thrown into it, and that their separate op-
 erations will be over-ruled in that misery,
 which must be the consequence of having
 lost happiness and home, when they re-
 main fast in the prison, a doctrine,
 which Dr. Whistler has strongly taught
 in his *Apoc.* to 2 Thess. chap. 1.

and conscious how unable we should be to stand in that judgment, if God were rigorous to lay justice to the line, and righteousness to the plummet, let us humbly apply to the throne of mercy, to the blood of his Son, to the grace of his gospel-covenant. So shall we find mercy of the Lord in that day, and be the priests of God, and of Christ, and reign with him, not a thousand years alone, but for everlasting ages.

In the mean time, let those who have no reverence for his majesty, who have no esteem for his gospel, who have never taken this awful alarm, who have never fled for refuge to lay hold on the hope set before them, tremble at these awakening views. Let them all, of every condition, both small and great, say in their hearts, *Who shall dwell with devouring flames, and lie down in everlasting burnings, even in this lake of fire, into which every one who is not found written in the book of life, shall be cast, and where the wretched victims of Divine justice shall be tormented for ever and ever?*

How melancholy does the face of our earth appear, when we reflect on the reign of Satan on it, on the influence of the dragon, and the beast, and the false prophet! O Lord, cut short their power; send down the angel that has the key of the bottomless pit, to bind this destroyer; yea, when he shall be loosed for a season, moderate his rage; support thy saints under the terror of every assault, till thou appear to the last confusion of their enemies, till thou appear to close this perplexing scene, by the wise and glorious catastrophe of all things; when it shall be seen, that the souls of them who were beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, were not lost, and that it was wisdom strenuously to refuse the mark of the beast, and the homage so generally paid to his image, though men might neither buy nor sell, nor enjoy their liberty, nor their lives, without making an entire submission to it.

SECT. XXIV.

The solemn introduction to the glorious vision of the new heaven and the new earth: with a declaration of the blessing to attend the faithful and courageous conqueror, and the misery to be inflicted on impious and wicked offenders,
Rev. XXI. 1—8.

REV. XXI. 1.

AND I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away;

REVELATION XXI. 1.

AND when this scene of things was passed away, another most glorious and delightful one opened upon me; for I saw a new heaven, and a new earth, wherein I knew righteousness was ever to dwell, for the former heaven, and the

SECT.
XXIV.

Rev.
XXI. 1.

6867.
XXIV.

Rev.
XXI. 1.

the former earth was passed away, as I said before; and the sea was no more; the whole terraqueous globe was changed for another kind of world, wherein every thing was incomparably more beautiful and excellent than the face of nature had ever been, and room was made for
2 a vastly greater number of inhabitants: And as an emblem of the eminent holiness and fellowship which should there reign, *I John saw the holy city*; that is, the *New Jerusalem, descending from God out of heaven*^a; and it was prepared with all imaginable ornaments and decorations, like a bride adorned for her husband, and preparing to meet him with all her charms set out to
3 the greatest advantage. And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying aloud, *Behold the tabernacle of the living God* [is] *now with men*; and he shall pitch his tent among them, in token of his favour and friendship, and they shall be owned by him as his people, and God himself shall be

way; and there was no more sea.

2 And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself

a *The sea was no more*.] The consequence which Dr. Thomas Burnet hath drawn from hence, in his *Temp.* to prove there was no sea in the paradiseal state, is so manifestly absurd, that I need urge nothing against it. For it is certain, were God to remove the whole sea with dry land, the earth must quickly perish, as well as much of its constitution be destroyed. That a world more populous, than this can be, while the sea takes up so large a part of its surface, might well be expressed by such a figurative notion. As for this account of the sea's duration and the new earth's general continuance, have been divided. Some have thought it represents the happy state of the church upon earth, during the Millennium. A very ingenious writer, I mean, Mr. Warburton, in his *Lectures of the Present and Progress of Religion*, endeavours to prove that it is intended to represent a yet more perfect and durable period of prosperity, which shall be enjoyed upon this earth, after the Millennium; and when the *perpetual state* shall be yet more fully secured, by the more abundant progressive influence of the gospel. But, on weighing the whole matter, I must declare myself of the opinion of those persons, who understand it as an emblematic description of the happiness which the saints are to enjoy in *heaven* after the resurrection, and to enjoy for ever; when, according to the preceding descriptions, the *dead* shall be raised *again* in their *own*, when this *heaven* and *earth* shall have passed away, and a great sea and the element shall

have melted with fervent heat, as St. John and St. Peter concur to describe it; and when *dark* and *hell* shall be cast into the lake of fire, with all that are not written in the *book of life*. Phrases, which, I think cannot be explained properly of any event, but those of the day of universal judgment. And it is certain, that if we do not go into this interpretation of them, there is no view given us of the final catastrophe of things on this earth of ours, in this comprehensive prophecy, though intimated to represent the triumph of Christianity, which seems in theory a very improbable supposition.

b *Descending from God out of heaven*.] I apprehend he saw in the vision an appearance of a city, which seemed like the *city* which Peter says to be let down from heaven, and appeared radiant, as it were, in the air, at least a view, that the foundations were visibly distinguishable from the superstructure, and thus be considered, not as actually the temple of the blessed, but as a figurative representation of the holiness and purity in which they were to dwell, so that it was a type of what the church itself should be. To interpret it therefore, as if there were now such a city made in heaven, and by angelic power to be brought down to earth, and settled upon some spot of it, is so *absurd*, and *repugnant* to thought, that one would wonder any wise person of learning and understanding should ever have embraced it. Compare *Hobbes's Notes and Discourses*, Vol. I. p. 200. See Isa. lxv. 17, 18.

c *He*

himself shall be with them, and be their God.

4 And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away.

5 And he that sate upon the throne, said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful.

6 And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the End: I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh

be with and among them as their God, their Protector and Friend, their Guardian and Father, their supreme Good and final Portion. *And God shall, with parental tenderness, wipe away their tears from their eyes*; though here their tears have plentifully flowed, not one shall now be left on any of their faces. *And death shall be no more*; he shall be for ever banished those blissful regions, and with him all his melancholy train, nor shall there be grief, nor crying, nor shall there be any more pain, or labour; for all the former things are passed away, all the mournful scenes which were on the earth so familiar to their eyes. *And he that sate upon the throne* 5 then spake himself, and said with his own awful and gracious voice, which through the whole vision I had not before heard, *Behold, I make all things new*. I exert my power in producing a new creation, whence every trace of seeming imperfection and irregularity shall be banished. *And he then condescended to take notice of me*; and singling me out by his eye, and directing his voice to me, he said unto me, while all my soul was awed into reverence and attention, *Write what thou hearest, for these are true and faithful words*; and as their contents are important, so they are beyond all controversy certain. *And he said unto me*, Wonderful as the 6 prediction is, doubt not of its accomplishment; *It is done*, it is, as it were, already present with me; *I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End*; too great and excellent to need to use any artifice with my creatures; and far above the temptation of raising in them any false hopes and expectations, *I will give to him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely*; I open the springs, and they shall flow in abundance; and let every humble soul that desires it, freely come and quench his thirst. I have already made many gracious promises to 7 him who overcometh; and I will now comprise them all in one; *the conqueror shall inherit all things*;

SECT.
XXIV.

Rev.
XXI. 4.

c *He that sate upon the throne.*] As the Lamb, and *He that sate upon the throne*, have been mentioned, as distinct, through the whole book, and as the Lamb is mentioned here as the *Spouse of the church*, I am ready to understand the *Father* as the Person here spoken of. But I will not

absolutely insist upon this, because in chap. xx. 11, 12, it seems to be Christ who is represented as sitting upon the throne; since we know it is he who is to appear as universal Judge, under which character the Person who sate upon the throne is there spoken of.

d All

REV.
XIV.
Page
XXV.

things; the whole new creation shall be his, he shall possess its blessings to the utmost of his most enlarged desires. *And I will be to him a God, a source of complete and everlasting blessings; and he shall be my son, and as my son, inherit my kingdom, and dwell with me in it through eternal ages. But as for the fearful and unbelieving, who dare not face the difficulties which a courageous profession of my religion requires; and the abominable, who have devoted themselves to sensual affections; and pursuits; and murders, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, all who allow themselves in their words, or in their actions, to violate the eternal and invariable law of truth by which I have governed myself, and by which I have required all my rational creatures to be governed, their part [shall be] in the lake which burns for ever with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.* Let this therefore be recorded by thy pen, that every future generation of men may carefully peruse, and seriously consider it; that every sincere believer, however weak, may be encouraged, and that every obstinate sinner may be terrified, and, if possible, awakened; and that none, in the day of my final judgment, may complain, that they have not been warned and cautioned with the greatest plainness, and with the greatest solemnity.

IMPROVEMENT.

Ver Let us pause a little, before we proceed to the more particular description of this glorious scene: and let our hearts rejoice
1, 2 in this general view of the *new heaven, and the new earth*, and of the *holy city descending out of heaven from God. Will God in every age dwell with men? Will he dwell with them for ever? Will he fix his tabernacle with them, and condescend to avow them to his people, and to make himself known unto them as their God?*

Let our souls then be awakened, to pay a due attention to such glorious and important promises. Let us hearken to the voice
3 of him who sitteth upon the throne, whose words are undoubtedly true

eth shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearful and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death.

2. *Thou shalt see them that shall be in the second death, who shall be in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.* Let us then be awakened, to pay a due attention to such glorious and important promises. Let us hearken to the voice of him who sitteth upon the throne, whose words are undoubtedly true

and immortal spirit, manifests in its condescension to the great love of man. But in this verse, at least comprehended the case of eternal living; against which, in the most obvious sense, the lessons of this chapter are most directly levelled.

true and faithful. Lord, dost thou make all things new? Verify the word first, we implore thee, in our hearts, that it may be verified at length in our state and condition. O thou *Alpha and Ver. Omega*, who art the *Beginning and the End*, thou who hast done so much to introduce this Divine scheme of salvation, perfect it, we intreat thee with respect to us; exciting our thirst after the *water of life*; and may we come and take it as *freely* as it is offered in the gospel.

In what part of the holy scripture is *life and death, the blessing and the curse*, set before us, if not in these awful passages? Let those who are too timorous resolutely to adhere to their duty, be recovered, and as it were, driven back to it, by the fear of Divine vengeance. And let all habitual and obstinate sinners, and especially all liars, who bring up the rear of a catalogue, in which murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolators, make a part, be awakened by this awful threatening. O desperate and inexcusable folly, to be afraid of the *displeasure of men*, and the inconveniences which may possibly attend an adherence to the truth, and not to fear the *lake which burns for ever with fire and brimstone*.

But let us courageously encounter, and then we shall conquer all our enemies, animated by the glorious promises, in which all the encouragements contained in the sacred volume, are comprised, that *he, who overcomes shall inherit all things*, while God owns himself *his God*, and acknowledges him as *his son*; and if a son, then an heir, an heir of God, and Joint-heir with Christ; and if so, all things are indeed ours. Let those tears, that will now sometimes silently steal down our cheeks, be shed as tears, which we expect quickly to have wiped away, even by the soft and compassionate hand of our heavenly Father. Let us bear our sorrows, and our pains, as those that know we shall, through Divine grace, soon be out of the reach of them; and let us meet death itself, if we are sincere believers in Christ, as those that know its reign will soon come to a period; and that when once we are recovered from it, by the almighty power of our great General, we shall never more be subject to its invasion. or any of its terrors; even then, when all former things shall have passed away.

SECT. XXV.

A sublime and particular description of the splendour, glory, purity, and happiness, of the heavenly Jerusalem. Rev. XXI. 9, to the end.

REVELATION XXI. 9.

- AND* after he, who sat on the throne, had condescended to speak to me, in the words I have just now mentioned, *there came to me one of the seven angels who had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues* which had lately been poured out; and he spake with me, saying, *Come, and I will shew thee the bride, the wife of the Lamb*, and thou shalt observe how beautiful and glorious she is. *And he brought me, in a vision of the spirit, to a great and high mountain, and he shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God*; which I understood to be an emblem of the church of Christ, in its most happy and glorious state. And it was indeed a most delightful object to behold, *having the glory of God shining round about it; and its lustre [was] like that of a most precious gem, bright as a Jasper stone, and clear as crystal*, for the whole city, as it was represented to me pendant in the air, shone with an elegant and amazing lustre.
- And it appeared having a great and high wall*, for ever to secure it from all the attacks of its enemies: *having also twelve gates, and over the gates there appeared twelve angels*, as a celestial guard posted there; and there were names written upon them, which were [the names] of the twelve tribes of the sons of Israel; to signify that it was the dwelling of the Israel of God. And the city made a complete square, having on the east side, which I first viewed, *three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates*.
- And as I saw the city suspended, as it were, in the air*, I had an opportunity of observing, that

Rev. XXI. 9.

AND there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride the Lamb's wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God.

11 Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a Jasper stone, clear as crystal;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates; and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east, three gates; on the north, three gates; on the south, three gates; and on the west, three gates.

14 And the wall of the

a 12. Twelve gates of the sons of Israel.] Such a sacred institution maintained by the Jews, and their ministers and their synagogue, might have a great tendency to complicate their regards, and may

also afford some hints for the interpretations of many passages of the Old Testament, in which expressions, taken from the Jewish church, are used in describing that of the Messiah.

SECT.
XXV.Rev.
XXI. 14.

the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth four-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed; twelve thousand furlongs; the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper; and the city was pure gold, like unto clear glass.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper; the second, a sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald;

20 The fifth, a sardonyx;

the wall of the city had twelve foundations; and in them, the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb were engraven; to signify, how great a dependence the church had on their testimony, and what an influence the gospel, which they preached, had upon raising this noble and Divine structure. And he that spake with me had, as the angel who appeared in vision to Ezekiel (chap. xl. 3,) a measuring rod, but with this circumstance of illustrious distinction, that it was a golden reed; and it was given him, that he might measure the city, and its gates, and its wall. And the city was a complete square; and its length was exactly equal to its breadth; and he measured the city with the reed, and each side was twelve thousand stadia, or furlongs. And, which was most extraordinary of all, it appeared to me, in this vision, as a perfect cube, so that its length, and its breadth, and its height, were equal^b; which was an intimation how impossible it was for any of its enemies to scale the bulwarks that defended it. And he measured¹⁷ the thickness of its wall, and found it one hundred and forty-four cubits, the square of twelve; and this was according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel who had the measuring-rod in his hand, and accurately took the dimensions of it. And the building of its wall was like a complete rock of jasper, and the city [was] pure gold, and it was bright and clear like refined glass. And to signify how firm the foundations of the walls of the city, which were the emblems of the apostles and their doctrine, [were] they appeared, adorned with every precious stone, like so many vast and solid rocks of gems, lying under the gates, and appearing radiant and glorious, while the city hung, as I said before, suspended in my sight. The first foundation [was] jasper; the second sapphire; the third chalcedony; these were on the east side c; the fourth emerald; the fifth sardonyx; 20 the

15

16

17

18

19

^b Its length, its breadth, and its height were equal.] As this is quite inconceivable, with regard to any cubical structure, which can be supposed this bigness, I look upon it as a wise and well judged intimation, that all these descriptions are figurative. The like intimation is given in the vision of Ezekiel; according to which, if it were to be taken literally

the building described must be a mile high. ^c On the east side.] As the temple of Jerusalem was beheld in its greatest glory, when viewed from the east, towards which the beautiful gate looked, I think it is probable, that the like was observable in this visionary city, which was all as one temple in which God dwells.

d Glory

20. *the sixth sardius*, there were on the north; *the seventh chrysolite*, or a stone of the colour of pure gold; *the eighth beryl*, *the ninth opals*; these were on the south; and, to complete the square, *the tenth was chrysoprasus*, or a beautiful mixture of gold and green; *the eleventh hyacinth*, and *the twelfth amethyst*; which appeared on the west side; thus were they agreeably variegated and decorated, with all the elegance and magnificence that can be imagined.
21. *And the twelve gates were twelve pearls*; each of the gates was of one entire undivided pearl, with all the beautiful pillars and arches mouldings and cornices. *And the street of the city*, instead of being paved with common stones, [was] *paved with gold*, the substance being transparent as glass, and reflecting the light that shone up in it, with a lustre equal to that of polished gold.
22. *And whereas the temple made so considerable a part of the view of Jerusalem*, the holy city, which I had been used to visit; as for this heavenly Jerusalem, *I saw no temple in it*, for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it: God was present in Christ his Son, by a more intimate presence than had ever been known upon earth, and by that presence, he made even the whole of the city most holy.
23. *And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of the Lord enlightened it* on all sides, and the Lamb was the light of the city; and the illustrious manifestation of this presence rendered, not only artificial, but all natural light, unnecessary. *And the nations of the world shall walk continually in its light*; happy nations, consisting of myriads and millions, shall exultate in, and enjoy the delightful vision, *and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it*. If you

draw: the sixth, a sardius: the seventh, a chrysolite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth, a topaz: the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a hyacinth: the twelfth, an amethyst.

21. And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

22. And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it.

23. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

And the nations of those which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

were

Explain of the Lord, &c.] Thus were brought I saw, who are considerably more, which cannot always be known: for it is a great secret, and I rather think, that the latter may appear to him that is acquainted with, and will say in every thing, which are appointed to be in the presence of God's shining there, and that those that might have heard of the future of the Kingdom. The Divine presence from the fact, that the Lord is the substance of the heavenly world.

2. The king of the earth: that is the

those upon whom Mr. Worthington has given very much, to prove that we are to understand this description, not of the heavenly world, but of some glorious state of the Christian church, which is to pass upon earth, and it must be acknowledged, a glorious arrangement. The reader must consider, whether it is consistent to put such things on the throne; and if it be not, I suppose he will find no occasion to refer to that which I have here given; for I repeat myself, that the king of the earth is those who are to reign in the

were to conceive all the monarchs upon earth, uniting all their treasures to adorn one single place, they could produce nothing comparable to what I then saw. *And the gates of it shall not be shut by day; and that is equivalent to saying, they shall never be shut at all; for there shall be no night there.* *And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it; whatever is most desirable among all nations, seemed to meet together, to adorn that place, where good men of all nations shall dwell and reign with God for ever. And nothing unclean shall enter into it, nor [any thing which] practises abomination and falsehood of any kind, but only those who are written in the Lamb's book of life, in which none of such a detestable character can possibly have any place.*

SE CT.
XNV.
Rev.
XXI. 25

25 And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

IMPROVEMENT*.

GLORIOUS things are indeed spoken of thee, *O thou city of God.* (Psal. lxxxvii. 3.) Thus does the Divine Being condescend to aid our feeble faith, by such sensible representations. But none of these things which are spoken, can give us an idea grand and magnificent enough. The *pearls* and the *gems*, the *gold* and the *crystal*, the *honour of kings*, and *all the nations* they govern, all fall inconceivably short of that glory; for *eye hath not seen, nor ear heard*, nor, active and boundless as the human imagination may seem, *has it entered into the heart of man to conceive,*

Ver.
1^o, 21
2^d, 26

new earth, whose glory shall be reflected from, and so adorn the blissful city which they shall then inhabit. (Compare Isa. lx. 3, 11, 20; lxvi. 12.)

f *There shall be no night there.*] Mr. Whiston supposes, that a comet, meeting the earth at the conflagration, (for to such a concurrence he ascribes that awful phenomenon,) shall give it such a blow, as to destroy its diurnal motion, leaving only such a degree of it, that, like the moon with respect to us, it shall move round its axis, while it performs its periodical revolution round the central body; and so as to turn always the same face towards it; so that one hemisphere shall be always enlightened by the sun, and the want of it in the other, shall be supplied by a supernatural light. But the four dark corners, (which where they are it is difficult to say) shall be the habitation of Gog and Magog. It is hard to determine whether this agrees with the description here given, or the

principles of good philosophy. See *Whist. Theory*, p. 447. But this is not a place to canvass such an hypothesis, nor is it necessary, after what his antagonist Keil has said concerning it. This gentleman also, thinks a comet shall remove the moon from its orbit, so that it shall be converted into a primary planet, as he thinks it would have been at the flood, had it not been prevented by a peculiar providence.

g *But only those*, &c.] As it is certain, that nothing profane, abominable, and false, can here be considered as written in the book of life, this is another text to be added to the large catalogue I have given to John xvii. 12, where *upon*, is to be considered, not as an exception, but adversative particle. See Vol. II. sect. 179, note f.

* There are many beautiful ideas in the description, which I have not collected together in this improvement, as some of them have been taken notice of before, and some occur in the next chapter.

SECT.
XV.

ceive, what God has prepared for them that love him, in these regions of perpetual day, of everlasting security, in this grand temple, the whole of which shall be replenished with the most sensible tokens of his presence. (1 Cor. ii. 9.)

- 27 And who shall abide in this thy tabernacle? Who shall dwell in this thy holy hill? They who are written in the Lamb's book of life, they whom God has, from the beginning, chosen to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth, being predestinated to the adoption of children, through Jesus Christ unto himself. And who are these? None that are unclean and profane, none that work abomination and a lie; but the pure and pious, the humble and the holy. Form us, O Lord, to this character by thy grace: and never let the gaudy glare of sensual enjoyments, and worldly possessions, turn our eyes from contemplating this glorious sight, or alienate our hearts from the pursuit of this blessedness; till, having heard of it by the hearing of the ear, and believing the faithful report, our eyes shall behold those Divine substantial glories, which these emblems, resplendent as they are, can but imperfectly represent. In the mean time, O Lord, lead us onwards through what dark and gloomy path thou pleasest, to these abodes of light and glory; determine for us in what cottages we shall lodge, though ever so mean and obscure, while we are pursuing our journey to this royal, this imperial palace.

SECT. XXVI.

The Apostle hath a further vision of the river of life, and of the tree of life; describes the happiness of the inhabitants of the New Jerusalem, and receives a further message from God by an Angel, before whom he is about to renew his prostration; but is forbidden. XXII. 1—9.

REVELATION XXII. 1.

SECT.
XXVI.Rev.
XXII. 1.

AND having given me this view of the holy city, *he*, that is, the angel who condescended to be my guide on this occasion, *shewed me the pure river of the water of life* which was clear as crystal, issuing out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb; an emblem of that perpetual life, and overflowing joy, which shall be the portion of all the blissful inhabitants of the New Jerusalem. And in the midst of the street of it, and on the one side and the other of the river, [was] the tree of life, (Gen. iii. 3, 22,) producing

Rev. XXII. 1.

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river,

ver, was there the tree of life; which bare twelve manner of fruits and yielded her fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse; but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads.

5 And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithful

ducing twelve different [kinds of] fruits; every month producing one [kind of] fruit; to signify the permanency and variety of those delights which spring up there. *And the leaves of the tree are for the healing of the nations*; beneath their salutary shade no disease shall ever invade the nations of the saved, but perpetual health shall flourish among them: (Zech. xiv. 11.) And whereas in the earthly paradise Satan 3 insinuated himself into the minds of the first parents of the human race, and the new-born glories of the creation were blasted by the curse which he introduced; in the heavenly paradise every fatal effect of the former curse shall cease, and no new evil shall ever arise; and the throne of God, and the Lamb, upon which the Father and the Son sit together, shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him, in the sacred offices of his temple, with far greater advantage than they have ever before done; And they shall see 4 his face shine with unclouded lustre; and, in token of their perpetual devotedness to him, his name [shall be borne] upon their foreheads^b, as the name of God was on that golden plate which the Jewish high priest wore on his. And to 5 complete their happiness, there shall be no night there; and so they can have no need of a lamp, nor indeed of the light of the sun itself, that glorious fountain of lustre to this lower world, because the Lord God shall enlighten them with the light of his own holiness and glory: and they shall reign as kings for ever and ever, and enjoy an immortal life, far more delightful, splendid and magnificent, than any monarch on earth has ever known.

And when he had said this to me, he added, 6 Though these words which I have spoken, be-
token

a Every curse shall cease.] So the late learned Bishop of London, I think very justly renders these words, which are plainly limited to the inhabitants of the New Jerusalem, and must certainly therefore, refer to the final state of happiness, after the resurrection: till which time all the saints of preceding ages will remain under the power of death, as to their body, and the effect of the first curse be written in their dust.

b Names upon their foreheads.] It hath elsewhere been observed, sect. xvi. note 1. that there was a custom prevailing among

many of the heathen, to inscribe on the foreheads the names, or symbolical marks, of the deity they worshipped; but the near connection between this clause, and that which related to their serving God in the offices of devotion, (for that *καλῶν* signifies) makes me think it more natural, to refer this to the inscription of Holiness to Jehovah, written on the mitre of the high priest, and so naturally leads us to reflect upon that intimate approach to the blessed God with which all these happy souls shall be honoured.

SECT.

XXVI.

Rev.

XXII. 2.

- reken such glorious things, that they may seem in a manner incredible, yet is not the divine bounty and munificence to be estimated by any human standard; they [are] therefore to be received, and depended upon, as *faithful and true*. And these things, O John, are intended not merely for thy own instruction and consolation, and much less for the gratification of thy curiosity; but *the Lord God of the holy prophets has sent his angels, to shew to his servants, what must quickly be done*, and to represent scenes, which it shall not be long ere they begin to open,
- 7 though it may be long before they close. Yet, on the whole, I may in his name declare, *Behold, I come quickly*, to call my servants to an account: and blessed [is] *he who keeps and strictly observes, the words of the prophecy of this book*, for they will in such a manner direct his course, as that he shall escape many dangerous rocks, on which multitudes shall suffer shipwreck, to their eternal ruin.
- 8 And I John, who wrote this book, am the person *who saw and heard these things*; and when I heard and saw [these,] I was so powerfully affected, that I *fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who shewed these things to me*, forgetting the manner in which the same kind of homage had lately been refused, upon a like occasion. And he also said to me, as the angel had before done, (chap. xix. 10.) *See [thou do it] not, for I am a fellow servant with thee*, I am subject to the same Lord, and share in the duty and service of thy brethren the prophets, and of those who keep the words of this book; which thou art now commanded to write: worship God alone, and divide not thy religious homage, between him and any creature, how exalted and excellent soever.

faithful and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sends his angels to shew unto his servants, what things must quickly be done.

7 Behold I come quickly, blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard these. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which shewed me these things.

8 Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not, for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book, worship God.

IMPERATIVE-

c [Thou art to write.] Perhaps the apostle would think this ought to be *written*, and that he speaks of his own writing in the following verse. But Dr. Acharius argues the *Deus ex Machina*, from these words, which he thinks the context proves to be applicable to him. Compare ver. 13. with ver. Ten. North. p. 44.

d [Keep the words of the book.] There are indeed a multitude of things mentioned in the book, which are of such a nature, that whoever peruse this word, to them, must necessarily be a true Christian, and entitled to all the blessings and promises of the gospel.

IMPROVEMENT.

WE will not now employ our time in reviewing the *infirmity* of this *holy apostle*, who seems again to have fallen into the same danger of *idolatry* from which he had so lately been recovered. Nor will we stay to examine, whether he took *this angel* for our *Lord Jesus Christ*, as some have imagined ; or to determine *what homage* it was he attempted to pay. Let us content ourselves, for the present, with reflecting, how necessary it is we should be on our guard, against *exceeding* in our esteem and affection, for creatures who have been the means of conveying to us signal advantages, and especially assisting our views of the *New Jerusalem* : —To the contemplation of which, may we now return with new and growing delight.

Let us raise our eyes to *the water of life*, which issues from the *throne of God and the Lamb* : to *the tree of life*, which grows on its banks, and produces such a *variety of fruit*, both for food and refreshment, and for *the healing of the nations* ; to that more excellent *paradise*, in which *there shall be no curse*, where, from *the throne of God and of the Lamb*, shall be scattered ten thousand blessings, on all his *servants* ; who shall there *serve him*, with everlasting, with increasing delight, being admitted to *see his face*, and exulting in their having *the name of God written upon their foreheads* ; which they reckon a brighter and nobler ornament, than the most glorious crown, or diadem, without such an inscription, could be. *These are the words of truth and faithfulness* ; and as such, may our faith embrace them and our souls ever rest upon them.

O that we may feel our *thirst* after *this water of life*, our *hunger* after *this fruit of the tree of life*, more powerfully excited. We shall, in both respects, be satisfied in the proper season ; and, in the mean time, God will send us some refreshments, during our continuance in the *wilderness*. Already are we, if we are true believers, delivered from *the curse* ; and those things, which were the original effects and consequences of it, shall be overruled by our gracious God, and converted into a blessing. And O, may Divine love, and every genuine regard to *God* and to the *Lamb*, prevail and govern in our hearts ; and may our *lives* be devoted to that service, in which we hope our eternity will be employed. Have we not already, as it were, received *the mark of God in our foreheads* ? Have we not solemnly enlisted ourselves to fight under the *banner of Christ* ? Have we not, in repeated and most affecting solemnities and ordinances of his own institution,

tion, declared our desire of being for ever devoted to him? O let us ever remember the sacred engagement. Let *holiness to the Lord* be written on our *hearts*, as well as on our *foreheads*. Let all our affections, and all our faculties, all our possessions, and all our pursuits, be *consecrated* to God. To bear *this name* and inscription will now, even in this dark and benighted world, shed a glory around us. It will be as a sacred guide to our ways, it will cheer and animate our hearts, it will bring down to us many a delightful foretaste to that world, where, *in his light, we shall see light*, and where we shall *reign with him for ever and ever. Amen.*

SECT. XXVII.

Our Lord Jesus Christ admonishes the Apostle, to discover to the churches what had been revealed to him; and solemnly declares his speedy approach, to fix the eternal state of men according to their characters and works. Rev. XXII. 10—15.

DEUT.

XXVII.

Ezek.

XXII.

REVELATION XXII. 10.

AND he, that is, our Lord Jesus Christ, from whom I received this revelation, *said unto me, Seal not up the words of the prophecy of this book*, so that they should not be immediately perused; *for the time is near*, to which the accomplishment of these things shall begin. Yea, the time is just approaching, when the last seal shall be set upon the characters of men, and when it shall be said on the one hand, *Let him that is unjust, be unjust still; and let him that is polluted, be polluted still*; for no more opportunities shall ever be granted for reforming what hath been sinous, and recovering the unrighteous and polluted soul to rectitude and purity. And, on the other hand, it shall be said, *Let him that is righteous, be righteous still; and let him that is holy be holy still*, nothing shall ever happen to bring the virtues and graces of good men into any future danger, or under any cloud; but their righteousness and their holiness shall for ever stand; yea, stand with an increasing lustre.

a. And he, that is, the Lord Jesus Christ.] Next following words, and especially ver. 11, prove that our Lord is here meant. But it is a remarkable instance of the re-

Rev. XXII. 10.

And he said unto me, seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

ference of a relative to a remote antecedent, a figure of speech, which I once taken notice of upon many former occasions. Heb. vi. 2, note 2.

12 And behold, I come quickly and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his works shall be.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the Beginning and the end, the First and the Last.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

lustre. And, to confirm this, Behold I come quickly; I shall be manifest ere it be long; and my reward both of grace and vengeance, [is] with me; and I will recompence to every man according as his works shall be, whether it shall appear, on an impartial examination, to have been good, or evil. And, to confirm it further, I repeat it again, I am the Alpha, and the Omega, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last; and what I say may be depended upon as the words of invariable fidelity; Hear them therefore with attention and regard. And, since my nature and perfections are immutable, see that the necessary change be made in yourselves, in order to your obtaining that happiness of which your sins may now render you incapable. Happy [are] they, and they alone, who do his commandments, and so prepare for his important appearance; that they may have the privilege [to eat] of the tree of life; and they shall freely enter by the gates into the glorious city^b I have described, and have their perpetual abode there. But, without; [are] the unclean, who merit no better a name than that of dogs, as they debase their rational faculties to the service of detestable lusts; and sorcerers, and fornicators, and murderers, and idolaters, who may justly be ranked together as the most abominable of sinners; and with them must be ranked too; every one who loveth and maketh a lie, who forges falsehood, and practises it, or acts in any allowed contradiction to the great eternal rule of truth and rectitude.

SECT.

xxvii.

Rev.

xvii.

12

13

14

15

IMPROVEMENT.

LET us be very thankful, that the words of this prophecy are not Ver sealed from us; but that truths, in which we have so important a concern, are so plainly published and proclaimed. The time is near, when a seal will be set on the characters of men; blessed be God,

^b Who do his commandments, &c.] This promise to all that do his commandments, that they shall enter into the gate of the city, here described, evidently proves it to refer to that state of future happiness which all good men shall finally enjoy. Compare ver. 18, 19,

^c Every one who loveth and maketh a lie.] Though idols are called lies, yet as idolaters had been mentioned before as excluded out of this New Jerusalem, I think it most natural to understand this clause in the sense given in the paraphrase.

- God, he who is *now unrighteous and polluted*, may be purified and reformed, justified and saved. Adored be that grace, that waits so loving upon sinners! But the Divine long suffering towards them will have its period: yet a little while, and *Jesus comes, to render to every man according to his works*. May we then be fixed in a world of immutable holiness and happiness.
- 13 *The Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last*, has discovered to us many evangelical truths in this mysterious book. He hath directed our eyes to the *Lamb that was slain to redeem us to God by his blood*; and hath showed us the saints in glory, *laying down their crowns* in his presence and ascribing the praise of all the salvation to him; but he hath shown us nothing that is inconsistent with the necessity of real and universal holiness. Yea, he himself proclaims them alone to be entitled to enter the gates of the New Jerusalem, and to eat of the fruit of the tree of life, who do God's commandments. Let us not, therefore, deceive ourselves with vain words, nor attend in any who would sophisticate the word of God, and fixing their view only on some detached passages of it, enervate by their unguarded interpretations its general scope and meaning. Let us, in reviewing scripture, observe what God commands and requires, and compare it with what he forbids, that we may thereby impartially judge and try ourselves. And how free soever we may be from any of the grosser crimes here enumerated, such as *fornication, murder and idleness*, let us not allow ourselves in the love and practice of any thing inconsistent with the *immutable rule of righteousness and truth*; as well knowing every allowed and censured indulgence of that kind, to be utterly irreconcilable with a well-grounded hope of inheriting eternal life. May it please thee, O Lord to inscribe all these laws upon our hearts; that our joy, in the hope and prospect of the promised blessedness, may rise in proportion to our acquaintance with thy unerring word, and the impartiality and diligence with which we trace the actions of our lives, and the affections of our hearts, in comparison with it, and reduce them to a holy conformity to its precepts.

SECT. XXVIII.

Our Lord Jesus Christ repeats his august titles, and gracious invitation; warns us of the dreadful doom of him who shall add to, or take from his words; and declares his purpose of coming quickly, to which St. John adds his hearty assent, and concludes with his apostolical benediction. Rev. XXII. 16, to the end.

REVELATION XXII. 16.

REV. XXII. 16.

AND now to conclude the whole; be it known to every one, who reads these words, I JESUS have sent three angel to testify

fy unto you these things in the churches. I am the Root and the Offspring of David, and the bright and morning Star.

words, and let it be seriously considered by him, that *I Jesus* the Son of God, the Alpha and Omega, the First and the Last, have sent my beloved disciple and apostle John, as my messenger, to testify these things to you, in the several churches into whose hands this may come. And let it also be remembered, in order to add a due weight to the testimony, that *I am the Root and the Offspring of David*, by whose Divine power David himself was made, though as to my human nature, I have condescended to ally myself to him, and be born from his house: I am *the bright and the morning Star*, who wear a glory exceeding that of the most brilliant celestial luminary, and usher in a glorious and eternal day. And the great substance and design of the message is, to awaken in the minds of all to whom it comes, an earnest desire of those blessings which from this throne of my glory I am to dispense. And accordingly I do now anew publish the invitation: *the Spirit* with which I inspire my servants, and the bride, the church to whom I am espoused, concur to say, *Come*; and let him, even every one that heareth, say, *come*. Let every one echo the invitation, and let my people, in all ages, consider it as their duty to do it. And let him that is thirsty, come; and whosoever will, let him apply to me in my appointed way, and receive of the waters of life freely^a: behold it flows in a full current from my throne; and if any man do not receive a part or share of it, without money, and without price, the fault is only chargeable upon himself.

SECT.
xxviii.
Rev.
XXII. 16.

17 And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come, and let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

18 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, if any man shall add unto these things God shall add unto him the plagues

This important testimony I commission my 18 servant to bear: and I also testify to every one that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book *If any man add unto these things, God shall add unto him, and bring upon him, the most terrible of those plagues which are written in this book:* he

a *Whosoever will, let him receive, &c.*] Such a declaration of free grace seems to have been wisely inserted just in the close of the sacred canon, to encourage the hope of every humble soul, that is truly desirous of the blessings of the gospel; and to guard against those suspicions of Divine goodness which some have so unhappily abetted. The word λαμβανειν, which we render *take* does often signify *receive*; and the word δωρεαν, is as much as *gratis*, which implies the freedom of the gift; and

I think it may probably refer to that celebrated invitation, Isa. lv. 1. *Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy and eat, buy wine and milk without money, and without price.*

b *If any man add to, &c.*] It is true this particularly refers to the book of the Revelation; but the parity of reason extending to other books, I doubt not the terror of the threatening does so too. God forbid we should imagine every honestly mis-
taken

CONF.
NAMES.
CONF.
XXII. 19

he will, by any designed addition to them, or corruption of them, make himself highly criminal, and eternally miserable. *And if any one take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, with a design thereby to diminish in any degree, by the omission of what is disagreeable to him, or others whom he may desire to please and favour, God will severely punish such a sacrilege, and take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and the glorious things, even the invaluable blessings which are written, and described in the preceding passages of this book.*

20 *He who testifies these important things, says, and leaves it as his parting warning with all that read them, Surely I come quickly.* My said, while I write it, replies, and let every reader reply with me from his heart, *Amen, even so, come Lord Jesus: come surely, and quickly, as thou hast said; for all our highest and sublimest hopes depend upon the blessed and glorious day of thy appearance.*

21 *In the mean time, let the churches to whom these messages are especially directed and inscribed, receive my most affectionate wishes, my most solemn benediction, which I express in this one ardent prayer: May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, even all the invaluable effects of his favour, and above all, the abundant communications of his Spirit, [be] with you all, and with all Christians, to whom these words may come, unto the end of the world. Amen.*

IMPROVE-

tion remains, where there is a question of receiving or rejecting any particular text, should admit a man's intrusion, in correspondence of what is here said. But I think such a practice should meet with very censure, that they may not really incur any censure at this moment, though undoubtedly the terror of the threatened is placed against any design of removing or addition. I shall conclude this note with declaring, that I have endeavoured to carry on my commentary on the sacred books with this thought in my eye, and that I have neither dangerously attempted to diminish any thing, which could not appear to be a source of corruption, nor drop any thing which did appear so. And whatsoever, through human infirmity, and the want of a clear and more

plagues that are written in the book.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifies these things, says, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

accurate attention, I have failed either way, I cannot regret to the mercy of that Judge, whose word it is, and whose consent I have faithfully endeavoured to serve.

[*And God will take away his part, &c.*] Such good threatenings (the plagues written in the book, and the loss of a part in the holy city, &c. what might be the portion of those who should presume to corrupt it, and such destruction might happen to any one of the church,) I view as very evident, that the holy men, authors of the preceding chapter as a representation of the heavenly state to be enjoyed by all good men, how applicable would it now seem to any glorious crown preceding the final judgment; and that Rev. vi. 17, &c. refers to the universal judgment.

IMPROVEMENT.

How sweetly and delightfully does the *canon of scripture* conclude, leaving as it were, the *music of heaven* upon the attentive ear. “O thou blessed *Root and Offspring of David*, O thou *bright and morning Star*, impress on all our hearts these thy gracious words, which thou hast condescended to speak from the *throne of thy glory*; thereby as it were, to aid the weakness of our faith, in those which thou didst deliver, while dwelling in mortal flesh.” Then did the compassionate Saviour proclaim, from an eminence in the *temple*, to a crowded assembly on a day of peculiar solemnity, *If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink*: (John vii. 17) And now behold he makes the same proclamation from the *celestial temple*; he points, as it were, to the fountain-head of happiness, to the *springs of the water of life*, near the throne of God, and says, *Whoever will, let him come*, let him take, let him *freely take of this living water*; yea, and not content with speaking this language by *his Spirit* only, he calls on *his bride*, to lift up her melodious voice, to publish this kind invitation; he calls on *every one that hears it*, to echo it back, as if the excess of his goodness overcame him, as if it were necessary to *his own happiness*, that men should accept of *their own salvation*. SECT. XXVIII.
Ver.

With what sacred observance should *these books* be guarded, which contain a message of such infinite importance! Of what dreadful *curses* are they worthy, who presume to *add* to what is already *perfect*, or to *take away* from that which is in every part *Divine*. I trust none of us shall ever *presumptuously* attempt to do it: and may we be preserved from those *mistaken* interpretations, in consequence of which, we should teach the world, as by his authority, any thing which he has not dictated, or deny any thing which carries along with it the stamp of such an authority. “Have pity, O Lord, upon our *weakness*; impute not *prejudices* which thou knowest we do not allow; and give us a greater *penetration of mind*, to understand the true sense of thy word; a *simplicity of heart* to receive it; an *integrity*, so far as the duty of our places requires, to declare it; and a *zeal* to inculcate and defend it.” 16
17
19

And while we are thus employed, or employed in any *other* services which Providence has assigned us, in our respective stations and circumstances of life: whatever labours may exercise us, whatever difficulties may surround us, whatever sorrows may depress us, let us with pleasure hear our Lord proclaiming, *Behold, I come quickly*, I come to put a period to the labour and suffering of my servants; I come, and *my reward of grace is with me*,
to

1801.
1802. *to recompence with royal bounty, every tear of faith, and labour of love; I come to receive my faithful persevering people to myself, to dwell for ever in that blissful world, where the sacred volume, which contains the important discoveries of my will, shall be no more necessary; but knowledge, and holiness and joy, shall be poured in upon their souls in a more immediate, in a nobler and more effectual manner. Amen, even so, come Lord Jesus. Hasten the blessed hour to us, and to all thy churches as far as it may consist with thy wise and holy counsels. And, in the mean time, may thy grace be with us, to keep alive the remembrance of thy love, and the expectation of thy coming, in our hearts, and to animate us to a temper and conduct, which may suit the blessings we have already received, and the nobler felicity after which thou hast taught us to aspire. Amen and amen.*

THE END OF THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR.

AN INDEX

OF THE

GREEK WORDS AND PHRASES REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES OF THE
FAMILY EXPOSITOR.

A.

ην ογαθην μεριδα. Luke 10. 42.
note E.

Εἰ τις αἴθετος. Eph. 4. 29. note F.

αγαλλιασθε. Mat. 5. 12. ¹.

αγαλλιασιν. Luke 1. 14. ^f.

αἵατη. 1 Cor. 13. 1. ^b.

αἵαταις. Jude 12. ^a.

αγαρευω. Mat. 5. 41. ^o.

αγγελος. Acts. 12. 15. ^h.

αγγελος. Mat. 24. 31. ^c.

αγνωισω Θεω. Acts 17. 23. ¹.

αγωνίες Μνάσων. Acts 21. 16. ^d.

αγραμμάτοι και ιδιώται. Acts 4. 13. ⁱ.

αἰωνα. Col. 3. 8. ^b.

αγωνίζεσθε. Luke 13. 24. ^b.

τρεχειν αδελως. 1 Cor. 9. 26. ^k.

αδημονειν. Mat. 26. 37. ^b.

αδης. Mat. 16. 18. ^f.—Luke

16. 23. ^d.—Acts 2. 27. ^g.—

Rev. 1. 18. ^b.

αδικια. John 7. 18. ^c.—Luke 16.
9. ^c.

αδοκιμοι. 2 Cor. 13. 5. ^d.

αδοκιμος. 1 Cor. 9. 27. ⁿ.

εις αβήθησιν αμαρτίας. Heb. 9. 26. ^h.

αβητησιν. Heb. 10. 32. ^h.

ιξ αιματων. John 1. 13. ¹.

αιρεσις. Acts 24. 14. ^c.—1 Cor.
11. 19. ^b.

αισθησει. Phil. 1. 10. ^f.

αισχρολογία. Col. 3. 8. ^b.

αἰλω. John 16. 23. ^c.

τω αἰωνι σε διδα. Mat. 5. 42. ^p.

αιων. Mat. 24. 3. ^d.

αιων εις. 1 Cor. 2. 6. ^f.—Gal. 1.
4. ^d.

εις τον αιωνα. John 4. 14. ¹.—John

8. 52. ^c.—1 Cor. 8. 13. ^f.

εις τας αιωνας των αιωνων. Rev. 20.
10 E.

ακαρπος. Eph. 5. 11. ^k.

ακαλασταις. 2 Cor. 6. 5. ^c.

ακαειν. Acts 9. 7. ⁱ.

οι ακησαντες. John 5. 25. ⁱ.

ακησαντες δε. Acts 19. 5. ^b.

ακριβως. Mat. 2. 7. 16. ^g.

ακριδης. Mat. 3. 4. ^k.

ακραγωναιον. Eph. 2. 20. 1. Pet. 2.
6. ^f.

αλαζονεια τε βιω. 1 John 2. 16. ^c.

αλαλαζονίας. Mark 5. 38. ^k.

αλεκτωρ εφωνησε. Mat. 26. 74. ⁿ

εν τη αληθεια. John 17. 17. ^a.

Εν τη αληθεια. 3 John 3. ^c.

αλισθησεται. Mark 9. 49. ¹.

αλλα, nevertheless Acts iv. 17. ¹.

—Phil. 2. 6. ^b.

αλλα, so. Rom. 6. 5. ^c.

αλλα, therefore. Acts 10. 20. ^k.

αλλα και, yea. Luke 16. 21. ^b.

μη δει αλλαφυλον παριεναι. Acts 21.
28. ¹.

αἶνα ες αλληγορημενα. Gal. 4. 27. ^c.

αλλοτριοεπισκοπος. 1 Pet. 4. 15. ^r.

αμαρτανειν. John 8. 11. ^g.

αμαρτια. Rom. 8. 3. ^a.

αμειταμελητος. Rom. 8. 19. ^a.

αμην, αμην. John 1. 51. ^g.

αμφιεννυσιν. Mat. 6. 30. ^k.

αναβλεψω. Mark 10. 51. ^c.

αναβινωσκω. 2 Cor. 1. 13. ^a.—Eph.
3. 4. ^c.

αναγκαζω. Luke 14. 23. ^g.

ανακη. 2 Cor. 6. 4. ^b.

ανακη φερεσθαι. Heb. 9. 16. ^c.

αναδειξιν. Luke 1. 80. ^k.

αναζωπυρειν. 2 Tim. 1. 6. ^a.

αναθημα μαρναναθα. 1 Cor. 16. 22. ^o.

αναθημα αναθηματισαμεν εαυτης. Acts
23. 14. ^k.

αναθηματια. Luke 21. 5. ^b.

ανακαμψαι. Mat. 2. 12. ^r.

ανακεφαλαιασασθαι. Eph. 1. 10. ¹.

ανακυψατε. Luke 21. 28. ^f.

αναλαμβάνω. Acts 20, 13, 14. ^b.

Οο

- ἀνάλωγος. Luke 9. 41. a. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 9. 34. c.
 ἀνάνητος νοῦς. Rom. 12. 6. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Heb. 12. 3. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Phil. 1. 25. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 2 Tim. 2. 26. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Philom. 20. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 14. 15. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 4. 17. a.
 ἀνάνητος νοῦς. Rom. 1. 4. d.
 ἀνάνητος νοῦς. Luke 1. 1. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 1. 78. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 Cor. 16. 13. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Gal. 5. 7. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 2. 16. f.
 ἀνάνητος νοῦς. Acts 27. 40. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 8. 27. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 13. 8. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Luke 2. 3. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 Cor. 10. 13. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 Cor. 16. 12. f.
 ἀνάνητος νοῦς. Acts 4. 6. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 24. 24. f.—Rom. 1. 14. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 John 3. 4. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mark 15. 23. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Rom. 2. 4. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mark 8. 37. f.
 ἀνάνητος. John 1. 16. d.
 ἀνάνητος. John 1. 16. d.
 ἀνάνητος, *unusually to take* — Eph. 5. 31. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 3. 23. f.—Luke 12. 58. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 Cor. 16. 9. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 13. 43. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Mat. 3. 39. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Rom. 16. 2. b.
 ἀνάνητος. John 4. 11. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 1. 7. c.—John 3. 3. f.—John 19. 11. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 24. 15. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 11. 20. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mark 14. 31. d.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Mark 4. 19. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts. 12. 19. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 2 Cor. 4. 2. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 8. 42. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 8. 40. a.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. John 3. 36. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. John 20. 10. a.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 6. 35. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 1 Cor. 7. 35. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Mat. 6. 2. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 27. 5. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 12. 88. f.
 ἀνάνητος. 2 Tim. 3. 15. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 12. 16. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 6. 22. b.
 ἀνάνητος, *after the example of*. Rom. 11. 3. b.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Luke 2. 2. f. b.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. 1 Pet. 2. 24. b.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Acts 2. 22. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Rom. 8. 19. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 1. 6. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 3. 21. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 17. 11. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Mat. 11. 25. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 19. 23. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 3. 20. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 26. 17. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 11. 53. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς, &c. Acts 3. 26. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς τοῦ νοῦς. Luke 9. 61. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Jam. 1. 15. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Eph. 5. 12. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Tit. 1. 13. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. Luke 21. 26. f.
 ἀνάνητος, *indeed*. Rom. 10. 17. f.
 ἀνάνητος & ἀνάνητος. Rom. 7. 23. 3. f. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 12. 26. b.
 ἀνάνητος. 2 Pet. 1. 2. f.
 ἀνάνητος. John 21. 12. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 22. 14. f.
 ἀνάνητος. John 21. 15. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 24. 47. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 11. 12. f.
 ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς. John 10. 23. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Phil. 2. 6. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Rev. 12. 5. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 27. 40. f.
 ἀνάνητος. John 1. 51. f.—Mat. 26. 64. b.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 9. 18. f.
 ἀνάνητος, ἀνάνητος τοῦ νοῦς, &c. John 8. 25. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Jud. 6. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Mat. 2. 4. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Luke 3. 23. f.
 ἀνάνητος. Acts 16. 19. d.
 ἀνάνητος. Mark 3. 22. f.

ασθενειων. Acts 20. 35. p.
 Ασικρχοι. Acts 19. 31. k.
 ασπασησδε. Mat. 5. 47. t.
 ασποιοι. 2 Tim. 3. 3. b.
 ασσαριων δυο. Luke 12. 6. b.
 ασσον, *an adverb*. Acts 27. 13. f.
 ασει τω Θεω. Acts 7. 20. b.
 ασραπη. Luke 11. 36. f.
 ασωλια. Eph. 5. 18. c.
 ατακτοι. 1 Thess. 5. 14. b.
 αυθαδη. Tit. 1. 7. f.
 αυλοματη. Mark 4. 28. a.
 αυλος. John 5. 20. f.
 αυτη εστιν ερημος. Acts 8. 26. b.
 επι το αυλο. Acts 2. 44. h.—Acts
 3. 1. a.
 αυτη. John 12. 41. d.
 αυλον. *redundant*. Acts 10. 38. c.
 αυτοι υμεις μοι μαρτυρειτε. John 3. 28.
 d.
 υπ' αυτων. Luke 24. 31. k.
 αυτοις. Acts 19. 6. b.
 αφανιζουσι. Mat. 6. 16. p.
 αφανισθητε. Acts 13. 41. g.
 αφαντος εγενετο. Luke 24. 31. k.
 αφ' αυτων. Luke 12. 57. f.
 αφθαρσια. Eph. 6. 24. n.
 αφθαρσιαν. 2 Tim. 1. 10. c.
 αδεθησει. Luke 12. 10. c.—Luke
 17. 34. c.
 αφες εδωκα. Mat. 7. 4.
 αφηκε το πνευμα. Mat. 27. 50. i.
 αφορυντες. Heb. 12. 2. p.
 αφρον. 1 Cor. 15. 36. m.
 αφρονες. Luke 11. 40. b.
 αφροσυνη. Mark 7. 22. c.
 αχρειοι. Luke 17. 10. f.
 αχυρον. Mat. 3. 12. k.

B.

βαπτιζεσθαι επι ονοματι Χριστου. Acts
 2. 38. b.
 βαρεις. Acts 20. 29. i.
 βαρυθυωσιν. Luke 21. 34. c.
 βασιλικος. John 4. 46. d.
 βαλεις. Luke 16. 6. b.
 βατιλογησθητε. Mat. 6. 7. h.
 βεελζεβουλ. Mat. 12. 24. f.
 βιαζειται, και βιασαι. Mat. 11. 12. f.
 βλασφημιαι. Acts 13. 45. b.
 μηδεν ελαφαν αυτον. Luke 4. 35. c.
 βλεπων. Mat. 5. 28. a.
 βηλειται. 1 Cor. 12. 11. i.
 βουλων. Luke 18. 7. c.

βραδειον. Phil. 3. 14. m.
 βραδευειω. Col. 3. 15. d.
 βρεχειν. Luke 7. 38. b.
 βροσεως μιας. Heb. 12. 16. c.
 βροχον υμιν επιβαλω. 1 Cor. 7. 35. b.
 βρυγμος των οδων. Mat. 13. 42. h.
 βρωσις. Mat. 6. 19. a.
 βυθος. 2 Cor. 11. 25. b.

Γ.

γαλα υμας επολισα, και ε βρωμα. 1
 Cor. 3. 2. c.
 γαμεισθαι. Mat. 24. 38. a.
 γαμεις. Mat. 22. 3. b.
 γαρ, *for*. Mat. 12. 8. i.—Luke 6.
 44. c.—John 4. 44. i. 180. c.
 —*therefore* 1 Cor. 11. 26. b.
 —*therefore, or so that*, Luke
 20. 38. g.
 —*indeed*. Acts 19. 40. q.—
 Gal. 1. 10. k.
 —*an expletive*. Luke 23. 22.
 h.—Rom. 2. 25. f.—Rom. 6.
 19. b.
 —*a copulative*. 1 Cor. 15. 41.
 b.
 —*I say*. Gal. 4. 25. a.
 —*nevertheless*. 2 Cor. 12. 1. a.
 —*moreover*. Rom. 9. 17. a.
 —*now*. Rom. 8. 6. a.—Rom.
 4. 7. f.—Gal. 2. 18. d.
 ο γεγονεν. John 1. 4. c.
 γενηα. Acts 8. 33. g.
 η γενηα αυτη. Luke 21. 32. b.
 εις πασας τας γενεας τε αιωνος των αιω-
 νων. Eph. 3. 21. c.
 γενησθαι. John 8. 58. g.
 γενησις. Mat. 1. 1. a.
 γενησεων. Mat. 14. 6. i.
 γενηται. Mat. 5. 18. c.
 γεννηματια. Mat. 3. 7. c.
 γενομενης ημερας. Luke 4. 42. f. a.
 γενος. Mark 9. 29. b.
 τε γαρ και γενος εσμεν. Acts 17. 28. p.
 γευσασθαι. Acts 10. 10. f.
 γη. Luke 18. 8. b.—Mat. 27. 45. c.
 εκ της γης εστι. John 3. 31. f.
 γινεσθαι, *for* εστι. Mark 4. 11. b.
 γνωσκειν. John 8. 43. h.
 γνωσκω. Rom. 7. 15. 1.—1 Cor.
 2. 2. b.
 γλευκος. Acts 2. 13. k.
 γνωσεως της δοξης τε Θεου. 2 Cor. 4.
 6. f.

ἐπὶ λέγει γραμμασί. Gal. 6. 11. a.
 γραμμασί. Acts 19. 25. ^m.
 γραψά. John 1. 45. ^c.
 γραφάβη: with ἀσφάβη. Acts 15.
 23. ^m.
 γυναῖκα. 1 Tim. 4. 8. ^c.
 γυναῖκα. Mat. 5. 28. ^b.
 ῥῆμα γυναῖκα. John 4. 27. ^a.

Δ.

δαίμον. Acts 17. 18. f.
 δαίμαζίν. Jam. 3. 7. ^c.
 δαίμονας. Mat. 5. 47. a.
 δάπνη. Luke 14. 28. ^c.
 δαταίστα. Mark 3. 26. ^c.
 δα. Luke 24. 12. ⁱ—Acts 19. 5. ^b
 δάσκαι. Rom. 6. 7. ^c.
 δασα. Phil. 4. 6. d.
 δαύτα. John 5. 20. f.
 δαυα ὁχρῶ. Luke 11. 53. ^m.
 δαυα ὁχρῶ. John 13. 2. ^a.
 δαυαδαιμονιστῶ. Acts 17. 22. ⁱ.
 δαυαδαιμονα. Acts 25. 19. d.
 δαζα. Luke 22. 17. d.
 δαυαπρῶ. Luke 6. 1. b.
 δαζα. Mat. 10. 41. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Luke 7. 41. ⁱ.
 δα. John 1. 17. ^c.
 δα, by 2 Pet. 1. 3. ^a.
 δα δα. 2 Cor. 3. 11. a.
 δα πᾶσι. 1 Cor. 3. 15. d.
 δα τῶν. John 7. 22. ⁱ—Mat. 23.
 34. ⁱ—John 19. 11. ⁱ.
 δα τῶν, therefore. Rom. 8. 12. b.
 δα τῶν ἁγίων. 1 Thess. 4.
 14. ^c.
 δαυα. John 6. 70. f.
 δαυα. 1 Tim. 3. 7. ^c.
 δαυαυα τῶ παύσας. Mark 16.
 1. a.
 τῶ δαυα. Heb. 9. 16. ^c.
 δαυα. Luke 22. 20. ^c—Heb. 9.
 13. ^a.
 δαυα. Mat. 4. 11. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Rom. 12. 7. ^c.
 δαυα, α τῶ ἱουδαίου. Rom. 15.
 31. a.
 δαυα. Mat. 20. 27. b.
 δαυα. 1 Cor. 11. 31. ^a.
 δαυα. Mark 7. 21. b.
 δαυα. Rom. 1. 21. ^b.
 δαυα. Acts 20. 21. ^c.
 δαυα. Eph. 4. 18. b.
 δαυα. Luke 10. 27. 2. 85. ^c.
 α ὁχρῶ. Acts 17. 3. b.

δαυα. Eph. 2. 3. ^c.
 δαυα. Luke 3. 14. b.
 δαυα. Acts 23. 10. ⁱ.
 α δαυα. Acts 7. 53. ^a.
 δαυα. Luke 22. 28. ^a.
 δαυα. Mat. 6. 26. g.
 δαυα. Acts 13. 34. p.
 δαυα. Acts 26. 21. ⁱ.
 δαυα. John 6. 45. c.
 δαυα. Luke 7. 40. d.—463. h.
 δαυα. Jam. 3. 1. a.
 δαυα. Mat. 28. 19. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Mark 7.
 7. ⁱ.
 α δαυα. Mat. 7. 29. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Mat. 22. 9. ^c.
 δαυα. 1 Cor. 16.
 5. ^c.
 δαυα. Mat. 18. 31. ^c.
 δαυα. Luke 1.
 72. c.
 δαυα. Acts 5. 37. ^a.
 α δαυα. Mat. 2. 16. g.
 δαυα. Luke 9. 7. ^c.
 δαυα. Mat. 1. 19. a.
 δαυα. Mat. 20. 4. d.
 α δαυα. Mat. 27. 19. ^c.
 δαυα. Luke 14. 14. ^b.
 δαυα. Rev. 19. 8. a.
 δαυα. Mat. 6. 1. a.
 δαυα. Luke 1. 6. a.
 δαυα. Luke 12. 46. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Gal. 5. 20. d.
 α δαυα. John 4.
 14. ⁱ.
 α δαυα. John 6. 24. ⁱ.
 ῥῆμα δαυα. Mark 10. 30. ⁱ.
 δαυα. 1 Cor. 14. 1. a.
 δαυα. Col. 2. 14. g.
 δαυα. Acts 16. 4. a.
 δαυα. Luke 8. 15. ^f.
 δαυα. Rom. 2.
 18. b.
 δαυα. 2 Cor. 13. 5. d.
 δαυα. Rom. 5. 4. d.
 δαυα. Mat. 7. 5. b.
 δαυα. Mark 10.
 42. ^f.
 δαυα. 1 Cor. 7. 40. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Rev. 22. 17. a.
 δαυα. Luke 2. 14. ⁱ.
 δαυα. Luke 6.
 15. b.

Δορκας. Acts 9. 36. ^c.
 δος εργασίαν. Luke 12. 58. ^g.
 δαλός. Luke 7. 8. ^d.—Mat. 18,
 32. ^g.—Mat. 20. 27. ^h.
 δναι μελανοίαν. Acts 5. 31. ^d.
 μη δυναμένη ανακυφαι εις το' παντες.
 Luke 13. 11. ^b.
 τω δυναμενω. Acts 20. 32. ^o.
 η δυναμις τα Θεη ημεγαλη. Acts 8.
 10. ^h.
 ει δυνασαι. Mark 9. 23. ^e.
 δυνασθε ακριβ. John 8. 43. ^h.
 δωρον. Mat. 5. 23. ^o.
 δωρον ο εαν εξ εμε ωφεληθης. Mark 7.
 11. ^g.

E.

εαν ελθω. 3 John, ver. 10. ^h.
 εαν υψωθω. John 12. 32. ^h.
 εαν μη. John 5. 19. ^c. Gal. 2. 16. ^f.
 εαν μη λαβη. Mark 10. 30. ⁱ.
 εις εαυτον ελθων. Luke 15. 17. ^o.
 καθ' εαυτον. Acts 23. 16. ⁿ.
 αφ' εαυτων. Luke 12. 57. ^f.
 προς εαυτης. John 20. 10. ^o.
 προς εαυτας συζητιντες. Mark 9. 10. ^c.
 εβασαζεν. John 12. 6. ^h.
 εβασασεν. Mat. 8. 17. ^d.
 εβρασκαγε. Gal. 3. 1. ^a.
 εγγαστριμυθοι. Acts 16. 16. ^b.
 εν τω εγγιζειν. Luke 18. 35. ^a.
 εγενετο. Luke 2. 46. ^b.—Luke 17.
 11. ^h.—John 1. 17. ^c.
 εγενεθη. Acts 4. 4. ^c.
 εγεννησε. Mat. 1. 12. ⁱ.
 εγω εμει. John 8. 24. ^d.—John 8.
 58. ^h.
 εδειμαλτισεν. Col. 2. 15. ^h.
 εδυσεν. Mark 6. 17. ^c.
 εδυσαν αυτο οδοιμοις. John 19. 40. ^k.
 ει δε εδισασαν. Mat. 28. 17. ^a.
 εδοκιμασαν. Rom. 1. 28. ^p.
 εδραιωμα. 1 Tim. 3. 15. ^b.
 εδοθη. John 1. 17. ^e.
 εθεταμεθα. 1 John 1. 1. ^a.
 εθειτο εν τω πνευματι. Acts 19. 21. ^b.
 ει, for ειπει. Mark 6. 8. ^h.
 ει, to express a wish. Luke 12.
 49. ^a.—Luke 19. 42. ^a.
 εκ ειασεν. Acts 28. 4. ^d.
 ειδως. Acts 26. 3. ^b.
 ειτε, since. Eph. 3. 2. ^b.—4. 21. ^d.
 εκκη. Mat. 5. 22. ⁱ.
 εικοι. Heb. 10. 1. ^a.

ει μη. John 3. 13. ^d.—Luke 4. 27. ^o.
 John 17. 12. ^f.—Rev. 9. 4. ^o.
 —21. 27. ^g.
 επιταλει—οι προαγγειμας. Mat. 23. 7. ^r.
 επιτες, since. 1 Pet. 2. 3. ^b.
 επιτον αν υμιν, πορευομαι, &c. John
 14. 2. ^e.
 εις εκ των δωδεκα. Mark 14. 20. ^h.
 εις, for εν. John 1. 18. ^f.—Acts 8.
 23. ^f.
 εις, of, or concerning: Acts 2.
 25. ^e.
 εις, upon. John 20. 25. ^b.
 εις το, as. Heb. 11. 3. ^d.
 εις τον καιρον τον ενεστηκοια. Heb. 9. 9. ^c.
 εις Θεον. Luke 12. 21. ^d.
 εισελθοντι. Mat. 8. 5. ^a.
 εισηλθον. Luke 7. 45. ^h.
 ειλα, now if. Heb. 12. 9. ^f.
 εκ πιστεως, by. Rom. 1. 17. ^d.—3.
 30. ⁱ.
 εκ τε θηρι. Rev. 15. 2. ^b.
 εκβαλλη. Luke 10. 2. ^c.
 ε μη εκβαλω εξω. John 6. 27. ^b.
 εκδικησον με. Luke 18. 3. ^a.
 εκδοτος. Acts 2. 23. ^b.
 εκκακειν. 2 Cor. 4. 1. ^a.
 εκεινος. John 1. 8. ^g.—John 5. 11. ⁱ.
 εκθαμβοεισθαι. Mark 14. 33. ^b.
 εκκλησια, assembly. Acts 7. 38. ^b.
 εκκλητευμενοι. Mat. 9. 36. ⁱ.
 εκρατησαν. Mark 9. 10. ^k.
 εκστασις. Acts 10. 10. ^g.
 εκλησατο. Acts 1. 18. ^e.
 εκτος ει μη. 1 Cor. 15. 2. ^c.
 εκτενως. 1 Pet. 1. 22. ^d.
 ελαλησα. John 18. 23. ^b.
 ελαφρον. Mat. 11. 30. ^m.
 το ελαφρον της θλιψεως. 2 Cor. 4. 17. ^a.
 ελαχιστοτερω. Eph. 3. 8. ^f.
 ελεγξει. John 16. 8. ^c.
 ελεγον. Mat. 18. 15. ^d.
 ελεγχος. Heb. 11. 1. ^b.
 ελεημοσυνη. Mat. 6. 1. ^a.
 ελθειςσαι. Mark 16. 1. ^e.
 ελθων και ιδων. Luke 10. 32. ^g.
 ελληνας. Acts 11. 20. ^b.—Acts 19.
 10. ^e.
 ελληνισται. Ac's 6. 1. ^a.
 ελληνιστας, for ελληνας. Acts 10. 20. ^b.
 ελυμινετο. Acts 8. 3. ^c.
 ο εμβολιπομενος. Mark 14. 20. ^h.
 εμβλεψας. John 1. 36. ^f.
 εμβριμνησάμενος αυτω. Mark 1. 43. ^a.
 PP

- ἐν τῇ αὐτῇ ἡμέρᾳ. Acts 21. 27 b.
 ἔρχομαι ἐν ὑμῖν. Acts 7. 16 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 5. 28 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι μετ' ὑμῶν. John 1. 16 b.
 ἐκείνη ἡμέρα. Jam. 1. 24 f.
 οὐ, for οὐ. John 5. 4 i.
 οὐ θύει ὑπερμαρτυρεῖ. John 3. 21 b.
 οὐ καὶ ἔρχομαι. 1 Cor. 7. 39 b.
 ἐν ὑμῖν, among you. Rom. 1. 11 b.
 οὐ καὶ ἐκπορεύομαι. Eph. 1. 3 d.
 οὐ καὶ ἀνέλθω. Heb. 3. 15 a.
 οὐ καὶ ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Luke 2. 49 f.
 οὐ γὰρ, on this account. Acts 24.
 16 c.
 ἐκείνη. 2 Thess. 1. 5 a.
 καὶ ἀνέλθω. Luke 13. 33 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Cor. 5. 8 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 6. 12 f.
 οὐ ἐκπορεύομαι μετ' ὑμῶν. Luke 4. 18 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 2. 16 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ὑπερμαρτυρεῖ. 1 Cor. 12. 10 i.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. James 5. 16 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι οὐ καὶ ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Eph.
 2. 2 d.
 ἀνέλθω ἐκπορεύομαι. Gal. 5. 6 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 1. 23 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι οὐ καὶ ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. 2 Cor. 6. 16 c.
 οὐ ἐκπορεύομαι ὑπερμαρτυρεῖ. Acts 16.
 13 a.
 ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Luke 11. 41 c.
 ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Luke 10. 42 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 5. 2.
 ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Mat. 23. 26 f.
 ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Luke 17. 21 b.
 ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Mark 7. 11 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι. Rom. 8. 27 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Eph. 5. 16 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 1. 81 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι καὶ ἀνέλθω. Jam. 1.
 14 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Luke 19. 48 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 9. 29 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 16. 14 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 3. 15 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 9. 18 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 15. 37 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 2. 21 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 8. 42 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ὑπερμαρτυρεῖ καὶ ἐκπορεύομαι.
 3 John 7 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι καὶ ἐν ταῖς ψαῖσις μου. Acts 13. 42 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 2. 47 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 8. 13 b.
- ἐκείνη. Luke 9. 31 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 11. 25 g.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Cor. 12. 4 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 2. 4 d.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Rom. 13. 2 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 10. 18 d.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 1 Cor. 9. 12 g.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 5. 1 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 13. 15 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 3. 16 d.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 18. 4 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Gal. 1. 18 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 20. 10 i.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 1 Pet. 3. 21 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Jam. 5. 1 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 25. 36 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 8. 44 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Eph. 6. 16 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 2. 38 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 3. 7 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 14. 3 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 14. 72 p.
 ἐκπορεύομαι καὶ ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 7. 59 g.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Pet. 1. 20 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 6. 11 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 3. 10 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Jam. 1. 27 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Cor. 12. 9 g.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 1 Cor. 7. 48 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 26. 3 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 8. 45 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι.
 Luke 1. 17 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Acts 26. 18 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι.
 Luke 22. 32 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Cor. 11. 28 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 3. 12 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Pet. 1. 5 g.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 2 Cor. 7. 2 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 8. 28 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mark 3. 14 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Heb. 7. 9 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. 1 Cor. 9. 2 b.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 6. 27 a.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 12. 18 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 5. 39 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 5. 21 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 9. 36 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. for ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 16. 28 i.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 11. 3 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Luke 14. 32 c.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. Mat. 19. 17 f.
 ἐκπορεύομαι. John 16. 7 b.

ἰσθῆλα λαμπραν. Luke 23. 11 b.
 ἐσκηνώσεν. John 1. 14. n.
 δι. ἐσοπύρι. 1 Cor. 13. 12 i.
 τῆς ἀγέλης—οἱ ἐσηκασί. Rev. 8. 2 h.
 ἐσπερώσε. Acts 3. 16 c.
 νουκοφανήσας. Luke 19. 8 e.
 ἐσχατοί. 1 Cor. 4. 9. b.
 ἐσχαλως ἐχει. Mark 5. 23 b.
 το ἐσώθεν. Luke 11. 41 c.
 εἰποιμασαι. Luke 12. 47 o.
 ἐρποποφορησεν. Acts 13. 18 f.
 εὐμπατισθησαν. Heb. 11. 35 d.
 ευ. Mat. 25. 21 b.
 ευαγγελιζεσθαι. Acts 8. 4 c.
 ευγενεστέροι. Acts 17. 11 e.
 ευδοκησα. Mat. 3. 17 h.
 ευδοκησεν. Luke 12. 32 d.
 ευδοκία. Luke 2. 14 i.—2 Thess.
 1. 11 d.
 μετ' ευδοκίας. Phil. 2. 13 h.
 οἱ τῆς ευεργεσίας ἀνίλαμβανομενοι. 1
 Tim. 6. 2 i.
 ευεργεταί. Luke 22. 25 f.
 ευηγγελισμενοι. Heb. 4. 2 f.
 ευηγγελίζετο. Luke 3. 18 i.
 ευθεως. Mat. 3. 16.—Mat. 24. 29 b.
 ευθεως ἐξεβαλεν. Mark 1. 43 c.
 ευθεως μέλλει σπευδῆς. Mark 6. 25 n.
 ἐρημ τῆς ευθυνητός. Jam. 3. 4 d.
 ευκαιραν. Acts 17. 21 h.
 ευλογητός. Luke 1. 48 d.
 ευλογία. Rom. 16. 18 a.
 ευλογων. Luke 1. 64 c.
 ευνοχος. Acts 8. 27 c.
 ευπεριστατον αμαρτιαν. Heb. 12. 1 o.
 ἰσθι ευνοων. Mat. 5. 25 q.
 ευρισκω. Rom. 4. 1 a.
 ευρισχει παρωτος, &c. John 1.
 41 h.
 ευροκλυδων. Acts 27. 14 g.
 ευσχημονως. Rom. 13. 13. i.
 ευτραπείλια. Eph. 5. 4 g.
 εφεω πάντες ημαρτον, unto which.
 Rom. 5. 12 d.
 Εφεσς, — τῆς Ἀσίας ἱκανον οχλον.
 Acts 19. 26 c.
 εφοιμωθη. Mat. 22. 12 g.
 εφοβείτο. Mark 6. 20 h.
 ἐχαρησαν χαραν μεγαλην σφοδρα. Mat.
 2. 10 m.
 ἐχαρισάτο το βλέπειν. Luke 7. 21 c.
 εως. Luke 24. 30 a.
 εως αν επιηθε. Mat. 23. 39 h.

Z.

ζευκτηρίας των πηδαλιων. Acts 27. 40 f.
 ζηλετε τα χαρισματα τα κρειττονα.
 1 Cor. 12. 31 h.
 ζημια. Acts 27. 21 i.
 ζημιωθη την ψυχην αυτου. Mark 8. 36 f.
 ζιζανια. Mat. 13. 30 a.
 ζωα. Rev. 4. 26 c.
 ζωῶν. 2 Tim. 2. 6 c.
 ζυγην. Luke 5. 10 f.
 ζωνας. Mat. 10. 9 i.

H.

η, or John 1. 21.—Mark 6. 13 f.
 η, indeed. Mat. 7. 9 e.
 ηγαλλιασατο ενα ἡδη πην ημεραν την
 εμην. John 8. 56 d.
 ηγγικε. Luke 21. 8 f.
 ηγορασαν. Mark 16. 1 c.
 ο ηγαμενος τε λογος. Acts 14. 12 g.
 ηγωνιζοτο. John 18. 36 e.
 εκ ηδεν οἱ εστιν ἀρχιερεως. Acts 23.
 5. c.
 ηδη, even. 1 Cor. 6. 7 e.
 ηκιστατε την οικονομιαν. Eph. 3. 2 f.
 ηκω. John 8. 42 g.
 ηλθον, age. Mat. 6. 27 h.
 ηλικια, stature, Luke 2. 52 h.
 ημελλεν αυτον παραδιδοναι. John 6.
 71 g.
 εν τη εμερα εκεινη. Mat. 13. 1 a.—
 Mark 4. 35 a.
 εν ημεραις εκειναις. Mat. 3. 1 e.—
 Mat. 13. 1 a.
 ημερας γενομενης Acts 16. 35 a.
 τας ημερας. Luke 9. 51 b.
 εν μια των ημερων. Mat. 13. 1 a.
 ην. John 1. 9 e.
 ην ωσει εἶλον τρεῖς κοῦλα ἀρχομενος. Luke
 3. 23 i.
 ηξει. John 6. 37 g.
 ηρυσασθε. Acts 3. 13 a.
 εκ ηρνησατο. John 1. 20 a.
 ηρχοντο εις Καπερναεμ. John 6. 17 a.
 ηλησατο. Acts 7. 46 h.
 συ αν ηλησας αυτον. John 4. 10 h.
 ηυξανε και επληθυνετο. Acts 12. 24.
 καθως πυρορειο τις. Acts 11. 29 h.

Θ.

θανατον η μεν θεωρηθη εις τον αιωνα.
 John 8. 51 c.

ὁ δὲ θεὸς. Mat. 6 1.
 ἡλικία. Rom. 1. 20 &c.
 ἡλικία τοῦ σώματος. Luke 13. 21.
 ἡλικία. 2 Cor. 8. 10 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 8. 44.
 ἡλικία τοῦ σώματος. John 7.
 17.
 ἡλικία. Eph. 2. 31.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. Mat. 3. 8 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 1. 43 &c.
 ἡλικία. Col. 2. 18.
 ἡλικία. John 1. 19.
 ἡλικία. Rom. 15. 17 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 20. 28.
 ἡλικία. Luke 12. 42.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 12. 10 &c.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. Luke 7. 44 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 6. 40.
 ἡλικία. Luke 11. 24 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 28. 4.
 ἡλικία. 2 Cor. 6. 4.
 ἡλικία. John 1. 27.
 ἡλικία. 2 Cor. 2. 14 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 7. 28 &c.
 ἡλικία. Rom. 2. 9 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 20. 6 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 13. 21 &c.

I

ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. Luke
 — 4. 18.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. John 1. 11.
 ἡλικία. John 3. 18.
 ἡλικία. Acts 1. 23.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. Luke
 12. 44.
 ἡλικία. 2 Cor. 11. 6 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 6. 3 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 9. 24.
 ἡλικία. Mark 15. 15 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 16. 22.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 3. 40 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 11. 38 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 27. 46 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 11. 12 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 1. 13 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 20. 16.
 ἡλικία. Phil. 2. 6 &c.
 ἡλικία. Gal. 1. 18.
 ἡλικία. Luke 10. 27 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 16. 3.

ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. &c.
 Mat. 1. 11 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 3. 18 &c.

K

ἡλικία. Gal. 4. 12 &c.
 ἡλικία. Jam. 1. 27 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 2. 22 &c.
 ἡλικία. 1 Cor. 4. 13 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 1. 33 &c.
 ἡλικία. 1 Cor. 9. 4 &c.
 ἡλικία. Jam. 4. 4 &c.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. &c. John
 6. 14 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 12. 17 &c. —
 Mat. 12. 50 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mark 9. 12 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 12. 8 &c. — Mark
 3. 11 &c. — Mark 6. 4 &c. — Acts
 7. 3 &c.
 ἡλικία. ἡλικία. ἡλικία. John
 14. 50 &c. — John 17.
 25 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 15. 14 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 13. 6 &c.
 ἡλικία. Eph. 6. 19 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 24. 32 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 21. 24 &c.
 ἡλικία. Acts 24. 25 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mark 11. 13 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 18. 50 &c.
 ἡλικία. } Rom. 1. 29, 6.
 ἡλικία. }
 ἡλικία. Mat. 27. 20 &c.
 ἡλικία. 1 Cor. 10. 27 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 12. 31 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 12. 12 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mark 10. 25 &c. — Mat.
 21. 24 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 13. 9 &c.
 ἡλικία. 2 Cor. 2. 17 &c.
 ἡλικία. Luke 10. 27 &c. — Eph. 4.
 18 &c.
 ἡλικία. Mat. 7. 16 &c.
 ἡλικία. understood. Acts 10. 38 &c.
 ἡλικία. after the example of. Rom.
 14. 16 &c.
 —fer. Tit. 1. 1 &c.
 —time. Rom. 8. 27 &c.
 —time. seasonably. Rom. 5.
 6 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 5. 4 &c.
 ἡλικία. John 6. 3 &c.
 ἡλικία. 1 Tim. 2. 9 &c.

καταλαλή. Rom. 5. 11. a.
καταλυσαι παρὰ τινι. Luke 19. 7. d.
εἰ πῶς καταμήνησω. Phil. 3. 11. h.
καταπιη. 1 Pet. 5. 8. b.
καταπονιζέσθαι. Mat. 14. 30. z.
καταρτέομαι. 1 Cor. 15. 24. f.
καταρτήθη. Rom. 6. 6. f.
καταρτήση. Heb. 2. 14. h.
καταρτίσιν. 2 Cor. 13. 9. z.
κακῶς φρενιάσῃσι. 1 Tim. 5. 11. k.
κατασφάζει. Luke 19. 27. i.
καταχθονιοι. Phil. 2. 10. c.
κατειδώλον. Acts 17. 16. b.
κατεκείλο. Mark 1. 30. f.
κατελελειμμένον. John 1. 5. f.—30. q.
κατελελειμμένον, like. Rom. 4. 17. c.
κατελελειμμένον αὐτοῦ 2 Cor. 11. 9. f.
κατελελειμμένον. Rom. 7. 8. d.
κατελείπει. 1 Cor. 15. 2. b.
κατηνεγκαψήφον. Acts 26. 10. g.
κατηνίκησε. Acts 18. 19. a.
κατηχηθῆς. Luke 1. 4. i.
κατοπιζέχομενοι. 2 Cor. 3. 18. c.
κατορθώματων γινόμενων. Acts 24. 2. f.
καυσῶν. Luke 12. 55. c.
καυχήμα. Gal. 6. 4. c.
καυραμένος. Acts 18. 18. a.
κεῖται. 1 Tim. 1. 9. c.
• κόσμος οὗτος ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ. 1 John
5. 19. c.
κεραία. Mat. 5. 18. b.
κεραία. Luke 15. 16. d.
κερδήσαι ζημῖαν. Acts 27. 21. i.
κεφαλὴν γυναικός. Luke 20. 17. f.
κηρυττός. John 20. 15. i.
κηρύξας. 1 Cor. 9. 27. n.
κηρύσσειν. Acts 8. 5. c.
κηρύσσειν. Mat. 10. 7. f.
κήρυξ. Mat. 12. 40. e.
κινεῖσθαι. Acts 17. 28. p.
κλίσσας. Mat. 6. 30. l.
κλινῶν τὸ πρὸς τὸν εἰς τὴν γῆν.
Luke 24. 5. c.
κλῆρος. Mark 12. 42. h.
κλῆρος εἰς τὸ εὐαγγέλιον. Phil. 1. 5. d.
κλῆρος χλαμύδα. Mat. 27. 28. t.
κλῆρος. Acts 5. 13. h.
κλῆρος τῆς Αβραάμ. Luke 16. 22. c.
κλῆρος. John 5. 2. c.
κλῆρος. Acts 16. 12. h.
κλῆρος. John 4. 38. c.
κλῆρος. Luke 16. 6. b.
κλῆρος. Mark 8. 19. e.
κλῆρος. 1 Cor. 16. 13. z.

Vol. v.

κλῆρος. Luke 1. 3. h.
κλῆρος ἀναστάσεως. Heb. 11. 35. f.
κλῆρος. Mat. 5. 40. n.
κλῆρος. 1 Cor. 11. 29. n.—Jam.
3. 1. a.
κλῆρος. Mat. 6. 28. i.
κλῆρος. Acts 15. 19. z.
κλῆρος. 1 Cor. 15. 39. e.
κλῆρος. Luke 21. 19. m.
κλῆρος. Rom. 8. 12. a.
κλῆρος. Eph. 4. 14. n.
κλῆρος. Mark 15. 31. a.
κλῆρος. Acts 25. 26. z.
κλῆρος. Gal. 5. 21. f.
κλῆρος. Luke 1. 22. k.—Mat. 12.
22. d.

Λ.

λαβῶν. Luke 22. 19. d.
ἐν τῷ λαλῆσαι. Luke 11. 37. a.
λαμβανέτω. Rev. 22. 17. a.
λαμβάνω. Rom. 5. 17. h.
λαβρεῖαν προσφέρειν τῷ Θεῷ. John 16.
2. b.
λαβρεῖαν. Rev. 22. 3. b.
λαβρεῖαν. Rom. 12. 3. c.
τῷ λαῷ λαλῶν. Acts 19. 4. b.
λαβρεῖαν. 2 Cor. 9. 12. d.
λαβρεῖαν. John 13. 10. d.
λαβρεῖαν. Luke 12. 59. h.
λαβρεῖαν. Luke 9. 29. d.
λαβρεῖαν. Mat. 21. 33. a.
λαβρεῖαν ἐκ πνεύματος ἐξιστάτω. Mark 6.
51. i.
λαβρεῖαν. Rom. 8. 35. h.
λαβρεῖαν τῷ Θεῷ. 2 Cor. 3.
5. d.
λαβρεῖαν. Luke 1. 2. d.—John 1. 1. a.
οὗτος λαβρεῖαν, ἐκείνος κλῆρος αὐτοῦ.
John 12. 48. b.
λαβρεῖαν, matter. Mat. 26. 44. g.
ἐπὶ τῷ λαῷ αὐτοῦ. Luke 1. 29. b.
τῷ λαῷ—τῷ δυναμένῳ, &c. Acts
20. 32. o.
τον λαγον ἐκράτησαν. Mark 9. 10. k.
λαβρεῖαν τῆς χάριτος. Luke 4. 22. l.
λαβρεῖαν. Acts 5. 13. h.
λαβρεῖαν. Tit. 3. 5. d.
λαβρεῖαν. Mat. 26. 27. b.
λαβρεῖαν. 1 John 3. 8. i.
λαβρεῖαν. Luke 11. 34. h.

Μ.

Μαγδαληνή. Luke 8. 2. z.
Μαγδαληνή. Q q

- μαρτυροῦν. Acts 8. 2. 5.
 μαρτυρῶ. Mat. 2. 1. 2.
 μαρτυροῦν. Mat. 28. 19. 1.
 μαρτυρῶ, for μαρτυρεῖν. Acts 23. 27. 2.
 μαρτυροῦν. Luke 1. 48. d.—Mat.
 5. 3. d.
 μαρτυροῦν. Gal. 4. 15. 1.
 μαρτυροῦν. Rom. 2. 4. 24. 1.
 μαρτυροῦν. Luke 13. 7. 1.
 μαρτυρῶ. Acts 26. 24. p.
 Μαρτυρῶ. Luke 24. 10. 2.
 μαρτυρῶ. Luke 7. 21. d.—Mark
 5. 29. 5.
 τὰ μαρτύρια Θεοῦ καὶ σωτῆρος ἡμῶν. Tit.
 2. 13. b.
 μαρτυρῶ. 1 Cor. 11. 21. 5.
 μαρτυρῶ. John 2. 10. 2.
 μαρτυρῶ. Mat. 12. 6. 6.
 μαρτυρῶ. Luke 22. 26. 5.
 τὴ μαρτυρίαν. Rom. 5. 14. 5.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. Phil. 4. 12. b.
 μαρτ. Acts 19. 4. b.
 μαρτυρῶ. Acts 14. 3. b.
 μαρτυρία. Col. 1. 12. 2.
 μαρτυρία. 1 Peter 5. 7. 4.
 μαρτυρία. Mat. 6. 25. 5.
 μαρτ. Luke 10. 42. 5.
 τὴ μαρτυρίαν. Luke 5. 19. 5.
 μαρτὶ τοῦ ὕψους, beyond. Heb. 7. 23. 5.
 μαρτυρία. Acts 5. 37. b.
 μαρτὶ τῆς ἀντι. Luke 21. 41. 2.
 μαρτυρία. Luke 12. 7. d.
 οὐκ ἐστὶ μαρτυρὶ σωφρονισμοῦ. Acts 13.
 42. 5.
 οὐ καὶ μαρτυροῦμαι. 2 Cor. 7. 8. 5.
 μαρτυροῦν. Luke 12. 29. 5.
 μαρτυρία. Acts 7. 4. d.
 μαρτυρία. John 2. 6. b.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. Heb. 5. 2. 6.
 οὐ καὶ τὸ πᾶν. Luke 5. 12. 5.
 ἀγαθὰ καὶ σωφρονισμῶν. 1 Cor. 16. 2.
 σὺ μαρτ. Luke 14. 18. b.
 μαρτῶ. Rom. 4. 4. 5.
 μαρτ. Luke 19. 13. 5.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. διδάσκων—μαρτῶ. οὐ ἀποστολῶ.
 Luke 1. 73. 73. 5.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. Mat. 5. 32. 5.
 μαρτ. John 14. 2. d.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. Rom. 2. 20. d.
 μαρτυρία. Rom. 10. 8. b.
 μαρτυροῦμαι. Mat. 18. 6. 5.
 μαρτυρία. Acts 21. 20. b.
 μαρτυρία. Mat. 5. 13. 2.
 μαρτ. Mat. 5. 22. 5.
- 8.
- Ναζαρεθ. Luke 8. 2. 2.
 Ναζαρεθ. Mat. 2. 23. 1.
 να. Mark 7. 28. d.
 ναυαγιστὴς. Mark 10. 20. 5.
 ναυ. John 13. 24. 6.
 ναυαγος. Acts 19. 35. 5.
 ναυαγος. Luke 22. 26. 5.
 ναυαγιστὴς. 1 Cor. 14. 20. 2.
 ναυαγος. Luke 11. 43. 1.
 ἐξ ὑπὸ ναυαγ. Rom. 3. 20. b.
 ναυαγιστῶν. Rom. 1. 20. 6.
 ναυαγιστῶν. Tit. 2. 10. 2.
 ναυαγ. 1 Tim. 6. 4. 5.
 ναυ. Eph. 4. 18. b.—ib. ver. 23. b.
 ναυαγ. Luke 12. 53. d.
 ναυαγιστῶν. Mat. 12. 40. 6.
- 9.
- ξηροῦται. 1 Pet. 4. 4. 1.
- O.
- ὄψα. John 11. 39. b.
 ὄψα. Acts 10. 11. b.
 ὄψα. John 19. 40. 2.
 ο, for τὸν. Mat. 28. 17. 2.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν τὸ Θεόν. Eph. 2. 19. 2.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Mark 6. 4. 6.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Mat. 13. 27. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 9. 31. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Luke 2. 4. d.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Luke 2. 1. 5.—Acts 11.
 29. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Tit. 2. 5. d.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 26. 28. q.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. 1 Thess. 5. 23. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. John 7. 23. b.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Luke 12. 54. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 4. 24. 2.
 τὸ οὐκ ἐστὶν. Jud. 7. 6. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. James 5. 17. 2.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. 1 John 4. 2. b.
 μετὰ τὸ οὐκ ἐστὶν. Mat. 5. 34. 1.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 4. 12. b.
 τὸ οὐκ ἐστὶν—ὁ οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 3. 16. 5.
 διατὸ οὐκ ἐστὶν. Mat. 10. 22. 6.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 1. 15. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Rom. 6. 13. b.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. 2 Cor. 10. 4. b.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Acts 3. 19. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Mat. 16. 6. 5.
 οὐκ ἐστὶν. Luke 12. 15. b.

ορδοδομεῖν τον λογον. 2 Tim. 2. 15. ^k.
 ορει φηλαφωμενω. Heb. 12. 18. ^f.
 ορδοδομενια. 2 Tim. 2. 15. ^f.
 ορισθεντος. Rom. 1. 4. ^b.
 ορκες. Mat. 14. 7. ^m.
 ορμηκεαλι βληθησαι. Rev. 18. 21. ^f.
 οριη. Rom. 2. 9. ^e.
 ος αν ειπη. Mat. 15. 5. ^g.
 οσιολης της αληθειας. Eph. 4. 24. ⁱ.
 ολι, *therefore*. Luke 7. 47. ^k.
 ολι, *surely*. John 7. 12. ^k.
 ουδε εν. John 1. 3. ^d.
 οκ αν, *not, by any means*. 1 Cor. 2. 8. ⁱ.
 ουκει ο φεθσε—υμεις παντες. Acts 20. 25. ^f.
 εν, *and or now*. John 12. 17. ^k.
 εν, *for*. Luke 11. 36. ⁱ.
 εν, *therefore*. Mat. 7. 12. ⁱ.—
 Acts 14. 3. ^b.
 επω. John 7. 8. ^f.
 ελος. Acts 7. 36, 38. ^b.
 ελος ο Μωυσης. Acts. 7. 37. ^b.
 ελιως εκαδιζειο. John 4. 6. ^c.
 ειτως οκ ισχυσαι. Mat. 26. 40. ^e.
 οχλος ιερων. Acts 6. 7. ^b.
 εκ τε οχλω. Luke 11. 27. ^e.
 οφε σαβδωλων. Mat. 28. 1. ^a.
 οφιας γενομενης. Mark 4. 35. ^a.

Π.

παιδεια και νηθεσια. Eph. 6. 4. ⁱ.
 παιδιοθεν. Mark 9. 21. ^c.
 παιδαγωγος. Gal. 3. 26. ⁱ.
 εν τη παλιγγενεσια. Mat. 19. 28. ⁱ.
 παν εθνος αυθρωπων. Acts 17. 26. ⁿ.
 πανηλυγει. Heb. 12. 23. ⁱ.
 πανοπλα. Eph. 6. 11. ^a.
 Εν πανεργια προς την μεθοδειαν της
 πλανης. Eph. 4. 14. ⁿ.
 παντα μοι παρεδοθη. Mat. 11. 27. ⁱ.
 εις το πανιλειες. Luke 13. 11. ^b.
 παντοκρατωρ. Rev. 1. 7. ^e.
 παντως, *on the whole*. 1 Cor. 9. 10. ^f.
 παρ' αυτη. John 7. 29. ^d.
 παραδιδωμαι. Luke 24. 29. Acts
 16. 15. ^g.
 παραβολη. Heb. 11. 19. ^b.
 παραγων. John 9. 1. ^a.
 παραδειγματισαι. Mat. 1. 19. ^b.
 παραδοθησαι. Mark 10. 33. ^a.
 παραδοκη. 2 Tim. 1. 12. ^f.
 παρακληση. Acts 9. 31. ^t.
 παρακλησειν. Col. 2. 2. ^e.

παρακλητος. John 14. 16. ^b.
 παρακυψαι. 1 Pet. 1. 12. ^b.
 παρακυψας. Jam. 1. 25. ^b.
 παραλαμβανει. Mat. 4. 5. ^f.
 παραληφθησαι. Luke 17. 34. ^e.
 παρκαλοισομενοι. Jam. 1. 22. ^g.
 παρρασημον. Acts 28. 11. ^h.
 παρρασησαι. Rom. 12. 1. ^b.
 παρρηρειν. Mark 3. 2. ^f.
 παρρηριμενος. Acts 17. 3. ^b.
 παρεθηκε το πνευμα. John 19. 30. ⁱ.
 παρεισηλθε. Rom. 5. 20. ⁱ.
 παρεκαλεσαν. Acts 16. 32. ^e.
 παρελθων. Luke 17. 7. ^d.
 ποιρει. Luke 7. 4. ^b.
 παρηκολυθηκοις πασι ακριβως. Luke
 1. 3. ^e.
 παραξυσμος. Acts 15. 39. ^b.
 παρησιγ. Mark 8. 32. ^c.—Acts 4.
 29. ^c.
 παρησιγαζομενοι επι τω Κυριω. Acts
 14. 3. ^c.
 παρωξυνειο. Acts 17. 16. ^a.
 πατερα ιδιον. John 5. 18. ^c.
 πατερων επι τεκνω. Luke 1. 17. ^g.
 πατρια. Luke 2. 4. ^d.
 πατριδα. Heb. 11. 14. ⁿ.
 πεσθω. Gal. 1. 10. ⁱ.
 πενθερα. Luke 12. 53. ^d.
 πεντε. Acts 7. 14. ^h.
 πεπληροφωρημενων. Luke 1. 1. ^c.
 πεποιημενων. Heb. 12. 27. ^q.
 πεπραγμενον αυτω. Luke 23. 15. ^d.
 περαν, *about*. Mat. 4. 15. ^b.—Mat.
 4. 25. ⁿ.
 δια τη περαν τη Ιορδανη. Mark 10. 1. ^b.
 περι παντων. 3 John 2. ^b.
 οι περι αυτον. Mark 4. 10. ^g.
 τας περι Μαρθαν και Μαρναν. John
 11. 19. ^b.
 περιελοντες τας ανγκρας, εωσιν εις την θαλασσαν. Acts 27. 40. ^e.
 περιεπειραν. 1 Tim. 6. 10. ^e.
 περιεσπαλο. Luke 10. 40. ^c.
 περιλυπος. Mat. 26. 37. ^b.
 περιπατει. 1 Pet. 5. 8. ^h.
 περιποιειν. Acts 20. 28. ^k.
 περιποισεως. Eph. 1. 14. ^o.
 περισσον. John 10. 10. ^f.
 εκ περισσου ελεγε μαλλον, &c. Mark.
 14. 31. ^d.
 περιφηματια. 1 Cor. 4. 13. ^e.
 ωσει περυσιν. Mat. 3. 16. ^g.
 περ' προς. 1 Cor. 13. 4. ^f.

- πίστις. Mat. 6. 26. f.
 πισκιδος. Luke 1. 63. b.
 πισαξ. Mark 6. 25. c.
 πιστοις εις τον Θεον, και εις την πιστιν
 John 14. 1. c.
 ο πιστος εις τον υιον. John 3. 36. i.
 πιστος. Acts 1. 8. a.
 δια πιστης της αγνης Col. 2. 12. f.
 πιστος. Gal. 5. 22. e.
 πιστος, *fidelity*. Mat. 23. 23. a.
 πιστος. John 12. 3. d.
 πιστος. Luke 19. 21. c.
 πιστος τον υιον. John 21. 15. a.
 πιστος δους. Heb. 11. 4. c.
 πιστος. Eph. 5. 3. f.—2 Cor.
 9. 5. a.
 πιστος πιστος. Luke 10. 30. c.
 πιστοποιησαι. Rom. 14. 5. c.
 πιστοποιει. 2 Tim. 4. 17. e.
 πιστοποιει την την. Acts 1. 16. d.
 πιστος. Eph. 1. 23. d.
 ο αυτος εστις ο πιστος πιστος.
 Col. 1. 19. c.
 πιστος. Mat. 5. 17. a.
 ο πιστος πιστος της πιστοποιης, της
 συνεισεν. Col. 2. 2. f.
 πιστος. John 6. 22. b.
 πιστος. Mark 6. 51. b.
 πιστος. Eph. 4. 23. b.
 πιστος Κυρις υιους. Acts 8. 39. a.
 πιστος πιστος πιστος συγκατα. 2
 Cor. 2. 13.
 τα πιστος της πιστος, ο πιστος πιστος.
 Eph. 6. 12. c.
 πιστος της πιστος—ο πιστος. Eph.
 2. 2. d.
 πιστος. Luke 11. 40. b.—1 Cor.
 11. 24. g.
 πιστος πιστος. John 8. 31. c.
 πιστος πιστος. Rev. 21. 27. i.
 πιστος πιστος. Luke 1. 72. d.
 ο πιστος. Luke 23. 34. f.
 πιστος της αληθειας. John 3. 21. i.
 της πιστος αληθειας. Luke 2. 39. p.
 πιστος πιστος. Phil. 1. 27. i.
 πιστος οχλος. Acts 6. 7. b.
 πιστος πιστος αληθειας. Mark 3. 12. e.
 πιστος ο γραμματις εις μαντι
 πιστος. Acts 26. 21. a.
 πιστος πιστος. John 3. 23. a.
 ο πιστος. Acts 26. 29. n.
 πιστος πιστος πιστος. Phil. 1. 23. c.
 πιστος πιστος. Acts 24. 10. a.
 πιστος. Rom. 1. 29. .
- ο πιστος. b.
 τα πιστος. Mat. 5. 37. h.—Mat. 6.
 13. c.
 τα πιστος. Mat. 5. 39. i.
 πιστος τα πιστος—πιστος. Acts
 9. 31. i.
 πιστος. Mat. 5. 32. f.—Mat. 19. 9. f.
 Acts 15. 29. e.—1 Cor. 6. 18. b.
 πιστος. 1 Cor. 5. 9. f.
 της πιστος. Mark 15. 20. p.
 πιστος. 2 Cor. 11. 26. e.
 πιστος. Luke 22. 20. d.
 πιστος. 1 Tim. 5. 1. a.
 πιστος πιστος. Acts 1. 18. f.
 πιστος. John 10. 9. c.
 πιστος της πιστος. Acts 5. 36. h.
 πιστος. Mark 14. 68. i.
 πιστος πιστος. Mat. 14. 8. n.
 πιστος πιστος. Jude 4. b.
 πιστος. Acts 2. 23. b.
 πιστος. Rom. 3. 25. f.
 πιστος πιστος. Jude 14. c.
 πιστος πιστος αληθειας της πιστος. Rom. 12.
 10. a.
 ο πιστος πιστος. Eph. 2. 10. i.
 πιστος. Rom. 1. 15. d.
 πιστος. 1 Thess. 5. 12. a.
 πιστος πιστος. 2 Cor. 9. 5. a.
 πιστος πιστος, } Acts 3. 20. f.
 πιστος πιστος. }
 πιστος πιστος. Acts 15. 3. c.
 πιστος, of, or concerning. Heb. 1.
 7. c.
 πιστος. Rom. 5. 2. b.—Eph.
 2. 18. f.
 πιστος πιστος. Luke 8. 43. c.
 πιστος πιστος. 1 Tim. 6. 3. a.
 πιστος πιστος. Heb. 11. 6. b.
 πιστος πιστος. Acts 2. 41. c.
 πιστος πιστος. Luke 6. 12. b.
 πιστος. Acts 16. 13. a.
 ο πιστος και πιστος. Mat. 17. 21. b.
 τα πιστος πιστος. Acts 17. 13. i.
 πιστος. Mat. 2. 2. d.
 πιστος πιστος. Mark 2. 32. b.
 μη πιστος. John 8. 6. d.
 πιστος πιστος. Mat. 6. 23. a.
 πιστος. Phil. 4. 8. f.
 πιστος. Eph. 5. 2. d.
 πιστος πιστος και πιστος. Acts 17.
 26. c.
 ο πιστος. John 1. 21. c.—John
 7. 40.—John 7. 52. i.
 πιστος. Acts. 4. 28. b.

πρωίως γενομένης. John 21. 4. ^a.
 πρώτῳ. 2 Cor. 4. 6. ^g.
 πρώτη της, for πρώτης. Acts 16. 12. ^ε.
 πρώτον. John 18. 13. ^a.
 εμε πρώτον υμῶν μερίσθηκεν. John 15. 18^d
 πρώτος μου ἦν John 1. 15. ^b.—John
 1. 30. ^b.

ὢν πρώτος εἰμι ἐγώ. 1 Tim. 1. 15. ^d.
 πρώτος της νεσε. Acts 28. 7. ^ε.
 τον πρώτοστοκον. Mat. 1. 25. ^f.
 πρώτοστοκος πασης αἰσεως. Col. 1. 15.

^b.
 πῶτιομεν. James 3. 2. ^b.
 πυγμη. Mark 7. 3. ^d.
 πυλαι αδε. Mat. 16. 18. ^f.
 πυλων. Acts 12. 13. ^f.
 πυρι αλισθησείαι. Mark 9. 49. ¹.
 πυρεμαι. 2 Cor. 11. 29. ^k.
 πυρωσις. 1 Pet. 4. 12. ^c.

P.

ραβδον. Mat. 10. 10. ^h.
 ραβδεχοι. Acts 16. 35. ^b.
 ρακας αγναφε. Mat. 9. 16. ^d.
 ραπισμα. John 18. 22. ^a.
 ρομφαια. Luke 2. 35. ⁱ.
 ρυμας. Luke 14. 21. ^c.
 ρυσαι ημας απο τω πονηρη. Mat. 6.
 13. ¹.

Σ.

σαβδασιν. Mark 1. 21. ^a.
 το μεν σαβδαιον πυχασαν, &c. Luke
 23. 56. ^c.
 και τε σαβδαι. Mat. 12. 8. ^k.
 σαλευομενων. Heb. 12. 27. ^p.
 σαλευω. Acts 17. 13. ^g.
 σαπρα. Mat. 13. 48. ^h.
 σαπρος. Eph. 4. 29. ^o.
 το καλα σαρκα αναστησιν &c. Acts 2.
 30. ⁱ.

καλα σαρκα και καλα πνευμα. Rom. 1.
 3, 4. ⁱ.

σαλινα. Mat. 16. 23. ^d.
 σεβασμα. 2 Thess. 2. 4. ^d.
 σεβασματια. Acts 17. 23. ^k.
 σεβαςος. Acts 25. 21. ^e.
 σεδομενοι. Acts 17. 17. ^e.
 σεισμος μεγας. Mark 4. 37. ¹.
 σημειον. Luke 2. 24. ^h.
 σημεια ελευθεριας. Mat. 16. 1. ^a.
 σημερον. Mat. 27. 19. ^c.
 σιγῶ. 1 Cor. 14. 30. ^b.

Vol. v.

σιγης γενομένης. Acts 21. 40. ^a.
 σιμικυθια. Acts 19. 12. ^f.
 σιτομεριον. Luke 12. 42. ⁱ.
 σκανδαλιζω. Mat. 5. 29. ^c.
 σκανδαλον. Rom. 14. 13. ^b.
 σκαπτιν. Luke 16. 3. ^a.
 σκευος. Acts 9. 15. ^c.—Acts 10.

11. ^h.—Acts 27. 17. ^g.

σκιαν. Heb. 10. 1. ^a.
 σκιομαχια. 1 Cor. 9. 26. ¹.
 σκοπενῶν. 2 Cor. 4. 18. ^b.
 σκολος το εξῶτερον. Mat. 8. 12. ^ε.
 σκωληνωδρωλος. Acts 12. 23. ^d.
 σεδαρια. Acts 19. 12. ^f.
 σοφοι. Rom. 1. 14. ^c.
 σπαραξαν. Mark 1. 26. ^d.
 σπαιλωσα. 1 Tim. 5. 6. ^d.
 σπεκελῶρα. Mark 6. 27. ^q.
 σπενδομαι. Phil. 2. 17. ^a.
 σπερμολογος. Acts 17. 18. ^e.
 σπλαγχνα ελεος. Luke 1. 78. ^g.
 σπυριδας. Mark 8. 20. ^c.
 σαστος. Acts 19. 40. ^r.
 σαχνας. Luke 6. 1. ^c.
 στεναζει. Jam. 5. 9. ^a.
 στενοχωρια. Rom. 2. 9. ^e.—2 Cor.
 6. 4. ^b.

στενοχωρημενοι. 2 Cor. 4. 8. ^c.
 μη ζησης αἰοις την αμαρτιαν ταυτην.

Acts 7. 60. ^r.

στιγματι. Gal. 6. 17. ^e.
 σολη. Luke 15. 22. ^ε.
 στρατηγοι. Acts 16. 22. ^d. ^f.
 στρηνας. Rev. 18. 3. ^b.
 σρωσον. Acts 9. 34. ^b.
 συ δε ο αυτος ει. Heb. 1. 12. ^h.
 συ μενος παροικεις—και εκ εγνως. Luke
 24. 18. ^c.

συγκρινοντες. 1 Cor. 2. 13. ⁿ.
 συγχρωται. John 4. 9. ^ε.
 συζητιντες. Mark 9. 10. ^k.
 συζητε γνησις. Phil. 4. 3. ^a.
 συκην μιαν. Mat. 21. 19. ^f.
 συλλαμψανω. Luke 22. 54.—Acts
 1. 16. ^b.

συμβαλλασα. Luke 2. 19. ^m.
 συμπεριλαβων. Acts 20. 10. ⁱ.
 συμπληρσθαι. Acts 2. 1. ^b.
 εν τω συμπληρσθαι τας ημερας. Luke
 9. 51. ^b.

συμφυτοι. Rom. 6. 5. ^c.
 συμψυχοι, το εν φρονετις. Phil. 2. 2. ^a
 συναγει καρπων, &c. John 4. 36. ^d.

R R

προσάγω. Mat. 6. 2. a.
 προσκολληθήσθε. Rom. 13. 10. 1.
 προσκολλησάμενοι. Acts 1. 4. d.
 προσκολληθήτω. Luke 10. 40. d.
 προσκολλησάμενος. Rom. 8. 26. 1.
 προσκολληθήτω ἡ καρδία τοῦ ἀκούοντος. Rev.
 12. 10. b.

προσλαμβάνω. Acts 4. 13. f.
 προσλαμβάνετε τὴν χάριν. Acts 13. 2. c.
 προσλαβὼν. 1 Cor. 7. 9. f.
 προσλαβὼν. Mark 12. 32. c.
 προσλαβόμενος. 1 Cor. 7. 29. c.
 προσλαβὼν ἑαυτὸν. Mark 6. 20. 1.
 προσλαβὼν. 2 Cor. 5. 14. 1.
 προσλαβὼν. Luke 12. 50. 1.
 προσλαβὼν ἡμᾶς ἑαυτὸν. Phil. 1. 23. 1.
 προσλαβὼν. Luke 2. 40. 8.
 προσλαβὼν. Acts 12. 12. 1.
 προσλαβὼν. 2 Cor. 2. 4. d.
 προσλαβὼν ἑαυτὸν. Heb. 9. 26. 1.
 προσλαβὼν τὴν χάριν. Mat. 24. 1. d.
 προσλαβόμενος τὴν χάριν. Luke 4. 18. 1.
 προσλαβόμενος. Mark 14. 3. a.
 προσλαβόμενος. Acts 19. 40. e.
 προσλαβόμενος. 2 Tim. 2. 19. a.
 προσλαβόμενος. 1 Cor. 7. 21. d.
 προσλαβόμενος. John 7. 43. 1.
 προσλαβόμενος. Acts 4. 12. a.
 ἡ ἡμετέρα χάρις ἡμεῖς. *ibid.*
 προσλαβόμενος. Mark 5. 28. d.
 προσλαβόμενος. Rev. 18. 13. 1.
 προσλαβόμενος. Luke 4. 22. 4.
 προσλαβόμενος. Acts 26. 25. 1.

π

παλαίω. Mat. 23. 13. 9.
 παλαίω. Mat. 6. 6. 1.
 παλαιωσάμενος. Col. 2. 13. 1.
 παλαιωσάμενος. Jam. 1. 10. 1.
 παλαιωσάμενος. 2 Pet. 2. 4. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 13. 1. 8c. 1.
 παλαιω. 1 Tim. 3. 22. 1.
 παλαιω. 1 Cor. 11. 30. a.
 παλαιω. Luke 12. 32. 1.
 παλαιω. 1 Cor. 10. 11. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 10. 4. 1.
 παλαιω. Mat. 9. 9. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 13. 1. 1.
 παλαιω. Acts 13. 48. 1.
 τὴν παλαιότητα, ἢ ἀρχαίτητα, &c. Mat.
 27. 2. 1.

παλαιωσάμενος. Heb. 4. 13. d.
 παλαιω. John 15. 20. f.
 π. Acts 26. 8. 1.
 π. Acts 10. 10. 1.
 παλαιω. Luke 23. 22. 1.
 παλαιω. John 2. 4. c.
 παλαιω. Rom. 13. 7. 1.—Col. 2. 23. 1.
 π. Acts 18. 2. 1.—Acts 19. 9. d.
 τὴν ἀρχαίτητα παλαιότητα. Mat. 7. 9. f.
 παλαιω. Acts 27. 9. f.
 9. f.
 τὴν ἀρχαίτητα παλαιότητα. Mark 9. 21. 1.
 τὴν ἀρχαίτητα τὴν ἀρχαίτητα. Eph. 4.
 30. q.
 παλαιω. Mat. 19. 4. 1.
 παλαιω. Luke 12. 23. 1.
 παλαιω. John 13. 2. f.
 παλαιω. Mat. 27. 27. 1.—Mat. 27. 27. 1.
 παλαιω. Eph. 2. 8. 1.
 παλαιω. John 19. 14. 1.
 παλαιω. Jam. 1. 17. 1.
 παλαιω. Jam. 3. 6. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 3. 14. 1.—Rom. 6.
 17. 1.
 παλαιω. Acts 18. 17. 1.
 παλαιω. Acts 19. 9. d.
 παλαιω. Luke 10. 41. 1.
 παλαιω. Luke 11. 18. 1.

π

π. Acts 27. 21. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 1. 30. 1.
 παλαιω. Luke 7. 10. 1.
 παλαιω. Mat. 1. 23. 1.
 παλαιω. Mat. 3. 11. 1.
 παλαιω. Mat. 4. 10. 1.
 παλαιω. Mat. 26. 24. 1.
 παλαιω. Acts 12. 13. 1.
 παλαιω. *instead of*, Rom. 5. 6. 1.—1
 Cor. 13. 29. 1.—2 Cor. 5. 20. 1.
 παλαιω, *with respect to*. 2 Thess. 2.
 1. 1.
 παλαιω. 2 Cor. 4.
 17. 1.
 παλαιω. Acts 17. 30. 1.
 παλαιω. Jude 16. 1.
 παλαιω. 2 Cor. 7. 4. 1.
 παλαιω. Phil. 2. 9. d.
 παλαιω. Rom. 12. 3. b.
 παλαιω. Acts 24. 23. 1.
 παλαιω. Heb. 8. 5. 1.
 παλαιω. Rom. 3. 12. 1.

υποδημαῖα Mat. 10. 10. ^k.
 υποκρίναι. Mat. 6. 2. ^c.—Mat. 23.
 13. ⁱ.
 υποληνιον. Mark 12. 1. ^a.
 υπομονη τῶ Χριστῶ. 2 Thess. 3. 5. ^d.
 υποσασις. Heb. 11. 1. ^a.
 υποσειληται. Heb. 10. 38. ^k.
 υποσειλω. Acts 20. 27. ^g.
 ἐπὶ τῇ υποστάσει τῆς ομολογίας ὑμῶν, &c.
 2 Cor. 9. 13. ^c.
 υποστάσει. Jam. 4. 7. ^h.
 υποτίθιμενος. 1 Tim. 4. 6. ^a.
 υπωπιαζῃ. Luke 18. 5. ^z.
 υπωπιάζω. 1 Cor. 9. 27. ^m.
 ἐν ὑψιστοῖς. Luke 2. 14. ⁱ.
 ὑψωσιν. Acts 13. 17. ^e.

Φ.

φαρμακεία. Gal. 5. 20. ^c.
 φαρμακειῶν. Rev. 9. 21. ⁱ.
 φαῖνη. Luke 2. 7. ^b.
 φερομενοι. 2 Pet. 1. 21.
 φερον. 2 Tim. 4. 13. ^b.
 φθινοπωρινα. Jude 12. ^b.
 τας Φιλας. Luke 15. 9. ^c.
 φιλοσοφοι. Rom. 12. 10. ⁱ.
 φιλοτιμεν. Rom. 15. 20. ^h.
 φιλυαροι. 1 Tim. 5. 13. ⁱ.
 φοβον. Rom. 13. 7. ^b.
 φοβουμενος τον Θεον. Acts 10. 22. ^a.
 ε φονευσεις. Mat. 5. 21. ^g.
 φραγγελωσας. Mat. 27. 26. ^q.
 φρονειν. 1 Cor. 4. 6. ^e.
 αυτο φρονειν. Rom. 15. 5. ^b.—
 2 Cor. 13. 11. ^a.
 φρονεις. Mat. 16. 23. ^e.
 φρονημα τῶ πνευματιος. Rom. 8. 27. ^f.
 Το αυτο φρονητε την αυτην αβραπην εχοντες.
 Phil. 2. 2. ^a.
 Το αυτο εις αλληλῶς φροναντες. Rom. 12.
 16. ^b.
 φρεσμενεις. 1 Pet. 1. 5. ^c.
 φυγητε απο της κρισεως. Mat. 23. 33. ^c.
 φυλασσουντες φυλακας της νυκτος. Luke
 2. 9. ⁱ.
 φωνη. Acts 2. 6. ^f.
 φως ερχομενος εις τον κοσμον. John 1.
 9. ^h.
 φωτης. Phil. 2. 15. ⁱ.

φωτα. Acts 16. 29. ^m.
 φωτεινον ολον. Luke 11. 36. ^c.

Χ.

παντοῦν χαιρειτε. 1 Thess. 5. 16. ^c.
 χαρακτης. Heb. 1. 3. ^f.
 χαριν αυτη χαρις. John 1. 16. ^d.
 χαρις. 2 Cor. 8. 1. ^a.—*ib.* 8. 6. ^c.
 —*ib.* 9. 8. ^b —*ib.* 13. 14. ⁱ.
 χαρισασθαι. Acts 25. 11. ⁱ.
 χαρις. Acts 6. 8. ^h.
 χιμαν. Mat. 16. 3. ^b.
 χειρολογειν. Col. 2. 14. ^g.
 δια χειρος ανομων. Acts 2. 23. ^c.
 χειροτονησαντες αυτοις περεσδυτηρας. Acts
 14. 23. ^d
 χηρα. 1 Tim. 5. 3. ^b.
 χιλιαρχους. Mark 6. 21. ^k.
 χιτων. Mat. 5. 40. ⁿ.
 χροτασθησομαι. Mat. 5. 6. ^g.
 χρηματισαι. Acts 11. 25. ^f.
 χρεστος. Mat. 11. 30. ^m.
 χριστινῶν. Rom. 2. 4. ^c.
 χρονος. Rev. 10. 6. ^c.
 χρυσοδακτυλιος. Jam. 2. 2. ^c.
 χωλῆς περιπατηντας. Mat. 15. 31. ^a.
 χωρειν. John 21. 25. ^e.

Ψ.

Το ψευδος. Eph. 4. 25. ^k.
 ψευσασθαι. Acts 5. 3. ^d.
 ψυχη, *life*. Mark 8. 36. ^f.—Acts
 20. 10. ⁱ.
 ψυχη, *soul*. Luke 10. 27. ^c.—
 Acts 2. 27. ^g.

Ω.

ωκοδομηθη. John 2. 20. ^h.
 ωμολογησεν. John 1. 20. ^a.
 ο αν ηκ τῶς γης. John 3. 31. ^f.
 πῶς καιρον ωρας. 1 Thess. 2. 17. ^c.
 ωριζω. Luke 22. 22. ^k.
 ως αγγελος. Mat 22. 30. ^c.
 ωσαυτως απολεισθη. Luke 13. 3. ^b.
 ωπειδῶν τριακοσια αεχομενος. Luke 3.
 23. ⁱ.
 ωσει περσειραν. Mat. 3. 16. ^g.
 ωτε, *therefore*, or *so that*. Mark
 1. 23. ⁱ.

AN INDEX

TO THE FAMILY EXPOSITOR.

REFERRING CHIEFLY TO SUCH ARTICLES AS ARE NOT POINTED
OUT BY THE TEXT ITSELF.

N. B. The Volumes are distinguished by the Roman numbers; and where no volume is marked, it belongs to that which is mentioned last.

A

- AARON**, importance of his family to the Jews, vi. 35. l. Priesthood in it; a proof of the divine legislation *ib.*
Abgarus and Christ, vi. 81, their letters spurious, vi. 404. c.
Abstinence, necessary to cure epileptic disorders, vi. 481. h.
Abyss, vi. 366.
Achaicus visits Paul, viii. 192. a.
Acosta, scourged by the Jews, vi. 394. c. viii. 235. c.
Actions discover the man, vi. 235. l.
Acts, when written, vii. 496. a. make a second part of Luke's gospel, *ib.* universally received by the first Christians as sacred, *ib.* caution relating to them, 230. e. 274. g. allusion in the epistles to facts not mentioned there, viii. 535. a. ix. 141. g.
Addison, Mr. his remarks and criticisms, vi. 222. l. 241. k. vii. 592. n.
Admonition, how to be given, vi. 494. d.
Adoption, what, viii. 471. d. Allusion to different forms of it among the Romans, 461. c.
Adriatic sea, viii. 288. a.
Adultery, prevailed much among the Jews, vi. 528 f. in what case punished by the law with stoning, 527 b. the exceeding sinfulness of it, 529. g.
Age, αἰών σιός, what, viii. 573. f. *ib.* g.
Ælian, of the production of a serpent, vi. 21, 22. i.
Afflictions, their use, vii. 314. c. no excuse for peevishness. 348. f.
Ainsworth, Mr. his account of the *Passover*, vii. 274. c.
Albertus on Simon's gall of bitterness, viii. 23. f.
Alcoran, what it assigns to hypocrites, vii. 253. h.
Allars, more than one under the law, viii. 491. a.
Ananias, the high priest, a person of an infamous character, viii. 240. c. d.
Anathema-ma-an-atha, the high sentence of excommunication, vii. 322. a. ix. 116. e.
Angels, often applied to men, and rendered messenger, &c. vii. 246. e. viii. 81. h.
Angels, (good) concerned in limiting the power of devils, x. 406. h.
Angels, (evil) vide *devil* and *Satan*.
Anger, whether possible to be angry without sin, ix. 369. l. Variety of phrases used in prohibiting it, ix. 373. a. to be especially avoided in prayer, ix. 583. g.
Anointing the sick with oil, why used by the apostles, vi. 403.
Antioch in Syria, who first planted the gospel there, viii. 72. a.
Antipater, concerned in seeking the death of Christ, vi. 86. l.
Antoninus, remarkable expression of his about God, viii. 501. f.
Apocryphal gospels, not referred to by Luke, vi. 21 a.
Apollo, whence called *Pythius*, viii. 145. c. fled at the name of Jesus, 155.
Apollonius Tyanæus, many things said of him borrowed from the history of Christ, vi. 471. c.
Apostates, the apostles reproving them, with great freedom, shews they feared no discovery they could make, ix. 580. b.
Apostle,

Believe in his name, a Hebraism, vi, 140, 1.
Believing in Christ, what, viii, 149, o, the jailor and his house saved by it, *ib*, p, all that believe justified, 101, q.
Bellarmin, on Christ's lambs and sheep, vii, 476, b.
Belly, often put for the mind or heart, vi, 522, c.
Benson, Dr. his history of the first planting the Christian religion, vii, 496, a.
Bentley, Dr. his remarks, viii, 168, m, 285, g.
Bethany, its boundaries, vi, 489, a, no reason to suppose there were two places of that name, vii, 154, a.
Bethesda, its form, vi, 251, d, healing virtue of its water, what occasioned by, 252, f, how to be accounted for, 252, g, why not mentioned by Josephus, *ib*, g, served to illu- strate the power of Christ, 253, h.
Bethlehem, appointed for the place of Christ's birth, 50, a, providence of God in bringing his parents thither, vi, 64, e, Jesus born there, *ib*, f.
Bethpage, its extent, vii, 154, a.
Bethsaida, its site, vi, 419, a, two places of this name, vii, 168, b.
Bigotry, spoils a good disposition, vi, 400, c.
Bishop, his character and duty, ix, 587, &c. and notes, yet not fully enumerated, 588, c, how he was in danger of undertaking his office by constraint, x, 295, b, of falling into condemnation and the snare of the devil, ix, 589, f, g, —the husband of one wife, 587, a, explained by a deaconess being the wife of one man, 604, i, b'shops and presbyters of the same, x, 49, e, 295, a. Several bishops at Philippi, ix, 412, c. No direction given to presbyters to obey Bishops, 588, c. No reason to believe the messengers of the churches were diocesan, 188, 432, d, nor the angels of the seven churches in Asia, x, 435, e, not mentioned in the epistle to the Corinthians, though so natural an occasion offered, 85, e, nor in Paul's list of ecclesiasticks, 362, k.
Bishops, a title given to the elders of the church at Ephesus, viii, 207, a, 209, how constituted by the Spirit, 210, i, date of the distinction between them and presbyters, 207, a, the Asian bishops not all present, 207, b, nor Timothy considered as bishop of Ephesus, when Paul took his leave of the elders of that church, 209, e, Speech of James, no instance of his acting with the authority of a bishop, 128, i, nor any one styled bishop of Jerusalem so early, 220, b.
Bless, how we are said to bless the sacramental elements, ix, 19, a.
Blessed, sometimes to be translated happy, vi, 42, d, 200, d.
Blessed is he, &c. vii, 19, how to be understood, *ib*, i, cannot refer to Christ's triumphant entry, *ib*, 226, h.
Blind, restored by Christ, vi, 452, *ib*, b, vii, 72, d, &c.
Bochart, his remarks, vii, 578, a, viii, 291.
Body of Christ, meant by the temple, vi, 139, 269, f, sealing the sepulchre done to prevent any attempt, either to remove or embalm it, vii, 432, i, absurdity of the soldiers in saying, that the disciples stole the body, while they slept, 453, d, why his

body, might retain marks of the wounds after his resurrection, 466, e.
Body, put for the whole man, viii, 503, and 504, b.
Bonds, prisoners sometimes brought to plead in them, viii, 279, r.
Bonnet, Mr. his *Life and Harmony* commended, vii, 369, b, remark on his, *ib*.
Book of life, what, ix, 446, c, x, 447, g, 507, g.
Books, anciently made of scrolls of parchment, rolled on sticks, vi, 177, d.
Bos, his observations and remarks, vi, 563, c, vii, 366, p, viii, 508, c, 550, d, 560, h.
Boxers, allusion to their manner of exercising, ix, 32, j, m.
Buse, his remarks, viii, 382, i, viii, 189, e.
Bragg, Mr. his explanation of Christ's coming in his own glory, vi, 468, h.
Bramins, a notion of theirs, and a conjecture about the occasion of it, x, 193, b.
Bread, put for the provisions of a royal table, vi, 440, e, for a sumptuous feast, vii, 25, a, See *at Bread*.
Breaking bread, true interpretation of it, vi, 203.
Breaking the bruised reed, &c. a proverbial expression, vi, 278, g.
Brekell, M. his remarks, viii, 209, g, 285, g, 290, c.
Brennius, his observations, vi, 584, p, vii, 16, e, 27, f, viii, 154, g, 197, o.
Brethren, often applied to near kinsmen, vi, 385, d, the apostles all brethren, vii, 218, g. Brethren, or private christians join with the apostles in the Jerusalem decree, viii, 131, n.
Bridegroom, his delight in the bride, 153, vi, e, Christ the bridegroom of his church, 373, b.
Britain, whether visited by Paul, viii, 305, b.
Browne, (Sir Thomas,) remark of his viii, 81, h.
Bullock, Dr. his answers, vi, 307, g, remarks and observations, vii, 258, b, vii, 534, i, 586, a, viii, 28.
Burnet, (Bishop) his remarks, vi, 24, b, vi, 209, r, 463, g, viii, 67, a, vii, 453, d, 336, f.
Burnet, (Dr. Thomas) his arguments about the renovation of the earth, &c. vii, 107, i, vii, 535, g.

C.

Cæsar, his rights asserted by Christ, ii, 330, c, Christ's followers charged with acting contrary to his decrees, iii, 251, d.
Cæsarea, a city on the Mediterranean, far distant from Cæsarea Philippi, viii, 30, o, 216, e, near 70 miles from Jerusalem, 249, b, the usual residence of the Roman governor, 53, a.
Cæsarea Philippi, reason of its name, &c. vi, 464, c, a different place from the Cæsarea mentioned in the Acts, *ib*, viii, 30, o, seems to be the place to which Saul was conducted, when the Jews were contriving to kill him, viii, 44, q.
Caiaphas, the high priest, probably deputy to Annas, when John began his ministry, vi, 95, f, how mentioned as high priest, when the Sanhedrim met about Jesus, viii, 128, a, when the veil was rent, was probably burning

- as possible, vii, 565, e, a due attention to the three grand canons would render many others needless, *ib. c.*
- Cicerly*, a remarkable expression of his concerning the death of friends, ix, 525, b.
- Circumcision*, not originally of Moses, vi, 515, g, was performed on the sabbath-day, *ib.* obviates a considerable objection against infant-baptism, *ib.* g, circumcised Christians were sometimes spared when others were persecuted, ix, 306, d.
- Clerus*, allusion to the races there, ix, 112 f.
- Cities*, rich cities frequently licentious, vi, 309, b.
- Clark*, (Dr. Samuel) of St. Alban's, his sermons on Paul's reply to Agrippa, vii, 280, c.
- Claudius* Cæsar, when he began his reign, A. 479, *famines* during it, v. i, 74, g, which of them was foretold by Agabus, *ib.* orders all the Jews to depart from Rome, 173, b.
- Cleanthes*, his hymn to Jupiter, viii, 169, q, referred to by Paul, *ib.*
- Clemens* Alexandrinus, on Mark's gospel, vi, 478, i, vi, 344, d.
- Clemens* Romanus, mentions Gaul and Britain among the disciples of Paul, viii, 305, g.
- Geophilus*, husband to Mary, vii, 413 b, seems to be the same with Alpheus, 509, e, 413, b, marriage at Cana, thought to have been at his house, vi, 131, b, was one of the two disciples, to whom Christ appeared in the way to Emmaus vii, 454, f.
- Cloak*, better rendered *mantle*, vi, 214, n.
- Closet*, to be chosen for prayer, vi, 220, g.
- Coat*, better rendered *vest*, v, 24.
- Cock-crowing*, the common time of it, vii, 294, g.
- Cohort*, of how many soldiers it consisted viii, 53, a.
- Coliber*, Mr. his scheme, vii, 287, k.
- Colossians*, the epistle to them when written, viii, 305, g.
- Columelus* and others on the sixth hour, vii, 395, m.
- Comet*. See *Conflagration*.
- Commandment of God*, to love one another a new, vii, 292, b.
- Community of goods*, not general among Christians, ix, 620, d, among the first converts, vii, 524, i, 546, e.
- Consecration*, how any may be said to be registered to it, x, 404, b, 410, f.
- Confessing Christ*, why so much stress laid on it in scripture, x, 563, b, 367, a, our faults one to another, no foundation for auricular confession, x, 246, f, 1 John i, 7, absurdly produced to prove it, 339, d.
- Confirmation*, what alledged as a foundation for it, viii, 21, b.
- Conflagration*, Mr. Whiston thinks it will be occasioned by a comet, x, 559, f. Mr. Fleming thinks some saints will rise while it continues, viii, 584, d.
- Confucius*, a remarkable saying of his about princes governing their families ix, 589, c.
- Conquerors*, an allusion to their giving largesses to the soldiers, ix, 361, h.
- Contentions* occasioned by the gospel, no argument against its authority, vi, 400, b, a contentious temper, the occasion of sin and scandal, vi, 53, a, those that rose early in the church, wisely permitted, ix, 261, e.
- Contentment*, the attendant and fruit of godliness, ix, 615, d.
- Controversies* about little things, the danger of them, x, 19, e.
- Conversation*, rules for conducting it, ix, 371.
- Corban*, supposed to be an oath, vi, 441, f.
- Corinthians*, much addicted to lewdness, ix, 36, e, what their fault about the Lord's supper, 53, e, d, 54, e.
- Corn*, the eastern manner of threshing it alluded to, ix, 25, c.
- Cornelius* his station, viii, 53, a.
- Corners*, of the earth, what, x, 547, f.
- Corruption*, put for the grave, viii, 100, p.
- Covenant of redemption*, observation on it, vi, 283, c, Abrahamic, why called *covenants*, ix, 340, b,—at Sinai, made no express provision for the pardon of wilful sin, viii, 484, c, how a covenant imports the death of that by which it is confirmed, x, 144, &c.
- Covetousness*, the precept that forbids it relates to the heart, and proves the spirituality of the law, viii, 445, b, how it is idolatry, ix, 376, h, and pierces persons through with many sorrows, 616, e.
- Courts of judicature* among the Jews, vi, 207, h.
- Crates*, a remarkable saying of his about ornaments of dress, x, 227, a.
- Cretans*, their character, x, 52, b.
- Criticisms*, unnatural ones a disonour to scripture, vi, 264, e.
- Cross* to be taken up for Christ, vi, 401, d, usually carried by them that were crucified, vi, 401, d, vii, 400, b.
- Crowns* bestowed in the games, their different kinds, ix, 231, i.
- Crucifixion*, a Roman punishment, vii, 132, b, exquisite anguish of such a death, 407, c.
- Cup*, its signification, vii, 134, d, 437, d, eastern custom relating to it, *ib.* John painted with such a cup, 134, when called the *new covenant*, how to be understood, 297, e.
- Cymbal*, what, and how filty mentioned by the apostle, ix, 70, c.
- Cyrene*, natives of it preached to the Greeks at Antioch, viii, 72, b.
- Cyrenius* invested with the care of the enrolment at the time Christ was born, vi, 62, b, spoken of as governor of Syria, 269, e.

- Faith*, who meant by those under it, ix, 426, e.
- Earthquakes* in divers places before Jerusalem was destroyed, vii, 232, v.
- East* and west, most enlightened by the gospel, vi, 295, e.
- Eat-bread*, a Hebraism, vi, 440, e, its signification, vii, 25, a.
- Ecclesiastical rulers*, in what case with pleasure to be submitted to, vi, 463, h, discussion of their right viii, 132, q, 133, t, censures, attended with civil inconveniences, their effects, x, 435, e.
- Egypt*, its literature, vii, 580, d, Christians of the manner in which some of them partook of the Lord's supper, ix, 53, c.
- Elders*, respect paid by the Jews to their traditions, vi, 459, c, who intended by the *elders of the people*, vii, 185, e, then first mentioned in the Christian church, viii, 75, k, how constituted, 113, d, the term sometimes only means aged persons, ix, 620, d.
- Ellipsis*, instances of it, vi, 441, k, 534, d, 559, e, viii, 9, e, 26, b.
- Emmatus*, where situated, vii, 454, h.
- Enallage*, very frequent, vi, 571, e, vii, 481, see *metonymy*.
- Enemies of Christ*, slain before him; to what it may refer, vii, 148, i.
- Emeloh* language, its poverty, vi, 45, b, 273, b, 419, b.
- Enoch's prophecy*, a foolish book, not quoted by Jude, x, 410, e,—his prophecy of the Lord's coming, *ib.* f.
- Enrollment*, at the time Christ was born, a proof that the Jews were subject to the Romans, vi, 62, many tumults occasioned by the taxation it was followed with, vii, 559, g.
- Entertainments* often made in the idol's temple, ix, 20, e, hereby communion with the idol maintained, 40, b, 41 c.
- Enty* and Lavington, their dispute with Mr. Hallet, viii, 210, e.
- Ephesus*, the people there addicted to magical arts, viii, 191, i, zealous for the worship of Diana, 197, a, remarkable for learning and abandoned characters, ix, 333, b, fewer irregularities in that church than in most to which St. Paul wrote, 112, f, they seem to have reformed what he blamed, x, 435, e.
- Ephraim*, where it lay, vii, 15, a, 129, c.
- Epigreeans*, account of their principles, viii, 164, d, joined with the stoics in opposing Paul, *ib.* their contempt of him, 165, e, how they mistook his doctrine, *ib.* f, 170, s.
- Essenes*, a sort of hermit Jews, vi, 374, e, abstained from flesh and even fruits, viii, 520, b.
- Everlasting* continuance of future rewards, &c. why so expressly ascertained, ii, 590, h.
- Evil* thoughts, how better rendered, vi, 445 b.
- Evil speaking* forbidden, what, ix, 484, a.
- Eunuch*, the Hebrew for it sometimes properly rendered an officer, vii, 25.
- Example*, of Christ, what it should teach us, vi, 312, l.
- Excommunication*, various kinds of it among the Jews, vii, 322, a, learnedly described by Grotius, vi, 285, c, in the power of particular churches, viii, 603, i, the ill effects of annexing civil inconveniences to it, x, 435, e.
- Executioners*, none in ancient times, vi, 408, p.
- Exorcisms* practised by the Jews, vi, 322, i, disappointment of the exorcists at Ephesus, viii, 190, g.
- Extacy*, the manner of it, viii, 55, g.
- F
- Faith* sometimes put for fidelity, vii, 222, a, of God, what, viii, 405, b, an assent to the truth of Christianity, ix, 580, a.
- False Messiahs*, how received by the Pharisees, vi, 265, g, many appeared during the siege, vii, 242, l, and the close of the Jewish state, 231, f, prophets, how they come, vi, 335, k, their signs and prodigies, no reason against admitting many, vii, 242, l.
- Family-prayer*, its tendency to preserve family peace, vi, 205, e, ix, 370, m, x, 279.
- Farrings*, Roman, their value, vi, 570, b.
- Fathers of the Christian church*, how far to be relied on, viii, 229, c, supposed, that each good man has his guardian angel, vi, 493, a.
- Feast*, used to signify the passover, vi, 250, a, Christ might omit attending some of the great feasts, 431, b, why Paul might chuse to attend them, vi, 509, b, 511, i, viii, 182, c, 205, l, of dedication, why observed by the Jews, vii, 58, c, 88, a, kept in December, *ib.* Samaritans refuse to entertain Christ going to this feast, 56, a, his cure at it of the blind man, 70, a, of tabernacles, design of its institution, vi, 509, the seventy probably sent out before it, 504, a, 546, b.
- Felix*, an oppressive governor, viii, 250, e, presided in Judea several years, 254, a, Egyptian impostor defeated by him, 228, a, how long governor, when Paul was brought before him, 254, a.
- Festus* applied to by the Jews to send Paul to Jerusalem, viii, 262, f, will have him tried at Cæsarea, 262, g, tells Paul he is unad, 277, u, 278, o.
- First day of the week*, the usual time when the disciples celebrated the eucharist, viii, 203, g.
- Flesh*, what put for, vi, 143, d, often signifies man in this calamitous state, 28, m.
- Flesh of Christ*, how to be eat, vi, 427, f, 432, f, works of the, include errors and evil dispositions of the mind, ix, 295, b.
- Flowers*, remark on them, vi, 229, k.
- Flute-players*, or minstrels, when used, vi, 380, l.
- Fool*, how sometimes to be rendered, vi, 208, m, to what it answers to, 207, l.
- Foppery* in men or women reprov'd, ix, 583, k.

ix, 341, c, in what sense, they were atheists, *ib.* their moralists thought *lying* in some cases justifiable, 369, k,—if virtuous, whether accepted through the atonement of Christ, x, 342, b.

Heaven, the joys of it, how represented, vii, 49, e, Christ's intimation of his own ascending to it, vi, 435, b, how said to prepare it for us, vii, 302, f.

Hebraisms, not retained in the version, vi, 38, d, 48, g, 71, f, 440, e, vii, 44, e, where they may be fitly retained, 342, i.

Hebrews, why complained of by the Grecians, vii, 564, b.

Hell, what a fit emblem of it, vi, 103, n, seldom intended by the Greek word *Hades*, 462, f, the meaning of the word *hades*, x, 434, b, and of *Tartarus*, 317, e.

Hellenists, complain their widows are neglected, vii, 564, b, deacons, most of them Hellenists, 566, f.

Herald, in the public games, Paul compares himself to one, ix, 52, n.

Heresy, Paul's worship of God, styled so by the Jews, viii, 255, c, something worse than schism, x, 53, b, one of the works of the flesh, ix, 296, e.

Hereticks, who, v, 484, g, Jews kept at a great distance from those they reckoned such, vi, 327, d.

Herod the Great, a cruel prince, vi, 78, e, complimented with the title of *the Messiah*, 274, f, account of his disease, viii, 86, d.

Herod Antipas, account of his quality, vi, 86, i, 404, b, and lineage, vii, 383, a, combines with Pilate against Jesus, viii, 545, b, dies in banishment at Lions, vi, 408.

Herod Agrippa, his lineage and arrival to the throne, viii, 77, a, imprisons Peter, 78, d, puts the keepers to death on his escape, 82, m, goes to Casarea, 84, a, makes a public oration there, 85, b, is eaten with worms, 86, c, d.

Herodians, account of that sect, vi, 274, f.

Herodius seduced and married by Herod, vi, 157, a, the cause of his ruin, 158, g, is incensed against John the Baptist, *ib.*

Hesiod, his character of a good ploughman, vi, 361, k.

High-priest, who when David eat the shewbread, vi, 269, e, two mentioned as high-priests when John began his ministry, 95, f, Caiphas spoken of as high-priest, vii, 127, a.

Hinnon, Valley of an emblem of hell, vi, 208, n.

Holy city, a title given to Jerusalem, vi, 113, g, often applied by the Heathens to those cities, where oracles were delivered, *ib.* the ground about Jerusalem counted *holy*, 238, vii, a.

Homer's description of Tartarus illustrates, 2 Pet. ii. 4, e.

Hope, how the Gentiles without it, ix, 341, c, 119, c.

Horses and chariots, the use of them in war forbidden to the Jews, vii, 157, h.

Hosannah, its signification, vii, 158, i.

Hospitality, peculiar occasion for practising it in the apostles' time, viii, 509, a.

Hours differently computed by the Jews and Romans, vii, 395, m, how the Jews computed them, vii, 527, b, not probable, that John should use the Roman account, vii,

395, m, or that mark, when he mentions *the third hour*, should not mean *the hour of the day*, 403, d.

Hours of prayer, the third and ninth reckoned the chief, vii, 527, b.

House, to be rendered *family*, vi, 61, d. 385, f.

Houses of the Jews, flat on the top, vii, 63, d, vi, 227, e.

Howling, remark on it, vi, 380, k.

Humiliation, *ταπεινωσις* expresses the disposition of a man's mind, *ταπεινωσις* his condition, x, 214, f.

Humility, a lesson that occurs ten times in the evangelists, vii, 218, k, instance of it in Peter, viii, 68, b.

Hundred-fold, an increase that sometimes happened, vi, 341, e.

Hymn, called the *Hallel*, sung by the Jews at the Passover, vii, 298, h, uncertain whether the hymn used by Christ at the close of the eucharist, *ib.*

Hyrcanus destroys the temple on mount Gerizim, vi, 165, o, obliges the Idumæans to become Jews, 276, b.

I

Jackson, (Dr. Thomas) his curious discourse on the prophecies, vi, 303, g.

Jailor at Philippi, who supposed by some to be, vii, 150, r.

Jamblicus a story of him, whence borrowed, vi, 471, c, p offers the Pythagoreans to all others, vii, 292, was little regard to truth, when falsehood may cast a slur upon Christianity, *ib.* what he says of Pythagoras, 487, q, r—mark on his account of what Pythagoras did in Italy, vii, 523, e, his agreement with the words made use of by Luke, viii, 113, g.

James the Less, the son of Alphaeus, a near relation of our Lord, vi, 309, e, wrote the epistle, viii, 81, i, no probability of his vowing not to eat till Jesus arose, vii, 464, b, why Peter would have James informed of his deliverance out of prison by an angel, viii, 81, i, it does not appear from scripture, that James was bishop of Jerusalem, viii, 220, b.

James the Great, the son of Zebedee, is chosen an apostle, vi, 281, e, is beheaded at Jerusalem, viii, 77, b, was the first of the apostles, who suffered martyrdom, vi, 134, e.

Jason, seems to have been a relation of Paul, viii, 157, c.

Idol, a Jewish aphorism that an idol is nothing, ix, 19, c.

Idolaters, how they changed the truth of God into a lie, viii, 390.

Idolatries, of the Romish church, x, 487, h.

Idolatry practised by the Jews in the wilderness, vii, 588, d. Athens greatly addicted to it, viii, 163, b, 165, i, modesty of the apostles in bearing their testimony against it, 197, o.

Idumæans obliged to become Jews, vi, 276, b.

Jealousy, the ground of the phrase, "provoking the Lord to Jealousy," x, 41, d.

Jechonias, the same with Jehoiakim, vi, 57, g, h, how spoken of as *childless*, *ib.* i.

Jeremiah, expected to return to life by the Jews,

destruction, vii. 512. p. gives a moving account of the calamities attending the siege, vii. 240. e. 297, e. 240. f. his account of the destruction of Jerusalem, agrees with what was foretold by Christ, vii. 162. b. 230. c. the care of Providence in preserving such an author to us, *ib.* the truth of his history attested by the Emperor Titus, vii. 512. p. why he suppresses some remarkable facts, vi. 252 g. vii. 414. e. viii. 86. d. 173. d. vi. 84. f.

Judaizing teachers, why so solicitous to prevail on Christians to be circumcised, ix. 302. e. 306. c. d. had peculiar spleen against Paul and Barnabas, 24. d. imposed ceremonies on converted Gentiles, ix. 276. e. why the apostle so strenuously opposed them, 260. e. d. 271. i. 276. f.

Judas, or *Jude*, account of him, vii. 502, b. vii. 309, e. 413, b.

Judas Iscariot, account of him, vi. 282. vii. *ib.* f. conjecture on his following Christ, *ib.* f. g. why taken notice of by each of the evangelists, 270, b. a finished hypocrite, 309, d. why Judas was not rather struck than Malchus, when Peter drew his sword vii. 356. l. his miserable end, a proverbial form of cursing, 504, g.

Judas, surnamed *Barnabas*, goes with Paul and Barnabas to Antioch, viii. 131, k.

Judea, Herod the Great King of it, vi. 30. 76. Archelaus king there, 86. Pontius Pilate governor of it, 94. Felix presides there, viii. 254, a. is succeeded by Festus, 261, the copious dew that fell there dangerous, vi. 453, c. vii. 352, a. the coldness of the nights more sensible in those hot countries, 364, l.

Judges, remark on their succession, viii. 96, h.

Judgment of zeal, what called so by the rabbies, vii. 592. p. the Jews in stoning Stephen acted on that principle, *ib.* would have pleaded it, if they had murdered Paul, viii. 224, m.

Jupiter and *Mercury*, how represented by the Heathens, viii. 113, g. supposed to have often descended in the likeness of men, *ib.* g. occasion of the fable of Europa being carried away by Jupiter in the shape of a bull, 226, h.

Jurica, Mr. strange argument of his, vi. 333, k.

Justification the import of the word, viii. 410, a. refers not merely to external privileges, 423, a. but generally to the transactions of the last day, 465, d. yet believers are sometimes said to be justified now, *ib.* it sometimes signifies freedom from the bondage of sin, 435, g. by faith and the imputation of Christ's righteousness reconciled, 417, e. to be had by Christ, iii. 193, r. to justify, what it sometimes signifies, i. 320, c.

Justin, his notice of the beauty of Moses, vii. 580, b.

Justin Martyr, shews how industriously the Jews endeavoured to propagate the story, that the body of Jesus was stolen away, vii. 453, e. and to represent the Christians as *atheists*, viii. 302, a. his account of the high characters Simon Magus assumed, 18, h.

K.

Karaites, remarks on them, vi. 565, g. vii. 216, c.

Kiss, a religious rite borrowed from the Jews, why laid aside, viii. 543, k. customary in receiving guests, vi. 316, g.

Knowledge, perfection in it, a character of the Messiah, vi. 128. f. his knowledge of the most minute fortuitous events, vii. 155, b. 273, b. of persons continued after the present life, vii. 49, e. of divine things, from revelation, viii. 163, b. knowledge, wisdom, and understanding, distinguished, ix. 163, g.

L.

Lacedemonian law, about stealing wrong, ix. 370, n.

Laconic style, a fine instance of it, x. 273, d.

Lamentations for the dead, vi. 580, l.

Law of Moses, required spiritually of obedience, vi. 205, a. of God, his law not to be disobeyed, though a greater quantity of good might arise thereby to our fellow-creatures, viii. 407, f. without any limitation, often means the Mosaic, 397, h. sometimes the whole Old Testament, 408, i. sometimes the ceremonial, moral, natural, and revealed, 411, b. broken, must for ever condemn, ix. 263. Mosaic, was given 430 years after the promise to Abraham, ix. 267, b. restrained from sin more powerfully than the mere light of nature, viii. 451, s. nevertheless the heights of virtue attained under it were not by it, but by evangelical promises, *ib.* t.

Law-suits, to be avoided, vi. 209, 214, n. 286.

Lawyers, account of them, vi. 549, 564, f. 565, g.

Laying on hands, a rite early used in blessing young persons, vii. 99, a.

Lazarus, what the name signifies, vii. 48, a.

Leicester Manuscript, negligently collated, vi. 277, d.

Lending, to whom, vi. 288, c.

Lepers, not allowed to live in towns, vi. 214, b.

Letters, the Jews wondered Jesus should understand, vi. 513, a. esteemed the highest part of literature, viii. 95, d.

Levites, how Barnabas, being a Levite, might sell his estate, vii. 549, b.

Liberality, cautions against those evasions by which persons excuse the neglect of it, ix. 303, d.

Libertines, who, vii. 568, l. their dispute with Stephen, 568, 569, 571, a.

Liberty, of private judgment, strongly asserted, viii. 521, e.

Life, of God, what, ix. 366, a. Christ has life in himself, vi. 259, 260, is come that we might have life, vii. 83, f.

Light-Houses, Christians, compared to them, ix. 428, i.

Like, the phrase [*it is like*] how used often vi. 307, i. vii. 196, a.

Liturgies, whether we have a direction to draw one up, ix. 581, c.

Locusts eaten by John the Baptist, vi. 97, k.

Logos (the word) how rendered by some, vi. 23, a. the creation of all things, by it, a Jewish

- Mary, Magdalene*, why so called, vi, 319, a, whom thought to be, vii, 116, a.
- Mary*, of Bethany, who, vi, 319, b, vii, 116, a.
- Mary*, the mother of John Mark, the disciples met at her house to pray, viii, 80, 81.
- Master*, how rather to be expressed, vi, 378, n.
- Matthew*, makes a feast for Christ, where many publicans eat with him, vi, 371, a. is more exact than Luke in the series of his story, 184, k; uses the plural number for the singular, vii, 409, n, his gospel written some years after Christ's resurrection, vii, 453, e.
- Matthias*, the apostle, no reason to conclude from his name, that he was the same with Nathane, vii, 506, m.
- Measures* of the ancients, not certainly known, vii, 133, h, contents of several Jewish measures, *ib*, vii, 43, b.
- Mediterranean Sea*, sailing there, hazardous after September, viii, 284, e. furious kind of winds there, 285, g.
- Meekness* to be shewn under affronts and injuries, vi, 214, m, how Christ declares himself to be meek, 312, l.
- Melchiselec*, how without father and mother, x, 125, b.
- Melita*, or Malta, Paul shipwrecked there, viii, 294, a, the inhabitants, why called Barbarians, *ib*, b, conclude Paul to be a murderer, *ib*, d, but afterwards take him for a god, 295, f.
- Menandrians*, who, x, 338, b.
- Messengers* of the churches, not diocesan bishops, ix, 452, d.
- Messiah*, expected by the Jews at the time of Christ's coming, vi, 32, d, 74, m, and looked for as the Son of God, 113, d, spoken of by the Jews, as he that was coming, 301, e, expected also by the Samaritans, 153, q many signs marked out the time of his coming, 456, a, the Jews supposition of his coming, v, 517, a, intimations given of the peaceful state of his kingdom, 587, c, the glories of his kingdom, how considered by the pious Jews, vii, 302, e, Jesus is cautious of receiving the title from them, vi, 195, e, was known by his apostles to be the Messiah, 473, f, owes himself to be so to the blind man, vii, 79, e, &c. the notion of two Messiahs, vi, 301, c, 517, a.
- Midnight*, absurd opinion of some concerning it, vii, 256, b.
- Millennium*, conjecture on it, vii, 67, d.
- Minister*, (vide bishop) are to preside over the church, ix, 533. a. x. 199. a. to preserve peace and charity, as well as orthodoxy, ix, 363. o. should rebuke with severity, yet long-suffering, x. 52. c. The salvation of their hearers may have an influence on their own, ix, 600. i. The right of people to choose their ministers vindicated from some objections, x. 15. e. 32. c.
- Minstrels*: see *Flute-players*.
- Miracles* of Christ, his first public one wrought at Cana, vi, 134. l. had probably wrought private ones before, *ib*. the particulars of many not transmitted to us, 140. k. 179. m. more beneficial ones wrought by Christ in one afternoon, than by any of the prophets in all their lives, 383. n. paralleled between those of Moses and Christ, vii, 80. f. were a specimen of the power he claimed, vi, 197, b. how unbelief prevented Christ from working them, vi, 179, m. avoided ostentation in them, vi, 242, e. vii, 118, d, 123, g. Jesus alone invested with the power of working them, whenever he pleased, vii, 320, i. not to be used for ostentation, 487, r a power which the apostles could not exercise at all times, viii, 22, d. 132, q. observable difference between Christ and them, in the manner of working them, 48, a. attempt of performing them in public, a remarkable instance of fai h, vii, 184, b. why Peter wrought no miracle, on his first preaching to the Gentiles, viii, 63, h. or prodigies, shewn by false prophets, no reason against admitting miracles as a proof of doctrines, vii, 242, l.
- Mirror*, the proper import of *esoplon*, ix, 74, l, fine allusion to one, 150, &c. e.
- Misfortunes* befall the best of mankind, ix, 203.
- Mite*, the value of it, vi, 589. h.
- Mitres* worn by bishops, what supposed to allude to, vii, 508. c.
- Moabites* not to enter into the congregation of the Lord, how to be understood, vii, 55. d.
- Model* of doctrine, into which Christians are delivered, viii, 439. a.
- Moderation* of Paul, remark on it, viii, 278. p.
- Modesty* of Christ, vi, 242. e. 381. m. vii, 116. d. 123. g. of the sacred historians, viii, 141. f.
- Moloch*, what he might represent, vii, 589. e.
- Moral philosopher*, passage of Eusebius applicable to him, vi, 27. l.
- Morrow*, to-morrow and the third day, what it signifies, vii, 18. g.
- Mosaic sacrifices*, their use, x, 140. f.—dispensation, refers to the gospel, *ib*. e. a shadow of it, 148. a. doomed to death those that wilfully violate it, 79. e.
- Moses*, the mediator of the Sinai-covenant, ix, 268. e. which could not set aside the Abrahamic, because he was not the mediator of it, *ib*. f.—some remarkable stories told of him by Josephus, x, 170. f.
- Michael's* dispute about his body, 346. h.
- Mother* of James and John, the sons of Zebedee,

- believe different from Mary the mother of James the Less, vii. 413. b.
- Mount Gerizim*, see *Gerizim*.
- Mount of Olives*, Jesus makes his public entry from thence into Jerusalem, vii. 144. a. takes his disciples to the high-places of Bethany, on the Mount of Olives, 413. a. Olives, whence he is content, how far, distant from Jerusalem, vii. c. vii. 503. b.
- Murderers* where they sat, vii. 120. d.
- Myriads*, of people chosen to hear Christ, vii. 503. a. some of whom might be afterwards converted, 579. c. myriads of believing Jews at Jesus can denote a great number, vii. 503. b.
- Mystery*, how by the calling of the Gen. tiles was a mystery, ix. 347. c. how told in Gen. 249. a.
- Mysteries*, as teachers rates of instruction allotted to, ix. 373. l. 402. a. 451. b.
- N.**
- Nazareth*, account of it, vi. 108. d.
- Name* of a child, the father's office to give it, vi. 54. c. usually given at the circum-cision, 44. a. how to be given in baptism, 45. d. of a person, what office put for, vi. 140. l. 109. c. what contained in it, when applied in God or Christ, 143. b. whatness is asked in the name, of Christ, he will meet, vii. 255. c. some maintained his faith to his name, (143. d.)
- Nazareth*, the strongest doctors of the time, vii. 206. b.
- Nazareth*, Jesus is called, vi. 87. c. Paul charged it a stronghold of the Nazarenes, vii. 351. 355. c.
- Nazareth*, in Galilee, an infamous place, vi. 147. d. 50. a.
- Near*, one of his disciples not said to have been converted by Paul, vii. 305. c.
- Nets* that gathered so good fish and so, an emblem of what, vi. 324. b.
- Night*, the account of the death of Sathan, vi. 403. b.
- Nine*, one of the seven disciples, vii. 305. c. not the founder of the sect of Nazarenes, 45. c.
- Ninevehites*, who, x. 101. b. 311. a. perhaps the followers of Jereboam, 304. a.
- Night* during one hour watched, vi. 319. d. when spent by Christ in prayer, vi. 280. b. vii. 379. b. Certain Jews at Ephesus had their night meetings, vii. 411. a.
- Nine*, condemned the old world by her, nothing matter for its condemnation, x. 163. l. How he was the eighth person, 117. c.
- Nathanael* at Capernaum, who thought to be, vi. 173. d.
- Nine* evidence among the primitive ministers, not convalesced at, vii. 207. a.
- O.**
- Obey* used by St. Paul vindicated, ix.
144. g. where required, vi. 275. a.
- Objections* of the Pharisees in their discussions about them, vii. 730. m. See *Sermon*.
- Obscene* talk, properly called corrupt, and forbidden, ix. 370. c. Many rites of the heathen worship were obscene, 36. c.
- Offering* him, fumes of it, vi. 211. c. 428. c. offerings to be salted with fire, 481. l.
- Old man*, the meaning and propriety of the phrase, ix. 360. l.
- Old Testament*, a hint given for improving its promises, x. 149. c.
- Omnia*, the meaning of the word, x. 70. a.
- Oniphorus*, his friendship to Paul, vii. 194. a.
- Opening* the mouth, what expressive of, vi. 106. c. vii. 60.
- Oratory*, or prayer-house, Christ spends the night in it, vi. 700. b. their situation, &c. 15. vii. 144. a.
- Order* of the sacred story, not always clearly determined, vi. 40. b. 301. d. events often connected, which did not immediately follow, 75. c. viii. 50. d. which might sometimes happen twice, vi. 206. d. rules for settling it, 184. k. 194. a. 127. b. 175. a. vii. 30. c.
- Origen*, his testimony to the scriptures, vii. 343. m.
- Orison*, sometimes not to be expressed by a single word, vi. 494. d. See *Prayer*.
- Ornaments* of dress, the prohibition of these not absolute, x. 277. b. a remarkable saying of Christ, concerning them, 30. a.
- Orison*, his objection against the account of calling the Gentiles, answered, vii. 400. a.
- Orison*, account of his harmony, vi. 107. m.
- Orison*, essentially the chief parts of a royal entertainment, vii. 196. c.
- P.**
- Palm Sunday*, what intended to commemorate, vii. 145. b.
- Papacy*, its rise first told, ix. 550. &c. several important circumstances of it, 550. &c. and c. f. g. when it began, and how long it shall continue, x. 501. d. 500. n.
- Papists*, have consecrated days in honour of many of the saints mentioned in the epistle to the Romans, vii. 367. g. and of Aristobulus, though it is not certain he was a Christian, 45. their argument against the continued obligation of the second commandment, ix. 321. a.
- Pascha*, meaning of the word, vi. 529. b.
- Pascha* and heaven, distinguished, ix. 214. d.
- Paschical*, rules to observed in it, vi. 28. l. 64. g. vii. 273. d. vi. 426. d. 346. c. vi. 335. g. vii. 575. g. vii. 27. g. difficulty

- faculty of keeping a due medium in it, vi. 479. f. why often longer on the first verse of a section 486 a the word [*probably*] why omitted in it, vi. 64. g. limitations, where suggested in it, 45. c. force of a word often expressed, 45. d. See *Version*.
- Parents*, some of great age, when their children were born, vi. 55. c. required by the Jewish canons to teach their children some trade, 585. c.
- Particles*, not always used with exactness, vi. 270. i. the Hebrew ones ambiguous, *ib*.
- Party-spirit*, our regards not to be confined to our own party, vi. 216. t.
- Passover*, Jesus taken to the, by his parents, vi. 89. a. conjectures on the number of passovers in his ministry, 136. a. time of Christ's first passover, vi. 139. h. Jesus sends two of his disciples to prepare the Passover, vii. 274. e. a sauce still used in eating it, 286. g. rules observed by the Jews in it, vii. 290. a. 298. h. not probable, that Jesus kept it on a different day from the rest of the Jews, 288. n. number of victims offered at one Passover, vi. 137. b.
- Pastors* and teachers, whether distinct or not, ix. 362. k. vide *bishops* and *ministers*.
- Patience*, where to be shewn, vi. 214. l. the soul to be possessed with it, vii. 235. m.
- Paul*, remark on his name, viii. 91. k. See *Saul*, a conjecture as to his age, x. 76. a. probably upon his conversion his goods were confiscated, ix. 458. g. why he changed his name from Saul to Paul, ix. 461. a. why he prayed that utterance might be given him, ix. 400. k. and was called *ἰδιώτης*, unskilful in speech, though he spoke with tongues, 202. e. though the Apostle of the Gentiles, he preached first to the Jews, 244. d. and chiefly where Christ was not named, why, viii. 536. b. ix. 199. h. what it was he communicated privately to those of note, 248. d. his conduct, in not permitting Titus to be circumcised, reconciled with his circumcising Timothy. *ib*. e. His great fidelity and zeal, ix. 210. h. He acquainted himself very particularly with the state of foreign churches, viii. 542. g. He pleaded the cause of the gospel under great disadvantages, yet successfully, 594. d. at Rome, though all men forsook him, x. 56. 37. f. g. wrought with his own hands to maintain himself, sometimes even by night, ix. 511. 559. a. though he might have claimed a maintenance of the people, 510. a. was shipwrecked at least four times, 208. c. In his epistles, he employed an amanuensis, viii. 546. e. why, and what effect this would have on his style, ix. 561. d. but commonly put his name to them, *ib*. and he wrote the whole epistle to the Galatians with his own hand, 506. b. probably he was inaccurate in forming the Greek characters, *ib*. a. Most of his epistles begin with exclamations of joy, ix. 128. b. he wrote with peculiar fervour on the things of God when in prison, 557. a. his words are not always used with the most critical exactness, 4. b. and he often repeats the same word, though in somewhat a different sense, viii. 525. a. 592. a. He has many beautiful compound words, ix. 393. d. has many allusions to architecture in his epistle to the Ephesians, who were fond of it, 344. l. writes with great address, yet not in an artful manner, 128. c. 131. and b. He did not expect to live till the judgment day, ix. 107. i. 526. d. e. 550. and b.
- Peace*, Christ came not to give peace, what it may refer to, vi. 400. b. the peaceful state of the kingdom, till when not to be expected, vi. 587. c. of God, what, ix. 447. e.—presiding in the heart, to what it alludes, 486. d. the happy effects of cultivating a peaceable temper, x. 235. b.
- Pence*, value of the Roman pence, vi. 315. c. 414. f. 499. d. 552. l. vii. 151. g. one the customary price of a day's service among the Jews and Romans, vii. 111. b. a penny for a measure of wheat, a sign of scarcity, x. 467. e.
- Pentecost*, propriety of choosing that feast to glorify Christ by the effusion of the spirit, vii. 508. a. how said to be fully come, 508. b.
- People*, an objection against their choosing their own ministers, answered, x. 15. c. 32. c.
- Perfect man*, has often a very limited sense, x. 231. c.
- Perfumes*, their effects on different persons alluded to, ix. 143. a.
- Persecution*, the gain of those that suffer it for conscience sake, vii. 108. l.
- Perseverance*, what, no argument against it, vii. 315. d. the conduct of Hymenæus, &c. no objection to it, ix. 580. a. nor Demas, x. 35. a.
- Persian* letters, remark on them, vii. 287. k.
- Peter*, had a wife after he was an apostle, ix. 24. c. had no rights but what were common to St. Paul, *ib*. that Peter, whom St. Paul reproved, was the apostle, 253. a. why reproved in public, 254. b. He had some peculiar reason for recommending watchfulness, x. 207. g. probably wrote his first epistle from the neighbourhood of Babylon, 298. l. the difference of style in some parts of his second epistle accounted for, 316. a. not saluted in Paul's epistle to the Romans, vii. 542. i.

- Pharisee*, well described by Dr. Pradeaux vi, 37, a. the stricter sect of the Jews, vii, 572, d. fasted twice a week, vii, 68, f. played a great part of their religion in condemning others, vi, 581, a. mentioned the duties of the first table, 515, b. their children practised exorcisms, vi, 572, i.
- Pharos*, the tower in it built for a light-house, ix, 528, i.
- Philadelph*, the last of the seven churches that fell into the hands of the Turks, x, 400, c.
- Philip*, the apostle, account of him and his acts, vi, 518, c. vii, 165, b. 575, c.
- Philip*, the deacon, raised to be an evangelist, viii, 16, c. his acts, 17, f. 18, i. 19, d. &c.
- Philip*, son of Herod the Great, his character, vi, 561, c.
- Philip*, another son of Herod the Great, deposed of his wife Herodias, v, 127, a.
- Philippi*, its situation, viii, 147, g. b.
- Philostratus*, persecuted when the apostle wrote to them, ix, 471, g.
- Philo*, calls the logos the image of God, ix, 469, a—speaks of angels as presenting prayers to God, 478, i.
- Philosophers* among the Heathen, conformed to the absurdities of idolatry, viii, 114, i.
- Philostratus*, the only Heathen writer, who mentions the darkness when Christ was crucified vii, 514, a.
- Phrygians* were the same expression as St. Paul, about *Lycaonia*, x, 195, d. was probably acquainted with the Old and New Testament, ib.
- Physicians*, whence so called, vi, 517, d.
- Phocas*, Pontius, murders the Gallians, vi, 7, a. probably governor when Stephen was stoned, vii, 572, p. his character vii, 589, x. and administration, 587, p. remark on his cruelty *from*, vi, is imposed and sent to Rome, 589, x.
- Phocæa*, alluded to, vi, 57, c.
- Phon* was a *serp*, *and*, *and* for the rational part of our nature, viii, 548, m. his remark on a righteous man, 464, a.
- Piety* and joy, what they result from, vi, 514, m.
- Pious*, mentions beauty as food, vi, 57, k. his account of the severity of serpents, 584, b. observes, that Heathen persecutors forced the Christians to renounce Christ, xii, 578, b. one of his apostles resembles that is Paulinus, x, 71.—seems ashamed of the law against the Christians, 582, c.
- Phrygia*, this proof of Mark Anthony's eloquence, vi, 525, g. his account of a serpent, vii, 515, q. of the ancient ways of preserving wine, vii, 511, k. his description of such as had a Pythonic spirit, 145, b.
- Pier*, attending them in illness, an acceptable charity, vii, 564, d.
- Pier*, rather to be rendered portico, vii, 364, i.
- Peripatetic*, his meanness in dispersing our Lord's character, vi, 510, i.
- Persecution*, why permitted at the time of Christ's appearance, vi, 185, n.
- Peter's Field*, why called the Field of Blood, vii, 514, g.
- Pesenti*, the value of them, vii, 145, c.
- Prayer*, compared to incense, vi, 51, c. which the daily hours of prayer, vii, 587, b. viii, 34, c. standing, according to the usual posture when they prayed, vii, 184, c. no argument against praying to Christ, to wait to say to his disciples, 549, c. why Peter might go up to the mountain to pray, vii, 54, d. inconstant, what, 554, d—of faith, what, x, 560, c. social prayer a guard upon person's general behaviour, 279, c.
- Preaching*, Jewish rabbins sat down to preach, vii, 515, a. it does not appear that any preached as deacons, vi, 575, i. but an extraordinary call might justify private Christians in doing it, vii, 567, a.
- Preachers*, danger of indulging them, vi, 542, a. sweetly conquered by the gospel, viii, 20, 21, a.
- Preaching*, how constituted by the apostles, viii, 118, d. when not distinct, from bishops, 567, a.
- Prætor*, when usually offered, vi, 81, p.
- Prætor* performed their office by lot, vi, 5, vii, 586, i. ministered in the temple bare foot, 583, i. Jewish, guilty of great crimes, vii, 501, b.
- Prætor* of importance, sent to be tried at Rome, xii, 582, b. how frequently secured, 593, 78, d. Paul probably thus secured, 586, a.
- Prætor* judgment, the right of it strongly asserted vii, 521, c.
- Prætor*, to whom properly applied, viii, 81, i. 577, k. those of Asia might be called *Prætorials*, 186, p. 456—464, what intended by it, 165, m.
- Prætor* attending the death of Christ, their consequences and effects, vii, 415, 417, 419, r. that preceded the destruction of Jerusalem, vii, 512, p.
- Prætor*, why called a lamp, x, 514, b. how exactly answered vi, 303, g.
- Prophecy*, Moses spoke of Jesus a prophet like unto him, vii, 554, i. 586, a. all who would not hear that prophet, to be destroyed, 554, k.
- Prophecy*, of old, their habit, vi, 285, k. spoke freely of wicked persons, vii, 17, f. came as ambassadors from God, vi, 508, m. vii, 501, i. spoke of Christ from the beginning, vi, 55, b. vii, 534, did not always understand what they said of him vi, 57, c. in what sense they all spoke of Christ, vii, 466, g. vii, 556, i. viii, 93, b. how Christ refers to what they wrote, vii, 231, 552, p. large sense of the word, x, 51, a. often speak of things

- future, as past, 407, m, of the Old Testament, the Spirit of Christ in them. 260, f, apprehended that their prophecies referred to the Messiah, but did not fully understand them, 261, g.
- Proselytes*, whether St. Peter wrote only to them, x, 257, a, newly made, called by the Jews, *new born babes*, 268, a, when baptized, vi, 144, e, 120, e, who commonly called *proselytes of the gate*, vii, 167, a, what the word signifies, vii, 566, g, how applied by Luke, viii, 53, b, no sufficient authority for two sorts of Proselytes, *ib.* 164, e, fearing God, and working righteousness, the case of such as were in no sense Jewsh proselytes, 61, c, no hint in the New Testament of preaching the gospel, first to those who are called *proselytes of the gate*, and then to those that were idolaters, 72, h, many religious proselytes receive the word at Antioch, 105, a, not any reason to think the devout women such, whom the Jews stirred up against Paul and Barnabas, 108, g, or the Greeks who believed at Iconium, 110, a, nor could the point debated in the assembly at Jerusalem relate only to them, 124, h, 129, h, 130, i, 139, b, many who were not proselytes might come out of curiosity to hear the apostles, 174, d, such as were circumcised counted fellow-citizens, 224, l.
- Prostitution*, practised by the priestesses of Venus as a part of devotion, ix, 36, a.
- Providence*, the universality of it asserted vi, 570, all things fixed under its conduct, viii, 168, o, our reasonings to be submitted to it, viii, 49, f, its agency acknowledged by the Romans, 251, f.
- Psalm*s, how placed in the apostles' time, viii, 100, n.
- Ptolemais*, its different names, &c. viii, 216 b.
- Publicans*, persons of an infamous character vi, 101, 249, g, oppressive publicans, how much the Roman law required them to restore, vii, 141, f.
- Punishments*, future, some think a difference in them intimated, x, 544, d, — strong expression of their eternity, 548, g.
- Purgatory*, vainly argued for, vi, 209, r.
- Purification* of Mary, when it was, vi, 70, b, 75, o, p, 80, n. Jews superstitious in their purifying, 133, g, 439, c, heathens practised it, viii, 144, a.
- Pythagoreans*, taught that men should not let the sun go down on their wrath, ix, 370, m, whether *eating herbs* refers to converts from that sect, viii, 520, b.
- Pythoness* at Philippi, really possessed, viii, 145, b.
- Q
- Questions*, raving about them, remarkably translated by Bishop Wilkins, ix, 614, c.
- Quotations* from the Old Testament, sometimes rather the sense than words referred to, viii, 433, 407, g.
- R
- Rabbi*, what it signifies, vi, 124, why Christ would not have his disciples affect it, vii, 217, f. remark on Nicodemus's calling Christ so, vi, 141, a.
- Rabbies*, insisted much on washing before meals, vi, 459, c. how they speak of the earth, vi, 480, g.
- Railers*, what they should think of, vi, 528, b.
- Reasonings*, that are evil and corrupt, bring guilt on many, vi, 445, b.
- Recovered* from a distemper, what expressed by the original, vi, 378, d.
- Redemption*, sometimes signifies deliverance, viii, 461, d, whether two redemptions, ix, 527, o, sometimes signifies the resurrection, *ib.* how sometimes used, vii, 246, g.
- Reed*, which the soldiers put into the hand of Jesus, what it may signify, vii, 391, c.
- Religion*, cannot be expected to flourish in the soul without our care, vi, 353, b. what some of the principles of natural religion will do, vi, 408, r, folly of public persons putting slights upon it, viii, 257, f, introducing a new religion forbidden by the Roman law, 146, e.
- Remphan*, what it might signify, vii, 588, e.
- Repentance*, unconverted sinner exhorted to repentance, viii, 22 all commanded to repent, 170, r, the fruits of it in different persons, ix, 179, d.
- Repetitions*, why sometimes made, vi, 221, all by no means vain, vi, 260, h. truth of the history requires them, vii, 22, f, no sentence of our Lord so frequently repeated as that concerning humility, vii, 218, k, why Peter put Cornelius on repeating what he knew before, viii, 60, b.
- Reprobate*, what, ix, 224, d, e.
- Reproof*, how ready men are to shrink back from it, vi, 232, c, bad men unfit to be reprovers of others, *ib.*
- Rest*, which the churches had in all Judea, to what it may be ascribed, viii, 45, s. happy effects of it, 46, t.
- Restitution*, required by the Jewish and Roman law, vii, 141, f, restoring four-fold, when necessary, *ib.* restoring seven-fold, proverbial, *ib.*
- Resurrection* from the dead, denied by the Sadducees, vii, 205, a. Paul, how looked upon at Athens, in preaching the resurrection, viii, 165, f, 170, s, he is called in question for it, 242, argues for its credibility, 273, f, of Christ, a proof of vi, 139, i, no contract between Christ and the Jews, that he should rise in their sight, vii, 432, i, how Christ is said to have been begotten on the day of his resurrection, viii, 100, o, the apostles witnesses of the truth of his resurrection, vii, 483, g, miraculous gifts a,

- proof of it, vi, 355, c, viii, 84, 1, not
forbidden in scripture, ix, vi, c. appears
to have been a joyful idea to the aposto-
les, 275, a. as a picture of the resurrex-
tion of Christ, 375, a of Chris-
tians, same, and it was already past, x
26, g. were often justified for the hope
of it, ix, 90, a.
- Recreation*, how needed, viii, 103, b. ex-
amined with reason, ix, 137, d, made
to St. John, by certain images in his
mind without archetypes, xi, x, 805, a.
The great moral which the book of Re-
creation was designed to illustrate, 417,
d. Mr. Lawson's solution of that book,
416, a.
- Recreation*, same, what, ix, 136, f.
- Revenge*, forbidden, viii, 311, c.
- Reverence*, the inward adoration, 365,
the outward attitude, same, 311, b.
- Reverie*, how to be prevented, vii, 111,
g. remarks thereon, 111, g.
- Reverent Jews*, their ignorance, vii, 411,
f. understood, same, as one of a con-
fession of faith, viii, 305, f.
- Rhody*, may be rendered Rhod, viii, 86, g.
- Rhody* called Rhod, vi, 106, a, vii,
102, c.
- Rights and good men*, how distinguish-
ed, viii, 436, g. To be constituted
righteous, what, 434, b.
- Righteousness of God*, often signifies the
amount of becoming righteous which
he has appointed, vii, 367, a. some-
times his righteousness is appointing
that method, vii, 4, c. and sometimes
the party of the nation, 446, of
the Pharisees, what, 446, a. a perfect
righteousness necessary for justification
by the law, 444, & c. of saints, what, a,
444, c.
- Rites*, ceremonies by which the gospel was
first preached here, viii, 377, b.
- Rites*, setting up their arbitrary stan-
dards on holy ground, what kind of, vii,
236, a. used to excuse by a saying,
vii, 136, d. had a law that made a real
expiat, 136, c. did not allow attendance
to introduce a new religion, 146, c.
would not suffer a Roman citizen to
be bound or beaten, 146, c. but made
it highly criminal for such as were not
to plead this privilege, 146, c. soli-
tation of the Jews to them, viii, 411,
c. allowed even when a right of ap-
pealing to Caesar, 386, b. required an
oath to be made in the presence of
the accused, 387, b.
- Rites*, some think it will be swallowed up
in the lake of fire, x, 597, f.
- River-hands*, design of converting them,
viii, 20, f. answers often had two roll-
ers to their ships, b.
- Rites of the people* not to be evil spoken
of, viii, 341.
- Rites of the Jews* examine Jesus, vi,
138, a. they deliver up Jesus to death,
through ignorance, yet this did not ex-
cuse their guilt, vii, 352, d. join with
the Gentiles, in the design of stoning
Paul and Barnabas, viii, 1, f, 116, d.
S.
- Sabbath*, observed as a day of extraordinary
devotion but not with a strict rest, in the
patristical age, vi, 216, g. Jewish
sabbath began and ended at sun set,
vi, 104, a. Christ Lord of the sabbath,
270, c. remark thereon, 271, k. Jews
scrupled to carry any thing on it, 104,
b. mounted it unlawful to rub out the
ears of corn on that day, 104, d. specu-
ious assistance with respect to work-
ing on the sabbath, vi, 270, a. Jewish
imagined, ix, 836, a. the Christian sab-
bath, the first day of the week, ix, 110,
to x, 436, c.
- Sabbath-day's journey*, what reckoned
such by the Jews, vi, 478, c.
- Sabbath*, the wearing it, what a sign of, vi,
210, c.
- Sacrament*, of baptism, see baptism, of the
Lord's supper, instituted by Christ at
the meal of the Passover, viii 397, a. re-
mark on it, 41, b. institution of the
Passover, in taking the bread to be the
real body of Christ, 41, c. the cup how
to be considered, 205, c. hymn sung
at the close, when it might be, 416, b.
remark on it, 398, f. often celebrated
by the primitive Christians, vii, 401, f.
viii, 90, g. plainly meant by breaking
bread, when the disciples met together
at Table, 401, g. argument for denying
the cup to the body, given up by the
council of Trent, 41, what the Corin-
thians fault about it, 41, 50, c. the pos-
sibility of it argued from the revelation
of it to St. Paul, 44, f. and from the
expression, *let us drink* same, vii, k.
The elements after consecration call-
ed bread and wine, p. 1. Christians
only mixed water with the wine,
404, c. 144, d.
- Sacraments*, heathen, were tokens of com-
munion with their deities, ix, 86, f.
some part of them were often add to
the eucharist, 83, g. Mosaic, their use,
x, 146, f. took with out pardon sin with-
out a sacrifice, 146, b. seasoned with
salt, design of them, vi, 497, m.
- Sabbath*, whenever called, vii, 305, a.
well described by Dr. Pridmore, vi, 99,
a. duty a correction, &c. vii, 205, b.
xii, 106, g. remark thereon, vii, 106, f.
their principles prevail much among
the poor and great, vi, 367, g. they re-
sisted to the law of Moses, vii, 307, c. no
reason to suppose they had favourable
thoughts of Christ, vi, 401, b. question
Christ about the resurrection, vii, 367,
a. some the twelve apostles and im-
pious them, vii, 434, a.
- Saints*, departed, incapable of relief
such as pray to them, vii, 27, a. remem-
ber those that appeared after Christ's re-
urrection, 410, a. p. why called in
first born, x, 104, k. first fruits, 218, c.
217, b.

- Salathiel*, how said to be the son of Jeconiah, vi. 57, i.
- Salome*, who supposed by some to be, vii, 421, c.
- Salt*, why used to season sacrifices, vi, 491, m, salted with fire, how to be understood, 23, l.
- Salutations* to many person in St. Paul's epistles, a testimony of their genuineness, viii, 541, e.
- Samaritans*, had no friendly intercourse with the Jews, vi, 162, g, vi, 551, f, rejected all the scripture but the books of Moses, vii, 207, e. offer their temple on mount Gerizzim to Antiochus, vi, 162, g, deduce their genealogy from Jacob, 163, their expectations, 165, o, 166, q, 171, h, many believe at Sichem on hearing what the woman said of Jesus, 170, and many more, on hearing him discourse, 171, g, the Samaritans better prepared to receive the gospel than most of the Gentiles, viii, 17, f.
- Samuel*, speaks very expressly of the Messiah, vii, 534, l, his government included with that of Saul, viii, 97, i.
- Scandals*, form of them, vi, 391, k.
- Sandys*, Mr. his account of the cleft in the rocks, vii, 417, n.
- Sanhedrim*, the supreme Jewish court, vi, 138, e, difficult to say who were properly members of it, vii, 538, f, seat of the two principal officers, vii, 133, e, had a right of punishing false prophets, vii, 18, h. were allowed to try capital causes, vi, 527, c, vii, 576, c, 394, h. adjudge Jesus to death, vii, 373, k. take him to Pilate to confirm their sentence, 576, c, 394, h. Peter and John brought before them, vii, 558, f. Saul commissioned by them to seize all the Christians at Damascus, viii, 33, c. 230.
- Satan*, enemy to God and man, vi, 116, q. how used in Hebrew, 321, g. what it often means, vi, 547, c.
- Satisfaction* to Divine justice, what, viii, 422, e. consistent with our obligation to holiness, *ib.* of Christ, wherein referred to, vii, 298, f.
- Saved*, how frequently applied, vi, 378, d. exception to it, vii, 540, h. Christ is upbraided with his saving power, 409, f.
- Saul*, king of Israel, his government included with Samuel, viii, 97, i.
- Scatter abroad*, how to be understood, vi, 324, o.
- Schism*, what it expresses, vi, 523, f.
- Scholar*, where usual for learners to sit, vi, 555, b. viii, 229, d.
- Scornful* airs to be seriously accounted for, vii, 45, h.
- Scourging*, a punishment among the Jews, vi, 394, c. viii, 235, c. Saul thus punished them that believed, viii, 235, used to precede crucifixion, vii, 390, a. 398, q.
- Scribes*, who intended by them, vii, 216, c. their way of teaching contemptible, vi. 240, g. their offence at his sermon on the mount, 245, b. question his authority, vii, 885, e. deride him as he hung upon the cross, 409, f. and Pharisees, what they taught, vi, 206, d, high opinion the Jews had of them, *ib.* e. sat in the chair of Moses, vii, 216, a. b. reject the counsel of God, vi. 306. 307, h. are upbraided as an adulterous generation, 330, b.
- Scripture*, the enemies of Christianity not to be trusted in their representations of it, vi, 510, f. sometimes obscured by those that undertake to explain it, 495, e. sense that first offers to an honest mind, commonly the true one, *ib.* no word insignificant in it, 511, k. meaning of some places how best determined, 462, e.
- Scripture*, known to children, therefore not forbidden to the laity, x. 30, a.
- Secrets* of the heart, how made manifest in preaching, ix, 84, c.
- Sect*, not always used in a bad sense, viii, 255, c.
- Secundus* attends Paul with the collections to Jerusalem, vii, 202, d.
- Seducing* teachers, Christians forbidden to receive them into their houses, x, 387, d.
- Seeing* God, why put for the knowledge of him, x, 353, d.
- Self-murder*, justified by some philosophers, viii, 148, k.
- Separation*, without the guilt of schism, viii, 520, a.
- Septuagint*, whether an attempt was made to alter some copies, and render them more agreeable to the New Testament, vii, 407, g. often followed by the evangelists, vii, 516, f.
- Sepulchres*, adorned by the Jews, vii, 223, c. those of the prophets, 223, d.
- Sergius* Paulus calls for Barnabas, and Saul, viii, 91, i. supposed to be the first by whom Saul was called *Paul*, 91, k. no reason to imagine him the first convert among the Gentiles, 92, l.
- Sermon* on the mount, where delivered, vi. 199, b. 241, b. different from that recorded by Luke, *ib.* 260, a. the taking it to be the same, cause of a mistake, 241, a. several passages related by Luke, repetitions of it, 240, e. not addressed to the disciples only 199, a. figurative expressions in it, 217, x. noble specimen of Christ's preaching, 240, f. should be a pattern to preachers, 233, f. whose sermons are most useful when delivered in a familiar method, 347, c.
- Serpent* lifted up by Moses, how an emblem of Christ, vi, 148, c. what intended by supposing a serpent produced from the marrow of the back-bone, vi, 489, i. how he deceived Eve through subtilty, ix, 201, c.
- Serpents*, remarkable for their sagacity, vi, 394, b. their prudence recommended

- ed, *th.* the easterns had an art of charming them, vii, 387, q. Heathens thought there was something divine in them, viii, 239, c.
- Servant*, how to be sometimes rendered, vi, 272, d. *serf*, g. hired servants, why mentioned by *he* prodigal, vii, 7, f.
- Seven*, angels before the throne, who, x, 377, b. *Sevens*, why so many mentioned, 431, c. their present state, 430, c. lamps what, 430, d. *Spirits before the throne*, who, 430, b.
- Sheep*, the Jews considered as sheep without a shepherd, vi, 387, i. the disciples sent forth as sheep among wolves, 430, a.
- Shew*, their value, vi, 433, f. vii, 271, c. five, paid for the redemption of the first-born, vi, 71, c. but not to redeem them from being sacrificed, ix, 441. a shewel paid yearly by each of the Jews to the temple, 434, d. not so much paid in Nebuchadnezzar's time, ix, c. slave rated at thirty shewels, vi, 271, c.
- Signs* used by Christ and his disciples, observation on them, vi, 411, b.
- Signs*, conjecture on them, vi, 391, k, putting them off, a token of respects, 41, l.
- Sign from heaven* desired by the Pharisees, vi, 401, a. many such signs given by the ancient prophets, 9. Jews continue the demand in the apostles's time, 430, a.
- Silam*, pool of, vii, 71, c. water drawn from *Throne* poured before the Lord, vi, 311, a.
- Simeon*, who supposed to be, 71, d.
- Simon Peter*, see *Peter*, the Cananite, why supposed to be so called, vi, 382, g. the Pharisee, remark on his calling Jesus master, vi, 415, d. why he might not seem common disciples to him, 310, g. the leper, why so called, vii, 130, b. who supposed to be, 131, f. Magus, reported to have become an enemy to the gospel, viii, 35, k. the tanner, his trade why mentioned, viii, 35, g.
- So* prepares for the reception of Satan, vi, 380, k. opinion of the Jews concerning it, vii, 71, b. how they would have had no son, 380, g. how taken away by Christ, vi, 141, a. Sins of omission, what they do, vi, 384, o. against the Holy Ghost, how to be understood, vi, 334, p. sometimes means a *sin-offering*, viii, 451, x. St. John's definition of it, x, 334, c. How the children of God cannot commit it, 334, f. 336, f.
- Singing*, not confined to the Psalms, ix, 437, c.
- Sinner*, what it often signifies, vii, 68, g, 71, b.
- Sinners*, represented as dead, vi, 260, i, 266, h. vii, 28, t. We should not despair of the greatest sinners, viii, 22, c. taken captive by Satan, x, 24, c. We are not to pray for some sinners, 377, d.
- Sinning* wilfully, why apostasy from Christianity expressed by so general a phrase, x, 156, a.
- Sin-offering*, the consideration on which pardon was granted, 430, c. for what offences they were allowed, x, 156, c.
- Sinners* what it signifies, vi, 281, d.
- Sitting* at the feet, a posture in which learners attended, vi, 30, d. 308, 553, b, iii, 124, d.
- Sleeping*, why Christians should avoid becoming slaves, ix, 2, f.
- Sleep*, why not to be indulged, vii, 271, sleeping under the word, dangerous, viii, 280.
- Soul*, a prayer, a guard on a person's whole behaviour, x, 279, c.
- Socrates*, fine expressions on his, vii, 542, n. weakness in his dying words, viii, 113, l.
- Sodom* and Gomorrah, grown into a proverb, vi, 313, c. and Egypt, emblem of the church of Rome, x, 304, h. How Christ crucified there, 36.
- Soldiers* came to John's baptism, who probably not Gentiles, vi, 102, g. struck back on seeing Jesus, vii, 300, g. salute him as King of the Jews, 301, c. insult him, as he hung upon the cross, 301, g. 310, k. pierce Jesus' side, 475, f. are terrified at sight of the angel, 475, g. are amazed at Peter's escape, viii, 32, l. and put to death, 30, m. are for killing the prisoners, viii, 292, h. Paul dwells at Rome with a soldiers, 292, n.
- Solomon's porch*, its magnificence, vii, 88, b. not destroyed by the Chaldeans, 292, f. Jesus demonstrates there, vii, 89, c. apostles frequently met there, vii, 50, c.
- Some*, Mr. has of his writings lamented, vii, 300.
- So*, a title given to inferiors, vi, 247, f. to whom applied by the apostles, viii, 88, b.
- Sorcery*, much practised by the Jews, viii, 30, g.
- Sovereignty* of God vindicated, viii, 475, k. does not extend to the punishment of innocent creatures, 476, a. of Divine infirmities, a motive to diligence, ix, 417, b.
- Soul* and spirit spoken of as distinct, ix, 214, c. 300, b. 268, h. 530, g. x, 110, c. its existence in a separate state, how to be argued, vi, 377, n. not easy to believe it mortal, 405, g. whole world no atonement for the loss of it, 367, f. no ransom sufficient for it, 408, g.
- Spain* when Paul probably might go there, viii, 305, g. probably no church planted there when St. Paul wrote to the Romans, viii, 356, c.
- Spinosa*, weak objection of his, vii, 469, c.
- Spiritual* persons, not only those who had

received miraculous gifts, but graces too, ix, 300, a.
Stable in which Jesus was born, reported, to be cut out of a rock, vi, 65, h.
Staff, all the apostles should take for their journey, vi, 391, h.
Star seen by the wise men, whether a meteor, vi, 80, l, how they knew its intent, 77, c, at what time it first appeared, 80, m, n.
Stars, the Jews call their teachers stars, x, 410, d, wondering stars a proper emblem of teachers of unsettled principles, *ib*.
Statera, piece of money found in the fish's mouth, how it might come there, &c. vi, 485, f.
Stature, how to be sometimes rendered, vi, 428, h.
Stephen, one of the seven deacons, no reason to suppose him one of the seventy, vii, 566, f.
Sticks in which Paul and Silas are put at Philippi, conjecture on them, viii, 147, h.
Stoics, account of their principles, viii, 164, d.
Stone, upon the grave of Lazarus, remark on it, vii, 123, g, why Christ might order it to be removed, *ib*. g.
Stones, God could raise up children from them to Abraham, how to be understood vi, 100, e. Temple adorned with stones of a prodigious size, vii, 299, a.
Stoning, two different ways of it, vii, 194, h. in what case ordered by the law, to be the punishment of adultery, vi, 527, h, executed on Stephen, vii, 592, p. executed on Paul, 117, a, b.
Strangling, when used among the Jews, vi, 527, b.
Stripes, in some cases more than in others, vi, 584, n.
Stumbling block, *σκανδαλον*, what, viii, 525, b.
Suetonius, takes notice of the Jews being ordered to depart from Rome, viii, 173, b.
Suffering, the consciousness of it confirms our motives to obedience, x, 286, h.
Sufferings, of Christ, plainly foretold by him, vi, 465, a, his continued resolution under his agonies, viii, 346, b. his heroic behaviour through the whole of his sufferings vii, 354, f, &c. his crying out, that God forsakes him, a necessary part of his sufferings, 415, h. apostles not ashamed to mention them, viii, 100, m.
Suidas, his ignorance, vi, 177, c.
Sum, a round sum, how sometimes used, vii, 574, f.
Superscription usually put over criminals vii, 407, d, that over Christ written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, offends the Jews, 407, e.

Supper, being ended, how to be translated, vi, 277, a, ceremony observed at the beginning of the Paschal supper, 278, c.
Swearing, allowed by Pharisees, vii, 220, m.
Sweat, bloody sweats mentioned by several, viii, 350, h.
Swine, kept by the Jews, vi, 367, g, tending them a mean employment, vi, 36, c.
Synagogue, had usually three rulers, vii, 12, c. these always men of dignity, *ib*, d, might desire such as were not priests to officiate, vi, 177, c, when public worship was over, any might make a speech there, viii, 94, c, frequent instances of disputes there, vi, 435, a, doctors how seated there, vii, 217, e, great number of synagogues at Jerusalem, vii, 568, l, most considerable had each a kind of academy, vii, 568, m, persons used to be scourged there, vi, 394, c, viii, 235, c, Saul scourges in the synagogue them that believe, viii, 235, c, 274, h, Paul and Silas preach in the synagogue at Thessalonica, viii, 156, a, and at Berea, 159, Paul preaches in the synagogue, at Athens, 164, d, at Corinth, 174, d, at Ephesus, 182, rulers of the synagogue at Antioch, in Pisidia, give Paul and Barnabas liberty to speak to the people, 94, c.
Syracuse, Paul comes there, viii, 296, i, time when Archimedes was slain there, *ib*.
Syria, Saul passes through it, viii, 44, q.
Syriack, the language spoken by the Jews, in Christ's time, vi, 125, vii, 504, g, version, omits the name of the prophet, where Jeremiah is mentioned for Zechariach, vii, 430, d. ascribes the Acts to Luke, vii, 496, a, how explains, Acts i, 497, c, how renders what Paul says of his voting against the Christians, viii, 274, g.
Syro-phanicia, whence so called, vi, 448, b.

T

Tabernacle, of witness, why so called, vii, 589, with what propriety Stephen speaks of it, *ib*, g, what fancied to be a model of, 588, d.
Tabernacles, which Peter proposed to make, rather to be rendered tents, vi, 472, a, See *Fest of Tabernacles*.
Tabitha, See *Dorcas*.
Table, posture of the ancients at it, vi, 314, b.
Tabor, the mountain on which Christ was transfigured, vi, 470, a.
Tacitus, his account of the Jews that were banished from Rome, by Tiberius, vii, 568 l, his relation of the prodigies preceding the destruction of Jerusalem, 52, p.

Tribune, how many men he commanded, vii, 225, tribunes attend when Paul is heard before Agrippa, 269.

Tribute, the Jews thought themselves exempted from paying it to the Gentiles, viii, 515, g, paid by Christ, probably what, vi, 484, d, seems to have been voluntary, *ib.* e. Christ not exempted from it, *ib.*

Trifles, mentioned by a very proper name, ix, 606, l.

Triumphs, eastern, the success of the gospel ministry described in terms that allude to them, ix, 143, a, and the gifts which Christ bestowed when he ascended, 361, h.

Truth, what opposed to, vi, 29, p, 166, p.

Tweleve, a name by which the assembly of the apostles was called, though some were absent, ix, 91, f, 92, h, *tribes*, supposed by Josephus to be still in being, x, 211, b.

Twenty-four elders, what the number imports, x, 456, c.

Twins, in the Zodiac, how anciently represented, viii, 296, h.

Two and two, the apostles, why sent thus, vi, 389, d.

Tychicus of Asia, accompanies Paul, viii, 202, d.

Tympanum, a kind of torture referred to, x, 175, d.

Tyrannus, a frequent name among the Greek-, viii, 188, d.

Tyre and Sidon, notorious for their vices, vi, 349, b.

V.

Vegetables, their growth, vi, 553, a, not to be judged of in one country by what they are in another, 554, d.

Veil of the temple rent, reflection on it, vii, 417, m.

Venerable, Christians should endeavour to make themselves so, ix, 448, f.

Version, our own, in the main a good one, ix, 612, i.

Vineyard, true religion represented by it, vii, 194, i, casting out of the vineyard, remark on it, 192, e.

Virgins that went to meet the bridegroom, what an allusion to, vii, 255, a, parable how clouded, 256, b,—an officer among the Greeks to educate them, ix, 201, a, The manner in which the eastern virgins were purified, alluded to, 387, b.

Virtue, in the New Testament, often means courage, x, 308, c, 309, h.

Vote, how Paul said to give his against the Christians, viii, 274, g.

Vows, superstition of the Jews with regard to them, vi, 441, g, Paul shaves his head in performance of a vow, viii, 181, *ib.* d, joins with four others under a vow, to purify himself, 222, e, 223, h, mariners made vows in times of extremity, 290, d.

Upper room, where the disciples assembled, conjecture on it, vii, 492, d, 502, a.

Uprightness, every upright man will see and own the gospel, vi, 513, b.

W

Walking, metaphor taken from it expresses several things in respect to religion, x, 941, b.

Washing the hands, how used, vii, 397, n, before meals, the ridiculous height to which it was carried, vi, 459, c, practised among other nations, *ib.*

Watches of the night, vi, 419, d, vi, 581, e.

White robes, magnificent, vi, 228, i, raiment, what the promise of it imports, 447, f,—*throne*, why the judgment-seat so represented, 543, h.

Whole world and whole creation, all those parts which had not received Christianity, x, 378, e.

Wicked, their punishment everlasting, vii, 265, d.

Widows, made deaconesses, ix, 604, h, How the younger widows were in danger of growing wanton against Christ, 605, k.

Widerness or desert, a general name for uncultivated ground, vii, 33, b, why John might live in the wilderness of Judea, vi, 49, k, where Christ was tempted, probably near Jordan, 112, a, remark on the horror of it, 115, m, wild beasts there offered him no injury, 112, b, was the scene of the parable of the good Samaritan, 112, a, 551, d, Jesus retires to the desert of Bethsaida, and feeds 5000 there, 415, pites the multitude, who had staid with him three days, 453, miraculously feeds 4000 of them, 454.

Will of Christ, not distinct from the Father's, vi, 264, k.

Windows of the ancients had no glass, viii, 204, h.

Wine, no new wine at Pentecost, vii, 511, k, and oil, used in dressing wounds, vi, 552, k, mingled with myrrh, given to Christ upon the Cross, vii, 403, different from the vinegar and gall, *ib.* c.

Wisdom of words, what kind of writing the apostle disclaimed under that notion, viii, 571, & a, 572, e, 579, c, how it would render the cross of Christ vain, 565, b, wisdom, knowledge, and understanding distinguished, ix, 463, g, compared to jewels, 372, g.

Wise men, how may be rendered, vi, 77, a, might come from Arabia, 77, b, called *Magi*, 77, a, how they might know the meaning of the star they saw, 77, c, probably surprised at Christ's mean appearance, 80, n, pay homage to him, *ib.* c, their prostrations, what they probably expressed, 81, p, where their report might afterwards make way for the gospel, 81, e.

Witnesses, apostles should be, to Christ, vii, 483, g, so was the Holy Spirit his witness, vii, 558, e.

Wise, an honourable subsistence is to be allowed them, x. 373, d.
Woman, a title of respect, vi. 133, d. vii. 413, c. Jews reckoned it scandalous to talk publicly with a woman, vi. 168, a.
Woman, attend Christ on his progress, through Galilee, vi. 319, his concern for their encouragement, 327, b. their road for him, an honour to the sex, vii. 421, a. provide spices to embalm his body, 436, a. set out for the sepulchre, 441, d. converse with the disciples in prayer, vii. 500. Women concerned in persecution, viii. 108, g. employed in some office in the church, ix. 304, b. introduced in the gospel, 446, b. and sometimes speak in public, by inspiration, 48, 50, but were not in common allowed to speak in the church, 87, l. 384.
Word was God, what a declaration of, vi. 23, b. was made flesh, 80, description contained in it, 98, in a, Christ referred to under this title, see *Logos*, 77, d. xii. 184, b. vii. 111, c. of that, how some would understand it, vi. 364, d. where received with reverence, quickly lost, 365, avoided by worldly ears, 346, b. of Christ, those that keep it over to our death, 348, b. a saying of Christ preserved by tradition, vii. 370, g.
Word, man of it, what like, vi. 379, f. apostles amongst of the world, vii. 400, whether the apostles thought the world was to be at an end when Jesus came was contrary to, vii. 400, d.
Word, or are persons, what it sometimes refers to, vi. 721, g.

Worldly elements, why the Jewish ritual called so, ix. 274, a.
Wren that never does sense of it, vi. 562, i. remark thereon, 56.
Wrestle, what it often signifies, vi. 78, d. vii. 59, a.

Y.

Yoke, what often used for, vi. 372, m.
Young men, follow Jesus, as they lead him from the garden, vii. 709, rulers, comes to Christ, and ask the way to eternal life, vii. 102, 104, c. 105, l. remark thereon, ib. g.

Z.

Zacchæus, a Jew, vii. 142, g. and chief of the publicans, 140.
Zacharias, his character, vi. 30, one of the ordinary priests, ib. c. probably dwelt at Bethan, 40, a. angel told him his prayer is heard, 33, d. remark on his song of praise, 47, c. when probably dead, 150, c. vii. 215, g.
Zeal, how to be regulated, vi. 345, zeal for circumstances, when of dangerous consequences, 446, vii. 226, zeal for human inventions, wrong placed, vi. 443, of Christ, vi. 178, 187, 170, 189, 195, d. 200, c. d. vii. 271, 262, a. of the apostles vii. 243, of Paul, vii. 161, a. 264, l. 264, 401.
Zelus, same, vi. 560, k. 261, suspension thereon, b. g.
Zelus, meaning of it, vi. 582, g.
Zerubbabel, one son of Salathiel, probably different from the son of Pedabai, vi. 36, k.

END OF THE FIFTH VOLUME.

Date Due

~~NOV 20 06~~

~~FEB 14 07~~



PRINTED IN U. S. A.

